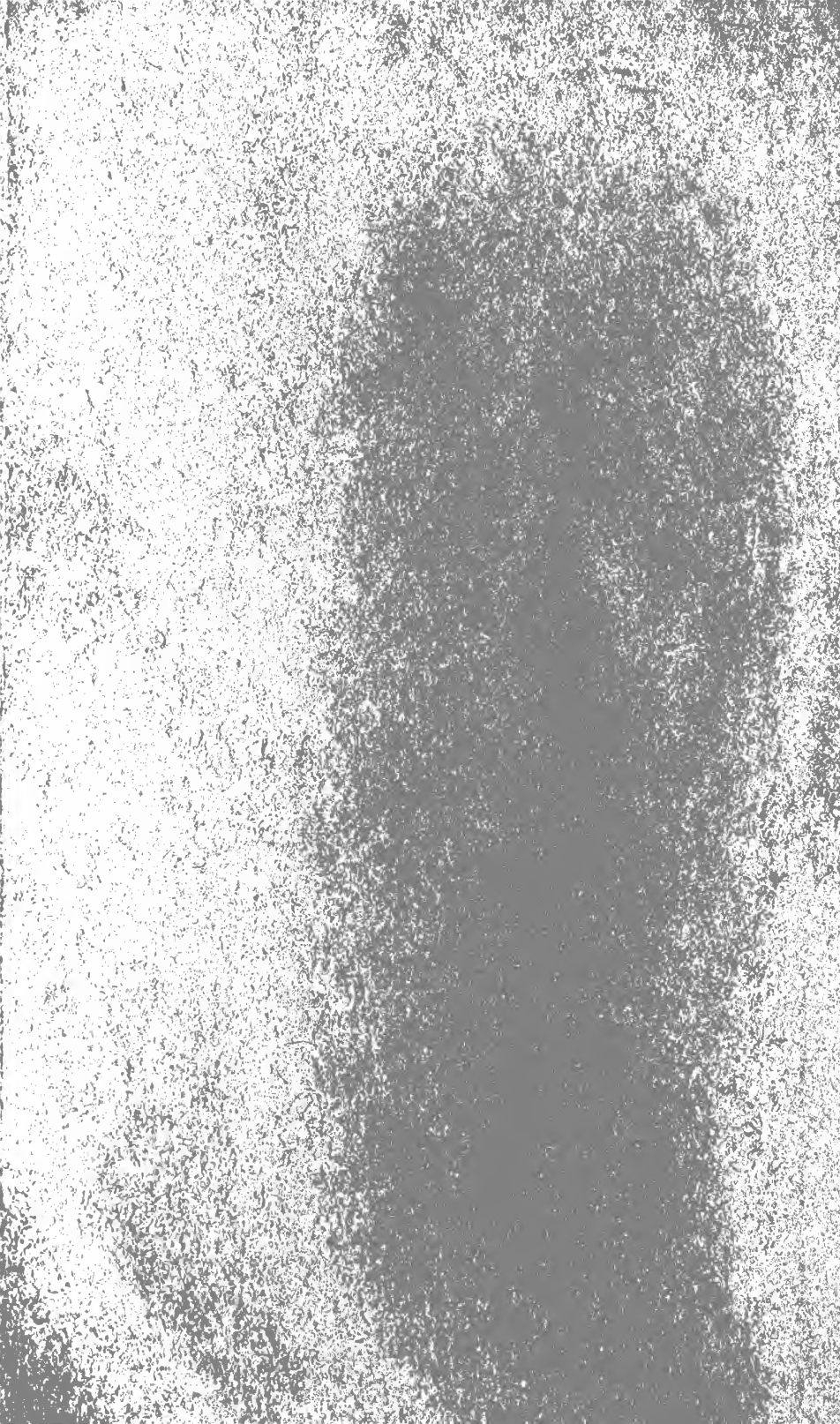


EX LIBRIS

BANCROFT LIBRARY





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

TEXAS
LIBRARY AND HISTORICAL COMMISSION
STATE LIBRARY

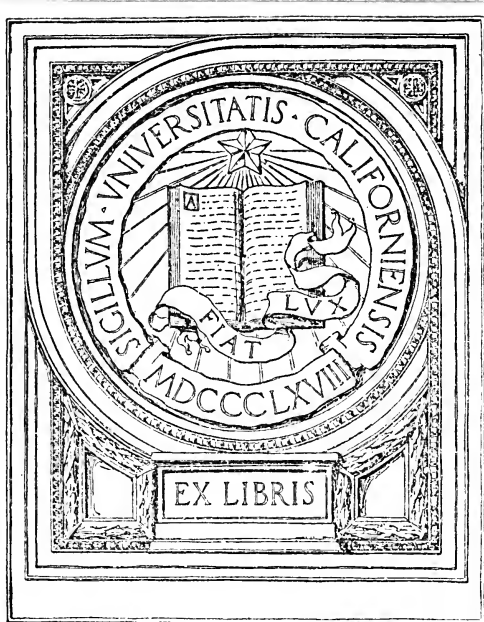
THE PAPERS OF
MIRABEAU BUONAPARTE
LAMAR

Edited from the original papers
in the Texas State Library

by

Harriet Smither
Archivist, Texas State Library

Volume VI



EX LIBRIS

BANCROFT LIBRARY

TEXAS
LIBRARY AND HISTORICAL COMMISSION
STATE LIBRARY

THE PAPERS OF
MIRABEAU BUONAPARTE
LAMAR

Edited from the original papers
in the Texas State Library

by

Harriet Smither
Archivist, Texas State Library

Volume VI



VON BOECKMANN-JONES CO.,
PRINTERS AND BOOKBINDERS,
AUSTIN, TEXAS

*complete in 6 vols
J.J. Hill*

But may her smiles reward your prayer,
 Her glance repay your sighs,
 And may she soon give you to share,
 The love-light of her eyes.

And now adieu:—for ne'er again
 My lute shall sound to you,
 And trust me that this foolish strain
 Is not my best.—adieu.

Dec. 4th. 1844.

HARRIET ELVIRA KELLOGG.

No. 2183. LAMAR TO JOSEPH L. WILLIAMS

Washington City [D. C.] 8th March 1845.

JOSEPH L WILLIAMS Esqr
 [Washington? D. C.]

DEAR SIR

In reply to your enquiry respecting the character and standing of Charles Watrous Esqr. I take great pleasure in stating that I have known Mr. Watrous for several years—that he was a member of my Cabinet— and that I have not only the most unbounded confidence myself in his ability and his integrity both as a Lawyer and as a gentleman; but I believe my appreciation of his character is the light in which he is regarded by the people of Texas generally—

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

No. 2184. ISAAC HOLMES TO LAMAR

Macon April 21st 1845

DEAR SIR,

The Macon Volunteers contemplate Celebrating their 20th Anniversary (Wednesday the 23rd inst) by a Parade Review &c at Camp Oglethorpe—

His Excellency Governor Crawford has signified his intention to honor us with his presence on the occasion and review the Corps at 5 o'clock P. M.— In behalf of my Corps & for myself I would respectfully invite you to visit Camp Oglethorpe on the day named and unite in the festivities of the occasion— Relying upon your acceptance I will give you the order of the day— At 1/2 past 12, you will please repair to the Floyd House where you will find his Excellency the Governor & a few friends— Thence you will accompany him to Camp Oglethorpe where you will be received by the M. V. & escorted to Head Quarters— You will then be invited to partake of a soldiers dinner, spiced by a soldiers welcome— At 1/2 past 4. P. M. an address will be delivered by Genl Smith a private of the Corps— at 5. the Company will be formed and reviewed by the Commander In Chief and I would be much gratified if you would accompany him in the review—Trusting My Dear Sir, that it will be agreeable & convenient for you to be with us and assuring you

of the sincere satisfaction it will afford your friends to see you I subscribe myself

Your Obedt. Servt.

ISAAC HOLMES Capt. M. V.

[Addressed:] Gen. M. B. Lamar Macon Georgia

No. 2185. PETITION OF NATHANIEL HOYT

[Galveston? Texas, June 12? 1845]

To the Honorable Senate [and] House of Representatives for the Republic of Texas, in Congress assembled: The Petition of Nathaniel Hoyt, respectfully sheweth, That—He, arrived in Texas, which he adopted as his country, in 1833—and was employed trading and navigating about the Gulf of Mexico until the fall of 1834, when he was imprisoned by the Mexicans, for defending and rescuing his own property from thier grasp—By the aid of friends, he effected his escape, after some months imprisonment, and reached New Orleans.

At New Orleans he refitted the schooner [Pennsylvania, formerly under his command, f[or the] purpose of maintaining the rights of his adopted country under the Constitution of 1824, and in the fall of 1835, he brought 135 Volunteers to Velasco, under the command of Colonel Ward. In the begining of 1836, he brought 112 Volunteers to Velasco, under the command of Colonel, A, Turner, and subsequently conveyed to Velasco and Brazoria 27 Volunteers for the army and the pieces of artillery now called the "Twin Sisters."

After his arrival at Brazoria, it being ascertained that the Mexicans were pres[s]ing onward, he took on board his vessel several females and families and returned to Velasco.

That—At Velasco, he took on board a quantity of Government stores and munitions of war, and proceeded therewith to Galveston, where he discharged them and received a Captain's Commission in the Navy of Texas, from President Burnett, with instructions to relinquish the command of the Pennsylvania, and hold himself subject to the orders of the Government. That—He and his crew assisted in constructing a Battery on the inner point of Galves[ton Is]land, and that he gave his cannon,—two n[in]e pounders,—with thier appurtenances, for the purpose of arming said Battery.

That—in accordance with his instructions, he proceeded to New Orleans, and gave up the command of his schooner, and reported himself for duty to Commodore Hawkins and the Secretary of the Navy.

That no means being at the disposal of the Government to furnish another vessel of war, Petitioner was ordered to act as executive officer of the National war Schooner Brutus, to keep himself in actual service, until the Government could provide the means of placing him in a command adequate to his commission.

That—he served in the Brutus until she departed clandestinely for New York, taking away Petitioner's instruments, and all his clothes except those in use.

That—he obtained a three months' leave of absence from Commodore Hawkins, then at Velasco, for the purpose of refurnishing himself with necessaries at New Orleans, whither he proceeded, and was there offered the command of a Privateer, which, th[rough] the mediation

and at the request of Commodore Hawkins, he was induced to accept. That—he fitted out the vessel accordingly, at New Orleans, and repaired to Velasco, where the privateer was commissioned, and a nine months' leave of absence given him, under his commission in the regular Service, with orders from the Government to cruize off Tampico and Vera Cruz, for the purpose of capturing one, or both, of two man-of-war Brigs expected by Mexico from Baltimore.

That—in obedience to his orders, he cruised so long as water and provisions lasted, . . . [mutilated] engaging the Forts at Tampico Bar, and Ke[eping] the Mexican coast in a constant state of alarm and on the defensive—having succeeded in capturing two schooners, which he sent for adjudication, to Velasco.

That on his return to Texas, while ashore at Velasco, his Privateer was carried off by a portion of her officers and crew, it was supposed, for sinister purposes—but the master being the only navigator on board at the time, he carried her to New Orleans.

That—on the abstraction of his vessel, Petitioner, having no command, reporte[d himself] to the Secretary of the Navy, and his lea[ve] of absence not having expired, he followed the Privateer to New Orleans, where on boarding her, he found that the mutineers had fled, and that all his private property had been taken away.

That—the Privateer having been refitted, Petitioner left New Orleans in her with only one third of the proper complement of men, for the express purpose of intercepting some Mexican vessels then about to leave New Orleans for Mexico, with munitions of war; Whilst cruising of the mouths of the Missis[sippi] in a severe blow, the Privateer ran ashore, which obliged Petitioner to return for repairs to New Orleans. That—when at New Orleans, Commissary Colonel Thruston purchased Petitioner's privateer for the Texas Government, and under his orders petitioner sailed with her, fully equipped and manned to Galveston—whence he went to sea, in company with the Brutus, in the hope of encountering the Mexican fleet, in consequence of a rumor which proved to have been unfounded—

That—Petitioner went to the Seat of Governm[ent] and reported to President Houston in person The Secretary of the Navy being absent, the President appointed an acting Secretary, and confirmed Petitioner in his command, by issuing a new Commission, and directing him to continue his cruize. He proceeded to Sea accordingly, and cruized on the South-East coast of Mexico, running several vessels on shore, but only capturing one prize of value, namely the Brig Phoenix—the largest merchant-man belonging to Mexico, which Petitioner sent into Galveston.—

After a cruize of nearly four months, he returned to port, in consequence of the wa[nt] of provisions, and again reported himself for duty. The officers and crew of petitioner's privateer tendered thier share of the prize Brig Phoenix to the Texas Government, under the belief that her capacity and sailing qualities would qualify her for a fourteen gun vessel of war; which proposal was declined by President Houston, on the ground that the Government was unable to equip and maintain the vessel in Service.

That—in August 1837, Petitioner obtained leave of absence, for the purchase of necessaries [at] New Orleans, and the Secretary of the

Navy being at sea, in the war schooner Invincible, he could not report to him, but the President intimated that, should his services be required, means would be found to communicate with him, stating, at the same time, the Navy would have to be laid up.— That finding money scarce at New Orleans and no hope appearing of his being ordered on active service, Petitioner obtained the command of an American merchant vessel, and returning to Texas in good circumstances in the summer of 1841, emba[rked] in mercantile pursuits— having during his absence reported himself seven times to the Secretary of the Texan Navy, without any orders, which orders he has always considered himself open to be called upon to obey.—

That Petitioner sustained severe loss by the Mexican invasion of 1842, besides having some of his property seized by militia and volunteer troops, which, coupled with bad debts, has reduced his means, and now impels him, as a married man, to appeal to the justice of the Legislature of this Republic before it shall have become merged in the American Union.

That your Petitioner would respectfully invite the consideration of your Honorable body to the fact that, in consequence, of the financial embarrassments and struggling condition of the Country, he never, during his period of service, made any application for pay to the Government of this Republic—reserving his claims to a future and more favorable time—nor did he ever receive any compensation by pay, or bounty lands, for his exertions and services in the cause of Te[xas.] That under the circumstances herein recited—your Petitioner relies on the justice of your honorable body to consider his claim and prays that a donation of land may be granted him, from the domain of the Republic in, lieu of pecuniary compensation to which he humbly conceives his services have enti[t]led him.—

And your petitioner will every pray &c. &c. &c

NATHANIEL HOYT [Rubric]

Nos. 2186-90. CERTIFICATES OF SERVICE: NATHANIEL HOYT

I hereby certify that Captain Nathaniel Hoyt recei[ved a com]mission in the Texas Navy, at Galveston Island, Presented [by the] Honble R. Potter Secty of the navy,— on or about the sixth day of [April,] 1836— and that he went into immediate service on board of the Br[utus Nati]onal schooner of war

Galveston 12th June 1845

LUKE A. FALVEL

We the undersigned do hereby Certify, that Nathaniel [Hoyt was] in the Navy of Texas in 1836, served as acting executive officer [on the] National schooner of war Brutus, for some months, during which [he was] attached to said vessel in the Capacity as signed underneath

L. M. HITCHCOCK Jr 2d Lt . . . [illegible] &
1st Lt afterwards

N. HURD Purser

JAMES G. HURD . . . [mutilated]

Galveston 13 June 1845

I hereby certify that I was an eye witness to the present[ing and] acceptance of a Captains Commission in the Navy of Texas— [Robert] Potter secty of the Navy, to Nathaniel Hoyt— done at Gal- [veston] on or about the sixth day of April in the year of our Lord one [thousand] eight hundred and thirty six

Galveston [13?] June 1845

WM M CARPER

I hereby certify that Mr Falvel left a quantity of [documents] and papers in my possession belonging to different persons, . . . [muti- lated] Texas, amongst which there was a commission in the Texas [Navy belong]ing to Captain Hoyt. which document has been mislaid or [lost]

Galveston 13th June 1845

GEO. H DELESDEBNE

Personally appeared before me John M. Allen Mayor of the City of Galve[ston] To wit, L. M. Hitchcock Jr, N. [Hurd,] James G. Hurd, Wm M. Carper, [Luke] A. Falvel and Geo. H. Delesdernie, [who] being duly sworn, affirmed to the [facts] therein stated in the annexed cert[ifica]tes, and there and then signed t[hem.]

[Seal] In token whereof [I] hereby affix my [hand] and seal of office. [Th]is fourteenth day of June in the Year of our Lord one Thousand eight hundred and forty five

J. M. ALLEN Mayor

No. 2191. PETITION TO JAMES K. POLK

[Austin, Texas, August? 1845]

His Excellency JAMES K. POLK,

The undersigned Delegates of the people of Texas in Convention assembled, having performed the duties for which they were convened, cannot consent to disperse and return to their homes, without inviting the attention of the President of the United States in the most respect- ful manner, to the condition in which a highly meritorious class of their fellow-citizens will be placed by the consumation of the measure of Annexation. They allude to the officers of the Texan Navy. These gentlemen abandoned their homes, and in many instances, honorable and lucrative employments in the servise of the United States, to identify their fortunes with ours at a time of great uncertainty and peril; and they have not only discharged the responsibilites which devolved upon them with great ability and fidelity; but they have per- severed in their duties, under the most discouraging circumstances, growing out of the pecuniary condition of the Government, without the hope of any other reward than immediate subsistence and such remuneration as might be remotely expected from the gratitude of the country when it should have attained to Independence and prosperity. All hope however, of honorable and independent subsistence either for the present [or] future will be destroyed by Annexation, unless provi- sion be made for them by the Federal Government; as their previous pursuits and habits have disqualified them for the ordinary avocations of life. The undersigned, therefore, most earnestly solicit, your Excel- lency to take into consideration their peculiar condition; and if con-

sistent with law to retain them in service in their present official grades; or to make such other provision for them as your judgment may dictate.

There is another class of Officers, to which the undersigned, would also beg leave to call the attention of your Excellency. It is that class which have within a few years past, been dismissed the service, or compelled to leave it in consequence of the disbanding of the [mutilated] the Navy in ordinary, and the impossibility of subsisting them from the depressed state of the finances of the country. These Officers entered our service with the feelings and views entertained by those who are yet retained in it; and devoted themselves with equal ardor to it, until forced to leave it by the causes above mentioned. They left it, however, with the approbation of their Country, and received from the Government, honorable discharges. They are now without employment and some of them in penury and want; and the undersigned would respectfully recommend them to your Excellency for such appointments in the Navy of the United States as it may be proper for them to receive. The accompanying document from the Navy Department will exhibit the names of such officers as still remain in the service of Texas, as well as of those persons who have been honorably discharged from the same.

[Endorsed:] Incomplete petition to Pres. Polk on behalf of officers &c of Texas Navy

No. 2194. ELLIOT AND OTHERS IN REGARD TO ANNEXATION: ANONYMOUS¹

[Newspaper Clipping]

October 25, 1845

Captain Elliott, the late British Minister to Texas, who has been visiting our city for some time, has rather less than fair play from the press of the United States and England. We cannot comprehend the short-sighted bigotry which prompted some of our own citizens to oppose annexation, but national policy made it both natural and proper that England should wish to defeat it. Texas, an independent ally; or Texas, one of the United States, would at no distant day make a vast difference in England's position as a great manufacturing power. She was right *as a nation* in sending Capt. Elliott to diplomatize against it, and she could not have chosen a better man to get up mystifications and embroilments. Witness his success with opium in China. But she blundered dreadfully for her own interests in not acting upon his advice. And her press is now fretting at the inefficiency and bad faith of Gen. Houston and Dr. Jones. This is unjust. They were loyally English; but they could do nothing but gossip about annexation, because England herself would do nothing but gossip. The Milliner Queen cannot boast of three more willing servants than Elliott, Houston and Jones; her stupid Ministers, however, would not strengthen their hands in season. If, as the three gentlemen desired, the British Ministry had found the wit three years ago to insist upon Mexico recognizing the independence of Texas, England lending the embarrassed republic a million sterling to meet pressing wants, she could have staved off annexation and perhaps divided the union (her darling plan

¹With No. 2204.

now for killing off republicanism) and Houston would have taken any new confederacy under his special protection. Elliott foresaw this, and joined Houston in urging England to manage, but the ministry were taking care of Prince Albert's horses and children and had no money to spare for peasant education at home, or the protection of their cotton worker's interest abroad. Even such a trifle as obtaining the liberty of the Texian prisoners in Mexico, so easy of attainment by the British Ministers, was neglected because it pleased Gen. Houston just then to say they deserved their fate, and the United States had an opportunity of proving their greater love for Texians by laboring incessantly for their release, until it was accomplished. England expected every thing for nothing, that being the condition upon which she trades with weak states; but she let the golden opportunity of winning Texas pass unimproved, and ought not to impute too much blame to three agents who could not prevent the destinies of Texas being decided by the well weighed decision of united republican citizens, instead of a pliant and king-loving Executive. Justice to Elliott, Houston and Jones!

No. 2197. "TEXAS." ANONYMOUS

[Newspaper Clipping]

[October? 1845]

Texas is conning over her list of bright names wherefrom to choose her representatives in Congress. Lamar, Archer and Rusk, are still spoken of for the Senate, and it is almost certain that two of these gentlemen will be chosen. No Texians have done so much for annexation as Lamar and his friends, and on that account he will be particularly acceptable and have great personal influence in Congress, though the claims of both the other gentlemen are of weight.

Mr. Van Zandt and Mr. Kauphman, both men of the highest ability, are spoken of in Eastern Texas, and Generals Green and Cazneau, (equally sterling characters,) in Western Texas, for the lower house. Mr. Kauphman, as it strikes us, has been rather victimised by President Jones, who sent him here as Charge to get him out of the way and at the same time embarrass Mr. Polk. It was exceedingly silly and unpardonably rude to our government to send a minister while annexation was pending, to say nothing of burthening the Star State with an absolutely useless expense. The idea was to trick our Executive into treating Texas as a foreign government, and thus enable Dr. Jones to say the United States did not consider annexation a settled thing. He could not make much capital out of it any way, but he has been foiled altogether, for Mr. Polk will not consider Texas out of the family and therefore has no need of making foreign relations with her. It certainly gave the Texian President an air of great veridancy, (besides placing Mr. Kauphman in a false position,) to drain the treasury for a mission here, *while a convention for proposing a State constitution was assembling at Austin*. It looked as if the unsophisticated gentleman had not learned the difference between representatives at court and representatives in Congress. It is the latter we wish to receive from the Lone Star.

No. 2198. EDITORIAL: ANONYMOUS

[Newspaper Clipping]

[October? 1845]

We shall certainly set up for prophets, even in our own country. We promised M[r] Tyler's cabinet that resist as they might the postage reform, Congress and the people would carry it over their heads, before the next administration were comfortably settled in their seats. Mr. Wickliffe, and his co-adjutors were respectable, well disposed men, but not over far-sighted, and when a genuine American came among them, they felt very much as a parcel of small dogs with a St. Bernard in their midst, may be supposed to feel. They could not understand the monster. He might be good natured and harmless, but then again, he might crush them with his great foot, or swallow them in a fit of ill-temper, if they came in his way.

We do not accuse the present cabinet of any thing beyond a delicate, courtly, lady-like sort of non-committalism. We may be mistaken, but they do remind us amazingly of the dandy who saw the child drowning in a brook, and had to wait to take off his gloves, and put on his india-rubbers before he could go to the rescue. There is much to do, and the people *will* have it done, if they have to "change their help" (as thrifty housewives say,) and get the other party to carry through the work. They want an entire reform in our military organization, and if Mr. Polk is too long in taking off his gloves, the people will try what other statesmen will do. He may rest assured that a second term of negatives and non-committalism will be rejected. The whole nation is sick of partyism. That a few hundred men should, under the name of party leaders, rule everything, and too often in utter disregard of the known wishes of the slighted millions; or that a press established for the benefit of this usurping minority should be supported by the public treasury, has been too long the case. The evil has wrought its own crisis: the government must deal more honestly by the press, and use a decent and impartial economy in creating and distributing its printing patronage, or it must be content to receive the cold treatment which a want of confidence in its business integrity must inspire.

This, however, is but one trifling item of what the present administration *must* do if it expects to sustain a respectable existence. It must re-organize the army and navy on republican common sense principles; it must stop the tremendous waste in military appropriation; it must speak with more openness and candor on our foreign relations, and it must be careful not to sacrifice a single ray of republicanism in Africa or Oregon. This is the popular resolve, and if Mr. Polk evades or abates one tittle of this it would be better for his fame never to have been President.

No. 2199. HAMILTON P. BEE TO LAMAR

Washington on the Brazos
November. 14. 1845

Gen. M. B LAMAR.

[Galveston? Texas]

DEAR SIR

I learned in conversation with Mr. H. L. Upsher, who is compiling a map of Nacogdoches County that he had discovered several vacant

sections of land in the midst of the settlements, and I was induced to leave with him for location and survey the scrip you deposited with me. You know Mr Upsher and I only need here to say that I have full confidence in his statements. There were you recollect one 960. two 640 and 7 (480) acre claims, the price for locating surveying, and recording, will be, for the first \$30.00 for the two sections, \$25.00 each, and, twenty dollars each for 480 which is a great bargain in my opinion. Please inform me immediately if the terms suit you and in what way the surveying fees will be paid. perhaps you had better write direct to Mr Upshur at Nacogdoches, and if the terms suit you authorise him to draw on you for the amount, (but write to me also) Mr Upsher informed me that he had made certain enquiries concerning your eleven league claim, and at some trouble to himself had complied with your request, and sent you a full statement of the matter directed to Austin, and has not since heard from you on the subject— I promised to call your attention to it in my first letter to you. I shall be at Austin for the next three weeks, and will be glad to hear from you

Very truly your friend

H. P. BEE

Should Gen Lamar be absent my friend, Gen McLeod will open this and give me an answer as I was authorized by Gen. L. to draw on himself or on Gen McLeod for the surveying fees—

No. 2200. THOMAS P. ANDERSON TO LAMAR²

[Newspaper clipping]

Galveston Nov. 15th, 1845.

Gen. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.—

SIR—

The undersigned citizens of Texas, feeling an abiding interest, in their country's welfare, and rejoiced that she is now safely restored to the haven of her political destiny, are disposed to pause at this crisis, and if possible, to ascertain and award "Honor to whom Honor is due."

The question of Annexation has been settled by the people with such an overwhelming unanimity, that the few who opposed it, are now endeavoring with a laudable deference to the public will, to conceal the traces of their past-hostility. If they were content with this, so should we be but when the enemies of the measure, claim a monopoly of the honors, at its fruition we deem it our solemn duty, to deny the boon.

The most prominent of those, who stand in this predicament is Gen. Sam Houston. In his late letter to a committee of the citizens of Washington county, he says, "The measure originated under his administration," and in the course of this, and other attempts, to support his claims to the paternity of a measure, the honor of which we humbly conceive belongs to the spontaneous patriotism of the people, he steps aside unnecessarily we think, to assail your public acts, and character

This, in our estimation, points to you as the proper person to reply— your official conduct has been assailed; it is your right to defend it. A great public measure has been perverted into private intrigue; it is the privilege of your position and services, to record its history.

Your fellow citizens desire that you should speak.

²In No. 2203.

THOS. P. ANDERSON,
 J. W. MOORE,
 JOHN ARMSTRONG,
 SAM'L SLATER,
 AMASA TURNER,
 WM C BYRNE,
 ISRAEL CANFIELD,
 G W CASEY,
 WM. M. COOK,
 J A H CLEAVELAND,
 B H POLOCK,
 H AUSTIN,
 J B REED,
 F MCCLEARLEY,
 M HARDIN,
 J. C. BURNUR,
 JONATHAN BROCK,
 P EDMUNDS,
 L WESCOT,
 THOS M JOSEPH,
 D S TERRY,
 LEVI JONES,
 BENJ. C. FRANKLIN,
 WM. S. FISHER,
 A. C. CRAWFORD,
 J. C. SHAW,
 WM R SMITH,
 WM M CARPER,
 JOHN A SETTLE,
 H. McLEOD,
 J F HUNTINGTON,
 ED S WOOD,
 A J YATES,
 F W MULLER,
 T F HOLLIS,
 B F NEIL,
 SAM'L SANDERSON,
 J DELESDENEER,
 W G OLIVER,
 N J MAYNARD,

D MARSTON JR.
 N D LABIDIE,
 L FROSH,
 J L DARRAGH,
 G K LEWIS,
 ZADOCK HUBBARD,
 JOHN HUFFMAN,
 CHARLES FRESBIE,
 C K RHODES,
 L H BENNETT,
 R. WATSON,
 R ROWED,
 CHAS. BEISSNER,
 O S BREWSTER,
 J A HUESEN,
 N J MAYNARD,
 A SWINGLE,
 R H HOWARD,
 W HOOKE,
 E LEWIS,
 F A WALLEY,
 F GODIN,
 WM F WILSON,
 J A DOE,
 J H LEPERT,
 J A MILLER,
 N S HILL,
 E B ANDREWS,
 F WIEHL,
 WM. L. CAZNEAU,
 A RAMSEY,
 O C WILKINS,
 JAS SHAW,
 CHAS ATKINS,
 H BRYANT,
 J D YOUNG,
 F A PENNY,
 JAS H OLIPHANT,
 A ANGELL,
 J TALBOTT,

No. 2207. JAMES HAMILTON TO LAMAR

[Charleston? South Carolina? 1845?]

SIR.

As you have placed yourself before the American public as the Fidus Achates of the Republic of Texas I desire to examine the grounds on which you rest your claim—

As a Citizen of my adopted Country and as a Native of this State I shall make no apology for addressing you I have read your speeches on the subject of Annexation with an interest I confess which has been cruelly rewarded by an utter disgust for yourself, and by a very slender estimate which I have been compelled to make of your abilities in

throwing so thin a veil over the hypocrisy which placed around your monstrous prejudices.—

[JAMES HAMILTON]

[Added in Lamar's hand:] Louisiana was acquired in 1803— The treaty of Limits with Mexico was made on 12 January 1828. This treaty recites the preamble of the one made with Old Spain in 1819 & is confirmatory of that, making the line described in that, reaffirmed with Mexico in 1828.

The Resolution, recognising Texas Independence by the U S. was introduced into the Congress by Mr Wa[l]ker on the same day & month that Texas declared her Independence— 2nd. March 1837, one year just after

Old Spain never acknowledged the Independence of Mexico until the 28th Decr. 1836— when Texas had acquired her Independence—

When steps were taken in the U S towards the Independence of Mexico The Spanish Minister entered a protest against the act—dated 9th March 1822— disregarding this protest, the US. acknowledged the Independence of Mexico in 1823— On the 25 Sept. Spain renewed her protest against this act of Recognition— On the 26 Octr 1825 she again renewed her protest against said act— Yet in defiance of this the U S dispatched Mr. Poinsett to Mexico with proposals to purchase Texas from this newly established Govt— During all this time Spain was still waging War upon Mexico; and was holding the Castle of Vera Crus so late as 20 Decr. 1825—

US. 3rd March 1837 acknowledge Texas

[Endorsed:] Notes on Texas & Mexico

No. 2208. "RED RIVER SETTLEMENT." LAMAR

[Richmond, Texas, 1845?]

The Line strikes near Pecan point, 20 miles below— above this point up the Red River there were in 1833 but very few inhabitants, not more than 20 families; the country however was just [coming into no]tice; emigration flowed in there rapidly; so that in 10 years that section, voted 1000 strong—embracing the Country now known as Bowie, Red River, Fannin, Lamar. Neil Martin, & Burkham were perhaps the first settlers on the Red River— Martin is esteemd a plain farmer but an excellent man; he removed from the Red River & settled near Nacogdoches where he still lives— Burkham he [was] residing on the Choctaw side, where the Choctaws were removed by the Govt. to that country; Burkham had of consequence to leave; he crossed the river & was still residing there in 1833, few miles above the Spanish Bluff (Ellis' place) between that & Pecan point—

Milaman, [sic] as the Agent of Genl. Wavel was on his way to Pecan point in 1830 with a Commissioner to settle emigrants on Wavel's Grant, when he & the commissioner were stop at Nacogdoches by authority of the Mexican Govt—in consequence of the April Law of 1830—Genl. Teran was appointed Land Commissioner Genl to carry out the Law of 1830— The following posts were established by him in pursuance of this object— Anahuac . . . [mutilated] Col. Bean . . . [mutilated] on the Natches above the Junction— near mouth

of Labacca— Velasco— Tenoxticlan, on the Brazos above Washington,
Ruis commandant—

See the pamphlet written by a young man who was living with Mr.
Adams

[Endorsed:] Red River Settlement

No. 2209. A. YOUNGER TO LAMAR

Robertson County January 21st 1846

Gen M. B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR Col Bigaloe will hand you these lines which is to inform you
that my self and others is tresspassing on your land not of Choise but
necessity compels us to try to raise some corn for our familys

I have only part of my family with me a few hands to make pro-
visions to bring the balance of my family next fall

I shall leave for home in May and would be glad to see you before
I leave as I feel willing to purchase your lands at the prices that lands
is offered for here I have heard that you offer Yours for 50-Cts pr Acre

On the receipt of this please inform me what you Can do in the
matter

Write to Chambers creek or Dallas if Convenient Come and See us
I will meet You at any time or place you will name

Yours respectfully

A. YOUNGER

[Addressed:] Gen. M. B. Lamar Galveston Texas

[Endorsed:] A Younger, to M. B. Lamar

No. 2210. JOHN MACPHERSON BERRIEN TO LAMAR

Washington [D. C.] 13th Febr: '46

SIR,

I had before the receipt of your letter, given to Mr Polk, my testi-
mony in favor of Judge Webb— and although my personal relations
with the President, are kind, I think my political position forbids any
urgency on my part— Indeed, this is the only case, in which I have
thus far interfered— Perhaps also, the simple attestation of Judge
Webbs qualifications, will be quite as efficient, as any urgency, of mine
could be—

I have been taught to expect that you will soon be with us, to at-
tend to these matters yourself, and will be glad to see you

Respectfully Yrs

JNO: MACPHERSON BERRIEN

[Endorsed:] . . . [mutilated] to M. B. Lamar

No. 2212. LAMAR TO BARNARD E. BEE, JR.

Belle Monte [near Austin, Texas,]
25th. Feby 1846.

MY DEAR YOUNG FRIEND,

Having in my possession a Sword which has long been sheathed in
idleness and which is likely to remain so while in my custody, I beg

leave to present it to you, not only because you are the son of my warm, personal and political friend, but because I believe it will, in your hands— pro[ve more] efficient in the service of my country, and more glorious to its wearer. I have hitherto preserved it as a cherished relic, for the reason that I placed it at my side for the first time when voluntarily called upon to command a corps on the memorable occasion of giving welcome to the glorious La Fayette in my native State; and I continued to wear it so long as I had the honor of guiding that corps in the defence of the noblest principles of the noblest man of Georgia— George M. Troup— It having thus been consecrated to such high duties, I could not bear that it should fall into hands which might apply it to ignoble uses; and I, therefore, present it to one, who, if he follow the examples of his father, will never draw it but in defence of just and honorable principles and when drawn, will never sheath it until his object be atchieved— Allow me then to ask your acceptance of it as an evidence of my estimate of your worth and of the sincere regard with which I subscribe myself Your friend— [MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

This letter was written to Lt. Bee, Son of Col. Barnard Bee of South Carolina, on presenting him a sword— he answered the letter, but the answer I never recd.—

M. B. L.

[Addressed:] Lieut. Barnard E. Bee U. S. Army Care of Hon. B. E. Bee

No. 2212a. POEM. LAMAR³

[February? 1846?]

Thou art indeed the poor man's friend,
The rich man's brightest gem,
Thro weal & woe, the brightest light
In night's rich diadem.

Thou art, indeed, a sister star,
To Judah's gem on high;
A lovely light, that guides aright,
For all to wander by.

No. 2213. DAVID RUSK TO LAMAR

Nacogdoches 5th March 1846

DEAR GENERAL I some time since made application to the President of the United States for the appointment of Marshall of the State of Texas or If you divided for the Eastern District If you are not already committed to some other friend upon this subject and feel a willingness to recommend me. I will take it as a particular favor I have already the Recommendation of many Respectable men but am satisfied yours would have great weight and I, feel anxious to go well recommended as I apprehend Genl Sam Houston will be against me

With Great Respect your

Friend & obt Servt

DAVID RUSK

[Addressed:] Genl Mirabeau. B. Lamar Austin Texas. Care of Col H McLeod

[Endorsed:] David Burk Nacagdoshes to M. B. Lamar

³With No. 2212.

No. 2214. SAMUEL M. WILLIAMS TO THE VOTERS OF THE
SECOND CONGRESSIONAL DISTRICT

[Broadside]

Fellow Citizens.

My name is before you as a candidate for your suffrages to represent you in the Congress of the Union. And in soliciting you to cast your votes for me it is but reasonable to presume that you will require some declaration from me of my political faith. With your permission I will premise by saying that I emigrated from the United States at a period when there did not exist any party, for Mr Monroe was then President, and the old parties of Federalist and Republicans had ceased, and the present parties of Whig and Democrat had not been formed.

I was brought up in the school of Jeffersonian democracy and was in favor of General Jackson, so far as opinion, for the Presidency of the United States. In this however, I might have been governed by my interest for being in Texas I certainly did feel and believe that the well being of Texas was more likely to be promoted by a President from the Western or Southern portion of the States, than by one from the Northern or Eastern portion. It is now the duty of a Citizen of Texas to support the present administration of the country, for to that is due the credit of our now forming one of the States of that Union—and without doubt Texas will require that from her representatives and I believe that every candidate now before you or who may present himself for your suffrages will cheerfully assent to that doctrine.

It is my opinion that the best interest of our State will be promoted by a prompt arrangement of our public debt—and to me no plan appears so feasible as that of contracting with the General Government for the liquidation of that debt, by a transfer in trust of our Public domain—making such reservation by percentage of the proceeds of the sales as will carry out the views of the State on the subject of public education, and so soon as the proceeds of the sales shall have liquidated the debt, that a portion of what may be then produced shall be paid to the Treasury of the State for the support of our State Government.

I think it will be admitted, however desirable that the State should control its [own] domain, that the State of Texas has not the means, and cannot control an amount necessary to defray the expenses of surveying the public lands and consequently a transfer of them to the General Government is almost imperative. For all I think will admit that a just and equitable liquidation of the public debt is very desirable for the credit of the State.

How far the opinion of Internal Improvement may find favor with the Congress is problematical, yet it is certainly very desirable to Texas to have the Navigation of her Rivers improved by removing the existing obstructions—for certainly the more easy transportation is rendered the more prompt and efficient must be the means of public defence, and if this doctrine cannot be favored a reservation from land sales should be made to produce a result so desirable for Texas.

On the subject of the Tariff, I have always been in favor of as low a rate of import duties as will be sufficient to cover the expense of Government One portion of Texas, the district lying below the parallel of 30° north latitude will be benefitted by a continuation of the duty

on Sugar, for by that an increased value would be given to the lands; but the mass of the inhabitants are consumers, and consequently desire every description of manufactures as cheap as they can be afforded, and will naturally desire that this state, on the question of protection, should join her sister states of the South and West, who are for a reduction of duty to the revenue standard.

It has been suggested to me that there exists an opposition to me on account of the result of my mission in Mexico in 1843 in conjunction with Col. Hockley, it being generally believed that the commissioners exceeded or did not follow their instructions. I think that every candid and unprejudiced mind will cease to entertain such opinions by referring to the origin of the mission. The government of Mexico never did propose nor agree to receive commissioners from the Republic of Texas; and the proposition made by that government through the English Minister at Mexico, was clear and explicit that they would receive commissioners only upon the basis and plan proposed by the government of Mexico, upon which position Col. Hockley and myself were appointed. Thus the government of Texas was obliged either to refuse the overture, or accept it, turning a deaf ear, or passing over unnoticed, the term of revolted province or department, as Texas was styled in the proposals for an armistice. The commissioners were required to exert themselves to produce a cessation of hostilities with a hope that future negotiation, to be carried on at the Capitol of Mexico might be productive of more favorable propositions, and lead to the acknowledgement of the Independence of Texas. The commissioners were required to exert themselves as best they might to produce delay, and if possible gain time so that Mexico through the interest of the government of England might be induced to receive a mission from Texas to negotiate for its independence; for the government of Texas would not proceed beyond the mere effort to create an armistice on account of the nature of the propositions presented through the agency of the English Minister.

The commissioners had agreed with the Mexicans commissioners, upon an armistice under the approbation of Gen. Woll— which was honorable to Texas.— Gen. Woll only dissenting to the requisition of the Texas commissioners that the military posts of Laredo and Brassos Santiago should be abandoned. The negotiation entered into by the government of the U. S. and Texas for annexation produced a very hostile feeling in Mexico toward Texas and the U. S.; the commissioners were looked upon as endeavoring to further that negotiation by entrapping Mexico into an armistice, and were obliged to leave Mexico without effecting any thing favorable; and by signing the document presented by the Mexican government did not exceed their instructions or place the government and people of Texas in a worse position than the precise position both occupied at the time they set forth on their mission, for, as before mentioned, they were not appointed by any agreement on the part of Mexico to receive commissioners from the Republic of Texas but solely on propositions presented.

To the Settlers within the limits of what was Austin's Colonies, I have to say that I trust they will recollect olden times, and grant me the pleasure of their votes; and to the inhabitants of the West I confidently refer, as my feelings and my opinions have always been in their

favor and their support, when I had any influence to exercise; and whether I am or not elected, I shall hail with pleasure their suffrages.
Your obt. Servant.

SAMUEL M: WILLIAMS.

Galveston March 13, 1846.

[Endorsed:] to the voters of the 2nd Congressional District

No. 2220. GAZAWAY B. LAMAR TO LAMAR

Brooklyn 14th May 1846

Genl M B LAMAR

DR COUSIN

By a letter I recd yesterday from my sister Rebecca, I learn that between you & Genl McLeod there is some misconception of what I wrote to her, or of what he has written to you relative to the 1200\$ I sent you from Savannah— & that you were pressing and sacrificing the Sales of your Lands to repay it—

To begin I never wrote anything in any way calling for the repayment— my letter alluded entirely to the Liens which you were to have placed in my hands prior to the loan— & when I sent the Check were requested to be placed with Genl or Mr McLeod— *to secure the payment*— & I I [*sic*] took occasion to scold you for not only neglecting both— but that you had not sent me so much of an acknowledgment of the debt— By which I could prove it in case of death—

This has been my offence & no more— & any thing beyond it, asking repayment is a misrepresentation some where— & any sacrifices you have made or may make in consequence, are altogether supererogatory as to me—

I hope you have secured the Titles to my Lands— & will send them to me— & if they will command \$2.00 pr acre I will sell out for Cash only— If any one is settled on my Land get a written acknowledgment & an obligation to give possession on demand or give him notice to quit forthwith—

We have had a/c from Genl Taylor's army up to the Capture of the detachment of Dragoons under Capt Thornton— Congress has declared *quasi War* & appropriated 10 millions Dollars & to raise 50 000 Volunteers to bring it to a speedy conclusion—

I think they have acted prematurely & unwisely— & on a false ground— And I am prepared to hear soon that Genl Taylor has driven them back across the Rio Grande or that they are Captured or dispersed

If you have not sold the Land you need not to pay me, but place the papers as before requested with a Lien on them so that in any event, I may have a claim & security for it— This is what I have to give beforehand for all loans I get— & glad to get them so—

I meant this 1200\$ as an accommodation to keep you & old Houston apart & if it has been used otherwise, I regret it— for that reason—

Yours truly

G B LAMAR

[Addressed:] Genl M. B. Lamar Point Isabel Texas Politeness of Gen Cazneau

[Endorsed:] G. B. Lamar to M B Lamar

No. 2222. STATEMENT OF JOHN SIBLEY

Genl. McLeod has in his possession a mule branded U. S. which was given [?] to him to replace a mule that was accidentally taken by one asst Qr Mr at Point Isabel and issued as a pack [?] mule to the Minute Texas Volunteers—

J. SIBLEY Capt & Qr M.

Matamoras Augt 13. 1846

Transferred to A Commissary &c Return this— A. Com

No. 2223. FRANK S. EARLY TO LAMAR

Carmargo [Mexico] August 31st 1846

DEAR GENERAL

I write to request of you the favour to have made for me a correct copy of the election returns of our Regimental officers. I wish all accurate, as I may, perhaps, find it my privilege, if not, a duty to myself, to avail myself of some irregularities, to contend for what I conceive to be my rights. This is a favour of some magnitude but I know of none to whom I could apply with more confidence, than to yourself

Please send back the copies by return of Lieut Howard

Very respectfully yr obt Servt

FRANK S EARLY Capt &c

[Addressed:] Genl. M. B. Lamar Comargo favr of Lieut Howard

[Endorsed:] Frank S. Early to M B Lamar

No. 2224. POWER OF ATTORNEY FROM GABRIEL CALAVA

[Translation from the Spanish] China, Sept. 16, 184[6]

I give power of attorney to my servant Pedro Guarjardo in order that he may receive from the [Quar]termaster of the forces [which have gone] today from the River to . . . [mutilated] Let Your Excellency give the six pesos, for a load of corn which is furnished to the sick, and to Gen. Marlebo Lemá, and besides the pack of the four mules that go as fas as . . . [mutilated] Thus the Hon. Gen. Guinn [Winn?] has assured it to me.

GABRIEL CALAVA [Rubric]

Monterrey Sepr. 20, 1846

Recd. of M. B. Lamar, Division Inspector of the Texas forces, Three dollars in payment for nine Almudes of corn furnished him in China—

Attest WALTER WINN

his
PEDRO X GUAJARA
mark

No. 2230. LAMAR TO ——— COFFEE

Camargo 25th Oct 1846

Col COFFEE

First Regt Ala Volunteers

SIR— I had occasion whilst in Matamoras to put the question to Maj Bliss Asst Ajdt Genl to the Commander in Chief as to the legal and

proper mode of having a private of one Company transfered to another, I was induced to do this in consequence of a desire on the part of one of Coln Johnsons men of foot infantry to join the Texas Mounted Riflemen,

I received in reply, as well as I now remember, the following decision as coming Head Quarters itself.—viz— that the Consent of the Commander in Chief was necessary to the “*discharge*” of a soldier but that the “*transfer*” of a soldier from one Company to another, required only the consent of the Capt, and the approval of the Colonel, I think it was upon this decision, and in this manner that private Alston of the Galveston foot Company was transfered to the Regiment of Texas Mounted Riflemen, Believing— such to be the law, and the custom, I did not suppose that any difficulty could arise in having private Hill,— Company “E” of your Regiment transfered to my Command, after his having received the consent of his Captain and yourself, I am told however, that Gnl Patterson will not allow the desired transfer to be made, His reasons for refusing the request I have not been informed of, They may be very just and substantial, and if understood might prove altogether satisfactory; but neither Mr Hill nor myself having any right to demand an explanation of his views and motives, it becomes us both to submit to the decision as readily without a reason, as with one, As the matter however is one of some little feeling with me, (the nature of which you understand,) I shall take the liberty of appealing to Genl Taylor upon the subject, and if a favorable answer shall be recd from him, I hope that I may find a ready renewal of Your consent to the transfer, as well as the friendly acquiescence of Capt. Shelby, Mr Hill is a very young man,— is my near relation, and desires the benefits of my counsils and guardianship,— has performed his duty as a good soldier, his transfer will be gratifying to his parents and probably to himself, and can prove no possible detriment to the public service, His time will not be abridged by the transfer, nor will his activity be diminished, Under these circumstances, if you might assume the responsibility of laying them before Genl Patterson in person, it is more than probable his consent might yet be obtained before my departure, I shall leave some time tomorrow

Yours Respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

[Endorsed:] M B Lamar to Col Coffee

No. 2231. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Camp Martinario [?] Nov 7th 1846

Capt. Comdg. Lorado Guards

SIR I have the honor to Report, that a member (private) belonging to your Command viz John Criswell has acted as I believe improperly, for the general welfare, desire, and happiness of the Command it is only necessary for each one to do his duty promptly. and at the same time be Respectfull to their Officers and not to act Contemptuously. on the 6th Inst. the said Criswell was mildly Requested by myself to Remain behind and not Ride in front of the pack mules— his Reply

was *by God*. I am not to be Commanded by you Lieutenant Veatch is here—

from what I understand to be your Orders from Maj'r Genl. Taylor I have felt it to be a duty which I owe to the service— to make this Report.

Verry Respectfully Sir Your Obedt Sev't
THOS M LIKENS Leut A.A.Q M

No. 2232. HUGH McLEOD TO LAMAR

Galveston November 10th 1846

DEAR GENL,

Your letter with enclosures to Mr Moreland Magee &c— & also to Evans & Judge Webb came to hand by McLane. The letters have been sent, & I am offering the carriage for sale, but everybody complains of its weight, and sale will be difficult on that account—

We are in tolerable health, Poor Fisher died last month very suddenly as you have heard before this— The cotton crop is scant, & business dull—

I didn't run for Congress, because the West was already fixed & no interest taken— & the renomination by Herbert's Company never reached me till McLane came after the election— I think Pillsberry will be elected— The returns, as far as in, show Williams far behind where he was last year.

Caz's Father is staying with us— Where is Caz?— Has he made anything, & Cant you aid him in future—

Yours ever

Gen M B Lamar

H McLEOD

[Endorsed:] H. McLeod— to Gen. Lamar 11/10 Sale of carriage?

No. 2234. ANDRES MARTINEZ TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Constitutional Court In session

This court of my charge will entertain your petition, having your note published to become effective the first feast day, in order that it may have wider publicity because at that time the greater part of the residents of this municipality are assembled. In answering you I have the satisfaction of expressing my appreciation and respect.—

God and Liberty.

Laredo November 12, 1846.

ANDRES MARTINEZ [Rubric]

[Addressed:] The Hon. Mirabeau B. Lamar Captain Commandant of Laredo.

[Endorsed:] Andrew Martinez to M B Lamar

No. 2235. LAMAR TO FORBES BRITTON

Laredo 16th Novr. 1846

Lieutenant BRITTON

Commissary of Comargo

SIR

By order of Genl Patterson, my Quarter Master has had to pay Two hundred dollars or more for debts contracted by the steamer Major

Brown, which leaves him without the means of paying for the beef which my command is obliged to have. He is at present purchasing this article on a short credit with the expectation of receiving additional funds from your Department to meet the debt, and also to provide future supplies. The necessity, therefore, of calling upon you for two hundred dollars more, out of the subsistence fund is obvious; and if you can cause this amount to be conveyed to me, without the necessity of my sending to Comargo for it, you will greatly oblige me.

Yours respectfully.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

No. 2237. LAMAR TO GEORGE ARCHIBALD McCALL

Loredo [16?] Novemr. 1846

Majr. ——— McCALL, Assis't Adg't Genl.

SIR

Yours of the — inst has been received, and in compliance with the wishes of Genl. Patterson, I shall not fail to extend all the facilities in my power to Lieut ——— which he may require for the removal of his troops from this place to Comargo. I beg leave, however, to express my regret that he has been called from a duty which I regard as of some importance, and which I believe he can perform with more efficiency than I shall be able to do— I mean the guarding of the Steamer, Major Brown, and the preservation of its contents, whatever they may be. This is a service which can be more readily executed by infantry than by mounted Rangers; and had better be confided to Regulars than to Volunteers. A few troops only, would be necessary to the task; and I would respectfully suggest the propriety of allowing a small portion of Lieut. ———'s command to remain with the boat, or others to be detailed in their place. Such a force, however small, would be further useful as a stationary guard to the town, when I might find it necessary to employ my troops on the Western side of the Rio Grande, or to send them out on scouting and other purposes. This suggestion is offered, from no desire to abridge the duties of my own command; but from a belief that the public interest will be subserved by the course recommended.

Yours very respectfully,

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR Capt. Loredo Guards

No. 2238. MARIA ANTONIA TREVIÑA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Doña Maria Antonia Treviño requests the honor of your presence at the funeral and interment of her husband D. Fernando de Vidaurre, deceased; which will be held at 5 this afternoon; the double stroke of the bell serving as announcement; and for which [courtesy] she will be grateful.—

Laredo November 17, 1846.

To the Hon. Comr. Mirabeau B. Lamar.—

No. 2239. SETH WILLIAMS TO LAMAR

Head Quarters, 2nd Division Army of occupation
Camargo, Nov 22d 1846

SIR,

I am instructed by the General Commanding to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 16th. inst—

The general directs me to say in reply, that it was never intended that the Captain of the Major Brown, should leave her, on the contrary he was expressly instructed to stay by her, until the water should be sufficiently high to bring her down the river—all that was expected of your command, was simply, to afford protection to the boat—

I am sir Very respectfully Your obdt Servant

SETH WILLIAMS 2d Lt & A.A.D.C

To/ Captain Mirabeau, B, Lamar— Capt of the Laredo Garrison
Laredo

[Endorsed:] Seth Williams 2nd Lt A.A. Q. M. Camargo to M B
Lamar

No. 2240. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO F. BRITTON

Laredo Garrison Texas Nov. 26th 1846
Subsistance Dept.

SIR

I have the honor to acknowledg the Ret of \$300. three hundred dollars in Treasury drafts on the 21st November Inst. by the hand of Mr. Hancock. Compelled to use the funds I was driven to the necessity of making a shave on part of the amount.

Very Respectfully sir your Obedient Servant

(Sign, THOS. M. LIKENS Luet A.A.C.S

1st Leut F. Britton U.S. A A.C. S— Comargo Qmr Dept,

I certify that the foregoing letters of Leut, Likins to Leut. Britton and the other to Capt G. H. Crossman are true copies of two letters which I found recorded in one of the Books kept by said Leut. Likens whilst acting as Quartermaster & Comassary of the Laredo Garrison

J. M. CLAY

No. 2242. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO G. H. CROSSMAN*

Laredo Garrison Nov 27th 1846

SIR

My helth is so feeble that I am unable to attend the Escort to Camargo I presume however that it is not important that I go down, as Leut Veatch who has command of the Escort is known to you, and will answer all the purpose that I could were I present,

I am quite in arrears for lack of funds

Very Respectfully Sir your obt. Sevt.

(Signed) THOS. M. LIKENS, Lieut. A.A.Q.M.

Capt. G. H. Crossman, U. S. Army

*Certification of J. M. Clay attached. See No. 2240.

No. 2244. LAMAR TO G. H. CROSSMAN

Laredo Novr. 1846.

Capt. CROSSMAN

Quartermaster at Comargo

SIR,

The funds of my Quartermaster are exhausted; and he is now purchasing corn for the command on a short credit. It becomes necessary therefore to apply to your Department for additional means; and, if, in meeting the demand, you can have the money conveyed to this place, without the necessity of my sending to Comargo for it, you will greatly relieve me. Whatever amount you may think proper to forward, you will please direct it to my charge, inasmuch as I have reason to believe that its custody and disbursement by me will be more satisfactory to the command, and will enable me to keep down those jealousies and strifes, which sometimes occur in the volunteer service between the men and their officers.

Yours respectfully
MIRABEAU B. LAMAR Capt. Laredo Garrison.

No. 2245. G. H. JONES TO LAMAR

San Antonio Dec 1st 1846

Col LAMAR

DEAR SIR

I understand you have been stationed at Larado and have not yet appointed a Sutler for your Command. If I could receive the appointment I would without delay bring over Such Articles as your men would stand in need of— If their is to be a Sutler appointed for that post I should like much to have your interest in my behalf— I have been as you are well aware a long time in the Cavalry and spent most of my time with & as a Texas Ranger under Col Hays— My Brother is here with goods and will afford me every facility to successfully serve you and your command— Should you favor this application please have the appointment regularly made out so that I can show my Brother and others upon what conditions I go to Larado it will help me much in procuring Everything that may be wanted to complete an assortment such as I well know Volunteers want—

Please hand your answer to this to Mr Tucker he will send it to me without delay & in 12 days after I read the answer if favourable I will be with you

Respectfully Your Obdt Sevt

G. H. JONES

[Addressed:] Col Lamar Lorado Rio Grande pr Mr Tucker

[Endorsed:] G H Jones to M. B Lamar

No. 2246. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 2nd Decr. 1846

Lieut. THOS. M. LIKINS

Qur. Mas. & Commissary to the Laredo Guards.

SIR as I am desirous of sending to Camargo Soon I would be glad

you would place your accounts in form of Monthly returns, as I can thereby the more readily inspect them— a duty made incumbent upon me by instruction—

I am very desirous of making a full & ample report of the State of my Command & every thing Connected with it; the close of the month presents a Convenient opportunity of ascertaining the expiditures of the Commissary & quarter Masters departments— you will therefore oblige me in the presentation of your monthly accounts. In consideration of your health I have requested the first Lieut to give you assistance, should you need it, in the arrangement of your papers.

Yours respectfully
[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR] Capt Comadig at Larado—

No. 2247. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo, 4th— Decer 1846.

Lieut. T. M. LIKINS,

SIR,

In my Instructions it is made my duty to arrest my subordinates whenever I deem such a course to be necessary to the integrity of the public service. The words of my instructions are these— “Officers whose conduct may require, will be placed in arrest, and reported to Hd. Qrs.”— I regret that you have compelled me to enforce this order against yourself. You will, therefore, receive this as a notification of your arrest. The grounds of this arrest will be duly reported to Head Quarters.

Yours & C

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Capt. Commanding the Garrison at Laredo—

No. 2248. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Laredo Garrison Texas Decr 4th 1846

SIR

Your note giving me notice “The general dissatisfaction which prevails in your Company Constrains you to Relieve me from the further discharge of the duties of the of [sic] Quartermaster & Commissary & C

In answer I will Remark, that if I have been delinquent or unfaithful in the discharge of any of the duties which have devolved upon me as A. A. Q. M. or A. A. C. S. to the Laredo guards, I hold that it is due to myself to demand Respectfully a trial by Court Martial— if then upon a patient and *fair* investigation of my conduct and Acts— I be Condemned and found guilty of Conduct or acts improper— I bow with submission to that decision I also take the Liberty to give notice Sir that— I myself shall in due time demand a Court martial and prefer charges, This I feel that I am forced and driven to in self-defense—

In order to comply with your last Request, I will also Remark that it will be extremely difficult for me to make my Returns, until I get

full and Complete forage and provision Returns— from 9th Sept^r up to date— these Returns I at every issue have demand of the sergeant—

Were these Returns furnished me I Could then without difficulty make my Returns—

I shall offer these as my Reasons before the proper officers for not making my monthly Returns— If I Cannot obtain them—

Verry Respectfully Sir your Obedt. Sev^t—

THOS M LIKENS Liut A. A. Q M & A A C S

[Addressed:] Capt M. B. Lamar Comdg. Laredo Guards Present

No. 2249. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 5th. [4th] Decr. 1846.

Lieut. THOS. M. LIKINS

SIR

The general dissatisfaction that prevails against your administration of the Quartermaster and Commissary departments of the Garrison at Laredo, constrains me to relieve you from the further discharge of their duties. You will, therefore, deliver the public stores & property in your possession, to private Jas. M. Clay who is authorised to receipt to you for the same. I will be pleased to have you make out your monthly returns and lay before me a full exhibit of the affairs of your office, at a period as early as practicable—

Yours & C

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

Capt. Commanding the Garrison at Laredo.

No. 2250. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 4th Decr. 1846.

Lieut. THOS. M. LIKINS

SIR

In reply to a portion of your note of this date, I beg leave to say, that the Forage returns or requisitions you allude to as being indispensable to your Settlement I suppose to be those which were made out by yourself & placed in my hands for approval. They were first handed to me by yourself with a request that I would sign them. I, however, referred them to the inspection of Sargent Peace, who reported that they were in some particulars, incorrect. The corrections which he suggested, you adopted (as I understood from him) and they were re-delivered to me for my signature. I have them still in possession; and if they constitute the only obstacle to a full and satisfactory exposition of your affairs, I am ready to give them my signature (provided they are correct) whenever you shall present your papers for inspection. All that I require is a plain and simple statement of the amount of Corn and beef which you have purchased; the prices paid; and an exhibit of the corroborating vouchers. Let this be done; and the same in reference to incidental expenses, and I ask no more. Unwilling to take any steps in relation to yourself without being fully apprised of it, I feel it incumbent to inform you that I shall dispatch

a messenger tomorrow morning to Comargo, to apprise the Quartermaster and Commissary at that place of the state of arrest under which I have been forced to place you. I do this as a precautionary step against any attempt that may be made to draw further supplies from their departments without my authority.— It may be useful also to embrace this opportunity of correcting an error of date which occurred in my first note of this morning dated the 5th when it should have been the 4th—

Yours & C

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

Capt. Commanding the Garrison at Laredo

[Addressed:] Lieut. Thos. M. Likens Present

No. 2251. LAMAR TO G. H. CROSSMAN

Laredo 4th. Decr. 1846.

Capt. CROSSMAN A. Qr. Master
Comargo—

SIR

I have been compelled to place Lieutenant Thos. M. Likens my Qr. Master & Commissary, in arrest. I can no longer confide the public funds into his hands. You will please, therefore, for the future not to honor any draft which he may make on your Department. I would be pleased that you would notify the Commissary at Comargo. to the same effect. The Garrison here is much in want of funds, and I shall have very soon to ask you for additional supply, Lieutenant Likens refuses to make the required returns of his department; but I hope to be able, notwithstanding his concealment, to furnish a satisfactory exhibit—

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR,

Capt. Commanding at Laredo

No. 2252. STATEMENT OF G. W. PIERCE

Having been Called upon to make a statement Concerning the sale of a Patent scale to Thomas M. Likens Quartermaster the following may be relied upon as substantially true.

Soon after the organization of this Company to which I am attached I sold to Thomas M. Likens (Q.M) a scale for which he agreed to pay me \$4. a few days after he paid me the \$4. saying at the time perhaps he would give me another \$1 soon after arriving at this place (Laredo) he Called upon me for a receipt, remarking that he had another dollar for me I gave him my receipt for \$5, some two or three weeks subsequently, I was at his office, when he said to me that he would have to take my receipt again. and in regular form, to which I made no objections, in preparing for my signature to his formal receipt. he said that the scale he bought of me was broken and that he had purchased another, (I think he said of a mexican) for which he paid \$4, And would include the Amt. in my receipt making the total \$9. I without a moments reflection with regard to the impropriety

of the act, or of the position in which it would place me signed it, in a short time after this, I accidentally saw the scale aboard the steamer; Maj Brown, lying in the River at this place) which recalled to my mind the remark of the Quartermaster Concerning it. I therefore examined it, and to my surprise found it precisely in the same condition as when I first delivered it to him Q. M.

I then began to reflect and Could not conceive his object if any for saying it was broken. at the same time began to think more seriously. and feeling the delicacy of my position I sought a favorable opportunity of apprizing Lieutenant Veatch of the same that the error might be Corrected

Laredo Decr. 4th. 1846

G. W. PIERCE

[Endorsed:] Private

No. 2253. JOHN A. VEATCH TO THOMAS BELL

[Laredo, Texas, December 4, 1846]

Mr BELL

SIR,

You expressed, yesterday, a willingness to give a written Statement of Certain facts Connected with a transaction between yourself and Leut Thos. M Likens in which you became possessed of a draft to the amt of \$50— from the said Likens.

By Complying immediately with your promise you will Confer a favor. Mr Hickey will wait on you for that purpose

Yours Respy

(Signed) JNO. A VEATCH

[Endorsed: Lieut Jno. A. Veatch letter to Thomas Bell

No. 2254. T. BELL TO JOHN A. VEATCH

Laredo 4 Decr. 1846.

Lieut. JNO. A. VEATCH

SIR

In reply to your note of this date, in relation to a certain transaction between Lieut. Likins of the Loredo Guards and myself, I have briefly to state, that about 14 days ago, he and myself were engaged in a game at Cards when I won from him the sum Ten dollars which he paid immediately by endorsing and presenting to me a Treasury or Government note for fifty dollars, which I received and gave him in Change forty dollars. The Note or paper received from him I still hold. It is dated 31st August 1846 numbered 3843, Payable to Lieut. Col. J. Taylor and endorsed by him to Lieut Britton; and finally endorsed by said Likins at the time of the transaction referred to— The endorsement read thus. "T. M. Likins Lieut A.A.C.S. Loredo Garrison, 21st Novr. 1846."—

Yours respectfully— T. BELL

Attest Jno. B. Hickey

[Addressed:] Lieut. Jno. A. Veatch present.

No. 2257. HUGH REED'S STATEMENT

Laredo 6th Decer. 1846

I do hereby certify that I made for Lieut. Thos. M. Likins, a Desk for the use of his office out of the public plank belonging to the Steamer Major Brown; the same being done by order & consent of Capt. Sterling. I placed upon the desk, a Lock belonging to myself which I valued highly and for which I have refused \$2.25 cts.— On delivering the desk to Lieut. Likens, he slipped fifty cents into my hand as payment for said lock; which I did not resent at the time; but took an occasion subsequently to express my dissatisfaction at the conduct. When Lieut. Likins was called upon by order of Capt. Lamar for the key, he then offered me an additional dollar and fifty cents; claimed the desk as private property, and requested me to state that he had paid me for the same. This I refused to do; and told him that I would prefer to return him his money and take back my lock. On being further importuned to say for him that he had paid me for the desk, I told him that I should say nothing about the matter at all, unless called upon; and if called upon, then I would not tell a lie for him. He asked me at the same time to say that I had received payment for a feed-trough which I had also made him out of the public plank, and which he was claiming as private property.— Having never recd pay from him, I replied to him as I Had done before that I would not tell a lie for him.

Attest MARK STERLING

HUGH REED

Carpenter of the Major Brown U S
Capt Mark Sterling

No. 2258. WILLIAM H. WILLIAMS'S STATEMENT

[Laredo, Texas, December 6? 1846]

Having been called on to state what I know with regard to Lieut. Thos. M. Likens' habitual gambling I say that I have been intimately acquainted with his manner of life Since the Organization of Captain Lamar's Company, particularly Since its arrival at this place. I can therefore certify that to my own knowledge scarcely a day or night has pass'd without his having play'd cards for money, with some of the privates of the company; that the Quarter Master's office was the general resort, particularly at night, for all those who were in the habit of gaming; that he played Cards almost every night untill a late hour, losing considerable sums at times which he payed, as I believed out of public funds. In betting he was generally unsuccessful and my impression is that he lost much more than he won. I have often heard him declare that his private funds were exhausted yet on the same day I have seen him loose money at cards. I have known him to win a *shirt* from one of the privates of the Company and exact its payment.

WM H. WILLIAMS 3. Corporal Lorado Guards

[Endorsed:] W. H. Williams Certificate

No. 2259. ANONYMOUS TO JOHN A. VEATCH

Laredo 6th Decr. 1846.

SIR,

In answer to a verbal enquiry in relation to an order from Genl. Patterson for my arrest at Comargo, I have to offer the following statement of facts—

For a trifling folly committed in a moment of frolick, myself and two others belonging to Cap. Lamar's company were put under arrest; I broke custody and escaped to my quarters. On the next day if I mistake not, I was informed by Lieut. Thos. M. Likins, then in charge of the company that Capt. Lamar had recd an order to deliver me up to the guard in Comargo; and he offered me his pistols, to resist the arrest if attempted. I accepted the proffered arms, but had neither the inclination nor the occasion to resort to them— My conduct I freely admit was foolish and imprudent, and my only apology for it, was the artificial excitement under which I was laboring at the time; and for this folly, I was stricken from the Rolls by Capt. Lamar . . . [incomplete]

No. 2260. EDWIN R. CLAY'S STATEMENT

Laredo Garrison Dec 6th 1846

I certify on honor that I have seen Lieut. Thomas M Likins gambling time after time, I have seen him lose as much as twenty dollars at a time, and I have seen him playing until he said he had lost all the money he had with him, I have seen him win at some times, I also certify that I have seen him play at cards with his money on the table, and have seen him play nearly all night in different places with the privates of the company to which he belongs, and have seen him lose much more than I ever saw him win, I also certify that I have seen him gambling at cards in the Quarter Master's department until very late at night with the privates of the company commanded by Capt M. B. Lamar the company to which he belongs, I have also heard him speak disrespectfully of the first Lieut, and say he intended to see that he attended to his own business and not interfere with his, This remark was called forth in consequence of Lieut. Veatch remonstrating against the quality of the beef and corn furnished to the company, I heard him say at Monterey Mexico soon after the company was made up, that he accepted the office of adjutant of Col. Wood's regiment for the honor of the thing, but said he accepted the office of Quarter Master of Capt Lamar's company so that he might have a chance to grease his fingers

EDWIN R. CLAY Private Lamar's Company

No. 2261. ANONYMOUS STATEMENT

Laredo 6th. Decr 1846.

I do hereby certify that I was called upon by Lieut. Thos. M. Likins to sign my name, in this place about two weeks ago, to a paper the nature and object of which I knew nothing at the time, and still remain in a state of ignorance. There had never been any pecuniary

transactions of any kind between Lieut. Likins and myself, with the exception of my having received from him Six dollars at Mier which was paid me for services rendered as interpreter, and for which I signed a receipt. When he applied to me here for my signature, he said that the other paper would not do, and that I must give him another. What he alluded to or meant, I did not distinctly understand, but I suppose it was the receipt I gave him in Mier. The paper I signed here was a printed one and I placed my name on it in two places

No. 2262. E. H. WINFIELD TO LAMAR

Camargo Mexico Decr. 1846.

DEAR SIR

I herewith send you a few old "Pickayunes." they contain some few items of Interest from the Gulf— I regret that I cannot send you some others but they are not *Comeatable* write me what facilities you have to procure such things, and if, is not good, I will send you such as I may chance to get possession of;—

We have nothing official from the Army that would interest you, You have I presume ere this, learned the Departure of Genl. Paterson for Tampeco. Col Reily is Stationed at Mont Moralez with the 2nd Regt of Regulars— The first Regt of Tennessee Vol— will leave on the 8th to to [*sic*] reinforce him— two Regts of Ill. Vol. are on the march for Victoria— we have a report here, that the Mexicans are Fortifying that Point

There is a *talk* in Town this morning that San Anna is *en route* for Monterey with twenty thousand men to retake the Town There are very few who believe this report— I am among the unbelievers.

Since you left Mrs. W. has has a very violent attack of Sickness— I have rarely seen her suffer so much, She is now convalescent and able to give her attention to Domestic a[[ffairs.] She desires to be kindly mentioned to you—

I learned yesterday by letter from Galveston that Judge Pilsbury was reelected to Congress beating Sam Williams 30 votes— Nothing else from there of Importance— It was thought in Galveston says my Correspondent that Scurry will receive a majority of Votes in the Eastern District— that Kaufmans *Printed Boundry* speech used him up— enough I think— We have moved our quarters since you left. We occupy the large Stone building that was occupied by Capt Britton— He wished us to take it— telling us that the one we occupied was too small for business— Genl. we have but few Brittons in our Army— In fact his equal as a Gentleman in every particular I have seldom met— Since the Departure of Genl Patterson, and the installment of Genl Marshall as Commander of the station, I have every privilege that I desire— in fact facilities are offered us—

We started John Home day before yesterday to remain with his Sisters

I shall expect a long letter from you on the receipt of this— and if I can serve you at any time in this place you have me at Command—

Your friend

E. H. WINFIELD

P. S. I have applied to Capt Polk for the appointment of Com-

missary in you U. S. A. I send him Strong Papers— but *cant* tell what will be the result—

[Addressed:] Genl. Mirabeau B. Lamar Commanding Laredo Garrison Texas

No. 2263. FELIPE SAN MIGUEL'S STATEMENT

Laredo 7th Decr 1846.

I, Felipe San Miguel, a citizen of Laredo, do hereby Certify that I was employed in hauling public stores from the river on the arrival of the troops in this place. I received in payment for the same the sum of Three dollars and fifty cents, from Lieut. Thos. M. Likins for which I have my receipt.

his
FELIPE X SAN MIGUEL
mark

Witness TOMAS FLORES [Rubric]
F. M. PATE

No. 2264. ANDRES MARTINES'S STATEMENT

Laredo 7th 1846

I do hereby Certify that I received from Lieut Thomas M. Likens the sum of Five dollars in payment for the use of my Cart and oxen in hauling Coal and that the said Likens in drawing a receipt for the same increased the Amount to nine dollars, giving as his reasons for the same that he wished to include in my receipt the sum of four dollars, which he had paid to another person for hauling the public stores from the river, and for which he had neglected to take a receipt, not suspecting any thing improper in the act. I gave my signature to the receipt as he had written it for Nine dollars. I have seen the Certificate of Felipe San Miguel in relation to this subject and know him to be the person employed in hauling the public stores, as stated in his Certificate— I further Certify that immediately after signing the above mentioned receipt for nine dollars, he demanded Another receipt of me for Sixty odd dollars in payment for a beef which I had recently sold him for ten dollars, still assigning as a reason that he wished to Cover some purchases which he had made without taking receipts, at the suggestion of the interpreter I declined to give my signature and refered the Lieutenant to the individuals of whom he had made his purchases.

ANDRES MARTINES [Rubric]

Witness A PARKER
TOMAS FLORES [Rubric]

Laredo Decr. 7th 1846

I certify that I was acting as Interpreter at the time the Circumstances mentioned in the foregoing Certificate of the Alcalde occurred, and Can testify to the truth of the facts as set forth.

J. A. WILKINSON

[Endorsed:] Andres Martines and Mr Wilkinsons Certificate

No. 2265. JOHN B. HICKEY'S STATEMENT

Having been Called upon by Lieut Jno. A. Veatch to furnish a Statement of a Conversation had between Lieut Thos. M. Likens, Qr Master and Commissary of the Laredo Garrison, and myself, I have briefly to state, that some 10 or 12 days since, I Called at the office of the said Lieut Likens, and enquired of him whether it was probable we would be furnished with Corn soon, (our horses not having any for some time Previous) to which, he replied, that he did not intend using further exertions in procuring Forage, nor would he longer encourage foolery and humbuggerly in the Company. This language I readily understood as being applied to the Captain and other officers of the Company, and was Called forth in Consequence of the Postponement, by the Captain, of a Contemplated trip to Comargo, where it was expected to procure funds for the use of the Qr Masters and Commissary departments.

Signed in Duplicate

JNO. B. HICKEY

This is to certify that I was present when the above mentioned Conversation took place, and can testify to the entire truth of the statement made by Mr Hickey.

Laredo December 3rd 1846.

J. A. WILKINSON

[Endorsed:] J. B. Hickey & J. A. Wilkinson's Certificate

No. 2266. JOSÉ MARIA GONZALES'S STATEMENT

Laredo 9th Decr 1846

I certify that I sold Quarter-Master Thos. M. Likins a pr of Steelyards, (or small instrument for weighing,) for which he was to give me four dollars, but for which I have received no pay.

Test J. A. WILKINSON

JOSE MA. GONZALES [Rubric]

No. 2267. GREGORIO GARCIA DAVILA'S STATEMENT

Laredo 9th Decr. 1846

I do hereby certify that I sold to Quarter-Master Thos. M. Likins Five beeves (four of them being large and one of them, small) for which I received from him the sum of Forty one dollars, giving him my receipt for the same. This is all the beef which I have sold him, and all the money received from him—

GREGORI GARCIA DAVILA

J. A. WILKINSON interpreter

Witness TOMAS FLORES [Rubric]

[Endorsed:] Gregorio Garcia

No. 2268. CATHERINE E. HOWARD TO LAMAR

[San Antonio? Texas,] Dec— 9d 1846

DEAR GENERAL

My husband being absent my brother who is quite sick of a fever requests me to answer your very kind letter.

He expresses his gratitude for your generous offer and would rather

serve under you than any other— but his illness and other circumstances will prevent his availing himself of it.

With many wishes for your success in all your undertakings

Your friend

CATHERINE E HOWARD

[Addressed:] Gen Mirabeau, B, Lamar Loredo— Politeness of Mr. Pearce

[Endorsed:] C. E. Howard to M. B. Lamar

No. 2269. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

On board the U. S. Steamer Major Brown
Laredo Texas Decr. 9th. 1846

SIR,

Nought until last evening did I believe or even suspect that the inventive tongue of mischief and malice prompted (it seems to me) by a determination to make my destruction sure, and fasten upon me lasting infamy and disgrace.

Since learning the efforts that are making against me, I must acknowledge Sir that, that confidence that had hitherto sustained me—that of having discharged my duty faithfully and honestly only gives me that internal assurance of innocence but no assurance that I will meet that Justice which I alone desired to obtain. No Sir, I see the array against me, that is being employed, isolated as I am, is too strong for me to contend successfully against in obtaining justice, at this time, and I will add, much of which coming from a source, that I least expected.

The only solace left with me, is to wait the issue, and with bitterness to curse the day that I enrolled my name a member of the Laredo Guards but this is [*sic*] affords little Relief to an oppressed mind when I Reflect that the motives which prompted me, were not those of proud ambition, but purely and honestly to better my pecuniary circumstances, take with me, from the service the boon for the inheritance of my beloved family coupled with the small pecuniary emolument, the plaudit of having discharged in the service of my country, the duties which were incumbent upon me honestly and faithfully; but in lieu, I have now the Return to make to those that are far more dear to me than life itself, of *disgrace*, which poorly atones to them—for the many privations and miserys which they have suffered during my absence. there is in the whole of this transaction mystery that I am greatly at a loss to divine, up to the hour that I Recd your letter of dismissal from office, I indulged the belief that nought but the most friendly feelings existed [*sic*] by yourself towards me and what seems to me still more mysteriously strange, is the fact that the last personal interview between us I expressed a desire to wind up so soon as I could the outstanding debts of the Office— of obtaining a discharge in consequence of feeble health, to which I understood you to signify acquiescence— and immediately after without any other cause known to me, of disapproval on your part, I Recd your note of disgrace.

Now, Sir my means being verry limited and my expenses verry heavy, I Respectfully ask, that you will inform me what length of

time I am to remain here, and what I have to expect a Court Martial, or otherwise. Verry Respectfully

THOS M. LIKENS

[Addressed:] Capt M. B. Lamar Comdg Laredo guards Laredo Texas.

No. 2270. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 9th December 1846.

Lieut. THOS M LIKINS

SIR

The only portion of your letter of this date which seems to require official notice, is contained in the following extract— viz— “I respectfully ask, that you will inform me what length of time I am to remain here, and what I have to expect, a Court Martial or otherwise.”— In reply to this enquiry, I beg leave to refer you to my note of arrest, in which you will find, by the quotation which it contains from my Instructions, that it is made my duty, on arresting an officer, to report his conduct to Head Quarters. This I shall do in reference to yourself as early as practicable; and it is all that I can do for the present. I am now engaged in collecting evidence of some of the facts which lead to your arrest. This evidence, I shall dispatch in a few days to General Taylor; and shall await his answer. It will rest with him to prescribe the course to be taken; and whatever he orders, it will by my duty to carry out.—

Yours &C

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR. Capt. Commanding at Laredo.—

No. 2271. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

[Laredo, Texas, December 9? 1846]

As I have no wish or desire to take or claim that which is not my own— I must be excused from taking the paper offered me by the little boy

my paper is Ruled and was laid out to its self by myself and left in my Desk. I am greatly in want of it

THOS. M. LIKENS

[Endorsed:] Likens

No. 2272. J. M. CLAY TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 9th Dec. 1846

Leut. LIKINS

SIR

In place of the two quires of paper I sent you and which you have thought proper to return I now send you two others of the ruled Recd which if insufficient for your purposes you can apply for more, I have been told that you are assining the want of paper as a reason for not making out an expose of your affairs. This difficulty can be removed by an application for any quantity necessary to said object but when you assert that the ruled paper in the office is your private property,

I have to oppose your own declaration made to Lieut. Veatch that the said paper had been set aside by you out of the public Supply in Satisfaction for paper which you had previously used of your own.

If this statement be true the paper alluded to must still belong to the Quartermas Dept and for that which you have expended in the public service you must seek some other mode of receiving payment,

J. M. CLAY

P. S. You write also in your note as if the desk which I found in the office and now using is your private property By giving me a certificate to that effect I shall feel authorized to deliver it to you upon application

J. M. CLAY

No. 2273. VICTORIANO SALINAS'S STATEMENT

Laredo 10th December 1846

I do hereby certify that I sold to Lieut. Likins, (Jas. A. Wilkinson being the interpreter) Three beeves, for the sum of fifteen dollars, for which I gave him a receipt; and I further Certify that this is the only beef I ever sold him & and the only money received from him for beef. Subsequently, I received from him (for which I gave no receipt) the sum of five dollars, for grazing & taking care of some mules.

his

VICTORIANO X SALINAS
mark

Witness TOMAS FLORES [rubric]
J. A. WILKINSON interpreter

No. 2274. ESTEVAN RODRIGUEZ'S STATEMENT

Laredo 10th December 1846.

I do hereby certify, that I sold to Lieut. Thos. M Likins (Jas. A. Wilkinson being the interpreter) one beef for the sum of nine dollars, for which I gave him a receipt and I further certify that this is the only beef I ever sold him & the only money recd. from him for beef. I had previously recd. from Said Lieut. Likins, the sum of Twelve dollars for acting as a guide to Mr Hancock from this place to Guerrero, being employed to do the same, by Lieut. Tilden on the Major Brown.

his

ESTEVAN X RODRIGUEZ
mark

J A WILKINSON interpreter
Witness TOMAS FLORES [rubric]

No. 2275. MARK STERLING'S STATEMENT

Laredo, 10th Decer 1846

Being called upon for my testimony in relation to a certain circumstance which occurred between Lieutenant John A. Veatch and Quartermaster Thos. M. Likins, I offer the following as a correct statement of the facts alluded to.—

I was present when Lieut. Veatch complained to Quartermaster Likins respecting the bad quality of some beef which was about to be issued to the garrison. Likins remarked that the beef complained of had been selected by himself out of a drove of 41 or 2 head of cattle.—Lieut. Veatch then asked him what he paid for such beef; to which the Quartermaster replied that he had never paid less than 3½ cts pr. lb.; a declaration which surprised me at the time, inasmuch as I had known of his having on one occasion, purchased a Young beef of excellent quality for Two dollars (\$2.) weighing when butchered 776 lbs independent of the tallow. I came to the knowledge of its weight and quality by its being issued to the men on board the Steamer Brown.

Witness R. C. CARTER

MARK STERLING

Master the U. S. Steamer Major Brown

No. 2276. JOHN A. VEATCH'S STATEMENT

To the above Certificate of Captain Sterling I feel it my duty to add that the beef about which I complained to Lieut. Thos. M. Likens I regarded as entirely unwholesome, and deemed it imprudent for the men to eat it. In consequence of my opinion Corroborated and sustained by that of the Surgeon of the Garrison the beef was rejected by Captain Lamar and another issue ordered to be made. I must further remark that my interview with Lieut. Likens is correctly set forth in the above certificate of Capt. Sterling; I had also on other occasions reminded Lieut. Likens of the objectionable quality of the beef which he was furnishing.

Laredo, Dec. 11th 1846.

JOHN A. VEATCH,
1st Lieut. Laredo Guards.

No. 2277. A. PARKER'S STATEMENT

I concur with Lieut Veatch in the belief that the beef alluded to, which was rejected by Capt Lamar was of a quality unsuited for the use of the Garrison; and being called upon for an expression of my opinion as to the quality of the beef which has been generally furnished by Quartermaster Likens I have to state that I have regarded much of it as prejudicial to health, and have been compelled to attribute the appearance of disease to its consumption

[Laredo, Texas,] December 11th 1846

A PARKER
Surgeon Laredo Garrison

No. 2278. J. A. WILKINSON'S STATEMENT

Laredo 12th Decr. 1846.

I certify that I have full knowledge of all the purchases of beef made by Asst. Quartermaster Thos M. Likins for the use of the Laredo Garrison since the arrival of the troops in this place; and that the following is a correct statement of the same—to wit—

Of Esteven Rodrigus he bought One beef, for which he gave	\$ 9.00
Of Victoriano Salinas, Three beeves for	15.00
Of the Alcalde A. Martines One beef for	10.00
Of Gregori Garcia Five beeves, paying for one of them,)	
(which was issued to the steamboat men) Two dollars;)	

for another Nine dollars, and for the other three)	41.00
Ten dollars each, making in all the sum of forty)	
one dollars.)	
Total		\$75.00

This is all the money (seventy five dollars) which said Likins has paid out upon his own contracts for beef; and embraces his entire purchases, with the exception of one hind quarter which he procured for the use of the Steam boat, from the wife of the Alcalde, for which he was to give \$1.87½ cts; but which remains unpaid.

The Receipts taken from the two Mexicans first named—to wit—Esteven Rodrigus and Victoriano Salinas, were not taken at the time of payment; nor for the sums actually paid; they were taken after the beeves were butchered; and then for the number of pounds they weighed.

For the beef which Andres Martines, the Alcalde sold him, no receipt was taken. When the Quartermaster applied for it, he desired the Alcalde to receipt to him for sixty four or five dollars instead of the Ten dollars actually received, which the Alcalde refused to do, under my advice; and I believe no receipt has since been obtained.

The receipt from Gregori Garcia for the payment of his five beeves, amounting to forty one dollars, has been taken by the Quarter Master since his arrest; and is probably drawn for the correct amount; altho' I have not seen it.

With regard the quality of the beef furnished, (about which I am requested to give my opinion) I can only say that the Quartermaster could have made, a better selection of beeves with equal economy.— The general complaint against the beef which he furnished; his mode of taking receipts for the same; his transaction with the Alcalde, and other circumstances which it is useless to mention, induced me to apprise Lieut John A. Veatch, of my intention to retire at the end of my month from the service of the Quartermaster, lest I might be implicated as Interpreter in matters which I could not approve.

Witness J. M. CLAY
MARK STERLING

J. A. WILKINSON interpreter

No. 2279. MARK STERLING'S STATEMENT⁵

[Copy]

Laredo 12th. Decr. 1846.

I certify that Lieut. Thos. M. Likins, stated to me that he had paid out all the public money in his possession, as well as his own private funds; a part of which, he said he had advanced for the public, and the balance he had sent on to his family by his son, which left him without means for his individual purposes, as well as without ability to supply the Garrison with corn. He then proposed to borrow a few hundred dollars of me for the use of his department; which I expressed a readiness to advance with Capt. Lamar's approval. The Captain, however, withheld his assent. Subsequently when said Likins left his office which he had hitherto occupied, and came to the Steam boat

⁵In No. 2241.

for quarters, he brought with him between Two and Three hundred dollars, which he (after his arrest) exhibited to the Alcalde as evidence of his ability to comply with his private contracts.—

Attest JNO A VEATCH

(Signed) MARK STERLING

Master of the U S Steamer Major Brown.

No. 2280. LAMAR TO B. T. TILDEN, JR.

Laredo, Garrison 14 Decr 1846.

Lieutenant TILDEN

SIR,

I received a letter from Capt. Crossman from which I make the following extract— to wit—

“Lieut Tilden 2nd Infry, left here a few days since, for your post, with \$1,000 for Lieut. Likins, which I shall now direct him to turn over to you, or retain himself, as you may deem best for the interest of the service.”

Presuming that you have received the instructions alluded to by Capt. Crossman I have directed Lieutenant John A Veatch to call upon you for said money and to receipt to you for the same.—

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR,

Capt. Commanding at Laredo—

No. 2281. B. T. TILDEN, JR. TO LAMAR

DEAR SIR,

It becomes important for the good of the service, that I should have at least three hundred dollars at my disposal for the exigencies which have arisen relating to the Major Brown—

If therefore you do not require for immediate use, over seven hundred dollars I will be obliged to you if you will direct Lt. Veatch to call only for that amount. I have receipted & am responsible for the whole amount & can see no impropriety in the step, provided your necessities do not require the whole amount.

I shall otherwise be obliged to wait until I can hear from Camargo before I can begin to move the boat for eight or ten days. For I cant get these Mexicans to work without paying them for it. And if I have occasion to discharge any one I must have the means to settle with him at the same time.

Very Respectfully Your Obert Svt

B. T. TILDEN JR. U S V Regt U. S. Infry
In charge of U. S. Steamer Major Brown—

[Laredo, Texas,] Dec 14 '46

[Addressed:] Capt Lamar Com'g Laredo Gr

No. 2282. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Laredo Garrison Texas Decr 14th 1846

SIR

I have the honor to Request that the accompanying Communications may be forwarded, through you to the proper head quarters and at

the same time that a Court of enquiry may be Called to investigate the matters and Circumstances, Connected with my being in arrest. Agreeable to the ninty second article of War

Respectfully Sir your Obdt. Sevt.

THOS. M. LIKENS

Capt. M. B. Lamar Capt. Comdg Laredo Guards

No. 2283. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo 14 Dec 1846

Leut. THOS. M LIKINS

SIR

In your note just recd. you request me to forwd "*to the proper head Quarters*" a letter which you have this day addressed to Capt. George Lincoln, Comargo, inviting his attention to three documents which you send him, and asking him, to grant you a Court of Enquiry agreeable to the Ninety Second article of War"— This leaves it in some doubt as to the destenation you design for your papers. If I should send them to what I esteem to be the "*proper head Quarters*" I should direct them to General Taylor at Monterey, to whom, it appears to me, your application for a Court of enquiry ought to be made; but inasmuch as your letter was written to day and addressed to Capt Lincoln I infer that you desire him to receive and to read it before it shall be laid before any other person, and accordingly I shall forward it to him without delay; together with documents marked 1. 2. & 3 accompanying it.

Since I am engaged in writing to you, I will embrace the opportunity of performing a task, which has been postponed for the want of leisure. I mean the giving of a reply to that portion of your letter of the 9 inst. which remains unanswered. Indeed, from the irrelevant and apparently aimless character of the document, it would seem to demand no further notice than that which it has already recd.; but as it was doubtless penned with a view of producing some effect, either public or private it may not be improper in me to bestow upon it, a few observations. It will prevent any misconception which might arise from my silence. The first thing to be remarked in your letter, is the spirit of complaint which pervades the whole of it. You write as if you had been profoundly wronged, without the prospect of obtaining justice; but the nature of the wrong and the individual inflicting it, you do not distinctly mention. Now, Sir if this was intended for me, I can assure you that nothing is more unmerited; and I think you ought to know it yourself; for instead of seeking or [being] desirous [of] your "destruction" as you seem to suppose; my whole conduct towards you from your first appointment up to your removal, will go to prove the contrary; for it has been marked by a confidence and forbearance, so long indulged as to subject me to the suspicion of being either willfully blind or culpably indifferent to your conduct.

It may sometimes be painful to look at truth; but we are never at liberty to turn away from it, Very soon after our arrival here, I made known my desire to have an official statement of our expenditures

from Monterey to this place but I was put off at the time, by the plea that you were not conveniently situated for writing. I urged the matter no further, until a trip was contemplated to Comargo when the subject was renewed, and I expressed an anxiety to forward your Returns to Head Quarters at the time of dispatching the detachment to Comargo, but I found you just as unprepared then as you had been previously. And so it continued to the last. I never found you ready but it was a long time before I suspected that your unreadiness proceeded from an indisposition to a settlement.

A general dissati[s]faction prevailed against the administration of your department almost as soon as you had entered upon its duties and it continued to [be] strengthened as long as you remained in office. Notwithstanding which you still possessed my confidence and friendship; and the clamors against you, were either rebuked by me, or suffered to pass unheeded. Suspicions however at length arose against you respecting a misapplication of the public funds, which I also disregarded, from a firm conviction in your ability to clear yourself of all such imputations, by a plain development of your acts and an exhibition of your papers. But what was my surprise, when on being invited to make out your monthly returns and present them to my inspection, I found you altogether unwilling to do it,— altho' it had become indispensable to the retention of my confidence as well as to the vindication of your own honor. This very unwillingness to exhibit your papers rendered it the more necessary that I should see them. It was made my duty to supervise your department— examine your accounts, and to give my approval to your returns preparatory to your settlement at head quarters. When, therefore, you repelled my invitation to exhibit your papers, denied your subordination to me, and asserted the independence of your department, you left me no other course to pursue than the one which was taken. I was compelled to deal with you. If I could not force you into an exposition of your affairs, it was my duty at least to rebuke your disobedience, yet in doing this I adopted the mildest possible form, by suspending you from your functions upon the least offensive grounds; that of the unpopularity of your administration. The prevailing dissatisfaction against it might have been imputed to some disagreeable manner of executing your duties, rather than to anything disreputable or improper in the acts themselves. By placing your removal upon the ground which I did your integrity was unassailed, and it still left the door open for a satisfactory exhibit of your accounts if you were disposed to make it. Even in my letter of removal you were reinvited to a settlement, and I had sincerely hoped that you would have availed yourself of the opportunity which was afforded, of coming forward with your vouchers and vindicating your acts. But instead of doing this, you contented yourself with some frivolous pretext for your disobedience and a re-criminating threat of preferring charges against me. Your arrest followed as a matter of course, And such, Sir, is a plain and correct history of the controversy between us, in which every circumstance will go to prove the reluctance with which I acted, as well as my entire exemption from the malice and injustice which I judge from the tenor of your letter you design to ascribe to me— You make it a matter of reproach, that I should have displaced you so soon after the “last in-

interview between us"; which you are pleased to say was of the most friendly nature. Sir I have never met you in any other spirit than that of kindness and friendship. All of our intercourse has been of this character. But my friendship for you however sincere could not make me unmindful of my duty; and if you relied upon it for the tolerance of anything wrong, you acted upon a fallacious hope, which no part of my conduct could have inspired. In the interview you allude to, you did indeed intimate your intention to retire from the Quartermaster's duties (but not from your Lieutenancy) so soon as you could get funds from Comargo to settle the outstanding debts of the department: (debts the amount of which you have never disclosed) but in giving this intimation of your intended retirement, you evinced no disposition whatever to come to a settlement previous to the drawing of the money; and you could not without great misapprehension of my principles have supposed that I would be willing for any further sums of the public money to fall into your hands whilst you so obstinately refused to exhibit your vouchers for that which you had already disbursed. It was right to account for what had been confided to your custody before applying for fresh sums; and it was the necessity of doing this that I labored so vainly to impress upon you.

You express an apprehension that justice cannot be obtained. Your fears are groundless. We live in a country where the laws are both lenient and just; and who shall interrupt their equitable administration. I am confident that I have no disposition to do it myself. I am on the eve of dispatching my charges against you to head Quarters (where I am ordered to report) and I doubt not that as soon as they shall be received an investigation into their truth and validity will be ordered, the tribunal to which they will be referred can have no motive to offer wrong; and if after a full development of your administration it shall appear, that you have faithfully performed the duties of your office, then the "*disgrace*" which you speak of in your letter as attaching to yourself and family will be averted, but on the contrary, if you should not be able to give a satisfactory explanation of your acts and doings, then will you have to encounter the penalties of your imprudence. That conscious integrity which you rely upon, and which is always a consolation to the just in every trial, I sincerely hope is heartfelt and well founded; although I cannot but think that it should have prompted to an exposure rather than the withholding of your papers.

If your papers were any-wise informal, or if you had omitted to take such as might be deemed necessary to a full and complete return, you should have come forward with what you had, and under my inspection have made out the best returns you could upon the data in your possession, and such as might have been supplied by the acct and recollection of others. The impossibility of prevailing upon you to do this has forced me to the performance of a painful duty, and has placed you in your present position.

Yours & C

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2284. CENSUS OF LAREDO: LIST OF MUNICIPAL OFFICERS

[Translation from the Spanish]

Laredo [Texas,] December 14, 1846

FIRST SECTION

Narrow street from North to South along the sidewalk to the West of the house occupied by D. Dolores Garcia, as far as that of Manual Lafuente on the opposite side of the River and Ranches.

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants		
1	D. Dolores Garcia	married, 36 years	}	6	Canuto Bosques	}	5		
	Ma del Patrosinio Benavides				Merced Guerrero				
	Josefa Treviño			8	Jesus Bosques				
	Patrocinio id				Maximo id				
	Andrea id				Trinidad id				
	Lufs Garcia				7	Victoriano de la Serda		}	8
	Jacobo Garcia S[ingle]				Santos Morilla				
	Ricardo id S				Tranquilino Serda				
				Eugenio id					
				Simona id					
2	Sacerdote Trinidad Garcia	41 years	}	8	Carmen Rio widow	}	4		
	Cirilio Garcia				Francisca Garcia				
	Nicolas id				Pragedis id				
	Pedro id			9	8	Eugenio Rodriguez		}	
	Eugenio Reyes s				Josefa Treviño				
	Simon Luz s				Jesus Rodriguez				
	Felipe S. Miguel s				Anita Reojas				
	Lorenzo Charo s				9	Pio Gamboa		}	2
	Yndalesio Villareal			Rita Ramos					
3	Margarito Sanches	married, 24 years	}	10	Antonio G. Cuellar	}	7		
	Mariana Gomez			3	Andrea Martines				
	Carmen Molina				Lino Cuellar				
4	Juana Garza widow		}		Refugia id		}		
	Augustin Treviño				Silvestra id				
	Augustina id			5	Juana id				
	Pedro id				Jesusa id				
	Teresa id				11	Teodosio Guzman		}	2
				Josefa Chavez					
5	Bartolomé Garcia married,	35 years	}	12	Toribio Flores	}	5		
	Carmen Benavides				Felipa Bernal				
	Ynes Garcia				Casimiro Flores				
	Cesario id				Refugio Rodrigues				
	Refugia id				Policarpio Flores				
	José Ma . . . [mutilated]			11	[13	Guad]alupe Garcia		}	
	. . . [mutilated]				. . . [mutilated]	Salinas			
	Julian[o] . . . [mutilated]				. . . [mutilated]				
	Leonides . . . [mutilated]				. . . [mutilated]				
	Rosendo . . . [mutilated]				. . . [mutilated]				
	. . . [mutilated]				. . . [mutilated]				

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants		
14	Antonio	Martines	}	24	Melquiades	Martines married	}		
	Jesusa	Gamboa		6		Sinforosa		Benavides	
	Francisco	Reojas						Narciso	Martinez
	Sostenis	Gamboa						Francisca	id
	Antonio	Gamboa						Eduardo	id
	Bernavé	Gamboa						Reyes	id widow
15	Ma Ignasia	Gil widow	}		25	Matias		Martines married	}
	Juliana	Nava		7		Guadalupe		Garcia	
	Julian	Mendiola						Leonarda	
	Anastasia	id					Trinidad	id	
	Clemencia	id					Anastasio	id	
	José	Sarabia s					Juana	id	
	Anastasia	Mendiola				Pedro	id		
16	Pedro	Treviño s	}		Monico	id	}		
	Trinidad	Bosques		4		Ginia		id	
	Luisa	id						Gregoria	
	Miterio	id							
17	Ma Marcelina	Mauricio	}		26	Claudio	Martines servant	}	
	Clemente	Charo		2		Ylario	id		
18	Antonio	Muricio s	}			Ambrosia	Garcia		}
	Crisanta	Salinas		4		Matias	Martines		
	Albino	Mauricio				27	Nepomuceno	Gutierrez	}
	Luterio	id					Felix	Bargas	
19	Nasaria	Gonsales	}			Domingo	Gutierrez	}	
	Juan	Treviño		3		Petra	Gutierrez		
	Maxima	Sartuche							
20	Encarnacion	Martines	}		28	Ma Alejandra	Peres	}	
	Servant			8		Pedro	Peres		
	Petro	Charó					Paula		Bosques
	Magdalino	Martines					Jesus		Segura
	Bictor	id					Casiano		Reyes married
	Nepom[ucen]o	id					Juana de la		Serda
	Marcelo	id				29	Estevan	Guerrero servant	}
	Julian	id					Gabriela	Escamilla	
	Josefa	id				Estefana	Molina		
21	Eugenio	Sanches	}		Timotea	Guerrero	}		
	Simona	Ruises		4		Longino		id	
	Angelita	Sanches				30	Rodrigues	Martines servant	}
	Fernando	Yd					Andrea	Chavaria	
22	Ma Antonia	Martinez widow	}			Juliana	Martines		
	Florentino	Ramos		2		Eugenia	id		
23	Ramon	Botello married	}			Albino	Carrasco		
	Ma Santos	Escamilla		9		Catarina S.	Miguel		
	Luis	Botello					Ignacia	Carrasco	
	Manuel	id					Felix	id	
	Mariano	id					Tranquilino	id	
	Eligio	id					Modesta	id	
	Concepcion	id					Juan	Ybarra	
	Tibursio	id					Romana	Duran	
	Dorotea	id					. . .	[mutilated]	

Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants
31	Pedro Escamilla Casimira Garcia Andres Escamilla Anastacio id Lasaro id Antonia id Prefecta id Erinco id Manuel id Pedro Huerta servant Guadalupe Chapa widow Rita Chapa Paz id Visenta id Rosalia id		15	38	Jesus Garza Second Luz Ramos Ma Ynes Villareal widow Eugenio Garza Trinidad id Florentina id Refugia Correjo Santos Garza Refugio Salas servant Estanislado Garcia Antonio Treviño Rita Garcia Gregoria id Ricardo id Ysidora id Dionicia Salas		16
32	Guadalupe Flores Dolores Enriquez Tomaso Flores Julia id Andres id		5	39	Guadalupe Presa Seferina Salinas Blasa id Ramona id Benito Solis		5
33	Fernando Vidaurri Antonia Treviño Maximo Martinez Trinidad Martinez Santiago id Cesario Vidaurri Teodoro id Eustaquio id servant Ramon Valdes Dionicia Estrada		10	40	Juan Sotelo Paula Hernandez Ramon Sotelo Refugia id Martina Vidiales Nicanor id		6
34	Polinario Flores servant Marcela Martines		2	41	Vicente de los Reyes Trinidad Hernandez Eugenio Reyes Luciano id Antonio id Dolores id Trinidad id Pio id		8
35	Jesus Castañon servant Encarnacion Salinas Severo Castañon Rafael id Luisa id		5	42	José Ma Orosco Ysabel Gomez Desiderio Orosco Demetrio id Gabriel id Juana Guerrero married		6
36	Longino Sedilla Barbara Arcia Juana Rodrigues Desidora Vocanegra Monica id		5	43	Bernavé Sarabia servant Carmen Martinez Ylario Sarabia Telesfora Sanchez		4
37	Bruno Delgado Juana Treviño Felix Delgado Vidal . . . [mutilated]		4	44	Cirilio Ariola Gertrudis Gomez		2

Number of Families Citizens Inhabitants			Number of Families Citizens Inhabitants		
45	Victoriana de la Garza Hugenia Presa Dionicio Garza Romana id Melquiades id Ramon id	6	54	Ma Antonia Sanchez widow Ylario Ariola Francisco Ariola Josefa id Dario id Merced id	6
46	Manuel de Porras Ysabel Salinas Faustino Porras Manuel id San Juan Salinas widow Trinidad Gomez	6	55	Remigia Dovalina widow Guadalupe Gutierrez Augustin id Florencia id Juana Gomez Francisca Sartuche	6
47	Santiago Garza Ana Maria Treviño Rosa Herrera	3	56	Francisco Sertuche Juana Moctesuma Seberiana Sertuche Juliana Rito widow José Moctesuma Andrea id	6
48	Susanna Padilla widow Gregoria Escamella Aniseto id Estanislado id Ruverta id Ynes id Pablo id Gertrudis id Octaviana id Luisa id Sostenes id	11	57	Ysidro Martines Estefana Moctesuma Porfirio Martinez Petra Martinez	4
49	Eugenio Treviño Teodora de la Garza Ramon Treviño Cesario id Paz id Felipa Treviño Refugia id	7	58	Ysabel Moctesuma widow Victorino Garcia Gregoria id Nepomuceno id Guillermo id Nepomuceno id Dolores id Pedro id José Ma Salas married Guadalupe Sisneros Felipe Esquibel	11
50	Concepcion Treviño widow Francisco Treviño Cayetana Garza Polito id	4	59	Francisco Mendiola Josefa Garcia Andrea Mendiola Casiano id [mutilated] [mutilated]	6
51	José Ma Zapata Ysabel Camacho Marcial Zapata Fernando id Manuel id Rita Guajardo Augustina id Rosalia id	8	60	Luis Arispe married Guadalupe Ybarra Felix Arispe Silvestra id Teodoro id Ursula id Martin id Antonia id	8
52	Felipe Dias married Matiana Guerrero Francisca Dias Rosalia id Florentino Garcia	5	61	Pedro Salas Clemente Mata Angelito Salas Trinidad id Ma Cruz id Nicolas id Luisa Gutierrez widow Cirilia Mata Guadalupe Gutierrez widow	9
53	Catarina Garcia widow Cresencio de la Cruz Luciano Garcia	3			

Number of Families Citizens Inhabitants			Number of Families Citizens Inhabitants		
62	Maria de los Reyes Juliana id	} 2	71	Benigno Herrera Margarita Bargas Pedro Herrera Silvestra id Justo id Rumualda id Estevan Herrera married Juliana Muños	} 8
63	Cristobal Treviño Luz Vidaurri Francisca Herrera Vicente Treviño Angela Treviño	} 5	72	Faustino Ramirez Rafaela Treviño Pablo Ramirez Rosalia id Gertrudis id Librada id	} 6
64	Erinco Gomez Juana de Anda [?]	} 2	73	Albino Treviño Barbara Bustamante Felipe Bustamante Manuel Muños	} 4
65	Agustin Dovalina Francisca Sanchez Carlota Dovalina Regina id Brigida id Crispina id Juliana id Maria id Casimiro id Quirino Garcia servant	} 10	74	Juan Martinez Manuela Ariola Ylario Martinez	} 3
66	Gregorio Garcia Casimira Soto Juan Garcia Juan Antonio id Miguel id José Abaristo id Ma Carlota id Atanasia id Petra Ruis Concepcion Martinez Andres Flores Lucas . . . [mutilated] Crisanta . . . [mutilated]	} 13	75	Francisco Paredes Luz Perez Manuel Paredes Maurlo id Rumancia id Cosme id Solonio Ybarra servant Antonio Martinez id	} 8
67	Augustin Soto	} 1	76	Ana Ma Farias widow Marta Peres [mutilated] Tolosa	} 2
68	Rafael Vidaurri Lorenza Gil Atanasio Vidaurri Felipa id	} 4	77	Apolonio Ramon Leonor Dovalina Vicenta Ramon Petra id Felisiana id Josefa id Modesta id Refugio Valdes servant Eleutorio Valdes Juan Ramon Apolonio Gomez	} 11
69	Francisco Vidaurri Josefa Salinas Tomas Vidaurri Marcelina id Ramona id Eulalia id Josefa Salinas servant	} 7	78	Francisco Mesa Antonio Mojarra Pascasio [?] Mesa Juana id Margarita id Felix id Antonio Albares Julian Aguilar	} 8
70	Leonarda de los Santos Guadalupe Salinas Rafael de los Santos Anastasia id	} 4			

Number of Families Citizens			Number of Families Citizens					
		Inhabitants			Inhabitants			
79	Ma Cirilia Villareal widow Tranquilino Dias Benigna Bustamante Francisca Dias Cresencia id Ylario Sanchez Gregorio Esquibel Remigio Benavides Ricardo Flores Cornelio Martinez	} 10	88	Luis Ramos Florentina Garcia Trinidad Ramos	} 3			
			89	Juan Ramos Tibursia Gutierrez Basilio Ramos Macario id Jesus id Macaria id Concepcion id Juan Gonzales		} 8		
80	Ventura Gomez Refugia de la Garza Paula Gomez Antonia id Reyes id Santos id Felix id Sesario id Benito Gomez		} 9	90	Jose Ma Enrique Juliana id Francisca id Pablo id Silberia id Juanita id Juan Bautista id		} 7	
81	Jacinto Gomez Tomasa Treviño			} 2	91			Francisca Garza widow Macaria Gomez . . . [mutilated]
82	Lazaro Dovalina Barbara Gomez Gregoria Dovalina Bictoriano id Felisiana id Eduardo id				} 6	92		Doroteo Martinez Basilia Moctezuma Quirino Martinez Cesario id
83	Antonio Guerra Gertrudis Dias Justo Guerra Eleuterio Comacho Ynes Enriquez Marcos Garza		} 6	93		Ma Rufina Garcia widow Silbestra Hortosu widow Tibursia Botello Tibursia id Eligia id Roverta id	} 6	
84	Masedonio Lozano Juana Martinez Carmen Menarrca [?]			} 3	94	Clemente Alboral Juana Sanchez Gabriela id Jasinto Guajardo		} 4
85	Ramon Salinas Julia Guerrero		} 2		95	Refugia Aguilar Ramona Sanchez Ginio id	} 3	
86	José Puga Sanchez Ma de Jesus Garcia Guadalupe Puga Lasaro id Crecencia Sanchez widow Gregoria Sanchez Julia id			} 7	96	Florentina Garcia widow Jesusa Gomez Martin id Margarita id		} 4
87	Jesus Gutierrez Rafaelo Garcia Pascual Arcia Ynosente id Sostenes id Quirino Gutierrez Pedro id Policarpia id		} 8		97	José Ma Contreras Priest [?] Guadalupe Carillo servant	} 2	
		98		Juan Sabas Vicente id	} 2			
		99	Geronimo Garzo s Felipa Garza Domingo id Candelario Juan	} 5				

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	
100	}	José Ma Ramires	7	}	106	Hipolito Mendiola	10	
		Agapita Sanches			Tomaso Martines			
		Francesca Ramires			Bernardo Mendiola			
		Polito id			Juan id			
		Antonio Rodrigues			Octabiana id			
		Damiana Sanchez			Manuela id			
Alejandro id	Refugia id							
101	}	Jesus Flores	8	}	107	Baltasar Calbo		4
		Antonia Botello			Magdalena Guerra			
		Felix Flores			Paula Soto			
		José Claudio id			Mariano Calbo			
		Cayetano Garcia servant			108	Andres Martines	9	
		Luis Treviño married			Francisca Garza			
Refugia Chaves	Dolores Martines							
Albarito Treviño	Rafaela Vidaurri							
102	}	Antonio Boca	10	}	Nicolas Martines	2		
		Encarnasion Rodriguez			. . . [mutilated] id			
		Francisco Baca			. . . [mutilated] id			
		Pragedis id			. . . [mutilated] id			
		Telesforo id			. . . [mutilated] id			
		Ylario id			Leonardo Martines			
Francisco id	Antonio id							
Loreto id	109	Nicolas Sanches	4					
Manuel id		Manuela Garcia						
Dionisio id		Senobia Sanches						
102	}	Senobio Baca	4	}	110	Mateo Gomez s	4	
		Juana Garcia			Eugenia Elosua			
		Leonides Baca			Alejandra Gomez			
Silberia Baca	Trinidad id							
103	}	Vicente Guerra	4	}	111	Ma Felix Gil widow	5	
		Nicolosa Ramos			Petra Herrera			
		Tiburcio Guerra			Natividad id			
		Mariana id			Jesus id			
104	}	Ma Gertrudis Lopes widow	5	}	112	Marcos Sanches	7	
		José Ma Lopes			Ygnasia Herrera			
		Nicolosa Lopes			Ma de Jesus Garcia widow			
		Guillermo Galban			Genobeva Herrera			
Julia Lopes	Desideria id							
105	}	Julian Gutierrez	4	}	Abaristo id	7		
		Justo Gomez			Encarnacion id			
		Francisca Gutierrez						
		Juliana id						

Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants
1st Company	Regulars of Laredo	} 29			
	Corporal Diego Gomez				
	id Antonio Garza				
	Privates Sipriano Gomez				
	Manuel Casos				
	Francisco Garcia				
	Felipe de la Garza				
	Juan Arisola				
	Justo Samudo				
	Trinidad Rodriguez				
	Gregorio Valdez				
	Antonio Lopez				
	Tomas Guerra				
	Eugenio Flores				
	Saturnino Vasques				
	Agapito . . . [mutilated]				
	Eulalio Benavidez				
	Luis Castañon				
	Doroteo Mata				
	Antonio Cantu				
	Candelario Camarillo				
	José Ma Rodriguez				
	José Ma Sais				
	Juan . . . [illegible]				
	Trinidad Flores				
	Pedro Castillo				
	Catarino Cuellar				
	Juan Ortis				
	José Ma Valensuela				
	Juan Resendes				
			Sum total of Inhabitants		696

SECOND SECTION

Comprising [the section] from the house of Rosa Siprian on the other side of the River, along the sidewalk to the east, to a narrow street running from South to North as far as the Jacals of D. José Lazaro Benavides, to the corner of the church, then down the Street as far as the property of the deceased Pedro Garcia

Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants
1	Rosa Siprian	} 9	2	Ma de los Santos Rodrigues	} 9
	Ma Nasaria Serda			widow	
	Francisco Siprian			Antonio Quinones	
	Santiago id			Dorotea id	
	Benigno id			Enrique id	
	Pablo id			Ysabel id	
	Ma Anita id			Candelario id	
	Ma Simona id			Sinforiano id	
	Ma Francisca id		Tomaso id		
			Francisco id		

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants		
19	Polonio	Ramires	}	2	29	Estevan Rodriguez	}		
	Candelario	Navarro				Crisanta		Quintana	
20	Monico	Cuellar	}	3	Ylario	Rodriguez			
	Antonio	Soto				Francisca		id	
	Refugio	Cuellar			Felipa	Quintana			
21	Ramon	Montalbo	}	7	José	Sisto id			
	Refugia	Reojas				Juan José		Rodriguez	
	Juan	Montalbo				Nicolasa		Gomez	
	Maxima	id				Ysabel		Molina	
	Miguel	id				Manuel		Gusman	
	Trinidad	id				Juan José		de los Reyes	
	Anaclea	id							
22	Faustino	Martinez	}	9	30	Ventura Gomez	}		
	Jesusa	Gamboa				Policarpia		Orosco	
	Ma Andrea	Martinez				Jesus	Gonzales		
	Damasio	id				Santiago	id		
	Senobia	id				Monico	id		
	Cruz	id							
	Estefana	Barrera				31	Pioquinto Treviño	}	
	Antonia	Benavides			Albina	Martines			
	Trinidad	id			Lusiano	id			
23	Ma Candelaria	Treviño	}	5	32	Carlos Gomez	}		
	Carlos	Treviño				Pilar		Gonzales	
	Felix	id				Francisco		id	
	Senobia	id				Librado		id	
	Pedro	id				Jesusa		id	
24	Reyes	Reojas	}	3	33	Luis Vosques	}		
	Santos	id				Concepcion		Rodriguez	
	Nasaria	id				Crus		Vosques	
						Severo		id	
						Amado		id	
25	Gil Jaime		}	6		Francisca	}		
	Carlos	id				Segundo		id	
	Josefa	Guerrero				Macaria		Zapata	
	Secundino	Zapata				Miguel		Vosques	
	Albino	Jaime							
	Juana	Zapata			34	Rosa Gil	}		
					Albino	id			
26	Victoriano	Salinas	}	4		Jasinto	Gamboa		
	Nasaria	Rodriguez				35	Joaquina Garza	}	
	Desidoro	Salinas				Ysabel	del Vosques		
	Felipe	Salinas				Ma del Pilar	Garza		
					Ma Ynes	id			
					Ma Rita	id			
					Reymundo	id			
27	Ma Andrea	Treviño	}	5	36	Andres Quintana	}		
	Ma Josefa	Rodriguez				Wenseslado		Vosques	
	Trinidad	Garcia				Antonia		Quintana	
	Refugio	Rodriguez				Ygnacio		id	
	Ma Rumualda	id			Palonio	id			
28	Antonio	Sotelo	}	4		Ramon Ramos		}	
	Trinidad	Rodriguez				Guadalupe			Quintana
	Micaela	Garcia				Estanislado			Ramos
	Juana	Sotelo							

Number of Families		Inhabitants	Number of Families		Inhabitants
Citizens			Citizens		
37	Antonio Quintana Nicomedes id Hipolito id	3	47	Pedro Rodriguez	1
38	Juan de Dios Treviño Refugia Peres Presentacion Treviño Ma Petra id	4	48	José Ma Garcia Benedicta id Froylan Garcia	3
39	Ma Andrea Quintana Juan Treviño Dolores id Santos id Felipa id Nicolasa id Timotea id Desiderio id Lusiano id Ma Desidora García	10	49	Antonio Garcia Feliciana Peres Apolonio Garcia	3
40	Pedro Vela Dorotea Martinez Tomaso Vela Rafael id Juan id Josefa id Leonardo id Ma Andrea id	8		Company of Bejar	29
41	Juan Rodrigues Gregorio Aguilar Roerto id Librado id	4		Corporal Geronimo Crus Ma Antonia Ramos Refugia Crus Gertrudis id Borjas id Cirilio id Antonia id Timotea id Basilia id	9
42	Satermino [?] Rodriguez Blasa Martinez Domingo Rodriguez Francisca id Ynocente id Santos id	6	50	Antonio Garcia Feliciana Peres Apolonio Garcia	3
43	Antonio Castillo Nicolasa Soto Dionisio Castillo Jesus id	4	51	Dionisio Gonzalez Justa Ramos Jesusa Ramos Santos id Jesusa id Estefana id Paula id	7
44	Rafael Rodriguez Ma Barbara Quintana Juana Rodrigues Blasa id Romano id	3	52	Reyes Ortiz Antonio Gil Juan Ortis Narciso id Refugia id Plutarco id Antonio Pena Faustina Santa Ana Rangel José Ma Ortis	10
45	Miguel Menchaca Refugio Peres Francisco Menchaca Cesario id	4	53	Margarita Martinez Jesus Herrera	2
46	José Ma. Mancha Juana Huerta Yrineo id Jesus Huerta Juan Navarro Angel id	6	54	Trinidad Torres Dolores Martinez Concepcion Treviño Tranquilina Quintana	4
			55	Miguel Gil Ana Ma Sanchez	2
			56	José Ma Sanchez Juana Treviño Refugio Sanchez Antonia Mesa	4

Number of Families Citizens		Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens		Inhabitants												
57	Teodora Sanches Desidora Ximenes Luisa Peña Juana Peña Ynocente id Leon Sanches Clemente id Estefana id José Ma id Jesus Holmos José Ma Estrada	} 11	64	Pablo Flores Josefa Juarez Narciso Guerra Santos Flores Juana Guerra Simona id Gertrudis id Rita Garcia Tomasa Moreno	} 9												
58	Asencion Sanchez Lorenzo Benavides Cesario id George id Eulalia id José Ma id Abran id Gertrudis Charó Luis Charó Ysabel id		} 10	65		Gregorio Gusman Eulogia Rodrigues Jesusa Gusman Alejandro id Trinidad id Lorensa id Leonicio id	} 7										
59	Rosa Treviño Florentino Ramos José Ma id Apolonia id Ma Felix id Andres id Juan id Timoteo id			} 8		66		José Ma Nuñes Encarnacion Ramos	} 2								
60	Encarnación Sanchez Bernarda Barrera Yd Jimenes Nestor Garcia Valentina Ximenes Viviano id					} 6		67		Eufracio Gonsales s Gerbasia Gonsales Ysabel id Santos id Cresencia id Ricardo id Maximiana id	} 7						
61	Urbano Mendosa Santiago Dias Florencio Mendosa Miguel id Guadalupe Ochoa Carmen Ximenes Jasinto Ochoa							} 7		68		Eujenio Garcia Paula de la Garza Cesario Garcia Eujenio id	} 4				
62	Gabriel Ugarte Asencion Sanchez Protario Jimenes									} 3		69		Edubiges Molina Jesusa Flores Pedro Olbera Juan id Jesus id José Ma id Antonio Treviño Antonia id Eugenio id	} 9		
63	Onofre Gil Francisca Garcia Lufs Gil Mariano id Teofilo id Angel id											} 6		70		Anastasio Sertuche Carmen Gamboa Casimira Sertuche Geraldita id Marcelino id Ma Concepcion Reojas Prudencia Gamboa Agapita id Nasario id Dario Cuellar Tomas Reojas San Juana Sanchez	} 12

Number of Families		Inhabitants	Number of Families		Inhabitants
Citizens			Citizens		
71	German Guerrero Pioquinta Aguilar Agapita Guerrero Demetria id Reducinda Aguilar Refugio Sanchez Simona Olguirre Gerbacio de Leon	8	79	Salbador Cuellar Ma Blasa Benavides Ma Trinidad Cuellar Juan id Regina Alcontar	5
72	Lucas de Leon Eulalia Martines Anastacio Leon Clemente id Asencion id Petra Asoya	6	80	Refugio Benavides Ma Teresa Pisaña Juliana Moran	3
73	Juana Cano Leandro Corona Petra Rodrigues Ylario Corona Anastacio id Maximiano id	6	81	Leandro Treviño Josefa Gomez Dolores Treviño Balbino id	4
74	Pedro Gomes Carmen de los Santos	2	82	Francisco Aguilar Matilde Treviño Guadalupe Aguilar Jesusa id Estefana Charó Ynes Rodrigues Eudebijes Treviño Reducinda Charó José Ma Chaves Nicolas id Dolores id Presentacion id Macedonio id	13
75	Francisco Cano Barbara Sanchez Cosme Cano Romano id Estefana id Lasaro id Jesus id	7	83	Matias Cano Rafaela Mendiola Encarnacion Cano Gertrudis id Guadalupe id	5
76	Francisco Rodriguez Tomasa Ysaguirre Jesus Rodriguez Desiderio id Roque id Dario id Felix id	7	84	Ma Antonia Ruis Albina Moreno Francisca id Bonifasia id Bartolomé id José Ma id Ma Trinidad id Ma Desiderio id José Ylario id	9
77	Jesus Garza Ma Andrea Benavides Gabino Garza Ladislada id Maximiano id Eulalio id Feliciano id Rovertto id Juan Mota Ma Carmen Sarmiento	10	85	Romano Mendiola Ramona Sanchez Pilar Mendiola Julian id Lorenzo id	5
78	Nasario Vela Ma del Refugio Benavides Tilano Vela Anastacio Rios Francisco Alanis Ynocente Alanis	6	86	Julian Salasar Rita Longoria Reducinda id Esperion id Demetria id Genoveva id	6

Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	
87	Ma Salomé Gamboa		}	90	Felix Juares		}	
	José Ma Salinas				Guadalupe Garcia			3
	Francisca id				Ma Romana			
	Juana id			7	91	Victoriano Juares		}
	Rafael id				Eustaquia Mendiola		6	
	Jesusa Castillo				Yldelfonso Juares			
	Teodoro Salinas			Ma Silbestra id				
88	Teodoro Gamboa		}	Marcela id				
	Romana Flores			3	Antonio id			
	Beronica Gamboa				92	Decidora Molina		}
89	José Ma Musques		}	Juan Garcia		3		
	Cesilia Gamboa				Leonardo id			
	Ygnacio Musques				Marcelo id		}	
	Pedro id			8	Juan id			4
	Bruno id				Ma Antonia id			
	Juan Antonio id				Ma Antonia id			
	Cayetano id							
	Camilo id				Sum Total of Inhabitants		593—	

THIRD SECTION

Comprising from the Jacal which formerly belonged to Doña Ynes Villareal, along the sidewalk to the west (I mean East) to the first narrow Street, thence to the house of the deceased Juan Salinas, then down the street as far as the house of the citizen Antonio Garcia.

Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants		
1	Manuel Garza		}	6	Basilio Benavides		}		
	Ma Antonia Martinez			2	Ma Encarnacion Garcia			13	
2	Ramon Garza		}	Ma del Refugio Benavides					
	José Ma Gonsales				Ma Presentacion id				
	Felipa Dias				Ma de la Paz id				
	Martina de la Garza				Ma Felix id				
	Nieves id				Braulio id				
	Juan Gonzales			11	Ma Ygnasia id				
	Juana Sales				Ynes Suares				
	Paula Ramires				José Ma Ybarra				
	Anastasio Beltran				Victor Aspeitia				
	Gregorio Cisneros			Francisca Albares					
	Silberio Garcia			Porfirio Benavides					
3	Francisco de Parras		}	7	Clara Gonsales		}		
	Nicolas Caseres			2	Antonio Olbera			2	
4	Ma Encarnacion Vaes		}	8	Calisto Bravo		}		
	Clemente Salinas				Cesario id			2	
	Juan Francisco id			6	Josefa Martines		}		
	Agustfn id							1	
	Dolores id			9	Jesus Gusman		}		
	Julia Enrique			Francisco id		7			
5	Nepomuceno Sanchez		}	Ma del Refugio Sanches					
	Wenceslao Benavides			4	Ma del Refugio Martinez				
	Antonio Sanchez				Cosme Gusman				
	Ma Genoveva id				Luisa Gusman				
				Ma Carlota id					

Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants
10	Mateo Salas Josefa Vidaurri Mariano Martinez		3	17	Rufino Mendiola Simona Garcia Juan Mendiola Luis id Lusiana id Camilo id Ma Talpa Crus	7	
11	José Ma Ramon Ma Micaela Garcia Teresa Ramon Ma Seferina Benavides Luisa Ramon Martin id Cresencia id Maximiana id Apolonio id Guadalupe id Lasaro Ruis Luis Villalon Ma del Pilar Garcia		13	18	Romano Marquis Ma Vicenta Mendiola Juana Mauricio Ma Lusgarda id	4	
12	Alejos Ochoa Beronica Enrique Francisco Ochoa Andres id Encarnacion id Ma Presentacion id Ma Yginia id Pedro Ximenez Marcos Martines		9	19	Francisca del Toro Albino de la Crus Ma Nieves id	3	
13	Marcos Botello Ma Salomé Ruis Panfilo Botello Ma Antonio id Gabino id J. Ma de Jesus id Ma Brigida id Ma Margarita id Ma del Refugio id		9	20	Onofre Rangel Dolores Ysaguirre Ma Josefa Rangel Presentacion id	4	
14	Eleasario Pisaña Ma Felipe Gusman Ma Antonia Pisaña Miguel id Ma Luisa id Ma Zebera id José id Ma Ylaria id Ma Braulia id Ma Nicolasa		10	21	Antonio Rodrigues Ramon Treviño Dorotea Treviño Melquiades id Ma Genoveva id Ma Antonia id José Miguel Rodriguez Ma Desidora id Ma Sesaria id Refugio id	10	
15	Manuel Mendiola Ma Brigida Garza Gerbacio Mendiola José Aniseto id		4	22	Estefana Castañon Ma Merced Ramon Margarita Casteñeda	3	
16	Albino Herrera Victoriana Mendiola Estevan Herrera Eligio id Pedro id Marcelo id Gregorio id Felipe id		8	23	Juan Galban Ma del Refugio Ximenez Tesorio Galban	3	
				24	Urbano Rodriguez Ma S. Juana Gomez Marcelino Rodriguez Cesario id Ma Asencion id Carlos id Ma Alcaria Ma Romano	6 2	
				25	Senobio Rodriguez Ma Romana Olbera Cayetana Rodriguez	3	
				26	Francisco Juares Josefa Martines Ma Teodosia Juares Ma Marcelina id José Torivio id Ma Francisca id Ma Juana id José Antonio id Ma Geronima id	9	

Number of Families Citizens			Number of Families Citizens		
		Inhabitants			Inhabitants
27	José Antonio Garcia Ma Manuela Ruis Brigida Garcia Ma Carmen id Ylario id Jesusa Talban Angel Galban	7	36	Pilar Resendes Trinidad Rodriguez Patricio Resendes Rafael id Candelario id Ma Pascasia Guadalupe id	7
28	Baulio Navarro Juana Ma Juares Ma Clara Galban	3	37	Francisco Martines Ysabel Ximenes Valentín Martinez	3
29	Anastacio Rodriguez Juana Esquivel Rafael Rodriguez Ysabel id Victor id Ramon id Eduardo id Barbara id Juana id	9	38	Rafael Ximenes Brigida Gomez Feliciano Ximenes Ma Gertrudis id Ma Severa id Victoriano id Ma Juana id Maximiana id Librada id Paula id	10
30	Juan Escamilla Francisca de la Garza Ma Carmen Escamilla Antonio id Angel id Amalio id	6	39	Pragedis Sotelo Francisca Rodriguez Antonia Sartuche	3
31	Eujenio Navarro Narcisa Martinez Josefa Rodriguez Rafaela id Ylaria id Alejandro id Guadalupe id Leonides id Teodora Navarro	9	40	Ventura Gomez Policarpiá Garza Simona Oroseo Paula Mata Jesus Gomez Santos id Monico id	7
32	Josefa Nuñez Manuela Peña Matias Juares Francisca Nuñez	4	41	Ramon Treviño Refugio Martinez Jesus Treviño Juan Treviño	4
33	Ma Rafaela Hernandez Refugio Gusman	2	42	Ma Felicianá Sanchez Prudencia Sanchez	2
34	Ramon Menchaca Benigna Villarreal Gregoria Casanova Romano Menchaca	4	43	Santiago Zuniga Refugio Camacho Silbestra Martinez Ma Antonia id Luisa id	5
35	Antonio Gutierrez Juliana Ybarra Andrea Gutierrez Polonia id Viviano id Ma Felix id	6	44	Ma Victoriana Benavides Desideria Villarreal Sista Porras Francisca Villarreal Gabriel id Pedro id	6
			45	Felipe Camacho Rosa Martines Monico Soto Gregorio Camacho Ventura Peres	5

Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families	Citizens	Inhabitants
46	José Ma Gomez Manuela Camacho Lusiano Gomez Ma Antonia id Venito id Romana id Amada id	7	54	Antonio Cameros Miguel id Manuel id Tomasa id Andrea id Juliana id Cleofas Benavides Cristobal id Francisca id Eulalio id Luisa id Francisca Morillo	12
47	Ylario Mendiola Ma Merced Cano José Mendiola Patrosinio id Ramon id Ma Elena id Ma Ygnacia Cano		55	Juan Sanches Ynes Salinas Luís Sanches Julian id Alejandro id Rufino id Epifanio id Manuel Ruis Rosa Gonsales	
48	Tomás Martinez Tomás Flores Asension id Ma Ynes Martiñez Ma Sostenes Flores Ma Rosa id José Angel id	7	56	Juan de Dios Garcia Josefa Balboa	2
49	Florencio Villarreal Trinidad id Susana id Refugio id Ynes id Magdalena id Yndalerio id Antonia Sanchez		57	Yldefonso Reyes Paula Sanchez	
50	Rafaela Navarro Cirilio Charó Vidal Gusman Juan Garcia José Ma Martinez	5	58	Ma Dorotea Castillo Loleta id	2
51	Clara Charó Antonia id Tomasa Villarreal		59	Juan José Gomez Antonia Mendiola Antonio Gomez Trinidad id Gregoria id Eugenio id Ma de Jesus id	
52	Agapito Galban Petra Gonsales Trinidad Dovalina Catarina Gomez Silbestra Dias Desiderio de la Crus Domingo Rodriguez	7	60	Juan José Moreno Estevan Moreno Manuela id Segundo id Damasio id Ruperto id Ma Antonia id	7
53	Miguel Dovalina Ma Luisa Salinas Manuel Dovalina Antonio Gamboa		61	Cristobal Castillo Teodora Garcia	
		4	62	Cayetano Ximenes Dolores Castillo Ynes Castillo Encarnacion Ximenes José Ma Valensuela	5

Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants	Number of Families Citizens			Inhabitants
63	Josefa Bustamante Marta id Apolonia id Silberio id Valentina Sanchez		5	73	Nestor Treviño Ma Gertrudis Cano Mariana id Ma del Refugio id Ma Ramona Treviño		5
64	Rafael Martinez Margarita Albarado Refugio Martines		3	74	Julian Gutierres Rafaela Garcia Onofre Gutierres		3
65	Apolonio Nuñez Pilar id Guillermo id Jasinta id Cresencia id Alejandra id Cleofas id		7	75	Ma del Loreto Garza		1
66	Manuel Ximenez Ma Carmen Garza Ma Ramona Charó		3	76	Juan Garza Peres Manuela Garza		2
67	José María Martines Sista Ramires Apolinario Martinez Sinforiano id Sisto id José de Jesus id Ma Reyes id		7	77	Santiago Treviño Refugio Luna Elena Treviño Longinos id Francisco id		5
68	Andres Castillo Tomasa Garcia Antonio Castillo Estefana id Carmen id Serapio id Apolonia id		7	78	Josefa Flores José Ma Villarreal Felipe id Feliciano id Josefa id Antonia id Antonia id widow Gertrudis Martinez		8
69	Rumualdo Charó Marta Suares Refugio Charó Secundino id Tomas id Martina id Juan Antonio		7	79	Lazaro de la Garza Dolores Butrona Necleta de la Garza Felipa id Eu[s]taquia id Demetria id Adriana id Esperansa id Eulalia id Andrea id Juan id Refugio Charó		12
70	José Maria Cano Estefana Sanches Cirilio Cano Micaela id		4	80	Ynes Sanchez Casimira Garza		2
71	Eugenio Garza Tomasa Ximenes Perfecto de la Garza Felicidad id Agapito id Pablo Garcia		6	81	Bernardo Cavasos Francisca Peña Anito Cavasos Bernardo id Refugio Crus Armando Cavos		6
72	Ma Felicidad de la Garza Agapito id Pablo Garcia		3	82	Juan Gonzalez Ruberta Treviño Luís Gomez		3

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	
83	}	Jose Antonio Garcia	widow	8	}	92 Domingo Dovalina	}	
		Nicolasa Garcia				Viviana Dias		widow
		Mariquita	id			Juan Dovalina		
		Catarina	id			Panfilo		id
		Guadalupe	id			Margarita		id
84	}	Catarina	2nd id	8	}	93 Matias Bargas	}	
		Dario	id			Gertrudis Martinez		
		Elena	id			Andres Bargas		
		Francisco Treviño				Felipa		id
		Concepcion Flores				Damasia		id
85	}	Ynes Treviño		8	}	94 Santos Benavides	}	
		Refugio	id			Agustina Villarreal		
		Feliciano	id			Ricarda Benavides		
		José	id			Felipe Sandin		
		Lus	id					
86	}	Natividad	id	5	}	95 José Ma Ramires	}	
		Seferino Gusman				Nicolasa de la Garza		
		Antonia Lopes				Felix Ramires		
		Angela Gusman				Felipa Guajardo		widow
		Antonio Chapa						
87	}	Jesusa Garza		5	}	96 Jesus Garcia	}	
		Ylario Chapa				Cirilia Gomez		
		Jesus	id			Francisco Garcia		
		Jesus Hernandez				Micaela		id
						Manuel		id
88	}			5	}	George	id	
		Agaton Castillo				Ygnasio	id	
		Dionisio Castillo				Jesus	id	
		Manuela Gomez				Ginio	id	
		Librada Castillo						
89	}	Delaila	id	7	}	97 Refugia Reyna	}	
		Antonio Garcia				Rafael Treviño		
		Gertrudis Martinez				Gregoria Telles		
		Senovia Garcia				Vicente Telles		
		Prudencia	id					
90	}	Andrea	id	3	}	98 Nepomuceno Treviño	}	
		Francisca	id			Merced Treviño		
		José Ma Cameros				Estanislado Garza		
		Trinidad Guerra				Felipe Martinez		
		Rosa Delgado				Antonia Rodriguez		
91	}	Matiana Guerra		9	}	99 Francisco Garcia	}	
		Ygnacio Dias				Josefa Gonsales		
		Gertrudis Sanchez				Cesario Garcia		
		Julian Dias				Nicolas Sanches		
		Pedro	id			Benita Garcia		
92	}	Martina	id	3	}	100 Pablo Mendiola	}	
		Sarapia	id			Nieves Salinas		
		Manuel	id			Micaela		id
		Ygnasia	id			Aniceto		id
		Crus	id			Paula		id
93	}			3	}	Pedro	id	
		Joaquin Martines				Santiago	id	
		Marcelina Perales				Tomasa	id	
		Marcelina 2d				Manuela	id	
						Francisca	id	

Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants	Number of Families		Citizens	Inhabitants			
101	Manuel	Gonzalez	}	104	Asencio	Martinez	}			
	Andrea	Sanches		6		Mariana		Sanchez		
	Santos	Gonzalez						Ramona	Martinez	
	Santos	2nd id						Andrea	id	
	Nieves	id						Juan	id	
	Juana	id			Francisco	id	8			
					Victoriano	id				
102	Juan	Treviño	}		Antonio	Garcia	}			
	Marcelina	Martinez		12	105	Ruerto		San Miguel	}	
	Mariquita	Treviño						Juana		Treviño
	Manuel	id						Refugia		San Miguel
	Florentina	id						Pia		id
	Juan	Telles						Dolores		id
	Viviano	Martinez						Nabor		id
	Zerafin	Telles						Manuel		id
	Nabor	id						Domingo		id
	Susana	id				106		Jose		Ma Acó
	Luisa	id			Ysabel	Barrera				
	Carlota	id			Eustaquia	Aco				
103	Dionisio	Urive	}		Sum total of Inhabitants		602			
	Antonia	de los Reyes		5		Resume—				
	Crescencia	Reyes				Section 1st		696		
	Juana	id				Section 2d		593		
	Panfila	id		Section 3d		602				
					Grand Total		1891			

Laredo December 14, 1846

ANDRES MARTINES [Rubric]
 Alcalde of Laredo
 TOMAS FLORES [Rubric]
 Secretary ad interim

List of the Individuals who have held office in the Municipal Government in this City, from the year 1768 to 1846, some as Alcaldes, and some as members of the Corporation; with specification of the offices which they have held; and which are as follows.— To wit—

Year	Alcalde	Year	Alcalde
1768	D. José Martin de Soto Mayor	1786	
1769	The same Señor	1787	
1770	The same Señor	1788	D. Tomás Sanches
1771	D. Tomás Sanches	1789	Lieutenant D. José Gonsales
1772	The same Señor	1790	The same Señor
1773	The same Señor	1791	The same Señor
1774	The same Señor	1792	The same Señor
1775	The same Señor	1793	Lieutenant D. José Gonzales
1776	The same Señor	1794	The same Señor
1777	D. Fernando de Vidaurri	1795	The same Señor
1778	The same Señor	1796	The same Señor
1779	D. José de Jesus de la Garza	1797	
1780		1798	
1781		1799	
1782		1800	D. José de Jesus de la Garza
1783	D. Prudencio Garcia Margain	1801	The same Señor
1784	Lieutenant D. José Gonsales	1802	The same Señor
1785	D. Santiago de Jesus Sanches	1803	The same Señor

Year	Alcalde	Year	Alcalde
1804	The same Señor	1815	D. José Maria de Tovar
1805	Capt. D. Ramon Dias de Busta- mante	1816	The same Señor
1806	The same Señor	1817	D. Tomás Garcia Davila
1807	The same Señor	1818	D. José Francisco de la Garza
1808	The same Señor	1819	D. Yldefonso Ramon
1809	The same Señor	1820	D. José Maria de Tovar
1810	The same Señor	1821	D. Yldefonso Ramon
1811	The same Señor	1822	D. Victoriano Dovalina
1812	D. Yldefonso Garcia	1823	D. José Maria de Tovar
1813	Lieutenant D. José Gonzales	1824	D. Francisco de la Garza
1814	The same Señor	1825	D. Fernando Garcia Davila
Year	Members of the Corporation	Year	Members of the Corporation
1826	{ D. Rafael Lopes de Oropesa D. Manuel de los Santos Coy	1836	{ D. Basilio Benavides D. José de Jesus de la Garza 2d D. Eugenio Garza D. Gregorio Bargas
1827	{ D. José Lazaro Benavides D. Juan José Treviño D. Juan José Salinas		{ D. Basilio Benavides D. Jesus de la Garza 2d D. Eujenio Garza
1828	{ D. Manuel de los Santos Coy D. José Ma Ramon D. Lorenzo de la Peña	1837	{ D. Gregorio Bargas Half year following D. Florencio Villareal D. Victoriano Vela
1829	{ D. José Maria Gonzales D. Tomás Flores D. Andres Martines D. Faustino Ramires	1838	{ D. José Maria Ramon D. Faustino Ramires
1830	{ D. Yldefonso Ramon D. Florencio Villareal D. Salvador Cuellar D. Domingo Dovalina	1839	{ D. Gregorio Garcia D. Jesus Garza 2d
1831	{ D. Juan José Treviño D. Manuel Sanches D. Victoriano Vela D. José Maria Garcia Davila	1840	{ D. Dolores Garcia D. Eujenio Garza
1832	{ D. José Lazaño Benavides D. Victoriano Vela D. Juan Francisco Farias D. Augustin Dovalina	1841	{ D. José Maria Ramon D. Dolores Garcia
1833	{ D. José Maria Gonzales D. Juan Francisco Farias D. Andres Martines D. Francisco Paredes	1842	{ D. Florencio Villareal D. Reyes Ortis D. Miguel Dovalina D. Faustino Ramires
1834	{ D. Juan José Treviño D. Agapito Galban D. Andres Martines D. Elisario Pizaña	1843	{ D. Bartolomé Garcia D. Salvador Cuellar D. Miguel Dovalina D. Margarito Sanches
1835	{ D. Yldefonso Ramon D. José de Jesus de la Garza 2d D. Bartolomé Garcia D. Agapito Galban	1844	{ D. Basilio Benavides D. Agapito Galban D. Salvador Cuellar D. Manuel Cisneros D. Bernardo Cabasos
		1845	{ D. José Maria Ramon D. Augustin Dovalina D. Reyes Ortis D. Santos Benavides
		1846	{ D. Dolores Garcia D. Andres Martines D. Nasario Vela

Note. The persons who filled the offices during the years where blanks occur are not named because there is no documentary evidence, nor have any persons given information concerning them. Furthermore, some persons in the latter years served for more than one term, and others for less, due to political disturbances.

At the request of Captain Birabeau [*sic*] B. Lamar, Commandant at this post, the present list was made, a copy of which is given him today, December 14, 1846.

ANDRES MARTINES [Rubric]
Alcalde of Laredo
TOMAS FLORES [Rubric]
Secretary ad interim

No. 2285. MARK STERLING'S STATEMENT

Laredo Dec 16th 1846

This is to certify that I Have Exchanged Th[r]ee. Fifty Dollar Texian Notes, for T. M. Lakens for which I Considered the full Amt in Gold— The following No. 3832, 3833, 3834. Paid to the order of Forbes Butler U. S. A.

Signed, J. F Taylor Leut colo. & A. C. G. S

Counter signed Leut Butler Comargo 17, Nov. 1846.

Signed, Leut T. M. Likins A.A.C.S. Laredo Garrison Texas Nov. 27 1846

MARK STERLING Master of U.S. Steamer *Major Brown*

No. 2286. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Laredo Garrison Texas Decr 16th 1846

SIR

As I now clearly understand, the true nature and extent of your deligated authority, and consequently fully appreciate our Relative positions; I have the honor to inform you, that I am Ready to wait on you at any hour you may command— and to lay before you a full exhibit of all that you may have Required, and may Require, for your examination and inspection Relative to the public business which was intrusted to my charge.

I hope Sir in the examination and and [*sic*] investigation of my Affairs, that you will not require the presence of any other officer of your command.

When any paper or Voucher may Require proof or explanation, I trust that further examination will cease, until you can send for and have brought into your Office, any person who may be Able, to impart the information Required, after which he or they, Retire and the examination of the Remainder be then continued

Respectfully Your Obedient Servant

THOS. M. LIKENS Leu't Laredo Garrison

Capt M B Lamar Capt Comdg. Laredo Guards

No. 2287. FRANCISCO AGUILAR'S STATEMENT

Laredo 18th Decr 1846.

I certify that I was employed by Lieut. Likins, Qr Master on Three occasion (and only on Three) to aid and assist Narcisso Gonzales in

butchering beef for the garrison here, for which he (Likins) paid me 37½ cts; this being all the service rendered him, and the only money received from him, previous to his removal from office.

his
FRANCISCO X AGELAR
mark

Witnesses JUAN JOSE RODRIGUES JOSE MA GONSALES

No. 2287a. NARCISO GONZALES'S STATEMENT

Laredo 18th Dec 1846.

I, Narcisso Gonzalis a citizen of this place do hereby Certify that I went into the service of Thos. M. Likens quartermaster on the 12th November last and continued in his service up to the time of his Removal from Office. No contract was made between said Likens and myself respecting any wages I was to receive; nor have I as yet ever received any pay from him. I was variously employed during the time in Slaughtering and drying beef for the Garrison making Cots for the hospital and waiting about the quarter Masters department. In slaughtering beef I was assisted on three occasions and no more by Francisco Aguilar and he was the only person who ever gave me any assistance. The beef dried by me consisted of One entire beef, being a poor one, & a portion of two others Consisting of One hind Quarter and one shoulder blade.

his
NARZISO X GONZALES
mark

Witness TOMAS FLORES [rubric]

No. 2288. MARK STERLING TO JOHN A. VEATCH

Laredo 18th. Decr. 1846

Lieut. VEATCH

SIR,

In answer to your enquiry as to whether I have any knowledge of Lieut. Likins having sold or disposed of any Treasury Notes, other than those which I purchased of him at par; and if so, upon what terms he parted with them, I have to say, that I know of his having paid one fifty dollar note to Mr. Soto, in settling that gentleman's bill against the Govt. for things furnished the Garrison; (beef I believe). His Account amounted to (\$54) fifty four dollars, which Lieut, Likins discharged by giving him (Soto) a fifty dollar Treasury note and a five dollar gold piece. Mr. Soto in a laughing way declared that he would not give the Lieut. the dollar due in change; and I think he did not. I would refer you to Mr. Soto himself, but he is now absent on a visit to San Antonio.—

MARK STERLING
Master of U. S. Steamer Major Brown

[Endorsed:] Capt. Sterling

No. 2289. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS⁶

Laredo [Dec. 19, 1846.]

Lieut. THOS M. LIKINS

SIR,

The pressure of business that precluded my examining the papers which you presented to me the other day is now removed; and being disengaged for present, I can devote the day to your business. Should it suit your convenience to call this morning, you will find me at my residence; and as the examination, and the writing which we may have to do, will probably consume the day, we had better commence it as early as we can.

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Capt Commanding at Laredo

No. 2290. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS⁷

Laredo, 19th. Decr. 1846.

Lieut. THOS. M. LIKINS,

SIR,

In our interview this morning, I neglected to enquire about the debts outstanding against your Department at the time of your retirement. I should like to have a statement of them, that I may not fall into any error in their settlement.

Yours respectfully.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Capt Commanding at Laredo

No. 2291. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR⁸

Laredo 19th. Decr. 1846.

Capt. LAMAR

SIR

Your note asking information in Relation to outstanding debts & C in Reed. In Reply, I will Remark, that by Refferance to the Books in the Office I can give you the wanted information, please allow the bearer John to bring them to me, as I am much engaged in making out my Returns— and wish if I can, to have them Ready at most by morning.

Respectfully Sir Your Obt. Servt.

THOS. M. LIKENS Lieut.

⁶In No. 2241.⁷In No. 2241.⁸In No. 2241.

No. 2292. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

[Laredo, Texas,] December 19, 1846

*Enope Etereo 3 fenagres corn @ \$3—	\$9-00
Don Gonzalles 25 Do—	\$27 00
in addition to this amount there are 2 entries made by the clerk of Don Gonzalles which I do not understand. he the Clerk will explain I have pointed them out to Mr Clay	
Don Jesus Garcie 30 finagres Corn @ \$3—	\$90-00
Alcaldies Sister in law 14 Do @ \$3—	\$42-00
Don Nassaro Bailer 5 Do @ \$3-00	\$15-00
Antonio Candese 7 Do @ \$3—	\$21-00

for corn add the 2 entries where explained to the account of Gonzallies \$243.00
*add omission of the upper acct. 9.00

\$252 00

Capt LAMAR

SIR, the above exhibits a Statement of the outstanding debts so far as
I can Reccollect except for house Rents Quarters &C

Respectfully

Laredo Texas Decr 19th 1846

THOS. M. LIKENS Lieut.

[Endorsed:] Likens

No. 2293. GREGORIO GARCIA DAVILA'S STATEMENT⁹

Laredo 21st. Decr. 1846.

I do hereby certify that on or about the 29th November last, I sold
to Lieut. Thomas M. Likins, Four beeves. For one of them he paid
me Two dollars, the beef being a small one. The money was paid to
me on the delivery of the beef. For the other three beeves, he gave
Ten dollars a piece for two of them, and nine dollars for the third.
For these three he settled with my relation, Mr Soto, who delivered
the money (Twenty Nine dollars) to me. In a day or two after this
contract, I sold to the said Likins, another beef, for Ten dollars, which
he did not pay me for, until after his arrest. He sent for me, and I
received the money (Ten dollars) on the Steamboat. He drew up a
receipt, which I signed without its being interpreted to me. This is
all the beef I ever sold him.

(Signed) GREGORI GARCIA DAVILA.

Test J. A. WILKINSON, Interpreter
JOSE MA. GONZALES.—

No. 2294. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Laredo Garrison Texas December 24th 1846

Capt. M. B. LAMAR

SIR I tender to you my Resignation of the Office of 2nd Lieutenant of
a Company of Mounted Volunteers under your Command.

Respectfully Sir your Obedt. Sev't.

THOS. M. LIKENS Lieut.

⁹In No. 2241.

No. 2295. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo Garrison Texas December 24th 1846.

Lieut. THOS. M. LIKINS

SIR

Your letter of Resignation is received, and I feel it my duty, under all the circumstances, to accept it. I had hoped, from your note of the 19th inst. that you would have been able, previous to your retirement, to have laid before me such Monthly Returns of your department as would have secured my approval; but as this however cannot be effected I will not allow omission to defeat your wishes. Capt. Lincoln, to whom you have applied for a Court of Enquiry, shall be duly apprised of your release from arrest, and that your resignation has been accepted by me.

Your Obt. Servt.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

Capt. Commanding Laredo Grds

[Endorsed:] To Lieut. Likins accepting his Resignation

No. 2296. LAMAR TO G. H. CROSSMAN¹⁰

Laredo 24th Decr. 1846

Capt. CROSSMAN Qr Master, Comargo

SIR

Lieut. Likins has handed in his resignation, which under all the circumstances, I have thought it best to accept. He has retired without effecting any settlement with me; but he expresses a full confidence in being able to satisfy you as well as Lieut. Britton; and he is about proceeding to Comargo for that purpose.— There is some discrepancy in our estimates; but he may possibly think me too exact and punctilious; and should you think the same after an examination of his papers, I sincerely hope you may relieve him from the inconvenience of my scruples, by a speedy adjustment of his accounts on terms the most liberal which the law will allow.

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR Capt.

Commanding at Laredo.

No. 2297. LAMAR TO ZACHARY TAYLOR

Laredo 24th Decr. 1846

To, Major General ZACKARY TAYLOR

SIR.

I have the honor to report the arrival of my Command at this place on the 8th of November the inhabitants receiving us with apparent friendship. Quarters were obtained for the men in the buildings surrounding the plaza.

Laredo is very little more than a heap of ruins. There is scarcely

¹⁰In No. 2241.

a Comfortable home in the place. The desolation was the effect of the most unprecedented rains which fell in 1842, from which it has never revived. The town is divided into two distinct villages by the Rio Grande, both however bearing the Common name of Laredo. And being governed by the same local Authorities. The original town belongs to the eastern bank; and the joint population amounts to some nineteen hundred souls, about equally divided between the two portions. It is an isolated Town, much exposed to the ravages of the Indians and has suffered greatly from that source, seven hundred of its inhabitants have been killed within the last twenty years.

The adjacent Country is entirely uninhabited except during the brief period required for the Cultivation of the Corn and bean Crops, these two articles being the only objects of Culture. Laborers are then sent out to some 25 or 30 Ranchers which are scattered on the river above and below the town, for 30 miles, and owned by individuals residing here.

Corn is rather scarce, and is worth \$3.00 pr Feniga. It is a matter of some doubt if there is a suffici[en]cy to last until the Coming Crop. Mexican Flour can be had from the towns above this, enough to supply the Garrison at \$600 pr hundred pounds in the bran.—

Beef is abundant of excellent quality, and worth from $1\frac{1}{4}$ to 2 cts pr pound, when bought on foot, the mode of purchaseing which we have thus far [a]dopted,

Laredo is distant about 70 miles from Guereero, 120 from Mier and 180 miles from San Antonio. The roads to the above places, can with little labor be made practicable for any kind of wheel Carriages,

Sometime, previous to my arrival several indian depra-dations had been Committed And one outrage oc-cured shortly after we got here, A. mexican boy was captured by a party of 4 or 5 Comanches at a Ranch some 2 leagues from this place. No information of this was received until 15 hours after its occurrence. I pursued with all possible despatch: and at a distance of about 50 miles Came so closely upon the indians, that they became aware of our approach; and in the sudden Confusion thus produced the boy made his escape. From this point the pursuit became difficult and uncertain and was consequently abandoned.

Scouting parties have been kept out almost daily, since the 4th. day after our arrival

There has been Considerable sickness, but no deaths in the Command, Amongst the inhabitants an epidemic has prevailed to an alarming extent. Attended with great mortality. To the scarcity of medicines, and the total absence of efficient medical advice, much of the fatality can, doubtless be ascribed. I Considered the Circumstances as justifying a permission which I gave for the public medicines to be used amongst the Citizens, I did this from a spirit of humanity, as well as conciliation:

The first Lieutenant of my command gave medical attendance free of Charge. The town however has the reputation of healthfulness, such a visitation as the present being very unusual,

Previous to my arrival it became necessary to dismiss four privates from my command, for drunkenness and and [sic] insubordinate Con-

duct, One discharge has been made upon the surgeon's certificate the vacancies thus occurring have been filled by others.

On the 4th. inst I found it proper to relieve second Lieutenant Thomas M. Likens from the duties of acting Assistant Qr. Master and Commissary, This removal was made in consequence of the inefficient, as well as excessively unpleasant manner in which he discharged, the functions of his office, greatly neglecting everything pertaining to the public se[r]vice spending a large portion of his time in gambling, or in making petty pecuniary speculations— occasioning by whimsical, Capricious and disrespectful Conduct, a Constant feeling of unpleasant excitement between himself and the Officers, and bickerings, and discontent among the men

He had also evaded, under various pretexts, the submission of his accounts to my inspection, and finally, positively refused to do so.

Sometime previous to this, it had been found absolutely requisite to release him from the exercise of any authority in the Company, save what pertained to his Quarter Master and Commissary duties, in Consequence of his entire unfitness for the task of Commanding,

On the day of his removal his Conduct became insubordinate and disrespectful, to a degree not to be overlooked, and his arrest b[e]came unavoidable.

Suspicious had arisen against him of intended and attempted fraud upon the public funds, and it was these suspicions though reluctantly entertained that prevented my sending to Carmargo for funds before the quarter master and Commissary departments of my Command got into arrears. His obstinate refusal to exhibit his papers and Come to a settlement was Calculated to favor these suspicions, which became greatly strengthened by subsequent developments,

He finally submitted his accounts for inspection, tendering tendering [*sic*] about the same time his resignation: Many of his accounts I could not approve, as I had proof of their unjustness; yet as his defalcations would probably not exceed his pay, I judged it proper to release him from arrest and accept his profered resignation. I think the interest of the Service greatly subserved in his retirement; and if in sanctioning it I transcended my powers, I hope the proper authority may still permit it, as his presence in my Command in any Capacity, would greatly mitigate against every object for which I was placed here.

I have received no communication from the authorities of Texas. They have not taken steps towards extending the laws of the State over this portion of its territory, nor do I know the views of the present incumbent of the executive Chair upon this subject. He was duly notified of my occupancy of this place, and was furnished with a Copy of that portion of my instructions which related to the jurisdiction of the Country.

I know nothing of the truth of the information, but I have heard with regret, that the Lieut. Governor refused to relinquish the Executive functions on the return of Govr. Henderson to the seat of Government.— He holds possession on the ground that the Governor forfeited it by the acceptance of his late military Command,

In accepting the Command at this post, I was impressed with the belief, that the war was near its dermination [*sic*] and that active military operations, in all probability would no longer be prosecuted, I

preferred the position to a state of idleness, and Chose rather to be usefull in a subordinate degree than to return home whilst the Controversy remained unsettled between the two governments, It now seems from what I Can learn that hostilities Are to be Carried on with renewed energy I would therefore ask to be permitted to rejoin the Army with my Command,

If however my services should not be required in the field— if there shall be no speedy resumption of active hostilities. I must respectfully solicit another boon, and that is, leave of absence for a sufficient length of time to make a visit to the city of Washington, I would not ask the favor at the slightest expense of the public service, being fully satisfied, that the objects for which this place was garrisoned, will be Carried out as efficiently by the First Lieutenant as by myself

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2298. MARK STERLING'S STATEMENT¹¹

Laredo 24th decr. 1846.

I certify that I recieved from Lieut. Thos. M. Likins a Fifty dollar Treasury note, endorsed by him, 3rd. Decemr. 1846, for which I paid him \$50.00 in specie. The said note contained on the back of it the endorsments of Lieut. Col. Taylor and Lieut. Britton, similar to those which were on the Treasury notes that I purchased of him on a previous occasion. I received the above Treasury note from said Likins on the 22 inst.

(Signed) MARK STERLING

Master of the U S. Steamer Major Brown

No. 2299. AUGUSTIN SOTO'S STATEMENT

Laredo 25th. Decr 1846

I certify that I received of Lieut. Thos. M. Likins the sum of Twenty nine (\$29.00) dollars in payment for Three beeves which my brother-in law Mr Gregori Garcia sold him; and that I gave said Likins a receipt for the money;—

I further Certify that I received of said Likins, in the settlement of some accounts, a Fifty dollar Treasury Note, which I took without discount. The note was endorsed on the back of it by said Likins

Test J. A. WILKINSON

AUGUSTIN SOTO [Rubric]

No. 2300. LAMAR TO JAMES PINCKNEY HENDERSON

Laredo 27th Decr. 1846

His Excellency, J. PINCKNEY HENDERSON

SIR,

I send you this despatch more for the purpose of acquiring information of you, than for any I have to Communicate I have heard— but only through rumo[r]—that Another Call has been made upon Texas for troops; that they are now being organized, and will be brought very speedily into the field. If this be true, I beg leave to lay

¹¹In No. 2241.

before you my extreme desire to unite with them, I have just written to General Taylor for permission to rejoin the main Army; but believing that he will, in all probability be governed in the matter by your views, and wishes, I have thought best to solicit permission from you also, The place here was garrisoned mainly— I believe— at your suggestion with a view not only of protecting the inhabitants from Indian depredations but also for the purpose of sustaining your excellency in the extension of the laws of the state over this portion of its territory.—

Such being the Case, any views you might express in relation to my rejoining the Army, would in my opinion be decisive with General Taylor. The War, as I now understand, is to be prosecuted with renewed vigor; and it will not suit me so well, to remain at Laredo, in idleness and Comparative uselessness, whilst the tide of battle is rolling another direction. It is true, that owing to the state of political parties I must necessarily assume a very subordinate station in the forces Called into the field. but I would nevertheless, greatly prefer to fall into the ranks as a Common Soldier than to be left out of the Conflict altogether.

If it be necessary to Continue the Garrison here I must solicit the favor of being relieved by Some other Company, the request is made upon the supposition that the war is to be actively resumed, If this is not the case— if we are to Continue any length of time in our present doubtful state, I am content to remain where I am. Altho' I Cannot be Altogether insensible that I am consigned to a position not the most favorable for a development of my highest usefulness.— Being shut out from all the avenues of intelligence. I am totally ignorant of what is going on in the busy world beyond the precincts of Laredo. I know nothing of the designs of our Government, and but very little of the movements of our Army in Mexico. About ten days ago I saw a letter which Capt. Crossman at Camargo wrote to Lieut Tilden, then at this place, in which it is stated that General Worth had written from Saltillo, that Santana was moving upon him with a large force, and that he expected to fight in a few days. In Consequence of this, the entire forces on the Rio Grande below, were moved immediately for Monterey, and they are now on their march thither, In all probability the battle is fought below this altho I have heard nothing further upon the subject. General Taylor was not at Monterey at the time, he had gone to Montmorals, but where Montmorals lies I do not know, unless it is between Monterey and Victoria.— Under this state of ignorance I must ask you, the favor to write me, on all subjects pertaining to public affairs as far as you may think the information Can be useful to me in advancing the interests of Texas or that of the Country at large. I send you an extract of Capt Crossman letter, to Lieut Tilden, and also a copy of my letter to General Taylor, you will see by the latter that a vacancy has ocured or will in all probability occur in my Company by the resignation of Second Lieut Thomas M. Likins

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2301. LAMAR TO M. S. HOWE

Laredo Decr. 27th 1846

Capt HOWE
Commanding at San Antonio.

SIR

I have despatched a small party under the Conduct of Sergt. Rhodes for the purpose of bearing despatches to Govr. Henderson. On their arrival at San Antonio. I have ordered them to Call upon you for necessary supplies; which I must respectfully request you to furnish out of the public stores under your Control The party will remain in San Antonio until two of them— or more— shall proceed to the Seat of Government deliver the documents and return,

Yours respectfully

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR] Capt. Commanding at Laredo

No. 2302. LAMAR'S MEMORANDA OF LIKEN'S ACCOUNTS¹²

[Laredo, Texas, December? 1846?]

MEMORANDUM. BY CAPT. LAMAR.

When Lieut. Likins' letter of the 16th Decr. 1846 (No 11. in the preceding series) was received and read, I indicated to his friend who brought it, my readiness to examine whatever papers the Lieut. might chose to lay before me, and to receive his Returns whenever he thought proper to make them.— On the succeeding morning Lieut. Likins called at my Quarters; but I was too much occupied at the time to examine the papers which he brought for my inspection. On the 19th, he called again, in accordance with my note of that date; and exhibited the vouchers which he had taken whilst acting as Qr. Master & Commissary. I proceeded to their examination; but examined them so far only as to take down in a rough and hurried manner as each voucher was presented to me, the subject matter of it, the signature, the date and the amount. From this rough record (which is still in my possession) I make the following discriptive list of all the vouchers which were presented to me on that occasion; to which is added the several sums which the Qr. Master claims to have paid out for which he has no vouchers.

Purchases of Corn.

Two Receipts from Ramos Quoros, Monterey, dated the 13th. October 1846, in payment for 42 Bushels of corn—	\$33.25
Receipt from the same person, Ramos Quoros, dated 14th October 1846 in payment for 19 Fenagres of Corn—	39.75
Amount brought forward	\$73.00
Receipt from Remijo Garcia dated 19th October 1846, for payment for 21 Fenagres of Corn	\$21.00
Receipt from Don A + Vonsoon, dated 19th October his mark	

¹²In No. 2241.

1846, for payment for 66 bushels of Corn—	\$66.00
his	
Receipt from Enacio + Dorthose dated 26th. October	
mark	
1846 for the payment for 22 bushels of corn—	\$18.00
his	
Receipt from Giantana + Morene, dated 27th October	
mark	
1846, for the payment for 12 bushels of Corn—	\$13.00
his	
Receipt from Juan + Pettes, dated 28th. October 1846,	
mark	
for payt. for 10½ bushels of corn	\$10.50
his	
Receipt from Whan + Paris, dated 28th October 1846;	
mark	
(and witnessed by John Davis, whose name is on one	
receipt only and not on the duplicate) for payment of	
6½ fenagres of Corn—	\$20.00

 \$221.50

Amount brought forward

 \$221.50

his	
Receipt from Jose X Mariah dated 29th October	
mark	
1846, for payt. for 2½ bushels of corn.	
Witnessed by Jno Davis; his name not being on the	
duplicate—	\$ 2.25

his	
Receipt from Whan X Paris dated 29th October	
mark	
1846, for payt. for 7 Fenagres of Corn.	\$ 21.00
[Witnessed by T. J. Miller— I think his name	
was not on the duplicate—this is from memory—] ¹³	

his	
Receipt from Bentera X Enocoso for 23 bushels of	
mark	
Corn.— (In my memorandum I have got down no date)	\$ 23.00

his	
Receipt from Balentine X Balah, dated 30th Octr.	
mark	
1846 for payment for 2 fenagres of Corn—	\$ 6.00

 273 75

Amount claimed to have been paid for corn at Marino;	
and also for green corn at Monterey, for which	
he has no vouchers—	25.00

 \$298. 75

Such are corn Receipts from the 13th to the 30th. October.	
Amount brought forward—	\$ 7.75

Victorian Salines' Receipt for Thirty two dollars, 27 cents in payment	
for 922 lbs of Beef at 3½ cts pr. lb—	\$32.27

Gregori Garcia's Receipt for Thirty Nine dollars in payment for 4	
Beeves, three at \$10. each, and one at \$9. weighing 1765 lbs; dated	
1st Decr. 1846—	\$39.00

Esteven Rodrigus' Receipt for Thirty dollars 62½ cts in payment for	
875 lbs of Beef at 3½ cts pr. lb. (The date of this receipt is not	
on my memorandum; and as well as my memory serves me, I think	
the 875 lbs of beef was not all embraced in One Receipt but in two;	\$30.62½

¹³Brackets in the document.

one for 458 lbs of beef, and the other for 417 lbs making the aggregate of 875 lbs. Of this I am not certain)

Paid the Alcalde, Andres Martines, Ten dollars for a beef for which no receipt has been taken—	\$10.00
	\$119.64½

The following are his Corn Receipts for November.

Receipt from Antonio Banes, (Mier) dated 1st November 1846 for payt. for 7 Fenagres of Corn.	\$21.00
Receipt from Antonio Garcia, the Alcalde at Mier, dated 2nd Novr. 1846, for payt. for 21 Fenagres of Corn—	\$63.00
Receipt from Santiago Vela, (Alcalde at Guerrero) dated Novemr. 6th 1846, for payment for 23 Fenagres of Corn—	\$57.50
Receipt from Antonio Martines, dated Novr. 7th. 1846, in payment for 8, Fenagres of Corn—	\$20.00
Receipt from Nasario Bela, (Laredo) dated 10th Novr. 1846 for payt. for 25 fenagres of Corn—	\$75.00
his	
Receipt from Bissenta + Plassa, dated 14th Octr. 1846 for payment	
mark	
for 9 Fenagres of Corn—	\$27.00
	\$263.50
Amount brought forward	\$263.50
Receipt from Nasario Bela, dated 13th. Novr 1846, for payment for 67 Fenagres of Corn	\$202.50
Receipt from Don A. Soto, dated 26th. Novr. 1846, for payment for 7 Fenagres of Corn—	\$ 21.00
	\$487.00
Amount of the October Receipts—	298.75
	\$785. 75

Purchases of Beef and Mutton

Receipt of Maria Villavoial for three dollars dated 29th October 1846, paid for 100 lbs of mutton—	\$ 3.00
Antonio Martines' Receipt for four dollars & 75 cts paid him for 200 lbs mutton, dated 7th November 1846—	\$ 4.75
	\$ 7.75

Incidental Expences,

Taken down, as they were called out, without my referring to the documents, embracing items for which he has vouchers and some for which he has no vouchers.

Paid Usebio Garcia for transportation of Sugar to Mier, when the waggon broke down Novr. 1st. 1846—	\$1.50
Paid Wm Dodson for driving the waggon—	\$3.00
Paid Jno. L. McCoy as Teamster—	27.00
Paid Thos. Flores for attending to the mules—	5.00
Paid for repairs done to the Waggon at Gurrero Nov. 6th 1846	3.50
Paid the Ferryman at Guerrero— (no voucher)	2.00
Paid for Cord of Wood at Laredo,	3.00
	\$45 00
Amount brought forward	\$45.00

Paid N. Williamson for two days services at Camargo as Blacksmith.—	\$ 4.00
Paid Andres Martines for the hire of 4 oxen and Teamster for Six days, in hawling coal from the coal mine—	\$ 9.00

Paid Jose M. Gonzales as interpreter on a scouting party for four days—	8.00
Paid John Rodrigus as interpreter for seven days, the receipt dated 2nd Novemr. 1846.	7.00
Paid A Mexican, who had been employed by Lieut. Tilden as a guide to Mr. Hancock to Guerrero.—	12.00
Paid for a Shoat on the road between Comargo and Mier when the Waggon broke down for which he has no voucher	3.00
	<hr/>
Amount brought forward	\$88.00
	\$88.00
For the use of his own mule employed in packing the specie from Comargo to Laredo— 12 days—	\$ 6.00
To Benj. Likins (his son) for acting as Qr. Master Sergeant from the 9th Octr. to the 27th Nover.	9.22
Discount on \$200 Treasury drafts at Comargo—	9.00
	<hr/>
	\$112.22
Pierce's Receipt for a patent Scale, or weighing instrumt— dated 8th. Novr. 1846—	9.00
	<hr/>
Total	\$121.22

Recapitulation.

Amount pd. for Corn in October	\$298.75
Amt. paid for corn in Novemr—	\$487.00
	<hr/>
	785.75
Amt. pd. for beef & mutton—	119.64½
Incidental Expences—	121.22
	<hr/>
	\$1026 .61½
Steam Boat acct.—	192.22½
	<hr/>
	\$1218.84

From the foregoing exhibit, it will appear that the Qr. Master claims to have paid out \$1218.84½ cts.

He received from Capt. Sibley at Monterey—	\$200.00
From Capt. Crossman at Comargo—	500.00
From Lieut. Britton at Comargo \$200. at one time)	
and \$300 at another)	500 00
	<hr/>
	\$1200.00

Thus leaving the Govt. in his debt— \$18.84½ cts

Such is the result of my hasty examination of the papers which he submitted to my inspection. My estimate of his disbursements, leaves him in arrears.

Corn Account

The first corn purchased for the Company was on the 13th Octr. 1846; it was bought of Ramos Quoros, Monterey. 42 Bushels was bought of him on the 13th and 57 on the 14th—making 99 Bushels; for which our Qr. Master paid \$73.00

From the 13th to the 17th October making five days inclusive, the command was entitle to 84½ Rations pr. day. To wit. It mustered

65 privates, 8 non-Commissioned Officers, two musicians and one farrier making 76 in all. One Capt. drawing 3 rations; one Lieut. drawing 2 rations, and the Surgeon drawing one ration. Besides these there were 5 public mules, on half rations; the whole, amounting to 84½ rations per day. This for five days, would amount to 422½ rations: equal to 105½ bushels and 4 quarts. 99 Bushels of this Cost 73.50; and by allowing 1.00 pr. bushel for the remaining 6½ bushels, it will make the total sum expended for Corn, from Monterey to Comargo—\$79.50.

At comargo we drew corn at the Depot from the 18th to the 26th of October, inclusive, making 9 days.

We left Comargo on the 26th and came to the Wardow, where the Qr Master resumed his purchases for the Command. The command now required 100 Rations pr. day; which amount the Qr. Master furnished for 12 days—to wit from the 27th October up to our arrival in Laredo on the 8th November inclusive, making 13 days, a one of which no corn was issued. It was between Mier and Guerrero where a supply could not be obtained.— These 100 Rations pr. day, furnished for 12 days, would amount to 300, Bushels; for 93 Bushels of which he paid at Guerrero \$77.50 cts; and for the balance 207 Bushels he paid \$1.00 per bushel; making the total sum from Comargo to Laredo \$284.50.

From the 9th of Novr. to the 17th, making 9 days, there were foraged 85 horses, 5 mules full rations and four mules half rations; making 92 rations daily; and for the 9 days 828 rations; from which 52 rations are to be deducted for a detached party; leaving 776 rations, equal to 194 bushels; at \$1.00 pr. bushel.—

From the 18th to the 23rd Novr inclusive, making six days, 92 rations daily as above, amounting in the six days to 552 rations; from which 48 are to be deducted for an absent party; leaving 504 rations; equal to 126 bushels; at one dollar pr. bushel.

From the 24th to the 40th Novr inclusive, (7 days) 92 rations due daily; making in the 7 days 644 rations, from which 40 rations are to be deducted for the absent; leaving 604 rations, equal to 151 bushels, at \$1.00.

From the 1st. Decr. to the 4th inclusive, making 4 days, 71 rations were due daily (20 horses & one mule being absent with Sergeant Peace) making 284 rations in the 4 days; equal to 71. bushels, at one dollar pr. bushel.

Recapitulation

From the 13th October to the 17th inclusive, we drew 105½ Bushels of corn; for which the Qr. Master paid 79.00— 5 days.—

From the 18th to the 26th October inclusive we drew Corn from the depot at Comargo— 9 days.—

From the 27 of October to the 8th. Novr. inclusive we drew 300 Bushels of Corn, for which the Qr. Master paid \$284.50— 13 days—

From the 9th. Novr. to the 17th, we drew 194 Bushels of Corn; for which the Qr. M—paid \$194.00.— 9. days—

From the 18th to the 23rd. Novr. inclusive we drew 126 Bushels for which the Qr Master paid \$126.00— 6. days

From the 24th. to the 30th. Novr. inclusive, we drew 151 bushels—\$151.00— 7. days.

From the 1st. December to 4th. inclusive, we drew 71 bushels. \$71.00—4 days.
Total

5 days from the 13th to the 17th Octr.	105½	\$79.50
9 days at Comargo— (nothing)		
13 days from Wardow to Laredo	300—	284.50
9 days from the 9th. to the 17 Novr	194—	194.00
6 days from the 18th. to the 23rd.—	126.	126.00
7 days from the 24th. to the 30th—	151.	151.00
4 days from the 1st. Decr. to the 4th.	71	71 00
53 days	Bushels 947½	\$906.00

Thus will it appear that from the 13th October up to the 4th December, the Quarter Master purchased for the Command 947½ Bushels of Corn, Costing 906 dollars; 639 dollars of which he paid; leaving the sum of 290 dollars to be settled for by his successor.

No. 2303. RAFAEL URIBE TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Laredo, Texas, 1846?]

The Hon. Comt. of the fortress of Laredo.

D. MIRABO B. LAMAR

SIR.

Being obliged by the circumstances in which I find myself on account of the hostilities which frequently the wicked Indians have made us to suffer together with some of my fellow-countrymen, I soon took a notion to start some small cattle on the road for Texas, and we beg you if it be possible please to give us the aid of some soldiers in order that they may serve as an escort for our drivers of said cattle; and with nothing further to say I am your obedient servant

RAFAEL URIBE [Rubric]

No. 2304. EDITORIAL: LAMAR

[Matamoros, Mexico, 1846]

We regret exceedingly the necessity of calling the attention of the superior officers of the army, to the abusive exercise of power on the part of the Guard in this City. Not content with a full and faithful accomplishment of the objects for which they are placed here, they seem to study the most effectual means of accompanying their duty with insult indignity and personal outrage. That the population of the city should be kept in proper subordination to the laws is readily admitted; but we deny the necessity and repel the injustice of executing the task with that degree of ferocity which has heretofore been pursued, and which seems to be daily increasing, and apparently for no other purpose than the gratification of a bullying and tyrannical temper— All unnecessary vigor and hardships, is tyranny. The oppressions of mankind do not result so much from the laws themselves, as from their abusive cruelty in their execution. For ourselves we do not perceive why a soldier, any more than the civilian, should be encouraged and patronised in the practice of brutality. Humanity and moderation is as incumbent upon the one as upon the other; and when

these principles become disregarded and contemned by the army, then do the military, cease to be supporters of civil liberty—they become the trampers upon the rights of man, and tyrants to the peaceful citizen— We have scarcely witnessed a single arrest of any any [*sic*] individual disconnected with the Regular service, which was not more or less accompanied with unnecessary violence and insult— This the Guards have no right to indulge in. However prejudiced they may be against the Citizen or the volunteer, they should not be allowed to gratify their personal passions under the cloak of duty. If it becomes their duty to arrest an offender, let them do it without the exhibition of malice; let them do it with firmness; but not with a violence disproportioned to the occasion. There seems to be some uncertainty and doubt as to the proper causes for arrest. If simple drunkenness is an adequate reason for dragging an individual to the guard house, there are many of the Regular officers, daily laying themselves liable to the punishment. Indeed if such be the case, one half of the army, as well as the citizens would be obnoxious to arrest. How then does it happen that so many are permitted to escape, whilst the volunteer & the unfriended Citizen, are seized upon, and treated like felons for no other offence than that which is habitually practiced as an accomplishment by some in the higher rank? Why punish the plebian and let the patrician go? But the distinction so obviously drawn between the Regular & the Volunteer service, as well as between the high & the low, is not the subject of our present remarks— Our object is simply to remonstrate against the habit of accompanying arrests for trivial and venial offences, with brutality and personal outrage. A Regular soldier gets drunk; he is taken care of and treated with humanity. When a volunteer or citizen is found in the same situation; he is collared like a criminal; dragged along like a dog; and if he attempts to remonstrate at the violence, the remonstrance is construed into resistance and furnishes a good pretext for punching him with the breech of the musket, and for what other insults the soldiers may think proper to bestow. It is of this abuse of power that we complain. We do not complain of the appearance and parade of the soldiery in the streets; but we do object to their arbitrary and violent interference in matters where the rights of others are not invaded nor the laws of the count[r]y violated— A soldiery is not the best guardians of sobriety and good behavior; yet if it be really believed that the morals of the people should be improved, and that the bayonet is legitimate instrument of reformation, then let the work begin in the right place; let it begin in the higher ranks, nor waste its energies upon a few unthinking and resistless victims— As one instance of unnecessary insult on the part of the soldier, we take the liberty of naming an incident that occurred with Col. Kinny. He had been directed by a centinel, the nearest route to the River, and in attempting to pursue it, he unconsciously passed a few feet over the line of the encampmt, when he was suddenly stopped by another centinel. This was certainly proper and we fully approve it; But the *manner* in which it was done was as violative of duty as it was disgraceful to the service. Instead of apprizing the intruder of his trespass in respectful terms, the centinel bawled out in the following language, or

something very nearly like it.— God damn you, get out of the line. How dare you to cross a Centinel— The Col. replied in a mild tone that he might have performed his duty in a more moderate way; whereupon the soldier renewed his oaths and continued cursing the Col. until he was out of hearing. This is not told for the purpose of any injury to the Centinel; it is given only in testimony of the fact, that even a meritorious & imperative duty may be wrongfully performed; and when so, there is no redress to the insulted or to the injured except thro' the medium of the press— Backed and sustained by two thousand bayonets, a ruthless soldier can enforce a wrong as easily as he can offer an insult. The man who hopes for justice where the sword is triumphant, is a fool; he knows nothing of human nature, nor anything of the history of the world. A miser will not cling to his gold with more tenacity, than a despot to his power; and an augmentation is sought by both with equal avidity, not for the ability which it confers of doing good but for love of the thing itself. Liberality does not belong to the miser; nor forbearance to military man. When did the one ever unlock his stores for the public good;— or when did a [*sic*] other ever sheathe his sword for the benefit of civil rights?— We know very well that there is nothing of the tyrant in the disposition of Genl. Taylor— he is a patriot as well as the soldier—but a thousand little petty tyrannies may be committed—by subalterns, without his knowledge or approval; and it is for the correction of this evil that we now pen this hasty article— A few days ago two Volunteers were made to sweep the streets of Matamoras, under the coercion of the American bayonet— What more did the Mexicans exact when Texans were their prisoners— The American Flag is now flying on the walls of Matamoras; but what are its triumphs? It brings security to the Mexican population and insult oppression to the Americans— We do not wish to be misunderstood in this matter. We are the friends of the army—friends to the noble cause in which it is engaged, and no less the friends of order and subordination. All that we contend for is, that some respect should be paid to *civil* as well as to *military* rights. At present the sword is predominant in Matamoras; it has the power to enforce its will; and we must bow to its dictation. We only ask, that its power may not be exerted merely for the purpose of exhibiting its omnipotence. In the name of those very principles for which the war is prosecuted— We demand the personal security and a full exercise of the privileges and immunities which are secured to Americans by the Constitution of their Country. There is no necessity for trampling them under foot; the times and the occasion do not require or justify it. In carrying liberty to Mexico, let us not walk over the liberties of our own Countrymen. “O, it is excellent to have a giant’s strength; but it is tyrannous to use it like a giant.”—

[Endorsed:] Mexican War The abuses of the regular Army

No. 2305. “INSTRUCTIONS” BY JACOB AND P. DECORDOVA

[Broadside]

[About 1846?]

At the time of the passage of the various acts by the Congress of the late Republic of Texas, granting Donation, Headright and Bounty

lands to soldiers in the Texian War of Independence, the rights of heirship, and the distribution of intestates' estates, were governed by the laws of Spain; but "all proceedings" in relation to such estates were regulated by the laws of Louisiana.

Under the Spanish law, relatives entitled to inherit are divided into three classes, to wit: Descendants, ascendants, and collaterals, who are preferred in their order.

1. Descendants hold the first place without regard to sex—children first, and in their default, grand children. Grand children of deceased parents inherit, in right of their deceased father or mother, in connexion with their uncles and aunts.

2. In default of descendants, ascendants inherit—parents, grand parents, &c.

3. If there be neither descendants nor ascendants, collaterals succeed in the following order—1st, Brothers and sisters; 2d, Nephews and nieces, who also inherit, with their uncles and aunts, in right of deceased parents; 3d, After which the estate goes to the nearest of kin, according to the degrees of the civil law, to the tenth degree, and in the absence of relations within that degree, the wife, if there be one, is entitled to the entire estate.

The courts of Texas are inclined to treat the lands granted to deceased soldiers as community property, where the deceased left a widow, and in such case the widow is entitled to one-half of the land, not by inheritance, but as the survivor of her deceased husband.

The accompanying Power of Attorney will be executed by the heirs claiming the estate. In filling the blanks, the party will state in what right he claims, whether as a child, grand child, parent, grand parent, brother or sister, nephew or niece, &c., &c., of the deceased soldier.

The Power of Attorney must be acknowledged before some Commissioner appointed by the Governor of Texas to take acknowledgements for the State in which such acknowledgement may be taken, and be attested by his seal as such Commissioner. If taken before a Commissioner it will need no further authentication. The acknowledgement may also be taken before the judge of any court of record in the State where taken, in which case the authority of the judge to act as such, must be certified by the Secretary and be attested by the Seal of State.

Proof of the heirship of the party claiming, and his relationship to the deceased, must be made by at least two credible witnesses, who will take and subscribe the oath, the form of which accompanies the Power of Attorney. In all cases where others than descendants claim, the affidavit must state that the applicant is the nearest living relative to the deceased.

In all cases the applicant must prove that he is entitled to the estate claimed, under the rules of descent and distribution as above stated.

If the claim is made by the widow, for half the land as survivor of her husband, the affidavit must state that she is such widow and survivor, and that she was the wife of the deceased, to the knowledge of affiants; or was generally reputed as such. If record evidence of the marriage exists, an authenticated copy should be obtained and for-

warded. If the widow has again married, her present husband should join in the Power of Attorney.

The proof may be taken before and certified by a Commissioner for this State without further authentication. It may also be taken before and certified by any officer of the State where taken, who is authorized to administer oaths, but the authority of such officer must be authenticated by the certificate and seal of the Secretary of State.

J. & P. DECORDOVA,
General Land Agents.

[Endorsed:] Instructions from J & P De Cordova Gen. Land Agts.

No. 2306. JAMES WEBB TO LAMAR

Austin, 5. Jany. 1847.

DEAR GENERAL—

The Gentleman with whom you desired me to send John arrived in Town last evening, & intends leaving to day for Lorado, I have therefore but a very short time to prepare him for the journey & fear I may not be able to get him ready in time— My greatest difficulty is in getting a horse for him to ride, as the Gentleman with whom he is to go has no spare one. I have a gentle mule which the negroes are now out trying to catch, but it is in the Prairie & I fear they may not find it— The mule that you sent is over on Onion Creek—it was left there by Mr. Hancock & has not yet been brought home— If it were here I would send John on that—I regret that I did not get your letter in time to enable me to provide John with the Clothes you desired he should have— It was recd. during my absence on the Circuit, & upon my return home, in consequence of the absence of all my white family, it was not delivered to me, & it was only a day or two since, in looking over James' Port folio, that I found it among some other letters, which he had placed there while I was gone—I have therefore not had time to fit John out as you requested, but will prepare him the best I can.

My son in law Dr. Herbert, died at his residence on Caney on the 29th. Novr., & my wife, James & Charles are in consequence, down there— I am very desirous of going down myself, but my engagements in the Supreme Court (which is now sitting) have prevented me, & will prevent my doing so for two or three weeks to come—

Great excitement has prevailed here for the last four or five days occasioned by the killing of Dr. Chalmers by Joshua Holden—He killed him in the street on New Years day— The wound was given with a large Bowie knife in the head— it penetrated the scull & went deep into the brain producing instantaneous death— Holden is in custody & has been Committed to stand his trial for *murder*— There is some apprehension that the friends of Chalmers will yet save the officers of the law the trouble of trying him, by taking the matter into their own hands, & in consequence of which, a strong guard is kept around him—

I will attend to all your requests in the way of business to the best of my ability— I have written to Genl. McLeod informing him of your instructions to me respecting the security to be given to Mr. G. Lamar,

& ask'd him to give [me] such information as would enable me to make [out] the deed, since which I have not heard from him—

Whether I shall be able to dispose of any of your property or not I can't say— I could probably sell the Cottage, but that I am not disposed to do as you seem desirous of retaining it— I will however do the best I can for you—

Excuse this hasty scrawl, as I have but little time to write & am every moment interrupted by persons calling on business—

Your friend sincerely

JAMES WEBB

I will give John money enough to pay his expenses— I thank you for the mule, I shall get it very opportunely, as I have to procure two for my ensuing Crop— J. W.

I have got the mule & John is all ready to start— I have given him a new pair of boots & cloth to make a new suit of Clothes, I had not time to have them made— he is also furnished with blankets— I have got nothing from Lamar Moore, I prefer'd getting what he wanted on my own account else where— W

[Addressed:] Genl. M. B. Lamar Lorado

[Endorsed:] from James Webb to M B Lamar

No. 2308. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO JOHN A. VEATCH

Lieut VEATCH

SIR

I find upon reference to my Memorandums, that the quantity of fresh meat issued to Capt Lamars Company during the period that I acted as A.A.C.S. of the Company was as follows Viz,

1466 lbs	fresh	beef
100	"	" Pork
300	"	" Mutton

Laredo January 13th 1846.

Yours Respectfully

THOS. M. LIKENS

No. 2309. RECEIPTS ISSUED BY LAMAR

Laredo Garrison 13th January 1847.

Receipts to Lieutenant Thos. M. Likins, for Corn, Beef and other articles issued to my command; and also for money paid by him for incidental expences, during the time he acted as Assistant Quartermaster and Commissary to the same.

The first Receipt embraces the issues made by him from the public stores which he received from the Government Depots. Whether the provisions drawn at Seralvo were charged to me or to him, I do not know; but in my present receipt they are included to his credit.—

The Second Receipt shews the amount of Corn paid for by him out of the money furnished for that purpose.

The Third receipt shews the amount of Beef &C., with which he supplied the garrison out of the Commissary funds placed in his hands.

The Fourth, and last Receipt contains a list of the incidental expenses incurred by the Command and settled by him.—

Received of Thos. M. Likins, the following Commissary stores which were distributed to the Officers and privates of my command out of Stores received by him from depot. Viz

251	Two hundred & fifty one pounds of Coffee.
502	Five hundred & two pounds of Sugar.
12	Twelve pounds of Rice
5275	Five thousand two hundred and seventy five pounds of Flour.
2 $\frac{1}{2}$	Two bushels and Thirty one quarts of Salt.
70	Seventy pounds of Candles—
187	One hundred and Eighty seven pounds of Soap.

Laredo 13th January 1847

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Capt. Commanding at Laredo.

Laredo 13th. January 1847.

Received of Thos. M. Likins Six hundred and forty Six and a half bushel of Corn for the use of the Laredo Garrison which he purchased during the time he acted as A.A.Q.M. of the company under my command. For the above named quantity of corn he paid the sum of Six hundred and twenty nine dollars (\$629.)

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR Capt. Commanding at Laredo.

The following exhibits the entire purchases of Beef made by Thos. M. Likins for the use of the Laredo Garrison as well as for the Steamer Major Brown, together with the prices paid for the same. Viz—

One Beef from Estevan Roderigus for which he paid Nine dollars—	\$9.00
Three Beeves from Victoriano Salinas for fifteen dollars—	\$15.00
One Beef from Alcalde Martines at	\$10.00
Five Beeves from Gregori Garcia—	\$41.00
	<hr/>
	\$75.00

One of the above Beeves, costing Ten dollars (\$10) was rejected by me as being too bad for consumption. I have the certificates of two physicians, the Surgeon of the post, and Dr. Veatch as to its total unsuitableness for the use of the Garrison. If then the amount should be deducted from his account, it will leave Sixty five dollars (\$65) as the whole sum paid by him for beef, including what he issued to the Major Brown as well as the dried Beef which was turned over to his successor.

With regard to the weight of the above Beeves, I have no other knowledge than what he has furnished himself in the following letter—to wit—

(Copy)

Lieut VEATCH

SIR

I find upon reference to my memorandums that the quantity of fresh meat issued to Capt. Lamar's Company during the period that I acted as A.A.C.S. of the Company was as follows— Viz—

1466 lbs fresh Beef
 100 " " Pork
 300 " " Mutton

Laredo, January 13th 1846

Yours respectfully

(Signed) THOS. M. LIKINS.

For the pork and mutton mentioned in the foregoing letter he paid as follows— for two sheep at Wardow Three dollars; for one shoat on the road Three dollars, and for mutton again, Four dollars and seventy five cents, making in the total, Ten dollars and seventy five cents; which being added to the Sixty five dollars paid for beef actually received, makes the total amount expended for fresh meats, \$75.75cts— and for this sum I offer the following Receipt.—

Laredo 13th. Janry 1847.

Received of Thos. M. Likins, whilst he was acting as Commissary to my Command, Beef and other fresh meats to the amount of Seventy five dollars and Seventy five Cents. (\$75.75cts)

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

Capt. Commanding at Laredo.—

Laredo 13th. Janry 1847.

The following is a list of the contingent expences incurred by my Command, and settled for by Thos. M. Likins whilst acting as Quartermaster and Commissary to the Same. Viz—

Paid Usebia Garcia for the transportation of Sugar to Mier, where the wagon broke down—	\$1.50.
Paid Wm. Dodson as Teamster	3.00
Repairs done to wagon at Guerrero	3.50
Paid Ferryman at Guerrero—	2.00
Paid for wood at Laredo—	3.00
Paid a Mexican for attending to Mules	5.00
Paid N. Williamson for Shoeing horses at Comargo—	4.00
Paid A. Martines, the Alcalde at Laredo for the hire a Cart,)	
Oxen & C to hawl Coal from the mines—	5.00
Paid Filipi San Miguel for hawling public stores from the river) on our arrival at Laredo	3.50
	<hr/> \$30.50
Paid John Rodrigus as interpreter, \$6.00 at one time and) one dollar at another—	7.00
Paid to José Ma. Gonzales Eight dollars as Interpreter for four) days. Regarding the sum as unreasonable and improper to have) been given, I reduced it to what I conceive to be right—	4.00
Paid Mr Pierce four dollars for a patent weighing instrument; and subsequently gave him an additional dollar, which I am not disposed to allow, because there is no apparent reason for the act.	4.00
	<hr/> \$45.50

To the above bill making in total the sum of Forty five dollars and fifty cents, I do hereby give my approval, that the same may pass to

the Credit of said Lieut. Likins in the settlement of his accounts as Quarter Master & Commissary to my Command.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR,
Capt. Commanding at Laredo.—

No. 2310. THOMAS M. LIKENS TO LAMAR

Laredo Texas January 14th 1846[7]

SIR

being verry desirous of setling my accounts with the quarter master and Commissary Departments, and having Requested so often that you would furnish me with forage Returns and provision Returns according to the Regulations of the U. S. Army. So that I can be enabled to make settlements, and not yet able to obtain them from you.

You will pleas accept this as a notice from me that I now Require them from you, according to the Army Regulations

Respectfully

THOS. M. LIKENS

[Addressed:] Capt. M. B Lamar— Comdg Laredo Guards Texas—

No. 2311. JAMES W. WEBB TO LAMAR

Austin Feby 4/47

MY DEAR GENL

I received yours from San Antonio a few minutes since and, your pistols are now at the Stage Office, ready to leave in the Morning—

I will do my best for you in regard to the House & all other interest that may come under my notice—

All the Counties on the Rio Grande have been completed & a Judicial District will be made. I am still a Candidate for Dist Atty & if Elected will go out immediately after; I will let you know however & hope to get an Escort from your Company in such an Event

Family are all well— We have got rid of the Preachers. They stop at Lucketts All send love to you— remember me to Bee & write soon

Truly Yr friend

J. W. WEBB

No. 2312. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

Laredo Febyry 5th. 1847.

Major LIKINS

SIR

When you first applied to me for Forage and Provision Returns, after your visit from Comargo, I was not disposed to give them to you in the usual form, in consequence of the difference of opinion between us respecting your accounts.—

Being unwilling to allow you all that you claimed, I felt it my duty to accompany whatever documents I might give you, with such remarks as might tend to explain the reason of my conduct. I am now, however, prepared to communicate with the Government fully upon the subject of our difference; and if you deem the Receipts which I gave you, dated 13th Ult too informal to be received by the Govt. and

therefore insufficient for your purpose, I am ready and willing upon your returning them to furnish you with others in their stead which shall be more in form and receivable by the Govt.

Yours

MIRABEAU B LAMAR Capt. &C—

No. 2313. LAMAR TO T. S. JESSUP

Laredo Garrison Feby 7th 1847.

To the Quarter Master General
United States Army

SIR

When I took command of the Company destined for this Post, the Second Lieutenant, Thos. M. Likins of my command was appointed A.A. Q.M and Commissary. From the remoteness of the station from any public depot, it became necessary to intrust considerable sums of money to the acting quartermaster here for the purchase of supplies. Likins was not a bonded officer, and therefore special instructions were given me by General Taylor, placing the control of the funds exclusively in my hands, requiring the accounts of the Acting Quarter Master and Commissary to be at all times subject to my inspection and supervision. The following extract touching this point, is copied from the Instructions alluded to dated Hd. Qrs Army of occupation, Camp near Monterey, Octo 15th/1846. "It is intended that such supplies as must be drawn from a depot shall be furnished you from Comargo or the nearest depot on the Rio Grande. The Quartermaster's department will furnish the necessary transportation for such supplies and they will be escorted by detachments of your command. But it is important that the Company should be supplied as far as possible by purchase in the neighborhood of your station. Corn Beef, and perhaps other articles may be procured in this way. For the purpose of making such purchases, the necessary funds will be furnished to your Quarter master and commissary, the expenditure of which will be under your exclusive control and the accounts subject at all times to your supervision. All receipts for money paid out, should be taken in duplicate."—(signed) W. W. S. Bliss asst. Adj. Genl—

When I called upon Likins in pursuance of my instructions, for an exhibition of his accounts he evaded it under various pretexts and finally refused to submit them.— He was consequently suspended from his functions as Qr. Master & Commissary, and subsequently arrested. His conduct, together with some other circumstances, created doubts as to the integrity of his official acts.— An enquiry was therefore instituted into the nature and extent of his expenditures, which was no difficult matter, as nearly the entire amount of his purchases had been made through one individual who acted as interpreter. He finally presented his papers; but upon comparing them with the positive evidences in my possession as to his real transactions, a discrepancy was apparent, which forced me to decide against the accuracy of his vouchers. By way of example, I will mention two instances. He holds the receipt of Mr Pierce for Nine dollars in payment for a patent Scale, or weighing instrument; when in reality he only paid Mr Pierce five

dollars for said article. He attempts to explain the circumstance by saying that he had included in said receipt, four dollars which he had paid a Mexican, for another instrument of similar kind— Upon examination of facts, however, it was ascertained that the second instrument purchased, was bought upon a credit from Mr Gonzales, and was subsequently settled for, by Likins successor. This statement of facts is predicated upon the testimony of Msr Pierce & Gonzales. Likins holds also another receipt from Mr. Martines, the alcalde at the time, for nine dollars for the hire of his Cart oxen & C to haul Coal from the mines when in fact he paid Mr Martines only five dollars, the true amount of the account. The circumstance was explained in a manner similar to the former. The quartermaster said that he had included in said receipt four dollars, which he had paid to Filipi San Miguel for hauling the public stores from the river on our arrival at Laredo. But upon enquiry it was found that he had already taken a receipt from Miguel for the same service; not however for four dollars, but for three dollars and fifty Cents, the true amount of the account. These facts are established by the evidence of the parties named, as well as by corroborating circumstances.—

Similar difficulties occuring with others of his vouchers has rendered it impossible for me to make them, the basis of any settlement with him.

I have given him provision and forage returns for all the issues made to my Command by him, withholding any approval of his accounts of purchases—

I once made a rough & hasty estimate of his accounts (blending his quartermaster and Commissary expenditures together in the calculation) and brought him in debt to the Govmt little over Two hundred dollars. If the Governmt however, should require it, I am able, from the data in my possession, to make out out [*sic*] a pretty fair and accurate estimate of his real disbursements.

I have the honor to be respectfully your
Obdt. Servt.

MIRABEAU B LAMAR
Capt Comand at Laredo—

[Endorsed:] Copy Letter sent to Qr Mas-Genl dated 7 Feby. 1847—

No. 2314. JOHN A. ROGERS, SR. TO LAMAR

Texana Texas 12 Feby 1847—

MY ESTEEMD. FRIEND

A friend of mine and myself has on hand an assortment of dry goods suitable for the Frontier trade, And desire to go to Lorado or its vicinity with them for the purpose of selling for Sheep or such other articles as may be turnd into Cash— Rest assured that no spirits or contraband articles will be permitted to be taken and desire your permit authorising us to dispose of them. I will come myself with Mr Jinkins the person who I refer to will be concernd.—

Advise me the best rout to proceed also as to the articles as may suit the troops and citizens— Sending your permit— by first *Express*

If you wish any articles for your private use or any of the officers advise me and if to be procured I will bring them

Your friend truly

JOHN A. ROGERS Sr

[Addressed:] His Excellency Malabar Lamar or officer Commanding Lorado Rio Grand Texas via Carmargo Public service

[Endorsed:] from John A Rogers Texana Texas to M B Lamar

No. 2315. W. W. S. BLISS TO LAMAR

Head Qrs. Army of occupation, Agua Nueva,
18 miles S of Saltillo February 13, 1847.

SIR,

Your communication of Dec. 24th was received while the Commanding General was at Victoria in the state of Tamaulipas.

I am directed by the General to convey his entire approval of your course in authorizing the issue to a limited extent of medicines among the suffering inhabitants of Laredo, and also in regard to Lieut. Likens as reported in yr. letter.

At the time your communication was received, the General could not determine whether your services would be required in the field. It is now probable however that an additional mounted force will be wanted in this quarter, and he desires that you will hold yourself ready to join him, say by the 1st or 5th of April, unless previously advised to the contrary, with the company under your command.

Should an urgent necessity exist for your visiting Washington, the General directs me to say that you have his authority for doing so, but he would regret much to lose your services, expecting as he does, to make a forward movement from this point.

If you could have three or four hundred head of beef cattle driven over when your company marches, it would be a great advantage to the service here, & the General desires that it may be done if practicable

I am Sir, very respectfully

Your obt. Servt.

W. W. S. BLISS, Asst. Adjt. Genl.

Genl. M. B. Lamar Commander &c Laredo

Note. Your commissary may contract for the cattle and hire men to drive them over, the necessary escort being furnished from your command. W. W. S. B.

N. B. The Comg. Genl. hopes that the steamboat "Maj. Brown" may be able to get away from Laredo before the time for your company to march: if not, it will be necessary to leave a small guard with her. W. W. S. B.

[Endorsed:] Orders of Genl Bliss, U. S. A to M B Lamar

No. 2316. "REMARKS" REGARDING LIKEN'S ACCOUNT.
LAMAR

[Laredo, Texas, February? 1847]

The following is the Document alluded to in the two preceding Letters, dated 14th Jany and the 5th February 1847. Besides the

amounts embraced in the Three Receipts, Lieut. Likins is entitled to credit for \$192.22cts which he paid for the Steamer Major Brown, and for which he has a voucher already acknowledged by me. He claims to have paid \$12. to a Mexican for acting as a guide to Mr. Hancock when he was sent by Lieut. Tilden to Comargo. I do not know whether he has a voucher or not. I did not allow the item in my estimate of the incidental expences, because he presented no evidence that it was not included in the steamboat account.— He claims credit also for \$27.00 paid McCoy as Teamster, to which he may possibly have done under instructions which recd. from Capt Crossman; but this item I rejected also upon the ground that he furnished no evidence money having been paid. These two items, if allowed, and added to the steamboat acct will entitle him to a credit of \$231.22cts
[incomplete]

No. 2317. LAMAR TO THOMAS M. LIKENS

[Fragment]

[Laredo, Texas, February? 1847?

.....
 I can give them. If I have given you full credit for all the money which you have paid for Corn and fresh meats, what more can you desire! especially if my statements and Receipts shall be accepted (as I doubt not they will be) and passed to your credit by the authorities with whom you will have to make your settlement. Sir, I have heretofore treated you with a respect and a forbearance which your course has not entitled you to; but since you seem disposed to fix the odium of your own delinquency upon me, I now beg leave to say to you, that I have in my possession a body of testimony in relation to your official conduct which, if published to the world, cannot fail to overwhelm you with shame and confusion, and which I am ready to make public if you request it.

Yours

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
 Capt. Commanding at Laredo.

No. 2318. SAMUEL R. CURTIS TO LAMAR

Head Quarters Comargo Mar 1st 1847

Capt M. B. LAMAR
 Camp at Laredo

SIR

There has just been found in the post office of this place, a package addressed to you; which under the circumstances I have taken the liberty to open.— It should have been forwarded sometime since, as you will perceive by the date and the Endorsement on the back.— My object in opening it, was to give you tidings important, to the service, which have arrived since the date of this package

I received intelligence from General Taylors head Quarters via Monterray, dated the 23d. Ins't; which stated that Santa Anna had arrived with a large force, and demanded of Genl. Taylor that he surrender or be cut to pieces with 20000 men. General Taylor sent word

back for the Mexican General to "Come and take him". The note from the Quartermaster at Mo[n]terray, closed by saying "Genl. Taylor is giving the Mexicans hell".—

By the same express I was informed that a large force of Cavalry, variously estimated from two to six thousand, passed round, and now occupy the road between this place and Monterray

Nothing Official has been Received since the date of the 23rd. but I have Mexican Reports and Mexican Conduct Enough to Satisfy me there is no doubt of the way being intercepted.—

I am also ordered by date of the 21st not to permit less than a regiment advance from the place but to press forward myself as soon as force from below shall relieve me.

Under these Circumstances I must leave you to decide, whether it would not be best for you to Anticipate the *time* dictated, in the orders herewith transmitted.— If you should think it your duty to do so; then it seems to me to be my duty, to order you to take this route, so as to unite with a large force; which, will accord with my orders of the 21st Inst and, as I believe best subserve the public interest

Very Respectfully Your Obt. Sevt

SAML. R. CURTIS Co Com'g

[Endorsed:] From Col Curtis Commanding at Comargo

No. 2321. LAMAR TO ——— FRANCIS

Laredo 8th March 1847.

Mr FRANCIS

SIR

In accordance with your request, as communicated to me through Lieutenant Veatch, I have ordered your name to be erased from the Rolls of my company. You will therefore consider yourself no longer as a member of my command. General Taylor has empowered me, under certain circumstances, to give dismissals, and it is in conformity that authority that I act on the present occasion.

Yours &C

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

Capt. Commanding the Garrison at Laredo—

No. 2327. PABLO AMIRA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Sabinas April 26, 1847.

HON. DN. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

MY DEAR SIR AND FRIEND.

Answering your very much appreciated note of the 17th instant, I must tell you that I send with your messenger, Stephen Rodrigues, what you left in my possession when you were in this city. I have directed that the boxes should be sealed with sealing wax, [this] being advised for greater security so that you may understand that nothing has happened to them on the road, as well as to preserve my own integrity.

With respect to the boy of whom you spoke to me desiring to put

him in the school, in order that he may not lose time you can send him at once if you like. You must understand that I, as well as my wife, have no knowledge of the style or management of your country for the education of boys. Without any doubt the education will be altogether different, paying attention solely to those things we have learned. It is my duty to advise you that the teacher does not receive more than two pesos per month; and with respect to board, that we shall be very much pleased to have you send to us the little boy who will be boarded in our house, with the greatest possible care, according to our meager circumstances; for, you understand, I have the greatest desire to serve you and all my family the same.

You speak to me of your Purveyor who goes to Camargo and who on coming will get a supply of corn; in this difficulties will be found, because the corn is high, and besides it is being taken to Cerralvo whence the quartermaster gets it.

I am your true friend who esteems you.

PABLO AMIRA [Rubric]

P. S. I have just arrived from Monterrey where I looked for you to greet you and at the same time to ask of you a little favor, which is that you obtain for me from General Taylor protection for some consignments which are accustomed to pass from the American troops which are of no consequence to the peaceful cities. But I do not lose the hope that you may obtain the protection from him, and I will always be grateful for it. Farewell

[Endorsed:] from Pablo Amira to M B Lamar

No. 2328. K. R. DRAKE TO LAMAR

[Laredo, Texas,] 3d May 1847.

To General LAMAR

DR SIR

Yesterday by accident I was informed that I was laboring under suspicions of attempting to plunder the Pay Master. I immediately inquired from whence such suspicions arose and was informed that they originated from the fact of the screws of one or more of the money boxes being raised & from what the Sentinel who was on post with me during the third relief said respecting my conduct.

Aware as you, certainly must be of the feelings of any man of honor or sense placed in such a predicament, you will not I presume refused to have the matter investigated before you & the other officers, and there allowing me to be *present* to hear the report of Mr Harper &c, and then to give your decision whether or not there exists any grounds for such suspicions. If you may think that there is cause for such suspicions I then humbly beg for my discharge. If on the contrary you find none I then desire it to be publicly announced at General muster. The matter can no longer remain in the way it is. I am willing to confront my slanderers be it where it may.

K R DRAKE

P. S. I understand that he has given a different tale behind me than he does before my face

[Addressed:] To General Lamar Commander of the Loredo Guards.
Present.

[Endorsed:] from Drake to M B Lamar

No. 2329. ALMERINE SHANE ESTATE

May 3— June 16, 1847

One day after date I promise to pay Almerien Shane or order ten dollars of the first money I draw from the United States this the 22 oct A D 1846

WM R TEMPLETON

[Endorsed:] Templetons note 10\$

Three months after date I promise to pay Almerine Shane or order the sum of twelve dollars and fifty cents value Received

Nov 24th 1846

JOSHUA ADAMS

[Endorsed:] Adams Note 12.50

Reed of A. Shane &co one hundred & twenty five dollars for a lot of goods

Dec 24th 1846

JOHN KILLEN

Mier Februy 1847.

Mr SHANE

To— J. Harper

To one shirt—

Bottle of Ink—

Dr.

\$2.00

25

\$2.25

I certify that the a/c above so far as the shirt is correct

G W FIELD [?]

Cado Parish Louisiana greenwood
this the 21 day March 1847

DEAR BROTHER i once take my pen in hand to drop you a few lines to let you know how i am getting along as i have never rote to you Since you left this country so strange it was to me for you to quit your school and leave without coming to see us and the way you left your business we are all up on feet at this time i have been sick ever since the 10 July 1846 but i am on the mend i little mary has had too light spells and all of my children has been sick but they have all got well mary has a fine sone bornd the 15 July 1846 and can walk know mary wishes to bee remembered buy you and would bee glad to see you. Pinckney and Manda and all of the children was wel last week Pinckney has been back to alabama started the first of december and returned about the 20 of January he says it is hard times there he sold his land to mister hawkins for too hundred dollars got \$130.00 dollars down the other 70 is to bee sent to him he says that mister holt is living on your fathers place i have nothing that will interest you i

have all the bad luck that a man can have the worms they took my crop of cotton i did not make but 3 bales of cotton and had to hire the picking of it that cost me 40 dollars i sold it for \$120 dollars i was not able to help myself my liver was afected and stomach i spit blood and vomited up for along time i had doctor young and doctor Wilder and doctor george in Shrievport they could relieve me for a short time but could not affect a cure but i doe hope that i will get better know as the spring has broke i hav hired too negroe . . . [illegible] from parson doty for 70 doll another from mister gill for 90 dollars and know my land has to bee sold on the first Saterdag in aprial to Sadsify umfrey dauss he closed the morgage on me the first day of January and ordered it to bee Sold as soon as possible and that comes on next Saterdag week and i have know chance to help my self i hav tried to sell it for what i gave for it and canot sell it at any price you have rote to me some 3 times since you left and i have not been able to right and did not know where to right i received a letter from you last week that was dated december the 27 1846 that gave me great pleasure to here you was doing well also received a letter last week from mr Scott he rote to me that he had a letter for me and some things for his sisters and to call and see him i went up in texes shortly after you left to see how you left your business i went to mr coopers and he told me that mr crage had all of your papers to colect and to youse the money if he had any youse for it and of any body Called for the papers not to let them goe and said if you never come back he wanted your friends to have the money and i could not find your trunk nor any of your books in desemb i went up to see captain wilder as i herd he had got home but when i got there he was from home and i could not see him i saw his wife She told me that you had let mr wilder have your papers but i could not here anything of your trunk til mistress wilder in quired of her daughter She said that your trunk was left at mister gills and your books i returned back home and was taken sick and doe not know where it is you never rote to me any thing about your business i bought the horse from pinckney for sixty dollars and had to sell my horse to pay for him i want you to right to me whether you rote me a letter and never sealed it for i doe not believe you rote it and whether you left a letter any where for me or not i do not want you to think hard of me for righting the way i doe please right as soon as this comes to hand Please right to me what you done with my sides [?] as i doe not know where they are i shall try to goe up to see mister Scott in a short time or as soon as i can gett done planting my corn as i did for get. to tell you that my Sones mane his name is henry tailor Nothing more at present but remains your friend untill death

ELIAS MITCHAEAL MARY MITCHAEAL

[Addressed:] San Antonio to the Care of Capt M B Lamar Mr Po
Please forward to Mr A Shane

Est ate of A Shane Decd. in account Current With D L McGraw

1847					1847			
May 3	To	Amt paid Rent for Store	30 00		May 3d	By	Amount of	
	"	" " Hugh Reed	71 73				Cash Sales	152 50
	"	" " for Candles	1 25					
	"	" " D L McGraw	50 00					
			152 98					

May 3 Statement of Goods remaining on hand. Cash Sales—and out Standing debts belonging to the Estate of A Shane Decd turned over to Capt M B Lamar by D L McGraw, Agent

Amt of Old Stock on hand last Feby	65 00	Amt of Cash Sales	152 50
Invoice of Goods Purchased in Camargo	240 00	debts due the Estate as pr list No 2	325 12
		Goods remaining on hand May 3d—	

[Endorsed:] McGraw a/c Current

An Inventory of the Goods, Chattels and effects of A. Chane Deceased

23½ Yds of blue Calico—	10 ox Black flax thread
12 " " Do—	5 Pieces Tape
12 Do Yellow Do	6 Doz metal Buttons
2 " calico	18 yds Yellow Ribon
3½ Do Do	4 " Purple Do
13¾ yds—Bleached Domestic	2 Papers needles
6 Do Do Do	1 Pr Drawers
16½ Do Do Do	1 Do Woolen socks
3¾ Do Do Do	1 Flannel shirt
1 Do Do Do	2 Cotton Do
5½ yds Linin	44 Papers smoking Tobacco
32 Do—Bleached Domestic	3 Summer Coats
8 yds Indian checks	5½ Do Do
1 Table cloth	54 lbs Net ½ Box Tobacco, Gross 71 lbs.
9½ Doz Balls cotton thread	80 " Leaf " Do
9 Pairs Ladies Gloves	500 Stone Pipes
2 Thimbles, small	200 Clay Do

[Endorsed:] No 1 Invoice of Goods remaining on hand belonging to the Estate of A Shane Decd May 3d 1847

Sale of Effects at Auction—for and on account of Shane (deceased) June 16th 1847

James Wilkinson	12 Yds Calico	16c	1.92
" "	12½ " do	12½	1 56
" "	1 Remnant do	—	13
" "	3½ Yds do	11½	37
" "	27 " do	31½	8 37
" "	32½ " blea domestic	19	6 24
" "	11 " " "	17	1 87
" "	1 Table Cover	—	1 06
" "	1 lot Sundries	—	2 62
" "	1 Coat	—	1.50
E. R. Clay	50 lb Tobacco	10	5.00
" " "	1 Remnant Linin	—	50
" " "	1 " bl domestic	—	50
John Hillion	5½ Yds Linin	41	2 62
" "	1 Lot Pipes	—	1 00

Harper	3	Pr mits	4c	12
Williams	3	" "	13c	39
Wester	2	" "	1/—	25
"	1	doz Papers Tobacco	—	37
W. J. Pearce	1	Coat	—	1 00
B. Ray	1	doz Papers Do	4	50
W roman[?]	3	" " "	3/-4/-	1 28
W Bagget	1	" " "	3/	38
		Amt Carid ford		39 52
		Amt brot forward—		39 52
W Baggett	1	doz Papers tobacco	3/-	37
M. B. Lamar	1	" " "	3/-	37
J. Warden	1	lot Clay Pipes	—	50
" "	1	" Stone do	—	62
		total—		\$41.38
Cash Recd of Warden for Tobacco				.75
				\$42.13

[Translation from the Spanish]

6 Pieces Printed Calico medium width,	200 yds.	@ 16½ c	33
3 " " French Calico	134¾ yds.	@ 32½ c	43 79½
3 " Tamán	109½ yds.	@ 15½ c	16 97¼
3 " Tamán	98½ yds	@ 15 c	14 77½
2 " Coarse cotton cloth	74½ yds	@ 13 c	9 68½
1 " Black calico	32¾ yds	@ 16½	5 42½
3 " Blue calico	103¼ yds	@ 14½ c	14 96¼
1 " Narrow calico	28 yds	@ 13½ c	3 78
1 " Silesian linen	40 yds	@ 12 peso piece	12
1 " Drilling	46 yds	@ 32½ c	14 95
1 " Jeans	65 yds	@ 16½ c	10 72½
21 yards of the same for pantaloons		@ 42½ c	8 92½
6 Pieces wide Ribbon		@ 1½ peso piece	9 "
6 " little Ribbon		@ " " piece	9 "
1½ Dozen handkerchiefs		@ 3 pesos Doz	4 50
½ " small silk handkerchiefs		@ 62½ c	3 75
½ " colored silk handkerchiefs		@ 75 c	4 50
½ " Embroidered Stockings		@ 50 c	3 00
½ " Plain "		@ 31¼ c	1 87½
8 Spools of Thread		@ 1 peso Doz	8 00
3 Gross Buttons		@ 1 peso Doz	3 00
16 Papers Needles		per	1 69
4 Boxes of Hooks & eyes			59
1 Pound Ball Thread per			2 25

\$240 "

Amt. of Invoice.....\$240.00

Cash Recd 185.00

Balance— \$55.37½

No. 2333. HISTORICAL NOTES. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]¹³

[Laredo? Texas,] May 30, 1847

Revolution of the people in Mexico in the States of Tamaulipas, Nuevo Leon, and Coahuila from the year 1838 to 1840.

This had its beginning since the year 1834 in which unfortunately

¹³The first section and the copy of *Correo Del Bravo del Norte* of February 12, 1840, are in Spanish. See Vol. V, page 403.

the constitution of the Republic, accepted and ratified by the people in 1824, was overthrown. From such anti-popular proceedings a general discontent resulted among the people, and the citizens could not be indifferent to the outrage which they resented when they saw themselves subjected to a bastard government, and [one] whose authority appealed only to force in the name of law; but even this beginning, was never sufficient to check the formidable torrent of political power which does not yield, nor will it ever yield to any obstacles however great may be the difficulties that are presented to it, by virtue of the fact that it is written that over the land the source of power is the people. And so passed the time until the aforementioned year, 1838; and it can be said that there was not a single day in which that Government did not have its attention occupied in having recourse to the different points where it was necessary to contend with the patriots who were opposing themselves to it with the object of destroying it in order that they remain in full liberty as before. The people were burdened with heavy taxes and imports and this, in place of augmenting the public Treasury in order to keep up the expenses of the Govt., had no other result than that of filling the pockets of their agents who quickly amassed great fortunes. The people were persecuted to death when by word or deed they opposed a course so reprehensible. A group of disfranchised men who were called the army of the Supreme Government, spread over the entire Republic, but particularly over the towns of the frontier, were laying waste the fields, seizing private property and that of the States, stealing the wives away from their husbands, likewise the children from their mothers, and were in short the oppressor of individual liberty, and were the Lord to whom [the people] were forced to render homage. The civil authorities, in all their acts, were held in derision by this group, and consequently the hands of the people were tied more and more every day, and so they suffered and kept silent reserving their legal right under which standard they frequently manifested their complaints. In nothing were they heard or heeded. Consequently, and in accord with the general opinion it was proposed by having recourse, which was the most practical way, to demand in these States, as was demanded in 1838 the [reestablishment of the] system once interrupted in 1834 and sanctioned by the hideous constitution of 1836, that is the reestablishment of the Federal constitution granted in 1824. In order to sustain such a request, which had been many times rejected with the greatest injustice, and to carry it out— because there was no other recourse, a force was organized to repeal in case it should that part [of the law] to which they were opposed. This was done in the centers of population of the small towns of the frontier, i. e. the small town calling as their leader Gen. D. Pedro Lemus, who, although he accepted, did not present himself until a short time after the struggle had begun, on account of the interference of the Government which was rightly to be expected. Great were the measures which it [the Government] dictated for suppressing the revolution which in its beginning and almost until the end was upheld only by the morale—and by a small number of badly-armed citizens of the six towns of the frontier of the North from Matamoras to the town of Laredo. The principal leaders were the citizens Antonio Canales, Jesus Cardenas, Antonio Zapata,

and partisans according to their ability, since the cause was the same for all. In a short time the three States purged themselves by the expulsion of almost the whole Army which scattered among them and there did not remain more than one garrison, which was isolated in Matamoras because the federalists cut off from it all kinds of communications.

General D. Vicente Filisola was the one who commanded it, and more than once it saw itself on the point of being destroyed (thanks to the lack of foresight on the part of its enemies, the federalists who were inexpert in the art of war) since it [the force of the federalists] had always exposed itself in guerrilla warfare or ambushes and without other troops at the first stage [of the struggle] than that of cavalry and infantry improvised by the same. So things went on for some time until they began to take the enemy prisoners from whom they took very little artillery which was used by their troops of the same branch of the service, and infantry who served voluntarily the same as they had done. There were several engagements and in spite of the disadvantage with which the federalists fought—against military discipline, a good supply of stores etc.— in two years of continual vicissitudes of fortune they [the Centralists] could only count on the ephemeral triumph secured in the village of Morelos and this because of their having wisely avoided the strategy for which in order to fight in the field, the number of soldiers was necessary in proportion ten to one. General Arista was the one chosen for this manouever, and the one who succeeded in it taking prisoner, D. Antonio Zapata shooting him at once.

By the fortunes of war the federalists saw themselves more than once obliged to retire to Texas, where they invited volunteers to return with them and these chose for their chiefs Roos, Jordan, Praiz (Price) Parma (Palmer) and others, they aided them until the end; this took place at the town of Mier, after two years elapsed, by a treaty celebrated between Don Antonio Canales and General Ysidro Reyes the first for the federalists, and the second for the Government. In it they pledged themselves the greatest hopes that they might continue in a lasting peace and that there would not take place again the unpleasant things which had occasioned the revolution; but a fatality decreed that the geniuses could not write the sentiments of the people, and they remained divided until today, it seems.

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM ANSON G. NEAL,

now 1st. Lieut of Grumbles company—

Laredo 30 May 1847—

A man by the name Miles, (an officer in the Texan Regular Regiment, appointed and subsequently dismissed by President Lamar)— Jake Hendick, a big dutchman from Pennsylvania, a man called Capt. Carnes— Kirbey, Cameron and others, were congregated between the Little Colorado and the Nueces, at the head of a parcel of lawless frontier men known at that time by the name of Cow-Boys, their business being the stealing of Cattle in this quarter and driving them eastward for sale.—Many were the strifes between them and the Mexi-

cans; and bloody and horrible were their retaliations on each other, the which will form an episode in the history of Texas.—

In the fall of 1829—probably in October—whilst the above party was where I have mentioned, they discovered a party of Mexicans advancing; they formed for battle—when the leader of the Mexican force advanced under a white flag and stated that his object was friendly and not hostile. This was Carabahal, accompanied by Canalis, Canalis however, being the chief;— The Mexicans were the Revolutionist who were then contending for Federalism, their designs being to establish an Independent Govt. from the Mountains to the Rio Grande. They made known their views and solicited the aid of the Cow Boys, who without hesitation united with them in the enterprise and enlisted under the Federal Banner.—

A call was now made to the Western people of Texas generally, to join in the war, the object being, as the Mexicans held out, the union of the Northern States of Mexico, to Texas as one large Independent Govt.—

Carnes commanded the Cow Boys 30 or 40 strong Was the chief and leader of them both in stealing cattle as well as in the Federal war. Zapata was along with Canalis and Carabahal at the time they met the cow-boys & formed an alliance with them.—

Under the general invitation, other Texan recruits came, among whom were Capt. Merrel, Capt. Price, Capt. Palmer (worthless man) and Jourdan, Jourdan being at the time a Captain in the Regular army of Texas—he was wounded at the expulsion of the Cherokees, and on recovering, he resigned & joined Canalis.— These all met near the Rio Grande, opposite Guerrero where they organized and chose Ross as their leader.

There were about 140 Americans probably 400 Mexicans—

About 40 Americans under ————— and an equal number of Mexicans marched upon Guerrero, the Garrison there being known to be very small—whilst the main body of the force crossed the Rio Grande below and struck the road leading from Guerrero to Mier. The party detailed to capture Guerrero, met with opposition; very slight however— The Regulars in the garrison fired upon them; their shot was returned, and after a slight skirmish, the town was taken, with a loss of 20 soldiers killed on the part of the Enemy; and none on the side of the Federalists.— The Americans with the Federalists now, moved for Mier, and joined the main force who was waiting for them on the road. The force now united pushed for Mier, Canalis the Commander in Chief; Ross Col. of the Americans—

Genl. Parbone, was in Mier, at the head of 700 men Regulars— He evacuated the place as the Federalists approached; He was pursued and was overtaken in about 12 miles; He formed on an eminence for battle; the Americans dismounted, hitched their horses and fell in a ravine (a very small one) below—the Mexicans did not come up—they paraded some distance off, out of the reach of cannon— Zapata did all he could to lead them up but they refused obedience.— Parbone, perceiving that he would not be attacked by the main force of his enemies, turned upon the Americans in the ravine, and with 4 pieces of Artillery played upon for four hours, until he was satisfied, by the silence on the part of the Americans, that he had slain them

all; and under this conviction he moved upon the ravine with his whole force; but when on arriving within good gun shot, Cameron rose up and fired upon the Drummer, who fell dead. This was a signal for a general fight. The whole company rose, poured a destructive fire upon Parbone, and charged his entire line. (Americans 140 strong Parbone 700) Parbone was thrown into confusion, and in the midst of their retreat, the Americans availed themselves to fly back to their horses which they had hitched some distance from the ravine. By the time they were mounted, it was becoming too late in the evening to renew the fight; especially as the Americans were unsupported by Canalis, whose men had been only idle spectators of the scene. During the 4 hours Parbone was playing upon the Americans, Canalis moved not, nor took any part in the fight.

The parties camped or rather remained under arms, during the night in close juxtaposition; but an hour or two before, day Parbone left; and was that length of time on his march before his movemts were known. He was actively pursued, and on being overtaken, surrendered his whole force as prisoners of war. Canalis demanded of Parbone, his sword; who on delivering it up made this memorable remark—"I do not surrender, sir, to such a cowardly recreant as you, but I yield to those brave Americans." The loss on the part of Parbone was 250 killed, and the capture of his whole force—on the part of the Americans, there was Jake Hendricks—Tonkaway Jones on the field, and 5 died after of thier wounds—Jno Aikins was one of the five.—Parbone was put on parole of honor; and 400 of his men, (prisoners) united with the Federalists, and marched under the Banner of their conquer[or]s.—

The priest at Mier, who pretended to be a Federalist, refused to allow the Americans killed in his own cause to be buried in the churchyard. He said they were brave men but hereticks. Jake Hendicks, when shot at the Parbone fight, exclaimed—"boys I am killed, but go a head."— came to Texas 1836—lived on the Guadalupe a while 1837 at Gonzales—formed partnership with Neille Carnes & others for merchandizing— The partners went to San patricio—stole large drove of Cattle—the Mexicans came upon them—they all fled with the exception of Hendicks, who, in trying to get off with the cattle, was taken prisoner, & carried to Matamoras where he remained 1 year and 1 month before he escaped.— Carnes, who was sick at Sanpatricio, was also taken, and carried to Matamoras with Hendicks—when they returned to Texas they resumed their old trade of driving off cattle.— Jones, called Tonkaway Jones because of his asociation with the Tonkaway Indians— He was a blacksmith by trade. Killed at Parbone fight—

Carnes was a Scotchmen by birth, came to Texas in 1836.—Parbone, after his defeat, was disgraced and retired.—

Canalis believed in divination or trying fortunes, and on all all [sic] hazardous occasions would have his horiscope cast. One mode of trying his fortune was this. He would paint a lion, an eagle, a sheep and a dove on a paper, & then prick the same blindfolded with a pin if the warlike bird or animal was pricked, he augured favorably; if the lamb or dove, he augured otherwise. Canalis, as I have already

intimated was superstitious and suspicious as well as cowardly. Near Matamoras (4 miles) whilst the Federalists were encamped, a baker came to the camp with a wheel-barrow of bread for sale. Canalis suspected the bread was poisoned and made the Baker eat three large loaves of it, before he would allow him to vend it. The baker objected to the quantity; but he was forced to comply, and actually consumed bread enough, even if it were of the best possible quality, to kill a common man. Canalis, even after this, refused to let men purchase the bread, because he thought the poison was of a slow nature; and time would not allow him to make a fair test of it. After the Battle of Parbone we returned to Mier with our wounded, and our new allies— The Priest would not allow us to bury our men in the church yard because they were not Roman Catholics— 10 day at Mier.

From Mier we took up the line of march for Comargo—thence to Ranoso—and to Matamoras nothing special occurring on the route— Encamped in 2 or 3 miles of Matamoras and entrenched; sent a banter to Ariste to come out and fight them— Ariste declined the invitation, and commenced fortifying the town we staid there one night & day; on the second night, Canalis became alarmed—said that he was about to be beset by a too superior force, and suddenly stampeded, taking the Monterey road. He retreated against the remonstrances of Zapata, Jourdan and all the men and officers of the army. Travelled nearly 10 miles that night & camped—the next morning resumed the march and kept up forced marches until we got within 6 miles at a Ranch when we heard that the garrison command by Caniliso were coming out to meet us —We halted, and the Americans threw up a hasty breast-work—expecting a close engagement. The enemy, however, instead of coming to close quarters, opened a Canonade upon us at a long distance, with a hill between us and them, so that whilst they were actually bombarding us, they did not see us, nor we them. This singular warfare continued nearly a whole day— The American Cavalry moved out, and spied the locality & number of the enemy. They then moved their artillery upon the eminence over which the enemy was firing, and having them in full view opened upon them with 4 peices which had been captured from Parbone. The shot was effective; and disconcerted the enemy; but it was now too late in the evening to fight; and the contest ceasing for the present, the enemy, that night moved off for Monterey. The Federalist pursued—reached monterey and took possession of the old unfinished Church in the suburbs of the City, which has been since converted into a fortification by the Mexicans, and from which they fought Genl. Taylor. in 1846.

From this point we commenced bombarding the city, with one nine pounder, 2 sixes and one nine inch mortar.— No response was made from the town during that day, except one or two shots from one peice of artillery— The next morning the enemy opened fire upon us with a 7 inch mortar, which had been mounted during the night on one of the houses. The first fire, killed one of our horses, and that was all the damage done us by it notwithstanding they continued fring upon us until late in the afternoon. In the after noon, about 4 Oelk, their cavalry came out from the City; and they were soon followed by their infantry— The Americans were anxious to sally from entrench-

mts and give them battle; but this Canalis forbid, upon the ground, that the enemy had a larger force in reserve, and were only trying to decoy him from his strong hold. Canalis, was not disposed, personally, to leave his place of safety, and wanted the Americans to remain with him. He, however, sent Zapata out with a part of the Cavalry to reconnoiter. The enemy's Cavalry was in advance some distance of the infantry, so that the latter could not well sustain the former. Zapata perceiving this charge fiercely upon the enemy's cavalry, and found no difficulty in putting them to flight. His very name was sufficient to do this— The infantry perceiving the retreat and confusion of the Cavalry, instead of coming to their assistance, broke in great confusion for the City— The victory was brief decisive and glorious; with the exception of one fact, that nearly one fourth or third of Zapata's men, refused to charge; and one or two Companies fled altogether & never returned.

Whilst this fight was going on some of the Parbone recruits, deserted and went into town and made known to Canalis the whole state and condition of the Federalists. Through the aid of these deserters, Canalis formed a plan to get the whole of the Parbone men in the fort, to betray the Federalists; to steal the amunition; and when he, Canalis, should give the appointed signal, to turn upon the Federalists & slaughter them. The plan was all arranged—and would have succeeded, but that a Letter was recd by Canalis, late at night, from a friend in the City, apprising him fully of the treachery—

So soon as this letter was recd. Canalis called his men to arms; as it was supposed, to attack the city; but it was soon made known that he intended a retreat. The treacherous soldiers of Parbone, suspecting that their designs were detected, broke precipitately from the garrison & made for the City— Canalis, moved without delay, and took up the line of march toward Morino— Canalis went in the advance, with the company of Life Guards, commanded by the notorious Dr. Alsbury of San Antonio—Zapata brought up the rear, with Capt. Price— The Centralists pursued— The march was a forced one & in great confusion— Canalis terrified at being pursued, and not knowing what to do, permitted his men to fall into the utmost disorder and confusion. His life guard fled and never returned—Zapata in the mean time, keeping up the rear, wou[l]d occasionally turn upon the purs[u]ing army, and hold them in check— The Centralist were affraid to attack him, and whenever he would turn for fight they would halt and fall back. This continued until they reached Morino— The last of Zapatas men, had just crossed the river when the advance of enemy appeared on the oposite banks— Some of the Americans who were lingering in town to purchase bread, drink & C, whilst the main body was gone, came near being caught— A man by the name of Jefferys was closely pursued by mexican Lancer and was about to be overtaken when Zapata, who was still in sight, perceiving it, turned to his rescue, and slew the pursuer, & rescued Jeffery— The Centralist pursued no fa[r]ther. They halted at Morino—Canalis, however terrified out of his wits, still pushed ahead in great haste and disorder—went on to a mountain about 30 miles from Morino, where he encamped, having made a march from the time of leaving Monterey of sixty miles without halting.

Had Canalis, at any point Monterey to Morino, halted his men, and formed properly for battle, as Zapata desired, victory on his part would have been certain; and had the Centralists availed themselves of the advantage of Canalis' confusion, and pushed upon him that night, victory would have been equally certain on their part; for Canalis' men were strewn in confusion for ten or twelve miles, with their ammunition stampeded on mules, they knew not where—Zapata, during the march from Monterey to Morino, laid various stratagems to enveigle the enemy into a fight with him; but they uniformly avoided it—

Canalis' Life Guard was commanded by Dr. Alsbury—he & the most of his company deserted and camped five miles beyond the army—they went into Texas—

From this point, being no longer pursued by the Enemy, Canalis marched slowly for—he knew not whither—but on the road he and Zapata parted; the former crossing the Rio Grande near Mier and coming up the river on the east side opposite to Guerrero, whilst the latter (Zapata) marched directly to Guerrero.

On arriving at this place, he found two of his men, Maraes[?] Jeffreys, a gachupin whose life he had saved at Morino, and a Mexican by the name of Mandeole, who had just deserted a day or two before, levying a contribution upon the people of the place— They represented that they had been sent thither by Canalis to make collections of money for the support of the army; and the people were yielding to the exaction at the time Zapata arrived— He had the offenders encalabosed, and kept in durance until he left the place—

In a week or two Canalis, who was roaming on the east of the Rio Grande, made his appearance in Guerrero. The forces once more united, the Chiefs proceeded to organize a Government. The Army had hitherto considered itself as the Government; but it now chose Senr. ——— as President of the New Republic— He was present at the time, and entered upon his duties forthwith, which were undefined— A Federal Flag was planted in the center of the square; the soldiers all marched under it, kissing it as they passed; which was considered as an oath of alligiance to the new Govt— A great Ball was given at the House of Zapata, and all were welcomed who chose to attend; many, however, were unable to go for the want of suitable clothes; they were literally naked.— After the party each soldier recd. \$2.00 in part pay for past services—

Jordan, by this time had like Ross, become disgusted with the Cowardice and falsehood of Canalis, abandoned the cause and moved for Texas. His men scattered and took different routs homewards, suffering much on their way.

Canalis moved for the Presido del Norte and Ferdinando, (the President remaining at Guerrero, the seat of Govt) Zapata was sent on some detached service; having with him 12 Americans who still adhered to his fortunes, from personal attachment to him. Whilst attempting to rejoin Canalis at Sanfernando, he was betrayed by his own men, and was captured by Ariste, who had his head taken to Guerrero and stuck on a pole opposite his own house, with an order of death to any one who should take it down. The whole party was taken, Americans & Mexicans, and put to death— snell only escaping.

Ariste now pursued Canalis, put him to flight near Sanfernando,

Canalis escaped with a remnant of his army & went into Texas for present safety and for further aid.

The President, after these disasters fled to Texas— Thus was the cause broken up, and their resources entirely destroyed.

Snell broke & run for life—he was pursued and overtaken by a mexican who knew him at San Antonio & was his friend— His friend secreted him. Ariste ordered the town to be searched—the women took him & hid him under some canes

When Canalis was thus routed, Ariste, still having Zapata a prisoner, in cold blood, deliberately cut off his head & sent it to Guerrero, to be stuck up in the presence of his family, and over the door of their house— He supposed that this was the close of the war, and was resolved to make the last act, like that of a regular drama, the most bloody & horrible—

The foregoing history embraces the period from the fall of 1839— to the early part of 1840, embracing about 5 months—

WE NOW OPEN UPON A SECOND EXPEDITION

Canalis after his defeat at Sanfernando, escaped with a part of his army into Texas— He, in company with other Chiefs, visits the President of Texas— Seeks aid from the President.

The president allows him to recruit men, but forms no alliance with him, having no confidence in the ability of the Federalists to effect their objects, or to maintain their independence— He had no faith in their intelligence and none in their virtue— Their leaders too, in his estimation were not wisely chosen, being cowardly and treacherous. Besides, which was chief reason for not openly aiding them he would not declare for independence & demanded the Nueces as the boundary— Canalis, Carabahal, Malino went from Austin to Galvezton for the purpose of procuring supplies for another expedition. Here they received considerable aid; purchasing whatever they could obtain upon credit, whether it was useful to their purposes or not. They did not confine their purchases to munitions of war and military supplies, but bought women's dresses, parasols and every other thing that they could get.— They succeeded in procuring a steamboat, which they afterwards lost— brought their goods and supplies to San Patricio, on the Nueces, where their new army was assembled. The army encreased prety rapidly— and every thing looked flourishing and all believed that much would be achieved. Merchants followed to vend goods to the soldiers— There were congregated about 300 Mexican Soldiers, 80 Indians, and about 140 Americans, who increased afterwards.—

These Indians were from Mexico—they live about Renoso—they are called *Careses*—cane Indians— The Centralists, hearing that they were about to join the Federalists in 1839, made prisoners of them and confined them at Matamoras. They lay in jail there some time, when their chief proposed to the Commandt. of the town to let his men come out and take exercise, which their health required. The commandant consented; and the Indians were brought out naked. They propose a favorite game of kicking the Ball. Bets were made for and against their kicking the Ball from Monterey to Rinoso a dis-

tance of 60 miles— Guards mounted on good horses were ordered to follow on. If they kicked the ball to Rinoso they won; if not they lost. The game was opened—the ball was tossed and all pursued it to give it a kick. They kept it rolling onward until the horseman appointed to guard them broke down—and were not able to keep up— The ball was kicked Ronoso, where the Indians made their escape, and joined Canalis in time to participate in the Parbone fight. These were now with the army again at Newaces 80 strong—

About the middle of July Col. Jordan with 50 Americans and 100 Mexicans under Col. Lopez marched for Laredo— They reached Laredo on the night of the 25th July 1840. The americans travelled that night 30 miles, eluding the mexican Centinels who had been placed on the roads to watch their coming—they evaded their vigilance by leaving the road & taking the chaparel, which in this quarter is almost impenetrable even by day. On reaching town, they hitched their horses in a coral about $\frac{1}{2}$ mile off, and marched silently into the place and secreted themselves in some weeds and bushes on the banks of the river, and within a hundred yds or nearer of the public square—

This was about an hour before day-break— about the dawn of day an old woman making her way to the river for water discovered them. The alarm was given, and the Americans immediately made for the Square, Jordan entering it at one point, and Price at another. The garrison was taken on surprise & became panic stricken and fled, a few of them only making battle. Three were killed on the ground; 20 prisoners taken, and many official documents. On the part of the Americans there was no loss. One life was lost by the accidental firing of a pistol.— When the fight was over, and the town taken, the Mexicans under Lopez, who had remained without the town, under the impression that they could be more useful there in intercepting the Centralists in their flight when they should be routed by the Americans, which they seemed to take for granted would happen, came charging into town, with loud huzaz and firing off their guns in a great Jubilee. It happened, however, that though they remained out of town to intercept the flying foe, they did not encounter them, for whilst the foe fled in one direction, Lopez with his men entered in another. The only participation in the capture of the place was their firing on the spies and centinels of the garrison as they came into town.

It may be proper to state that the Authorities and the people of the place evinced no unfriendly disposition; but on the contrary gave such assurances of their attachment to the cause of Federalism, that the Alcaldes were suffered to remain in office.—

In a few days Jourdan started back for Sanpatricio with his prisoners, to rejoin the forces there. He found Canalis at Laplantican, 3 miles above San patricio, where he had increased his American force making now in all about 200. The success of Jordan at Laredo inspired the army, and even gave some seeming valor to the cowardly Canalis

Jordan was now ordered with 90 men to proceed to the Rio Grande and scour the country from about Guerrero to Rinoso on the east

side of the river. He was on his march, however, overtaken by Juan Malino, brother in law of Canalis, with orders for Jordan to advance into the Country so far as China for the purpose of getting horses. This act of cowardice and perfidy in sending 90 Americans into the heart of the Country which it would require the energies of the whole army to conquer, was only in consonance with the cowardice and treachery of Canalis throughout the whole enterprise— Jordan however [sic] went, although the most of his men remonstrated against his advancing into the heart of the e[ne]my's co[u]ntry, unless the whole Americans could be along— They believed that it was a trick of Canalis' to push them forward regardless of their fate, if not a premeditated act of treachery. The Mexicans which Canalis had ordered to accompany Jordan the Americans had no Confidence in. It was Lopez— He had been tried and failed at Laredo. Jordan however, prevailed on his men to proceed— which they did, accompanied by Lopez and Malino with 100 Mexicans. On reaching China they found no horses. Malino, made Jordan believe that they had been run off at their approach, and could be found in a town close by. With such like prevarication [?], Jordan was lured on from one place to another. On his march he stopped at a small town where he was told by the people that on the next day he would be likely to have a fight as there was a colonel close by who was taking up some arms to Monterey— Sure enough in the morning, the spies which had been sent to look out, returned with tidings that the Col. was near in the Chaparel. Jordan advanced upon him. His men, (the Cols Mexicans) grounded their arms immediately, and surrendered without making any resistance. 300 muskets together with large quantity of Cartridges were captured— The Col. was made prisoner—his men joined the Americans, and all marched as one body in the Federal cause—

The day after capturing these men and arms, we reached a small dirty town or ranch at the foot of the mountains, where we found a number of good horses and supplying ourselves with what we needed (about 90) Here we tarried two days & one night. The Americans being now well mounted, was desirous of returning, not being willing to proceed further without hearing something from Canalis & the main army. Malino, however, urged, that if they would go to Victory (about 60 miles off) they should there be paid off. Antonio Perez, a man well known in Santontio Texas and not a coward, urged Jordan not to listen to the lies of Malino who had so often lied to him and who would finally lead him into trouble; but to return at once with him, and take horses enough to remunerate himself— Jordan however, heeded not Perez; who now abandoned the enterprise, stole a large Cavayard of horses, and left for Texas Jordan went to Victory. He travelled all night and reached there late in the morning— The Governor of the place fled to the mountains with all his men except his Quartermaster, who met Jordan and made a formal [surrender] of the place to him and all the military stores—¹⁴ The

¹⁴[Note in document:] The flight of the Governor from Victoria, which was three hours before Jordan arrived, was accelerated by a mexican, Martinez, who represented the Americans as perfect cannibals & devils, and advised the Governor to take time by the fore-lock, and fly whilst he might— This Martinez,

people recd our men with open arms and the merchants threw open their stores to the credit of our men—
 We appointed new officers—turning out the Centralists and placing the Federalists in power—
 Tarried in Victoria 3 weeks to protect the new Govr. against the old one

After remaining in Victoria about 3 weeks, Malino, came late in the afternoon to Jordan and told him that he had just received intelligence of the approach of a large force, which it would be impossible to resist, and urged the necessity of leaving the place in an hour. Jordan acted accordingly. The horses were ord[er]ed to be brought forward and in an hour, we were at the gap in the mountain. Some few however, loitering behind, Capt. Price was sent to collect them and bring them out. In doing this, a difficulty arose which it is painful, to relate. A man by the name of James Wait, from about Lalahia Texas, desired to obtain some Tobacco before leaving, but was ordered not to move by Capt. Price. Wait however said it was impossible for him to travel without Tobacco and started to get some at a neighboring store, when some words passed between him and Capt. Price, whereupon the Capt. drew his pistol and shot him down. He was taken by a Gauchapin woman of fortune to her house and was well treated but died on the next day. Wait could speak the language fluently, and in a short time before his death, spoke to the woman thus— It was for disobedience of orders, not for any insulting language, for I used none, that I am killed; it is because of an old grudge which the Capt. had against me growing out of the murder of a mexican at Victory in Texas. Wait was an inoffensive man and was buried in a costly manner by the good woman who had taken care of him.

Our force being now collected we encamped at the gap of the mountain, not distant from town—(Victoria) probably about 4 miles off. Next morning we took up the line of march, and in two days came to a small town (once a mining town) where the people all fled at our approach— We entered the town—interrupted nothing; but returned to a labore $\frac{1}{2}$ mile off and camped for the night. (The name of this Town in English would be "*Deadman's town*") Here we burnt a large quantity of segars (two or three mule loads) which we had taken at Victoria— They were, however, taken by Malino— They were burnt in the public square; and for what purpose, I do not know; unless it was to satisfy us of his antipathy to the people there, being as he called them all Centralists.—

Here Malino, seemed to be in great spirits, and suggested the policy of going to Saltillio, where, he said, we could sack the city and pay ourselves— He further said, by way of encouraging our men to the mount, that he had received an express from John Seguine and Canalis, the former being at Montclover at the head of a force, and

joined in the federal cause at an early period of the strife; but after the defeat of Cannalis at San Fernando, he went to Mexico and made peace with the Govt; by telling the Authorities that he had only joined Canalis to become better acquainted with it. He went to Mexico with Capt. Lari Federalist from Zachateccas Martines spoke the English language— Lari did not.

the latter at Monterrey with his army, both preparing to meet him at a certain day, at Saltillo, to unite in the assault upon the place—Jordan followed his counsels, and moved for Saltillo; but after travelling seven or eight miles, it was discovered that we were on the road to San Louis Potosi. A distrust now arose against the integrity of Malino—indeed, suspicions against his truth and fidelity had already been indulged by the most of the men, but not by Jordan, and in their opinion this circumstance seemed to confirm their doubts—They refused to follow any further— For a while Malino insisted that they were on the right road to Saltillo, in opposition to the statement of other Mexicans who knew the route; but finally admitted that he was mistaken, and that he had taken the wrong road from his ignorance of the Country— He never recovered the confidence of the Americans— They now retraced their steps and returned to the Dead man's town, where they found the population had returned— Their panic was over, and they seemed to be satisfied or rather pleased with our presence. We camped there that night; & the next morning took up the line of march for Saltillo, and continued it, 25 or 30 miles per day until we came within one long day's march, where Malino, stated that the road was fortified, and that it was necessary to diverge from the main route— We were, accordingly conducted in a circuitous manner until about midnight, where we halted, near a ranch abounding in forage and provisions— Here we remained until 8 oclk in the morning, within 6 miles of town. The Boxes containing the guns which we had captured, were opened, and muskets were distributed to those whose arms were not in good condition— Amunition was also distributed; but in such small quantity as to give general dissatisfaction— Being prepared for battle, we moved forward about 9 Oclk for Saltillo; when we had advanced about 2 miles, we discovered the enemy displayed before us upon an eminence some distance off, apparently very numerous and prepared to receive us— Malino's valor suddenly evaporated; and instead of moving on, to meet the foe, he sent to him a written communication with a white Flag— The enemy recd. the communication favorably; and he and Malino had a personal interview in the valley mid-way between the two armies— Malino was accompanied by Lieut. Col. Lopez and other Mexican officers—no american along— In a short time a runner came to Jordan from Malino, stating that he, Malino, had demanded of the commandant of Saltillo \$50 thousand dollars—to surrender their their [*sic*] arms & C, and to declare for Federation and to be supplied with 4 days provisions, on the condition, that he Malino would not enter and sack the city— In a short time another messenger came with tidings that the enemy had almost consented to the terms, but not quite. Presently another messenger presented himself saying that the enemy had not yielded to the exaction, but would in a short time. This farce or treachery was kept up until 2 Oclk in the afternoon, when suddenly there appeared in view a reinforcement of considerable numbers. In a few minutes Lopez came galloping back, with the news that the enemy was imensely strong, and also that Malino was made prisoner. He then asked Jordan whether they should fight or retreat— Jordan replied "*fight as a matter of course*"—Lopez then proposed to assume

a position on the left, and Jordan on the right.— Jordan enquired if there was any water on the right? He was given to understand that there was none. He then said that he should go to the left where there was water—and Lopez said he would do the same— The force now marched together on the left, until they came to a small ranch where the Americans deposited their horses, pack mules and amunition, and then retraced their steps to a plain where they intended to make a stand; whilst Lopez with his cavalry advanced to another point for the purpose of bringing on the fight. The enemy was displayed in front $\frac{3}{4}$ miles off; and proved to be ten times stronger than had been represented— The Americans, however, were nothing daunted, tho' few in numbers. When all things were ready for the engagemt, and all were waiting for Lopez to open upon the enemy, the treachery of this perfidious Coward and that of his infamous Leader Malino was suddenly displayed— Lopez fired off his guns in the air, $\frac{3}{4}$ of a mile from the enemy and exclaimed. Long-live the Republic of Mexico and death to the Americans— The shout rang through his whole line, & in a moment he and his men blended with the enemy in a common strife against us, with the exception of Gonzales and a few faithful followers, who scorning the part of traitors, yet despairing of success, sought their safety thro' the mountains— The first movemt of the enemy was an attempt to cut us off from our horses. We, however, foiled him in the attempt, by flying back to our horses; which we had scarcely reached, before the enemy upon our heels; we turned and a general fight ensued— We were with in 50 paces of each other— we 100 strong with nothing but our rifles & scarce of amunition and they 73 hundred in numbers, with infantry cavalry and cannon— We were repeatedly charged, but the enemy was uniformly repulsed altho' he sometimes came within a few feet of us— The fight in this manner continued from 3 Oclk until the setting of the sun when the enemy sounded a retreat. We then mounted our horses and attempted to escape through pass in a mountain; but encountering some cavalry which had been placed there for our interception, we turned our direction and ascended the mountain, and found an enemy upon the brow of it who rec'd us with a hot fire— They were volunteer infantry composed of some of the best citizens of Saltillio— By one well directed fire upon them, we killed many and put the ballance to flight— The passage was now open to us; but it was night & we were without a guide & wholly ignorant of the country— We pursued our course over mountains, not knowing whither we were going, until we came to a valley where some boys were tending sheep— They gave us no information and we proceeded onward a short distance further we halted for the night— Early in the morning we moved forwd. to a ranch, where we were told that we had been wandering circuitously and were only 7 miles from Saltillio. Here we got some directions and on the next day we captured a piane and made him conduct us to the Monclover road, where we were greatly surprised as well as gratified at finding 3 of Gonzalez men had been left by their leader hid in the Chaperel to watch for such of us as might have ecaped from Saltillio, and to conduct us to him— In our progress we unexpectedly came upon 12 hundred of the enemy, a reinforcemt

destined for Saltillo— They did not attack us; but doggedly pursued us to Candala, where we were rejoined by Gonzales, who had made his escape to that place— The enemy followed us as far as Lampasas, harrassing us on the road, but avoiding a fight, we being compelled occasionally to turn upon them when they would tread too close upon our heels— At Lampasas the enemy left us; and without further molestation, we made our way to Laredo where Gonzales resided & where we were safe and well recd— Here too we found John Seguine, with 30 or 40 men; who, united with us, and we all proceeded to Comargo on the east side of the river for the purpose of receiving our pay.

Canalis, during all this time, had done nothing, and was now in Comargo, with Ariste, between whome a peace had been formed— Federation was now at an end— The two commanding Genls Canalis: at the head of the Federalists and Ariste Commanding the Centralists, were together in Comargo, friends to each other and united in their views and feelings— Canalis endeavored to prevail upon Jordan to bring his men across the river that they might be paid off. Seguine went over; but Jourdan declined on the ground that they had betrayed him once, and tried to have him and his men murdered; and the next time they deceived him it should be his fault. He however, left it with his men to go or not as they preferred— The most of them returned with him to Texas; the few who were induced to cross the river under the promises of pay, were made prisoners by Ariste, who detained them in the Country for 2 months then dismissed without pay but with the privilege of remaining in Mexico if they chose but under no circumstances to return to their homes in Texas.—

The killed at Saltillo on the part of the Mexicans were 400; the loss of the Americans in the fight were three Sergeant Streits, James Galaga, Woodruff, and Bratt and another whose name is not remembered.— The wounded were Capt Allen, Snell, Blannerhassett Beckum and few others not known—

Capt. Larri, from Zaccateccas, followed us thro' the first campaign and after the defeat of Canalis near Sanfernando, went to Mexico; made fair weather with the Govt. but returned again, and joined us on the Nueces, went with Jordan thro' the whole campaign, but was too terrified at Saltillo to fight. He was affraid to dessert with Lopez, because he had once adjured the cause & had been forgiven by the govt. and he knew very well, if retaken he would find no quarters. He could neither desert nor fight. He remained hid during the battle, and whilst crossing the mountain with Jordan, he fled and has not been heard of since. Snell got seperated from the Command in crossing the mountains at Saltillo— remained in the country— Taught school at Monterey—

Jack Parmer, stopped at Comargo, was murdered by a mexican servant—

Budd Edmonson, was said to be engaged to Zapata's daughter. He went with Zapata (one of the 13) to the Presidio and suffered with the rest—

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM JUAN RAMOS

Born & bred in Laredo, a good soldier, good man who has fought in all the wars against the Indians and for the Liberties of this country

The first assembling of the Federal army was opposite to Comargo east side of the river— crossed from Comargo to East Side with 50 men (Canalis) This was in Octr. 1838—

He sent a proclamation to the various towns, recrossed over to Comargo, and went to Ronoso where his force was augmented to 800— raised from Laredo, Guerrero & C— The Chiefs Canalis, the 2nd was Eleuterio Mendes,— Zapata, Christobal Ramirez, y Macedonio Capistrano Cols. of Regt

From Ronoso they moved for Monterey— met Col. Vascas with 200 men— Captured him & his force, with 2 pieces artillery; the Captives joined the Federalists, some few being left free to go if they did not want to join—

Took the road for Matamoras with 1000 men; encamped Las Crusetas near matamoras; The Central army came out 1000 men 4 pieces of artillery,— The General in Chief was Felisola at Matamoras with 5000 men— the Genl. who came out to meet the Federals was Genl Ampudia; they fought strong, (the Feds.) Ampudia sent for reinforcement of 500 more from matamoras & additional Amunition—the reinforcement was Commanded by Parbone— The fight still continued until the Federalists were put to flight for the want [of] powder—their amunition was expended— They lost 100 horses & the 2 pieces of Captured Artillery— In 3 leagues the scattered Feds reassembled with powder obtained at Renoso, each man having only six rounds of cartridges— They moved towards Tampico, to meet Caniliso who was coming from that city whither he had gone against Urea, was repulsed by him & was now on his return to Matamoras— Canalis took the Chaparell, and surprised Canalis at Tigre between San Fernaldo and Matamoras— Soon as they met, Canalis charged the vanguard of the enemy, and Canalis formed for battle— Canalis expended the six rounds of cartridges, being all he had, and then retreated to Cavoneras where he halted, Canalis escaping to Matamoras with 2 or 3 men. From Cavonieras Canalis dispatched Col Cuevas to Tampico for amunition & artillery— (From this place the narator Ramas was sent to Laredo; his information is now given not upon personal knowledge but upon the words of others)—

Received 3 pieces, and amunition from Tampico—whilst at Cavonieras waiting for powder & C— Genl. Lemus arrived at Cavonieras, with a force and took the Chief Command now 1500 strong— Lemus moved for Monterey; near Caldarette he met with Ampudia on his way to Monterey with a strong force, going there after a large amt money— sent by the Govt. to the Central army. Lemus pushed on & overtook him—both halted & prepared for battle— Ampudia sent a white flag—the two children held a Conference, the nature of which was never known— Lemus desisted; and Ampudia marched on to Monterey without interruption— Lemus stopped at Caldarette— Ampudia tarried only one day in Monterey; left it with his money; he was pursued by Zapata with 200 men— Zapata attacked the rear, annoyed

Ampudia, fighting at every step until they arrived at River San Juan. Garcia Conde was at the time in Saltillo with 1000— Lemus went to fight him; in going thro' Monterey he made a heavy requisition on the bishop—paid his army; and moved on to Saltillo—found Conde, had fortified the place—determined to take it— he was 1000 strong— Surround Saltillo, and commenced entering the city at various points—

They fought 3 days— On the 3rd day Ugartechea was killed— he was second in command, but was the chief reliance of the army— After his death, the Centra[li]sts hoisted the white flag and capitulated— Conde retreated to San Louis Potosi—

We now go back to Zapata— At the San Juan he received intelligence that the Indians were making war upon Guerrero—and he went thither in haste to the rescue of the place—pursued the Indians—overtook them at Huisache [?] and whipped them— The Indians were very strong— Zapata returned to Guerrero; and soon rejoined the army at Monclover, whither Lemus had advanced— General Anya, now arrived at Monclover— Lemus despatched him to Texas for aid— Anya went to the City of Houston and had an interview with President Lamar— Anya was accompanied by—Jose Ma. Gonsales, Juan . . . [illegible], Rafael Garza, y D. Agapito Galvan—and seargent Juan Remos— Whilst at Monclover, a dissention arose among the Federal chiefs— Lemus was censured for not fighting Ampudia and capturing the money, which his foes contended could have been easily done— He was expelled from the service; came to Santarosa with about 20 men, where he and his followers were made prisoners by Col. Monchaca— Canalis took the Road to Mier with 400 men; Col. Morelos took command of the balance of the Army about 500 men, and came from Monclover to Candala, Lampasas and Laredo— Their object was to obtain means and recruits— The Centralists at Matamoras hearing of these divisions among the Federals, thought they would take advantage of it Genl Vasques with over 1000 men was sent up to Monterey—hearing here, that the Federals were moving down, Vasques took after them. Canalis coming through Aldama, escaped— Morelos was overtaken by Vasques, at Los Moros, where the Centralists were completely victorious over him— The Federals were all scattered; but they soon reassembled on the Salado, at La mojina about 200 strong— Vasquis soon after his victory returned to Lampasas— and Morelos came to Laredo with his remnant of men— and marched on the east side of the river down to las Calasaras oposite to Mier, little below Mier where he found and rejoined Canalis— Here Canalis heard that a party of the Centralists was at the Presido Riogrande— He despatched Zapata with 200 men after them. He came thro' Laredo— The Centralists hearing of Zapata's coming, fortified; had several canons; Zapata ordered the place to surrender. The Centralists refused— Zapata dismounted his men, and attempted to enter the town; but after two days hard fighting failed; and returned & rejoined Canalis at la Calavasas—

Canalis by this time had recd aid from Texas, procured by Anya and the delegation sent thither for that purpose— Canalis hearing that Parbone was at Mier, determined to fight him; and accordingly took up the line of march to that object; crossed the river near Guerrero— Zapata in advance with 100 Mexicans & 100 Americans entered Guerrero & took the place— Capt. Rogrigus commanded the garrison 200

men— Zapata destroyed the whole force— many were drowned in the river— Rodriges was made prisoner— Zapata now rejoined Canalis on the opposite side of the river at Guerrero, Salado—and all moved on for Mier to meet Parbone—who hearing of the approach of the Federalists, left Mier for Matamoras— Canalis pursued with forced march and overtook Parbone at la 'Améca about 4 leagues from Mier— Parbone was completely conquered—he was released on parole of honor; and the most of his men united with the Federalists—

End

NOTES TAKEN FROM A CONVERSATION WITH GONZALES—

Anyas and Gonzales visit to Texas was in September 1839— The Central army was generally about 5000 strong— Juan Molano, brotherinlaw to Canalis, was cowardly; and was anxious to go from Victoria to San Louis Potosi, instead of Saltillo, Malino took at Victory and other places 15000\$ worth of Segrars; with which he expected to pay off the Soldiers; but when they refused to take them in payment, he ordered them to be burnt, They were burnt in the public square at *Howmabi*, 3 oclck in the morning; and 3 hours afterwards the line of march was taken up, on the St Louis road. Malino was forced to retrace, & go to Saltillo—

From Victoria to Saltillo, the march was made in the rear of the mountains of Monterey; and the fight which came off at Saltillo, took place at Buane Vista— In this fight the Centralists had 1200 men. On the Federal side there was 100 Americans only; Lopez with his 250 Mexicans having on the opening of Battle deserted their cause, and joined the Centrals. Malino deserted also—previous to the battle—

The loss on the Federal side was some 4 or 5 americans; and one Mexican, a Yucantes bugler from Yucatan— The Centralists lost 50 killed—

Victoria was garrisoned with 200 Soldiers when Jordan entered the place— They fled together with the Governor of the State; whose place was immediately filled by Licenciado Casarosa the Old, who was appointed by the Federalists.—

End

Recapitulation

After the capture of Saltillo the army moved to Monclover taking all the captured supplies &c— At Monclover, the Officers expelled Lemus from the army—he was succeeded by Morelos, It appears that Canalis tho' at first at the head of the army, was not regarded as a military man—he was decidedly cowardly, but could render himself useful where there was no personal danger, by means of his education. Morales being conquered by Vasques at Los Moras, no Federalists were left in the field except Canalis command, which escaping Vasques, moved down to Mier, crossed the river opposite that place and awaited for such aid as Anya & Gonzales might be able to procure in Texas— Anya could make no arrangement with the Govt but he found a ready ally in the Cowboys in the West. These Cowboys were men who lived sort of a lawless, degrading life on the frontier, by driving off cattle and

horses from the Nueces, to sell in the interior. The contest which this occupation lead to, between them and the Mexicans were bloody & horrible, and furnishes some of the unparralleled acts of vindictive retaliation. These Cow-boys assembled on the Nueces, about San Patricio & Tenoxiclan, where they mustered about 270 and chose Ross for their leader, Roman second in Command and a man by the name of Dolan was made Major— Allen, Merrel & C captains— They moved for the Riogrande, and Joined Canalis there oposite to Guerrero; crossed the river, captured Guerrero, whipped parbone; when some discont[ent] arising against their leader, he was displaced for Jordan— Ross then left— Roman failing to obtain the command, left also, with Swytser and others—

They all moved on with Federals until their retreat from Monterey and arrival at Guerrero—where they formed a Govt and made a President— Here the Americans abandoned the Service, the most of them returning to Texas; a few only excepted who adhered to Zapata, and was captured with him, and a small party also who came with the President to Laredo with the President Cardenas flying before the advance of Ariste—

Zapata, captured, Canalis whipped, the Americans gone— the Revolution stopped, for a while— Canalis retreated with his small force into Texas; went to Austin, Galvezton & C—obtained some supplies, and reorganized an army at San Patricio, with Col. Fisher at the head of the Texan force. Prepared for another Campaign he sent Jordan in advance, with some Americans— Jordan was overtaken by Malino & Lopez on the Riogrande; and all marched together to Saltillo, where they were forced to retreat from the Country—the scattered forces assembled at Comargo, where, peace was established and the Americans, insultingly ordered home.

FROM MR. SOTO

Canalis, Cardenas, Mendis, Zapata, Ramires, Quevas, Benavides and Gonzales.— were the first agitators of the Revolution. Also Urive of Guerrero. They corresponded and met in secret, until all things were arranged, when Canalis openly proclaimed the Revolution and hoisted the Banner at Comargo. Proclamations were sent abroad and the people invoked to to [*sic*] rally to the standard. The three States were called upon, Tamaulipas, Nuevo Leon, and Coahuila.

The Government was organized at Guerrero, with Cardenas at the head as President— Laredo fixed upon as the Seat of Government— Cardenas came to Laredo with the other members, whose names are not remembered, except Vidaurri of Santa Rosa.

When Molano got to Victoria and put in a Federal Governor he went to *Jaumave*, where his army refused to go any further and he was forced to return, taking the road from Jaumave to Saltillo. Soon after Molano left Victoria, Ariste entered the place, from Monterey whither he was at the time. Ariste reestablished the Central power there, and then went in pursuit of Canalis, who was advancing in the country. Not being able to move fast enough with his infantry to overtake the Canalis, he sends Reyes who was second in command in

pursuit with his cavalry.— Reyes pushed him to the Rio Grande at Mier; the one had just crossed the River as the other landed on the other bank. Here negotiations were opened for Peace; Reyes opened them by Sending Col. Carrasco with propositions to Canalis. Terms were finally agreed upon, and Peace was established.

When the Centrals were in power at Laredo, the Alcalde was Don Dolores; when the Federalists were in power Don Gregorio Garcia was the Alcalde. Ramon was a Federal; and after the war, was Alcalde.—

When Cardenas came to Laredo, he came with his military guard composed entirely of Americans.— He was not forced to Laredo, but came because it was the Seat of Government; and he remained here, until Ariste came up; a messenger was sent him from Guerrero to apprise him of Ariste's advance.—

Mr Soto is of opinion that Zapata moved up to San Fernando with Canalis; and he heard that Zapata and Canalis had quarreled there, Zapata having become disgusted with some of the conduct of Canalis; and it was in consequence of this that Zapata went to Morelos. Reyes in advance of Ariste's army with 800 men hearing that Canalis and Zapata was separated, sent on a detachment of 200 under Galan to Morelos to Capture Zapata; he apprised Ariste of what he had done, and Ariste ordered him, Reyes, to be prepared to meet Canalis if Canalis should attempt to aid Zapata, and keep Canalis in check until he, Ariste should come up, which he could do by morning—Zapata was taken; and when Canalis came to Morelos to his rescue, Reyes met him, and a battle ensued, which lasted nearly all night. In the morning, Canalis finding himself not beaten, sought a place for a fair and open fight, by which time Ariste came up, and another Battle ensued, in which Canalis with 600 men had to contend against Reyes & Ariste with 2000 men—Ampudia was also there.

Morelos was under Central influence, and the citizens apprised Ariste of Zapata's being in that place— Ampudia himself says that the Central force, were every moment apprised of what was going on, and not only what Zapata was doing, but the house he was occupying— Ampudia was there— Ampudia, it is said, wished to save Zapata, but the Regular officers on the frontier all urged his death; having great dislike to Zapata because they feared him, he having greatly harrassed them in his expedition to the Rio Grande & C—

Zapata had previously gone to the Presido, Rio Grande & C, and fought the various forces in the towns in that Quarter, garrisoned by Monchaca, Galan and Rodrigus & C—

After Zapata was decapitated his head was placed in a cask of brandy, and taken by Ampudia to Guerrero and placed on a pole opposite to Zapatas house— Ampudia in carrying it down, came through Laredo, having with him 4 or 5 hundred men—and it [was] there that Mr. Soto derived some of these particulars from him personally.—

THE COW-BOYS—FROM JAS. WILKINSON

The prominent ones were Carnes, Hugh Cameron, Snodgrass, Peter Rushe (a frenchman) Thos. Lyons, John Hefron (Irishman)— These generally went together; the three first were scotchman, the fourth a Frenchman, and the two last Irishmen— Lyons was killed at China after the Texas troops passed thro' there.—

There was a party also who followed John Smith, a Tennessean—his followers not remembered— Josiah, Creed and James Taylor living on the Guadalupe, made one drive & quit—

Erbey, Twigley & others— Erbey and his party were caught & killed by the mexicans—

John Hebron, a regular old Topper, but a brave old cock, was generally kept in the rear, whilst driving that being the post of danger.—

On one occasion he charged 12 mexicans single handed, and after chasing them twelve miles sword in hand, he returned and drove off their Cattle, a large gang

At Victoria in 1841, when the Commanchees came down, and killed old Quartermaster Calwell, he mounted a horse and charged with his broad sword on the indians just as they were in the act of spearing Wheeler, Captain of the Steamboat "*Friend*" and saved his life and defended his own— Hebron may be alive yet—an old Texan, left his wife & children & came west—brave as a lion and of uncommon good nature— He was generally taken care of by Cameron. Carnes, Snodgrass and Miles were killed at the same time on the Nueces, below San Praticio, by the Mexicans. Snodgrass had just inherited a snug fortune, and was preparing to go & receive it, when he was killed—

Wm. Wells one of the party was made prisoner—taken to Matamoras & then liberated. Cow-driver;—

Joe Wells was a bricklayer from Houston, accompanied Canalis in 1840—was in the Palo Alto fight & C— After the federation he settled at Corpus Christi— where he still lives

Col. P. H. Bell was sent out to the Western frontier to enquire into the conduct of the Companies there and to take charge of its protection—

It is said that the Cameron party committed no murders nor robbed any of the traders—they only drove off cattle—

Big Brown, known by that name—came from Missouri,—and his party were regarded as murderers, and the other parties had but little to do with him because of his atrocities—he was finally killed Agaton's men having been betrayed by a mexican in his service. Cameron was regarded as a good-man—it is said he drove off no cattle except between the Nueces and the Rio grande— His education was limited; could read & write & that was all— Genl Davis would not have been surprised at Liplantiacian had he taken Cameron's advice— Cameron told it would not do to trust mexicans there, whether they were friends, traders or what not—he understood their characters well—

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM TOM HANCOCK.

Canalis, assembled his men at San Partricio, as he thinks in August 1838— He had upwards of 300 Mexicans, under Lopez Col. of infantry and Gonzales of Cavalry—accompanied by Malino, the brother in law of Canalis. He had also with him 100 of the Carese Indians from Old Rinoso; and 270 Americans, from Texas; who after holding an Election for Officers, [chose Ross as Commander, Roman as Lt. colonel and Dolan from Nacogdoches as Major—]¹⁵ Among the Cap-

¹⁵Brackets in the document.

tains were Capt. [blank] of Rosses' company after his promotion; Thos. Allen of Houston, Hagler, Price, Merrel. Cameron was a private in Prices Company. Ross & his company was from Houston. Zapata, after the defeat of Canalis, retreated at the head of a small force, to the Rio Blanco, where he had remained until the reorgination of Canalis at San Patricio on the Nueces.

The first move of Canalis after his reorginazion on the Nueces, was to march to Guerrero; on his route he found Zapata on the Blanco in waiting for him.— When arrived at the Rio Grande, Zapata was ordered to cross above the Salado, and enter Guerrero with his own force and some Americans; number not remembered. Canalis crossed below the Salado and marched to the Mier road; but did not reach it until Zapata had carried the Garrison (200 strong) at Guerrero, and was on his way to rejoin Canalis. They met again, and marched for Mier— Parbone commanding there, heard of their advance and left; but he was rapidly pursued and overtaken by the Americans and the Creese Indians; the Mexicans lingering some distance behind— A battle ensued in which the Indians acted bravely and fought in the ravine with the Americans until the battle ended in the capture of Parbone and his whole army. The Mexicans at one time approached within 600 yds of the fight; but being fired upon by Parbone's artillery, they retired, and to a safer distance and took no part in the action; contenting themselves with dashing about thro' the chaparels and $\frac{1}{2}$ mile off—

The fight at Saltillio commenced about 9 oclck and lasted until about 4, when their retreat commenced— Retreated thro' Candala, Lampasas, &C—

In the first Campaign, when they retreated from Monterey, Zapata and Price came direct to Guerrero, and Canalis came by way of Mier— They all met at Guerrero—

end

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM MR SOTO ALCALDE LAREDO

Fisher joined Canalis with considerable force east of the Grande opposite Comargo— Quintero was with Fisher.

When Jordan and Gonzales arrived in Laredo, they quarrelled about some of Malino's clothes which was retained at Saltillio after Malino's desertion, and was brought to Laredo— Here Gonzales claimed them; and Jordan would not give them up.

Lopez Commanded in chief; Malino second in command; Remijio Garcia 3rd in rank— Jordan Commanded his own men and Gonzales, was at the head of a Squadron of cavalry.

Zapata was captured at Morelos in March 1840.—

When the Revolution first opened, Felisola was commanding in Chief. He went to Mexico and was succeeded by Canileso. Ariste came after with 100 men from Mexico.

When the war opened, Urea had possession of Tampico— Canileso moved against him with a considerable force, and was completely overthrown by Urea— Canileso made his escape, but his army was dispersed, and Genl. Pedraza, second in command was captured and shot.

It was the same Pedraza who was expelled from Nacogdoches in 1832.— Caniliso had upwards of 200 men; escaped with 500.

Elated with his success, and being at the head of considerable force, he concluded to move direct to Mexico. He was joined at Tampico by Genl. Mehia; who came from New Orleans, whither he had been for some time in exile. Having a rank Superior to Urea, the command of the Army devolved upon him; and he and Ariste (now second in Comd) moved for Mexico; meeting with little or no opposition until they arrived at Acajete, where they met by Santana, then at the head of the Govt. and Genl. Valencia. Here The parties fought. Mehia was conquered, captured and Shot. He had been too severely wounded in the battle to escape. Urea made his escape, afterwards compromised with the Govt; became the friend of Santana and was not heard of again until his inhuman butchery of Genl. Taylor's unarmed Teamsters in 1846.—

Soto's father together with Santana were both 3rd Lieutenants at San Antonio under Aradondo. Santana, wanted to Marry Navarro's Sister; but the family objected to the union in consequence of the general bad character of Santana & especially his robbing Aradondo's military Chest, by forged Orders.—

This is one of the reasons supposed to have influenced Santana in his exceeding cruelty to Navarro when he had him in his power as Santefe prisoner—

end

FURTHER INFORMATION DERIVED FROM GONZALES AND JUAN RAMOS—

Date of Battles as well as remembered

The first fight was at La Encenada, 6 leagues from Matamoras—3 or 4 of January 1839— Don Eleuterio Mendez 800 men, no americans— Federalists successful— Centralists. Col. Vasques, comanding— Second action was at Las Cruzitas 8th Jany 1839—

3rd battle at Tigre from the 13 to the 15th of Jany 1839—

4th Battle was at Ayancual near Monterey or in that quarter on the 12 or 13 March 1839— Ampudia comd— 800—Federalists 150— commanded by Gonzales—

5th Battle—was on 20th of March 1839 at el Pilon, betwen Zapata with 300 men & Quijane 600 cavalry—

6th was at Sattillio in April 1839—when the town was taken by Genl. Lemus—

Canileso went against Urea at Tampico, was whipped; on his return towards Matamoras was met by Canalis; Canalis had only 6 rounds of powder he fired them off, but this put Canileso to flight who left his force & escaped to Matamoras with a few 2 or 3 men only— Col. Licentia was captured there, (Centralists)

Urea and Canilso met at Tampico in December 1838—

Government was formed in Guerrero on the 1st. Decr. 1838—

D. Jesus Cadenas, living in Rionoso was made Governor He went with the Troops all the time— was in all of the Battles, except at Moreles and Saltillio— Manuel Niña was Qr. Master General—

Genl. Lemus, was 12 months prisoner at Monterey; Taken to Tampico, & thence to Mexico—was born in Havana— He was taken prisoner at San Fernando whilst he was there after his capture of Saltillio in April 1839—taken to Monterey, Tampico & Mexico— Released him at Mexico, bought up—he went to Ucatan in the Service of the Federal Govt. with a Detachmt; was whipped; went back to Mexico; but the Govt now lost Confidence in him— He joined the Federalists at San Fernando (below) with 20 men 10 Feby 1839—was made Genl. in Chief, being an older Genl. than Santana—

Lemus from San Fernando went to Tampico and talked with Urea, who sent 20000\$ at one time and 30 thousand at another to support the war—taken from the Customs at Tampico—

D. Seben Ruiz raised 5 or 6 hundred men about San Rosa Fernando & C and marched against Saltillio; attacked it on 20 Feby 1839—was defeated—

Lemus Captured Saltillio in April 1839— Went thence to Monterey and went to Monclover, where the force removed from Saltillio with all the public Stores— He went to Sanfernando, San Rosa & C being expelled the army & was captured at Fernando by Capt Monchaca— He had a brother who was a Col. and taken with the Genl.—

John Seguine, March 30—1842. made prisoner of Gonzales—

Vasques sent 2 men into San Antonio as Spies— they reported themselves to Seguine, who told the spies that he & the people were apprised of Vasques intended march upon the place, for they had been informed of the fact by Don Sen Gonzales of Laredo— Vasques went on accordingly and was joined at Sanantonio by Seguine who returned with him to Laredo— Saguine on reaching Laredo 30 March made Gonzales prisoner, treated him with great rigor Gonzales was sent to Monterey as prisoner where he was kept in close confinement, 14 months; brought him to Guerrero, where a Court martial was ordered, by Genl. Wol, where Seguine appeared as Chief witness against him, whose evidence when sifted, proved to be only hear-say, having known nothing personally concerning the charge—he had only heard thro' rumor that Gonzales had informed the people of Santonio that Vasques was coming—

FURTHER INFORMATION DERIVED FROM MR. SOTO—

Lemus was a citizen of Monterey; chosen as Commander chief— was great enemy to Ugartacher— After the capture of Saltillio, the other principal officers caused him to be expelled from the public Service because he had sent Zapata to follow with only 200 men, the whole force of Ampudia who was retiring from Monterey with 300000\$— where he, Lemus had a force greatly superior to Ampudia and might have easily made him and his army captives & taken the money. They contended that he was a traitor, & had been bought up by Ampudia— He left with about 20 men, and was making his way as it [was] supposed, to Texas, when he was apprehended by Capt.

Monchaca at San Fernando— was taken to Matamoras, where he remained a prisoner for a good while—

After the retreat from Monterey, the federal force met at Guerrero, where they formed a Federal Govt—appointing Jesus Cardenas, a citizen of Rinoso President. His chief duty was to raise men and means for the war, in which he actively employed himself—was in the fight between Canalis and Caneleso, when Caneleso was returning from Tampico—

When Ariste advanced up the Country, Cardenas, moved to Laredo with 100 Mexicans and Some 60 or 80 Americans; and at the approach of Ariste, left the place, taking the Chaparel towards the Nueces.—

Hearing that Zapata and Canalis was separated, Ariste moved up to San Fernando sent the advance of his army 200 to encounter Zapata who was in Morelos. He was already captured by the citizens, and after a short struggle Zapata and his whole party was captured—

CAPT NEWCOMB'S RECOLLECTIONS

Capt Newcomb was with Jordan in his march to Saltillo at the head of a small Squad.

Antonio Perez had a company of Mexicans from Sanantonio. He became distrustful of Lopez and Malino, and entreated Jordan to return with him to Texas before he was lead into further difficulties— Jordan declined; and Perez seizing upon a Cavayard of horses, at the town called De Grande, made his way as fast as possible out of the Country.

At Victoria, a sudden alarm was given that Ariste was close upon them with an overwhelming force— Malino urged a precipitate evacuation of the place— This encamped that night 3 miles off at the gap of the mountain, continued their march to the deadman's town, where they burnt the Segars— Here they took the San Louis road—went on it about 20 miles, encamped, and the next day when the march was about to be resumed, Capt Newcomb halted his men, and said that he would go no further— He spoke only what was the feelings of nearly all the Americans— Jordan asked him what he was going to do— Newcomb told him he intended to return to Texas if they persisted in their march to San Louis; for thither he would not go— The Mexican Soldiers too remonstrated, many of them, saying that the Govt. forces there were too numerous, and that they would all be destroyed if carried there. Jordan consented to return to the Deadman's town; where they all took up the line of march from Saltillo—

Malino was daily receiving letters the contents unknown— letters were also addressed to Jordan which Malino intercepted & destroyed. When Jordan Complained of this, forged letters were prepared & delivered to him to allay his suspicions. The men, however, believed that Malino had been carrying on some treasonable correspondence and would sell them to the enemy. These suspicions were not unreasonably indulged as subsequent events displayed.

At the fight at Saltillo the Mexicans took no part; or if any, it was against their American allies whom they had invited to their aid.

The chief officers shouted for Mexico, and made for the Lines of Centralists—they were followed by most of their men; those who did not go over to the enemy rallied under old Gonzales from Laredo, who, however, perceiving, as he thought, the destruction of all who remained, as inevitable, took to the mountains with all speed, and escaped with his followers—leaving the Americans, to their fate— He was too honest to be a traitor, and too much alarmed to fight— Besides his men would not have stood, even if he had desired and ordered it—

There were but two Mexicans who remained with the Americans, Capt Larri and a Bugler, the latter of whom was killed—

Larri, with 2 or 3 Americans escaped in advance of the rest of their company, and never fell in with them again.—

Dr. Booker S. C. and Texas was along with Jordan— Killed afterwards at Perote

Capt. Newcomb, knows nothing personally, as a matter of course, of the movements of Canalis and Fisher whilst Jordan was marching thro' the Country—He has heard that Fisher had the Small Pox at Comargo & lost the Sight in one of his eyes—that he and Canalis followed on after Jordan, and came in 30 miles of overtaking him, at Victoria— Here Ariste got between Canalis and Malino and prevented their junction— Malino, alarmed, left in haste for San Louis Potosi—Canalis retreated back to Comargo, whence he started, with Ariste at his heels all the way— The Americans were anxious to halt & give Ariste battle; but Canalis always said that Ariste was too strong— it seems that it was not Ariste's desire to attack Canalis on his retreat, but to force him out of this Country without a fight— Every morning, the buglers of Ariste was heard in Canalis' Camp.—

When Jordan arrived at Laredo he went to Comargo—remained on east side—found Ariste and Canalis friendly—was ordered by Ariste to retire 20 miles from the river, & send a delegate to Comargo to receive the pay due his men— This was done, but no money came— They were then ordered to leave without delay Some Americans who were on the Comargo side refused to go across the river, on the ground that it was impossible for them without means, provisions or horses, to get home through the Chaperal wilderness to Texas— Canalis made such prisoners, and took them to Matamoras where after some detention, they were shipped to N. Orleans— This closed the struggle—

end

The retreat of Canalis with Ariste behind him— their not fighting & making friends as soon as they got to Comargo— together with Malino's desire to take the Americans to S. Louis where their destruction was inevitable, in connection with his conduct at Saltillio, all forcing the conviction of Treason

remark

Canalis intercepted in his junction with Malino at Victoria by Ariste— perceiving himself beset by a force which he dreaded, and Malino, unsupported by Canalis, and fearing to go to Saltillio, these chiefs held Secret Correspondence, and so arranged matters with Ariste

that Canalis should retire unassailed to Comargo where their strifes should end; and Malino shoul[d] take his Americans to Saltillio where he & his Mexicans could compromise with the Commander there, and leave the Americans to shift for themselves— In this way two villains purchased their own personal safety, and basely selling their friends & allies to the foe.— Perez apprehended something of the kind & warned Jordan against it— He left in time to save himself, and done it in true Mexican Style; by Stealing a Cavayard of horses—

This Parez was sometime employed by Texas as a frontier spy; committed murders and robberies, left Texas went to Sanfernando, and has been since and is now a notorious highway robber—

After the Parbone fight Ross and Switser and Roman returned to Texas— Ross because he had been repudiated by his men & Jordan chosen in his place, and Roman because he could not beat Jordan for their Command— Switser was killed by Nabors Qr. Ms. and Ross by McColough—

Hagler and . . . [blank] fought and died at Guerrero, and after four rounds returned from the field good friends— Hagler was killed by— Pool.—

Hagler, in the charge upon Parbone called a retreat, which for a moment produced great confusion—

Dissatisfied with his ill-treatment in Mexico, Jordan, after his return to Texas, commenced raising another force to redress his wrongs and to snatch payment from a people who had recd. his services & then betrayed and insulted him— He was invited by Ariste thro' Col. Kinney, to visit him. Jordan went, and the interview resulted in Jordan's abandonment of his enterprise. He went soon after to N. O. where he died—

After the death of Zapata, an irishman by the name of Emmett was saved from the massacre because he claimed to be a doctor whose services were much needed—but when he was put to amputating a limb, he exhibited such a total want of skill & knowledge, that Ariste observed that he might be a good butcher, but was certainly no Surgeon; and ordered him to be executed as the rest of the prisoners— He was, however, pardoned; and is now in Saltillio; and the last I saw of him he was selling Texas lands to some officer in the Army—probably a spurious title—

Fisher organized with Canalis at Tenoxticlan, and moved with him for the Riogrande— They had one pi[e]ce of Artillery 4 Iron pounder which they found at Victoria, spiked— They unspiked it & took it along— it was captured from them on Canalis retreat from the interior— *when he* was pursued by Ariste—

FURTHER INFORMATION FROM CAPT NEWCOMBE—

At Pilona a council was held as to whether they would proceed or return—the majority was for going on.

They were lured on by Malino under the promise that they should be paid in the next Town—but when they reached the next town— he always found it too poor to make any requisitions on it or to snatch any booty; the pay was always ahead.— This continued until they

reached Victoria, where Eleven hundred was obtained from the town, which when divided among the command, left to each man a very trifling sum.

Soon after reaching Victoria, news arrived that Canalis would be in town & join them the next day. He, however, did not come; but after remaining there 5 days in the daily expectation of his arrival, the tidings came that he had been, pursued and completely overthrown by Ariste, who was then advancing with all speed to Victoria after Jordan and Malino. These tidings all came to Malino by letter; but from whom and from whence he never told. His correspondence, he said kept him apprised of what was going on, and the true state of things. Immediately on receiving the news of Ariste's advance (which was all false) he ordered a precipitate and instantaneous retreat from town. They retired from the place to the gap of the mountain 3 miles off where they encamped. At midnight the camp was aroused, and all ordered to march forthwith, in haste, for Ariste had arrived in Town and would be upon them instantly, (all of which was false.)— The line of march was taken up; and continued perseveringly without any thing material being either done or said, until we reached a Town, about 100 miles from Victoria, the English translation of the name being "Dead-man's town."

Here Malino proposed to march to San Louis Potosi; using many arguments in favor of going there, the place being large and wealthy where we could all pay ourselves. The Americans were for a while silent on the question; the Mexicans decidedly opposed to it, saying that the Govt. had a large force there, and the destruction of the command would be inevitable. Malino and Lopez, however, seemed determined on going; and the march was taken up, and continued until we had got about 20 miles, and encamped. The next morning Capt. Newcomb, said he would go no further, but was resolved to return with his men to Texas. This excited a general discussion of the question, and the Americans all decided to go back— Malino yielded most cheerfully, and the army returned to Dead man's town. Malino now asked the Americans if they would go to Saltillio—he represented that the place could be taken without the fire of a gun, there being no troops there; and also that the town could be sacked if their wants were not supplied. All agreed to move for Saltillio; and set off accordingly— Malino made slow marches, and took us through around— about was [way], greatly delaying our arrival there— When within 6 miles of the place we halted and camped for the night, with the understanding we were to enter the city the next morning by light— When morning came the Americans wanted ammunition, their powder being nearly exhausted, and certainly not half enough to attempt a battle with. They demanded that the ammunition and guns captured on the road should be opened and and [sic] distributed— Malino refused, saying that there was no need of it in as much as there was enemy in the Town., Jordan, insisted; and the boxes were opened and ammunition distributed.

When this was done, we moved towards the town; went $\frac{3}{4}$ mile when we saw a force displayed across the road in front of us— Advancing within a quarter of a mile of them, we halted. Malino, saw no propriety in the halt, inasmuch as the persons in front of us were not

soldiers as he said but only the Citizens of the place who had come out to see us— It was true, that they did not seem to have arms in their hands, altho' they displayed like a regular force. Jordan thought it prudent to examine into the matter; and sent out two scouts, right and left, for this purpose. These scouts were soon met, right, and left, by superior ones from the enemy. Jordan enquired of Malino what this meant; "you told me that there were no Soldiers here". Malino replied that he supposed that it was some of the Citizens who had armed themselves against us; and proposed that we should at once charge them and put them to flight. This Jordan was not disposed to do without further enquiries & discoveries. It was soon found that a very large force, was secreted behind the hill, waiting for our advance upon them.

The scouts of both parties when they met, halted and remained stationary until until [*sic*] Malino & Lopez and Jordan held a conference as to what should be done. They concluded to send a Messenger to the Enemy, and demand what he wanted. The Corrier was dispatched, well received, and returned with a letter, stating that the place was unprovided for defence, and that the citizens were willing to meet any reasonable requisition if the Troops would not enter the town. In a few minutes after, a Courier came from the Enemy, with a proposition that Malino should come to their Head Quarters, to adjust the matter, and to receive the money. Malino went, and went alone. A large Cavalry force came out to meet him; not to escort him, but to make him a prisoner. They charged upon him furiously, brandishing their weapons, and finally bore him off a captive. This was done in open view of the Americans Lopez, cried out for Malino's rescue and urged Jordan to charge upon the foe. Jordan, however, concluded to learn a little more about the strength, position and design of the enemy before moving. He now called in his scouts, and marched to a point where he could see the whole force of the Enemy; and chose a position for battle. Lopez accompanied him; and all adjusted for the action, they awaited the advance of the Enemy. But he came not. They remained in this situation, each apparently waiting for the other to advance. Lopez now proposed that the Americans and Mexicans should fight separately; and said that he would move round the hill and attack the Enemy in the rear whilst Jordan should charge him in front. The fire of his guns were to be the Signal for Jordan to charge— The move was to be simultaneous, Lopez pressing upon the rear and Jording pushing upon them in front. This being ordered, Lopez moved off circling round the hill; when he had got some distance off he halted, and spoke to his men to this effect— saying that they were in iminent danger; that their escape was impossible, and their distruction inevitable if they attempted battle— he therefore advised them to do what he had resolved upon himself— viz to go over to the Enemy— Gonzales abhorred the sentiment, and urged the men to stick to their integrity. Lopez, however, shouted Long Live the Republic of Mexico, and dashed off the Enemy's camp. The shout rang through his lines, and the most of the force followed their perfidious and dastardly leader. Gonzales still true to his faith, being second in command, collected the few who adhered to his coun-

sels, and told them that matters were rendered desperate by this treason of Malino and Lopez, and that they must now look to their own safety—to remain could not save the Americans, and it would only insure the destruction of all. The foe was too strong to be resisted, and flight became indispensable as well as right. He lead and his men followed. He broke over the mountains, and was soon out of sight. The Americans were now left to their fate, betrayed by one party and abandoned by the other. They were, however, still undaunted; and waited the enemy's movement. They were tardy in coming. Jordan said damn them we can whip, as few as we are, and I will meet them half way; and accordingly moved forward about half miles, leaving his horses behind in a Corral with a small guard. The enemy now made a move; and their effort was to cut the Americans off from their horses by secretly falling into a deep ravine, which the Americans had just crossed and which lay between them and their horses. Capt. Newcomb, however, who had been placed with a few men at this ravine discovered the design of the enemy and gave notice in time for the Americans to fly back to their horses, before the advancing cavalry in the ravine could overtake them. In retreating to their horses, they were pursued & fired upon by the Cavalry; but Jordan gave no shot in return, save some few scattering ones, until he got to his horses, when his men wheeled to the right about and gave the Cavalry a full fire, which caused them to scatter and fall back.— In a short time the whole force of the Enemy came up, and a severe and constant fire was kept up, the Americans with their rifles and a few muskets, and the enemy with Infantry, cavalry and artillery. The fight lasted from $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2 O'clk, to nearly sun set; when the enemy retired, and left the field to the Americans who availed themselves of the chance to saddle their horses and prefer a retreat. It was now nearly dark— Capt. Larri discovered the Enemy planting a cannon in the pass through which they had to make their escape. This determined Jordan to climb the mountain itself instead of attempting the pass— The task was a difficult one; and being discovered by the Enemy he was fired upon, at every step, by the foe from the mountain on the other side of the pass, and when he finally crossed the brow of the mountain and descended into the valley, he was charged by 400 Cavalry placed there for his interception. His men dismounted, and when the enemy was within 20 paces, he opened an effective fire upon them which saved him from any further annoyance by them. He encamped that night in $2\frac{1}{2}$ miles of the enemy; his men exhausted with fatigue— Having no pilot & being ignorant of the country, he wandered 4 days among the mountains, meeting with some small ranches where he procured supplies; and after the fourth day found himself only 15 miles from Saltillo— He procured a Mexican to conduct him into the Monclover road, which he followed it one or two days, when he was seen by some of Gonzales men who had been stationed on a mountain to watch for such of Jordan's men as might escape, and conduct them to him. His guides struck for Candala; but had gone only some 5 or 6 miles, when Jordan discovered a force in his rear [rear]. He halted for battle. The Enemy halted also;

not for battle, but to avoid one. When Jordan moved, they moved, and also stopped when he stopped. In this way they pursued him to Candala, where Jordan met with old Gonzales, who was everjoyed to meet him—

Larri and Cameron in crossing the mountain after the fight, lead the way, and becoming separated from the command, never rejoined it. Larri's fate is not known. Cameron got home; and embarking in the Mier expedition, was captured and shot after having once made his escape. Canalis came within 30 miles of Victoria and was intercepted by Urea, who forced him to retreat; which he did, as far as Comargo, Ariste following so close upon his heels, that Ariste sent his buglers every morning to wake up Canalis camp. When they got to Comargo they made peace.

There is but little doubt that they had come to some understanding before the retreat commenced, and that Malino was privy to it. The facts are insurmountable— when the Mexicans found themselves surrounded and encompassed by dangers, compromised with the foe, for their own safety, by agreeing to deliver up the Americans; but to carry it out was a difficult task; for the Americans could not be sold without some hard fighting. Placed in any situation, when betrayed, their resistance would necessarily be a bloody one. This the Centralist dreaded; and hence the effort of Malino to get them to San Louis where they could fall a more easy pray. Failing in this, he takes them to Saltillio, and uses every art and falsehood, first to delay their arrival there until the foe was strengthened—then refusing them powder—then urging them, he & Lopez, repeatedly to charge when the enemy was so situated as to cut them up—then in the negociations for money until reinforcements came, and finally in the open desertion of Lopez— Every thing confirms their guilt— It is proven also by the friendly retreat of the two armies under Canalis and Ariste, from about Victoria to Comargo where they both entered and made friends— A more deliberately wicked and diabolical act is not recorded in history. Fisher did not accompany Canalis in his march towards Victoria. He was left behind sick, and the command was lead by Joe Wells.— as it is believed—

End

Cardenas was political Chief of this frontier when Taylor advanced upon Monteréy; and it was he who ordered Taylor not to cross the Nueces.

Dr. Booker, from South Carolina, and Surgeon in the Texas army at Sanjacinto was killed, accidentally by a drunken Mexican soldier, whilst he, Booker, was prisoner at Perota— The Soldier was attempting to shoot another person and Dr. Booker.

Hagler was killed in a street fight at Goliad in 1846 by a man named Pool; and Pool was subsequently killed on the Agua dulce, between Corpus Christi & the Riogrande

FROM SANTOS VENIBEDAS.

He was with his Uncle Brazilois in much of the Revolution; was generally employed in harrassing the enemy on their march, by waylaying them in the defiles, and firing on them at night. This he was allowed to do, with generally about 30 [or] 40 men, when Canalis was flying from the Enemy.

Zapata always wanted to fight; Canalis never. When Zapata went into the war he told his men, and told Canalis also, that they had taken up arms with great odds against them, and must necessarily expect to do hard fighting; and encounter much sufferings, but that they must fight their way through, let what will happen, without any compromise.

On one occasion, when Canalis became alarmed, and manifested a disposition to Compromise with the Government, Zapata told him, that he Canalis had pledged himself never to be bought up, or to abandon the cause, and said Zapata, if you dare to do either whilst I am living, I will as surely kill you. Death shall be certain—my vengeance shall be more speedy and terrible, than that which you apprehend from the foe, and drives you into treachery.— You know very well that it is my spirit that holds our soldiers together, that it is to me that you yourself as well as the army, looks for victory, and at the first signal of betrayal or desertion, the force now under your command shall be turned upon you as a foe, more hateful than the central despots.

Canalis was always overawed in the presence of Zapata, yet was afraid to venture any where without, and always felt secure in his various retreats, (for he himself was never in favor of any thing else) when he had Zapata between him and the enemy, where he was always kept, as well by his own choice as by the fears of Canalis—

When he was captured, Ariste gave him his choice, either to desert the Federals, or be shot. He chose the latter, saying that I have taken up arms against the tyranny of the Govt. and I will never lay them, except in death, until the wrongs of my people are redressed, and their rights secured.— The alternative was renewed at the last moment; he repelled it with indignation; and fell a martyr to his fidelity and patriotism.—

One of the feats which first attracted public attention to Zapata was his encounter with a Comanche. Having pursued a party of Indians to the Nueces, on his way back to Guerrero, he met a large [band] of Comanches 200, his own force being on[ly] 30 or 40. He ordered his men to fall back into a ravine, himself remaining between them and the enemy. Perceiving that one of the Indians had come a little in advance of his party, being something bolder than the rest, Zapata succeeded in cutting him off from the body, and took after him. The indian stood until Zapata drew near, when he let fly an arrow which passed thro' the thigh of Zapata & pinned him to the saddle—the indian fled— Zapata, drawing the arrow out, dashed after him; and on overtaking him, seized him by the hair of the head and jherked him from his horse; and then dismounting stamped his life out of him. He was armed with pistols & and [*sic*] a sabre, but use neither, saying that he would not honor by their use.

The Cane Indians are a half-civilized people—that is they are

Roman Catholics, and subsist by labor— They live, or did live, about Rinoso, on both sides of the river, having had lands parcelled out to them by the Mexican Govert They had suffered greatly from military oppression, and was more alive to the Revolution than the Mexicans— They were bitterly hostile to the compromise of Canalis and Malino to with [*sic*] the Centralists. They were in nearly all the expeditions, suffered much in each, and was almost destroyed in the fight between Canalis and Ariste near San Fernando. The Federal army was there completely dispersed; but the killed was chiefly among the Indians, who fought to the last, whilst Canalis and his mexicans were seeking safety by flight. When peace was made, Canalis made no provision for them, and their property was confiscated— They are now nearly extinct.— The Cholera took off numbers. Mexicans are still occupying Ranches which belong to them; but which they have no means of getting possession of—

SANTOS BENAVIDES

The Govr. Cardenas remained only a few days in Guerrero after his inauguration, and then came to Laredo, where he remained until he took the chaparels.—

Francisco Bedoure lives in Santa Rosa—

(Juan Molano.) He says that Bernardo Guitirez was alive in 1840; but does not recollect whether he died that year or in 1841. He lived and died in Guerrero; his children are there yet. He had 2 sons in the Federal army.

He says there was a general misunderstanding between Zapata and Canalis, in consequence of the latter never being willing to fight, but always stampeding from the enemy.

Canalis was affraid to move without having Zapata with him; and yet Zapata could not get him to fight— Canalis seemed to desire Zapata's presence, only for his own personal protection.—

F[R]OM BASILIO VENEVEDAS.

When the Federalist reorganized on the Nueces under Canalis and Fisher, it was determined that a part of the force should be sent to San Louis Potosi, for the purpose of stirring up the Revolution in that quarter, where the Federalists had heard that they had many powerful friends; and also to liberate many prisoners who had been taken thither.—

[Malino, Lopez & Jordan were despatched on this enterprise, an enterprize, however, which was kept concealed from the Americans— They were first told that the detachment were only going to China for horses &C, and were thus lured on by one consideration and another, until they got to Victoria—]

The above paragraph in brackets is not from Benevedas; but is my own observation—his statement is resumed on the next page. Malino, Lopez and Jordan was despatched on this enterprise—going to San Louis—with orders to stop at Victoria and procure there the necessary supplies for the march.

It was known that Reyes was at Victoria or thereabouts, with a body of Cavalry; and also that Ariste was in motion through the country, so that it became necessary in in [*sic*] the march of Malino to be vigilant and to take such routes as to avoid in coming in contact with him. It was understood that whilst Malino thus advanced towards Victory, Canalis and Fisher were to bring up the rear and encounter Ariste, if necessary, whilst Malino made his onward way.—

Malino reached Victoria without molestation, and found that Reyes had been there a short time before him and had reestablished the Central power there.—

Ariste hearing of his (Malino's) progress towards Victoria took after him; and Canalis also pursued Ariste; they came in close proximity to each other within 30 miles of Victoria, when Ariste turned upon his pursuer, and drove him back to the Riogrande and made him cross.

Whilst it was the design of Canalis to keep Ariste off of Malino, Malino was to take care of himself with Reyes. Reyes had 1000 cavalry, and it was thought that Malino would be able to manage him.— On the arrival of Malino, however, he found Reyes, had left Victoria and was avoiding a Conflict.—

Benevidas attributes the failure of the Revolution mainly [to] the tardiness of action on the part of the Federals, and especially in their not organizing, promptly, a Federal Govt. to order and direct things—

FROM MR. WILKINSON

At Saltillo, Malino's private pack mules were left in the corral with Jordan's horses and other packs. When Jordan retreated, the packs followed; and in this way Malino's trunks fell into the hands of Jordan who brought them to Laredo. On his arrival at Laredo Gonzales had some words about them; he claimed them but Jordan would not give them up. When the Trunks were opened, the Correspondence between Malino and the Central Commandant at Saltillo was found; and by this means Jordan came to a full knowledge of the manner in which he had been betrayed and sold to the enemy. The whole was disclosed in the letters.—

The Mexican Spies assured Col. Jordan that Malino was taking him in the wrong part of the town; that, that was not the proper way to enter it; that they were going right into the enemy's power; but that by going another way, the city could be got possession with little opposition. Jordan remonstrated with Malino, but did nothing else. The real fact was that he had got to drinking, & had been drunk 3 or 4 days.

FROM JESUS BARERA.

Jesus was with Zapata.— Joined him opposite Guerrero, Ranch. Oreveña, near 200 men, some time in the fall of 1838— Went down to the coast; to the Aroya St. Iago; there about month; he went down there to avoid the forces which Ariste was throwing in the up Coun-

try; some of Ariste's cavalry came to Guerrero & C— From the Coast Zapata came to Laredo and on to Rio Grande—

From Riogrande Zapata went to the Hacienda, Warlupe 5 leagues off; thence to Anava, thence to Morelos, where he was taken prisoner. Canalis was at San fernando—only 1 or 2 miles from Morelos. Zapata had but 20 men; the force which he had below, having gradually fallen off, and left him before his arrival at Laredo— He got to Morelos with hardly 20 men, and no American with him— (Canalis had 25 Americans with *him*—)

When Zapata reached Morelos, in the evening, he remained in town that night; and early in the morning saddled up to go into San Fernando, to join Canalis— The principle citizens of the town now assembled around him with unusual demonstrations and expressed their surprise at his leaving them so soon— that he was amongst his friends who would be glad to serve him; and after offering him every hospitality, proposed to kill a beef for his men. He yielded to their kindness, and ordered his men to dismount, saying that he would spend the day in Morelos. His horses were given to the care of those who had invited him to remain; and by them were immediately delivered up to some Soldiers, who until then had not made their appearance and whose being there, Zapata knew nothing of. He was tarrying with a family who resided in a large white house at the corner of the Square; and it was here the citizens met and invited him to accept the hospitality of the place. They had, however, scarcely got fully in possession of the horses, before he was fired upon by these very men; they missed him, and shots were immediately followed up from 3 other quarters by the Soldiers 100 or 200, who were secreted there. Zapata's men seeing this ran to him, and joined him in the house where he had stopped. *They* had stopped in another house, 15 or 20 paces off. Here they defended themselves for three hours, losing 4 men killed inside, and 3 outside the house. They fought until the very last cartridge was expended. Zapata, now came forward and surrendered. About this time Ariste arrived in town with 1800 men.— Zapata and his men were tied, and kept prisoners until the next day. Ariste then had an interview with Zapata; what passed between them, he does not know, personally, not being present; but it was generally reported in town and understood that he had proposed to pardon Zapata, if he would join the Centralists— Zapata refused— Ariste then promised him his life if he would lay down his arms and cooperate no further with the Federalists. Zapata, still refused, and claimed to be treated as a prisoner of war; Ariste told him that he, Zapata, must either abandon his cause or die— Zapata, then told him to shoot him; for he would never lay down his arms as long as he was at liberty.—

He was shot accordingly— The narator (Jesus Barrera,) was at the time one of the prisoners taken with Zapata, and was confined when he heard the guns fire, that killed his leader. In three days there after the prisoners taken with Zapata, were started in chains under a strong guard for Vera Cruz—going to Monterey, then to Saltillo, and then back again to Monterey, thence back to Saltillo, and then on to San Louis; and from San Louis Caretta near the city of

Mexico, where the officers having them in charge, heard that a force of 400 men were assembled for the purpose of rescuing the prisoners; whereupon they returned to San Louis, where they were kept a year imprisoned when they were released.

Canalis was within hearing of the Guns whilst Zapata was fighting, and might have come to his relief, it being on[ly] one mile and half off. Instead, of doing this, however, he made no move until late in the evening after the capture of Zapata. He then came but came with a small party only; and after discharging a few shots of artillery at the town, he then retired until the next day, when Arriste, arriving with his whole force, marched upon Canalis; who after a feeble resistance was put to flight, his whole army being dispersed, and himself escaping at the head of a remnant of his force, leaving behind about 30 carese Indians killed who had borne the brunt of the action, and some 5 or 6 Mexicans. (This the narator has heard, but knows nothing personally being in prison at the time of the battle) He heard also that some Americans had fallen in the fight.—

When Zapa[ta] retired from the Oreveña ranch oposite Guerrero, the President Cardenas fled up the country— Came to Laredo, and went thence to a water-hole called Los Soucis between the Riogrande & the Nueces, nearly mid way.—

FURTHER MATTER FROM OLD GONZALES.

He says that whilst they were at Victoria, a trafic took place between Malino and Ariste— Correspondence was carried on between them, which Malino concealed—and here he says was the foundation of the Treason which was carried out at Saltillio; that is to sell the Americans, betray the cause and join the Centralists.— He, Gonzales, together with many others suspected the treason of Malino at Victoria, but having no positive evidence of it, they listened to his solemn protestations and would sometimes almost conclude that they had greatly wronged him. His conduct, however, in defiance of his assurances, became daily more inexplicable, so that when they had advanced some short distance on the San Louis road, greatly against the feelings of the whole command he, Gonzales was not satisfied with matters as they were being conducted, and regarding the cause as hourly becoming more hopeless, he was determined to proceed no further; but would withdraw his force, and go down to Campeachy and aid the people of Yucatan in their struggle for liberty.— The reassurances of Malino half way allayed his suspicions against him, and he concluded that he would still continue in the Federal service if the Operations should be confined this side of the mountains. It was accordingly agreed that they should move against Saltillio; and here at Saltillio it was that Malino after the necessary preliminaries with the Commandant Montolla, threw off his disguise and deserted to the enemy, thereby doing only what, he had in all probability agreed with Ariste to do at San Louis— There is no doubt of the fact that he agreed with Ariste to sell the Federals at San Louis; but failing to get them there he consumated the bargain at Saltillio.—

Whilst Malino was marching to Saltillio, Canalis was retreating before Ariste to the Riogrande—or rather they were both marching to—

gether, the one making no efforts to escape and the other none to overhaul his enemy— They reached the Riogrande together, and were friends; Malino reached Saltillio, and he and the Commandant there were friends also. And this ended the war.—

Gonzales says that they started from the Riogrande with a view to go San Louis; but the federal cause seemed to languish, becoming less popular with people, so that when he arrived at Victoria, he Malino thought that he had better take time by the forelock and provide for his own safety before disasters should come, and accordingly opened a correspondence with Ariste, which resulted as above stated—

At Victoria, the people were generally federals; and their force was augmented there to 1200; but the inexplicable and unsatisfactory conduct of Malino caused them and many others to desert;— So that the force which we took to Saltillio was smaller than it was when we first arrived at Victoria, although it had once been so greatly augmented.—

Garcia, at Mier, was captain and deserted with Malino. He came to his company and endeavored to prevail on them to desert also— Gonzales took him prisoner, and brought him to Lorado.—

BARZILIA BENEVIDES.

Fisher and Quintero came with 270 men, to Riogrande, and met Canalis at Mier at the moment when negotiations were going on for peace. He was of consequence, cut off from any participation in the active part of the war.

Morelos when he was conquered at Los Moros and came down to Canalis with the remnant of his force, was expelled from the service for having acted cowardly in the battle of his defeat, and was sent, together with some captured prisoners under guard to Sanantonio Texas; whence he escaped, and joined the Central service.—his after history, not known.—

After the government was organized at Guerrero, the President, Canalis, Zapata and the whole army came to Laredo, the seat of Government; with Capt. Palmer commanding the Life Guard of the President composed of 60 odd men all Americans.

From Laredo Canalis and Zapata went to San Fernando, leaving Palmer with the Govt behind.— Palmer, was a sort of a good-natured man, but no great fighter; was afterwards elected Chief Justice (it is believed) in Victoria—

HISTORY OF TEXAS—GATHERED FROM AUGUSTIN SOTO

Antonio. Elosua was military commandant of the Department of Texas from an early period to 1832, when he died at Sanantonio and was succeeded by Mr. Soto's father, Alexandro Treviño, who was born in Guerrero, bred in Laredo, was 3rd Lieut. under Aradondo; stationed in Sanantonio in 1822, came to the command of his company in 1827 as Captain, which he held until the death of Elosua, whom he succeeded and held the station until his death, in 1834. He was suc-

ceeded by Ugartacher. Ramon Muscos was Governor at the time, from 1827 to 183—.

BATTLE OF MADINA

At the battle of Madina, Monchaca commanded on the right and Francisco Ruis on the left. Monchaca was killed by a cannon ball. Aradondo, when he entered Sanantonio, offered a reward of Ten thousand dollars for the head of Ruis.—

Col. Nicholas Condey was at Sanantonio in the beginning of the Revolution.

At Acapulco— Ramires y Sesma the same that was in Texas— Executed the order denounced against Guerrero at Acapulco— The Court martial was headed by Condey— and Sesma executed the sentence. Sesma died about 1845— Condey still lives—

FROM CAPT. BENJ. HILL.

Reuben Ross, Virginian, was appointed Capt of the Rangers in the West, the first company for that purpose— It was in Sept. 1839— He was nephew of Col. Ross in the war of 1812 and 1813— Whilst ranging in the west, he heard of Canalis being at Victoria— Canalis made some overtures for Ross to join him in the Federal War— Ross agreed— marched to San Patricio, where Canalis forces assembled— Ross was elected Colonel there of the Texan Allies— Ben Hill was adjutant—they mustered 226 strong— Of Mexicans about 900.— Left San Patricio about 15th Octr or 20— and moved to Guerrero—made a daylight attack upon that place— The Garrison 320 strong, commanded by Bernerdo Gutierrez, who had been previously a Federal, but appointed 3 or 4 days before the fight to the command of the Garrison. One half of the Command crossed above, and the other below the River Salow The upper division reached town a short time before the lower, and took the place before the River came up. Roman, the Lieut. Col. Commanded the division that took the place. They reached town between day light and sunrise— When Ross Crossed the Salow and intered the town, the garrison was dispersed, and Gutierrez made prisoner. Gutierrez was kept prisoner until the Parbone fight and afterwards released. There was no Mexicans in the taking of the place— They were all in the lower division with Ross.— Left Guerrero the same day 3 oclck in the afternoon, and took the road to Mier, and got within 4 miles of Mier about 2 oclck that night—stopped to encamp, when the spies came in and reported that Parbone was about deserting the town (Mier)— The Federals, pushed on immediately, (having rested only 2 hours) and entered Mier about $\frac{1}{2}$ hour after sunrise, and found Parbone flying— They pursued him 15 miles when he halted, and prepared for battle. He occupied an eminence The fight commenced about 11 or 12 Oclck & lasted until dark—

Tonkeway Jones, from Gonzales was shot dead; Black was wounded The Texans occupied a ditch; the Mexicans commenced firing upon them with artillery and small arms— The Texans, however, did not return it for two hours, because they had fallen asleep and had slept 2 hours, under this continued fire from the enemy, until the enemy made a charge, whereupon the Texans, rousing from their slumbers,

rose and fired upon them. This was the first shot from the Texans—The enemy was repulsed, and fell back—The infantry made, subsequently, three other charges, all however, unsuccessful and with some loss—The Cavalry now tried their luck—they charged, and was also repulsed—the commanding officer was killed by private Bowen of Prices Company—Bowen cried out “Boys by God I have knocked him over, and now let us charge them”—a general shout was raised, and forth they all rushed—The Enemy gave way—suffered much in their retreat. A general conflict, hand to hand, now ensued, and lasted until sun-set—when the Enemy fell back about 2 miles off—The Texans cut them off from water; the next morning at daylight, the Texans rose and made towards the enemy to renew the fight—the Enemy was about 2 miles off—Perceiving the Texans advancing, Parbone sent in a white Flag, and surrendered—No Mexicans of Canalis was in the fight, except Zapata with a part of his cavalry (25 men) who cooperated in the Charge that put the foe to flight—Carbahal was all the while acting in the ditch with the Americans, and was wounded in the arm.—On the side of the Americans 5 were killed viz—Big Jakes—Quail from Goliad—no more remembered)—and 14 wounded—The loss of the Enemy was 85 found dead on the ground—and a proportionable number wounded.—

When Parbone hoisted the white flag, his force commenced a stampede— they were pursued nearly 6 miles, leaving their ammunition behind, which fell into the hands of the Americans—a lucky thing for them; for the flying enemy had planted their artillery in a narrow pass where they might have raked their pursuers, had they not lost their ammunition—The enemy entered into a Coral, and there surrendered to 50 of the Americans who had pursued them in advance of their Comrades—Parbone came forward and presented his sword to the foremost of the men—Benj. Hill, the adjutant of the command, who received the same, but which was restore to him as soon as the enemy’s arms were stacked, and they marched out of the Coral—That evening 300 of the enemy joined the Federals—

After this, Roman, Ross and Hill were dispatched to Texas to raise new recruits—

Ross, after the war returned to Gonzales—Bore a challenge from Sweitzer to Ben McColough—McColough refused to fight Sweitzer; Ross took the place of his friend, and wounded his antagonist at their meeting—This rankled in the breast of the McColoughs; and one of them, Henry McColough, subsequently sought an occasion whilst Ross was drunk, to provoke a controversy, and shoot him—Ross died immediately—it was in Gonzales, January 1840. His duel with Ben was on the 19th of Sept. 1839.—Ross came to Texas with Quitman in 1836.—

Sweitzer, endeavored to supplant Ross in the Command; but failed—was a d—d mean man, and was altogether unworthy of the friendship of Ross.—He was finally killed by Neighbors, (being in the wrong,) whilst Neighbors was doing his duty as Qr Master—

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM MAJ. ROMAN

Born Kentucky— came to Texas in Spring in 1836.

Reuben Ross was Capt in the regular army of Texas, at the head of his company, frontier Gonzales Co—when Canalis came to solicit aid—he & Ross met Augua Dulce, this side of the Nueces near San Particia. Jordan, Price, Cameron (no comd) were there. The forces brought into the field there were about 200 Americans, the most of them being what was called Cow boys, with the exception of Ross's Company which were Regular troops— The force was organized— Ross was elected to the Command; Roman was Lt Col and Joseph Dolan was major; Benj Hill was adjutant.— The Captains were as remembered, Price had the largest company & most influence Eberly had small company, 18 men Hagler from N. C. Compa[n]y 40 men— Canalis force consisted of 300 men, $\frac{3}{4}$ of which were Carese Indians, armed with Lances badly constructed— Jos M Carabajal was with him as counselor & C, having no command. Remeris was along with Canalis. Zapata was not there at the that time—

Took up the line of march, the indians on foot, the rest mounted, without tents, bread or money, not one man in the company having \$5.00— The Americans enlisted for no set & definite period— When Canalis got in the vicinity of Guerrero, he was joined by Zapata, with a 150 men good force in better condition than the others— He Canalis determined that the Texans should no longer march under the Texas Flag as had been agreed to at the first organization at Agua Dulce— Ross was anxious to cling to the Flag of his country being a Captain in the regular Army, and going into this service without orders from the Prest

At this time Genl. Pavon commanded at Mier; and Bernardo Gutieres commanded the post at Guerrero, with 150 men; he had short time been Federal, but from some cause had become Central & was placed in Command there— He had at the time 2 Sons with Canalis, thus the father & sons were about to engage each other in battle— Jordan had no command, but was taken into the Staff of Canalis with the rank of Lt. Colonel—at the river riogrande, a party was despatched to Guerrero to attack the garrison commanded by Jordan consisting of 100 Americans; They crossed at night a little before day above the mouth of the Salado— early in the morning they moved upon the Town— Canalis with his men (Mexicans & indians) lingered behind— Jordan succeed with very little trouble in putting the garrison to flight. As soon as the fight was over Canalis entered the town with his force—

The balance of the Americans who were not with Jordan, crossed below the mouth of the Salado, and went on the Mier road, under the command of Ross & Roman for the purpose of intercepting the enemy in their rout, believing that when the town should be taken; they would take that route—Sure enough, as soon as the garrison was routed many of the fugatives attempt to escape in that direction, & were captured as soon as they crossed the river— Guteris himself was seen in finely dress wading the river; and being a venerable looking old man 80 years, some one called out, that he was the Priest & to seize him— Gutierrez came out and said that he was no priest, but

Bernardo Gutierrez; and desired to see the American Commander—Ross came, and Gutierrez on hearing his name asked Ross if he was related to a certain Ross who had figured in the Wars of 1812 & 13 in Texas—The Col. answered that he was the nephew of the same; whereupon Gutierrez observed that he was familiar with the American character, and did not doubt but that he would be treated with humanity—

Ross treated him kindly; but when Canalis came up, the old man was insulted by the Mexicans & Indians, who cut off his buttons & taunted him greatly—he was finally released. In the evening of the same day the forces, took up the line of march for Mier—The next day they reached Mier; and found that Pavon had evacuated the place a few hours previous, taking the Monterey road—he was pursued, the Americans in advance, who had been Ordered by Canalis to push out and get in advance of Pavon, & stop him until he, (Canalis) should come up; thus do we [see] the cowardice of this man in all his movm'ts, always sending the Americans to battle, & keeping out of danger himself—Ross, executed the order, got ahead of Pavon, fell into a small ravine 400 yds from a hill upon which Pavon formed; the Americans leaving their horses in their rear out of cannon shot.—This was about 12 o'clk—The fight now commenced—the enemy opened upon the Americans with their artillery—the ravine was very shallow, and inadequate for protection—After one or two hours hard fighting, Canalis made his appearance nearly a mile off in the rear of the Americans, where he halted and became a silent & inactive looker on upon the battle which still raged between the Americans & the Enemy. The Americans, suff[er]ing greatly from the artillery & being also very thirsty for want of water, sent for Canalis to come up & join in the contest—Canalis sent word back that he would come in short time, he however made no move; other messages were sent to him to come on; he still promised, but still held back. Pavon made several attempts to charge the Americans, but were uniformly repelled. The Americans now consulted, and resolved to charge the enemy; and again sent to Canalis, apprising of their determination and urging him to come up and unite in the Charge—Canalis sounded his horns; and galloped about in the chaperals about $\frac{1}{2}$ mile from the enemy, but refuse to come to the aid of the Americans, or to join them in the charge—Zapata, disgusted with his cowardice, left him, and galloped up to the Americans to cooperate with them; and taking a prominent [?] and exposition attempted to direct the americans in their charge; but not understanding his language, they did not profit by his counsel—

The Americans, in making the charge, left the ravine very irregularly, and the charge was made in much confusion; but so far successful, however, as to drive the enemy from their position & caused them to fall back—The dust, s[m]oke and dense chaperel prevented the Americans from perceiving the advantage which they had acquired, now fell back to their original position where they remained till morning; the enemy Pavon doing the same. This day about 18 or 20 were killed—no Mexicans being injured, none having joined in the fight

except Zapata & Carbahal who both behaved exceedingly well, the latter having his arm broke in the charge—

The next morning Parvon sent to Canalis, saying that his men were suffering greatly for water and that if he could be permitted to go to the water, which the Americans were occupying; he would give battle again— Canalis refused; and in short time Pavon was seen moving towards the water, with the Americans between him & the water— The Americans, having lost faith in Canalis for his treachery and Cowardice the day before, held a council, and determined that if Canalis did not immediately come up & mingle with them in the fight which approaching, they would immediately abandon the cause & return home; this being communicated to him, he promised as before to come up; but still delayed; until Parbone advancing, a slight skirmish ensued between him & the Americans, which lasted but a little while, when Parvon hoisted the white flag— Canalis then came up and stipulations were entered into—the Officers were parolled on honor, and the Soldier detained as prisoners; on the next day they all agreed to join the Federals.—

No. 2339. LAMAR TO W. W. S. BLISS

Laredo 17 July 1847.

Majr. W. W. S. BLISS Asst. Adjt. Genl.

SIR,

Capt. Lewis arrived here yesterday evening charged with despatches for General Taylor. He is unable to proceed in consequence of a wound received from the Indians this [side?] of the Riofrio. He was shot in the hip with two balls. His companion Mr Cotton will proceed to Head Quarter with said despatches, and will be accompanied by two of my men (Shattock and Rust) who are detailed for that purpose.

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Commanding at Laredo—

[Endorsed:] Communication from M B Lamar to Ajt Genl Bliss

No. 2340. H. L. KINNEY TO LAMAR

Corpus Christi July 22d. 1847.

DEAR GENL

We had the pleasure to hear from you by your Lieut. Mr Peace. I wish you had have come down yorself.

Why not take a trip down this way it is not far and the roads are good. escort a party of traders down to trade with our friend Caz I send you a couple of Bottles of old Brandy thinking it may not be easily got in Loredo.

We shall do what we can for you in the political way altho one of our citizens *Mr Fitzgerald* has been out for some time— He is now in

Camargo I shall try to have him hold off when he returns—let us see you down this way—if possible

In haste your friend

H. L. KINNEY

[Addressed:] Genl. M. B. Lamar Laredo Texas

[Endorsed:] from H L Kinney Corps Christi Texas

No. 2345. WILLIAM G. COOKE TO LAMAR

Adjutant General's Office)
Austin 21st. Aug: 1847)

SIR

His Excy the Governor having been requested by the President to call out a force for the protection of the frontier of Texas, has instructed me to enclose you the accompanying authority to organize another Corps for the protection of Laredo on the expiration of the term of service of the Compy now under your Command— The address is left blank the Governor being desirous if it should meet your views that you should continue in Command, but understanding that you would be a Candidate for the next Legislature to represent the County of Nueces presumes that you would decline it— Should such be the Case you will please you will please [*sic*] address it to some competent and deserving person—

The Governor is fully authorised to appoint the mustering Officer and requests and requests [*sic*] if you decline the Command of the Compy, that you will act in that Capacity— Triplicate Muster rolls will be necessary, one to be retained by the Commanding officer of the Company, one to be forwarded to the Adj. Genl. at Washington & one to this office—

I have the honor to be

Yr. obt svt.

WM. G COOKE adj. Genl

No. 2351. R. A. HOWARD TO LAMAR

San Antonio sept. 27th 1847.

DEAR GENL.

Understanding that you are about raising another Company and presuming on your former kind offer, I take the liberty of asking a similar favor of you.

A severe sickness prevented me from accepting the honor you tendered me formerly and I would now, should there be a vacancy, be much pleased to serve under you. I wished much to do so before and had I known of your generous intentions towards me, Should not have returned here from Monterey;— but being aware that there were many applicants to your favor I did not like to ask the office.

I would like to live on the Rio Grande and would hold it a high honor to serve under Genl Lamar,

I can leave here at any moment and s[h]ould you desire it, Can be of some service in assisting you to raise your company.

I would like to see you on other business and at all events shall be

in Laredo [*sic*] soon. My brother is now attending the Courts below— He desired to be remembered to you.

Yours with much respect and Esteem—

R. A. HOWARD

No. 2353. W. W. S. BLISS TO LAMAR

Head Quarters, Army of Occupation,
Camp near Monterey, Sepr 28th 1847

SIR,

Your communication of Sepr. 17th, has been received and laid before the Commanding General who is pleased to learn that you have received authority to organize a new company for the defence of the frontier near Laredo. The inclosed copy of an order to the Departments of the Staff will show that supplies will be furnished on your requisition. It is hoped there will be no necessity for evacuating Laredo entirely, but of this you must be the judge, as much better acquainted than the General can be with the state of affairs in that quarter.

We have advices from the City of Mexico to the 11th inst. Our troops gained a signal victory over the Mexicans on the 20th of August—the latter sustaining a loss of about 5000 in killed, wounded and prisoners.

An Armistice was entered into with a view to negotiations, but on the 8th of Sepr. it was broken off and hostilities resumed—our troops carrying and destroying some of the enemy's works near Chapultepec. On the 11th an attack was hourly expected in Mexico, and we are now anxiously looking for further news.

I am, Sir, Very respectfully, Your Obedt Servt.

W. W. S. BLISS, Asst. Adj. Genl.

Genl. M. B. Lamar, Comdg at Laredo

P. S. We have just learned that our troops defeated the Mexicans on the 12th inst. carrying two strong points and then the capital. Santa Anna with 6000 men retired to Queretaro

No. 2355. RECEIPTS TO LAMAR

Received this 9th day of October 1847 at Comargo, Mexico, of Captain M. B. Lamar, the Discharges of Martin Chaddick and R. W. Spradling, which discharges are dated the 7th inst. and are delivered to me as the authorised agent of those persons.

NATHAN MCFARLANE

Received of Capt. M. B. Lamar the Discharge of A. C. Heard— Said discharge bearing this date and delivered to me as agent of said Heard.

Comargo 7th. Octr. 1847.

R P BARTON

Received of Capt. M. B. Lamar The Discharge of B. B. Likins, dated the 7th of this month, which is delivered to me as the authorised agent of said Likins— Comargo Mexico, 9th October 1847.

A. K. VANSICKLE

[Endorsed:] Receipts for Discharges

No. 2356. RECEIPTS TO LAMAR

Received of Capt. M. B. Lamar The Discharge of D. D. McConnell for the purpose of delivering the same to his family, he himself being with the Texas Regt. Ordered to Vera Cruz—
Comargo 10th. October 1847.

Received of Captain M. B Lamar the Discharge of William Clark, a private in said Lamar's company & Honorably discharged at Comargo Mex. the 7th. October 1847.
Comargo 10th. Octr. 1847

JAMES R. RATCLIFF

[Endorsed:] Oct the 9th 1847

No. 2357. JOHN A. VEATCH TO LAMAR

Zavalla, [Texas] Oct. 18th 1847

Genl. LAMAR

DEAR SIR

I send this by express to San Antonio trusting to chance for its being forwarded from that place. Genl. Henderson whom I found at San Augustine entered readily into your views and at once gave me authority to Raise a Company. I urged upon him advantage of commissioning you to organize the requisite force for the frontier, but he did not feel at liberty to Raise more than *one* more company, (making 8 in all,) for frontier purposes. The Governor hoped that you would still be able to carry out your views as the individual whom you suggested in your letter had allready been appointed to raise 3 of the Companies.

The present force will require the election of a Major and Lieut. Colonel, which however will not take place untill the departure of Col. Bell from San Antonio; Gov. H. supposed that Col. B. had probably allready moved on to join Hays. In this event you can probably be elected to either office should you choose.

My own company is now ready for Organization & will be mustered into service in two or 3 days, & I shall immediately march for Laredo,— bringing with me a few recruits for your company— I shall organise with the smallest number allowed (64) leaving vacancies for a few of our old companions who seem'd anxious to join me when I left, I shall try to fill their places with recruits from here.

You may look for me early in next month. In the event of your offering for either of the offices above named I think you may trust implicitly upon every vote of my Company.

Give my kindest regards to Bee & Peace, I have only a moment to write as the man is waiting—

Yours respectfully

JOHN A. VEATCH

[Endorsed:] from John A. Veatch to M B Lamar—

No. 2363. HAMILTON P. BEE TO LAMAR

Laredo, Texas. December 14, 1847.

MY DEAR SIR—

Your company has filled its Muster Roll, it consists of 90 men rank and file, all well mounted and equipped except the Germans, their Horses are hardly fit for service, it is the best looking, and the best conditioned corps I have ever seen in the Volunteer service. An election was held on Sunday the 12th for Officers— Yourself Pease and myself had no opposition and received the unanimous vote of the company, for the 3d Lieutenancy. Davis, Paul, Barton and McWilliams were candidates— It required a majority and not a plurality to govern— Paul received 36 votes. Davis 23. Barton 15. McWilliams 00. total 73. necessary to a choice 37, neither having received a majority, a new election was held, Davis received 44, and, Paul, 37, majority for, Davis, 7 votes, I thereupon declared Davis the 3d Lieut. to this decision Paul has protested, he claims to be entitled to the office, having received a plurality of the Votes, I announced the fact before the election that an appeal from my decision would be sent to Col. Bell for his decision— which has been done all the facts stated and he will decide

In the absence of the Military laws, I adopted that course, which seemed to me most equitable and just, and whatever may be the decision of Col Bell, I shall feel satisfied that it was the one best calculated to define the choice of the company I should like to hear your opinion.

Dodson beat Ratcliff for. O S. Ramsdal, Scott & Carter are the Sergeants, Austin, Compton, Raines & Stubblefield the corporals.— I have not a distinct recollection of the order of the Governor relating to the organization of the company. I construed it as not more than 84 Privates— should I be wrong, please use your influence to have it increased to 100 Rank and file, we are the most exposed on the frontier and the others, Veatch I am certain of has at least 100. The men whom I have taken in over the 84 are from Eastern Texas. Young men, and well mounted and I disliked to loose them.

Pedro has not yet arrived— do come back and take command I am tired of it. I send 10 men to Bexar, two of them Clark & Alexander are furloughed to carry a negro to the Little River which they captured on the opposite side of the River, they will report to you at Austin, Lieut Davis takes, 20 men to Sabinas after corn, and I leave with about 30 for Camargo, in a few days.

The detail has returned from Corpus, Cazeneau was still there. Don *Ornophrey* Hill, is to meet him on the 10th. Jan. at Corpus. all quiet in the neighbourhood— send me some papers by return of Clarke.

Yours truly

Gen. Lamar.

H. P. BEE.

P. S. Wilkinson and Lettick request me to say to you, that they will bid for the mail from Laredo to Bexar once a month— please secure us a mail route if possible— and recommend Walter Winn for Post Master— BEE

Secure the bid for Wilkinson & Lettick and the papers can be sent on from here—

No. 2366. LAMAR TO THE EDITORS OF *LA BANDERA*,
MATAMOROS¹⁶

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Laredo, Texas, 1847?]

It has been reported to me that the news has been circulated, and that it is generally believed, that I am in accord with certain revolutionary movements that are supposed to be taking shape in the Mexican States which border the Riogrande; and as several friends of mine are anxious to know the truth or falsity of this report, I have deemed it necessary, because of what I owe to them and to myself, to declare that if any such movements have been made, I have no other connection with them than that of having expressed frequently and with entire freedom, my opinion concerning that which is best and most suitable for the future happiness of these States.

It is very natural and right that I, in common with thousands of others, should have a lively interest in the prosperity and welfare of these States, considering their proximity to my own country; I cannot perceive any reason that would require me to conceal my views concerning this matter.

The remote and exposed situation of these States has prevented their enjoying equal advantages with the other sections of the union. On the contrary, they have been wholly neglected by the General government; or if any attention has been paid to them, it was only to rob and enslave them. Not only have they been denied the rights, privileges and protection guaranteed in the Constitution, but they have also been abandoned to the ferocity of savages, without themselves being permitted even the liberty of protecting their own families. Deprived of the fruits of their own industry by a tyrannical government, and outraged in every manner possible by a cruel soldiery, their lot has been, and is yet, one of poverty and degradation. From this system of oppression it has resulted that all the enterprizes of industry, likewise the arts and sciences, have gradually retrograded since the Independence of the country; and today is presented to us the sad spectacle of a country, the most beautiful in the world, richly endowed with all natural advantages, and capable of being the paradise of this continent, submerged in every species of calamity and misfortune, and reduced to the most lamentable state of poverty, ignorance and idleness, with its farms, villages, and cities all rapidly going to ruin, and with a population perhaps the most blindly prejudiced and superstitious of all the civilized nations;— brought to this said condition and held in it, by the despotism of a government whose sole object seems to be that of trampling under foot the rights of the people and depriving them of their property.—

If these States, tired of their injuries, which they have suffered for so long a time, should desire to liberate themselves from the tyranny of the General Government, to rise from their present humiliation and to place themselves on an equality with the other esteemed nations, I

¹⁶In No. 2416, pp. 53-7.

cannot deny my most lively, and ardent sympathy for them; neither can I cease anxiously to desire a happy issue from whatever attempts they may make to secure these noble and desirable ends. Doubtless they have never had, nor will they ever have, occasion more favorable than the present for vindicating their rights and establishing their Independence provided they wish to do it.— Mexico and the United States finding themselves at war with each other, the latter is ready to make a treaty of peace with the aforesaid States; the former will remain without any power to prevent them from obtaining their objects.— Why, then, should they not take advantage of an occasion so opportune for throwing off the yoke of their oppressors and recovering their liberties?— If it is fear and cowardice which keeps them from taking such steps, then they will deserve the aggravations which they experience and are not worthy of being free.— Let them remain in “statu quo”— as they are.—

The States of the north of Mexico have no interests in common with those beyond the Sierra Madre. Neither have they any reasons for involving themselves in the present war between Mexico and the United States; and even less of submerging themselves in the civil disputes that are continually occurring in that nation. Their interests ought to consist in educating the young; in developing the natural resources of the country; in profiting by the experience and wisdom of other nations; in the cultivation of peace and friendship with their neighbors, and in the extension of a free commerce, that never fails to carry with it riches, knowledge, and courtesy. These are their true interests—interests that they can neither advance nor enjoy until they first dissolve all political connection with the power that oppresses them, and take their destiny into their own hands. There remains to them only the alternative of unsheathing the sword or living always in a state of poverty and profound degradation. Nature seems to have designed the Sierra Madre for a great national boundary; and the territory that extends from that chain of mountains to the Rio Grande, and from the Gulf of Mexico to the Pacific Ocean should form a great Republic whose prosperity and illustrious institutions would be the admiration and envy of the world.

Now, it is in the power of these States to establish a similar Republic— they have the opportunity of erecting a temple of liberty that might surpass in beauty, firmness and duration any that have preceded it; but if by lack of knowledge, or any cause whatsoever, they neglect to take advantage of such an opportune occasion to effect this immortal work and to assure their Independence and happiness forever, another such may never happen to them; and abandoned by their friends who now are ready to aid them in the great undertaking, they will have to remain as they are today, victims of their own foolishness, ignorance, and cowardice, without any hope of improving their condition.— Time, very soon, will determine their fate. As the friend of liberty and of good government and one who desires the happiness of all the human race, I can do no less than counsel them to unsheath their swords and trust the result to the God of Justice. The free and gratuitous expression of these views and sentiments is all the connection that I have, or have had, with the Revolution which, it is said, is developing across the Rio Grande.

No. 2369. NOTES UPON COMMANDERS, ETC. LAMAR

[Laredo? Texas, 1847?]

Antonio Elosua military Commandt. of Texas from an early period to 1832 when he died Sanantonio; and was succeeded by Alexander Treviño who was born in Guerrero Lieut. under Aradondo with San Antonio; came from Guerrero when very young, and was reared in Laredo; was made Lt of the Garrison at Sanantonio, in 1822, which office he filled until the 1827 when he was made Capt & continued so until the death of Elosua, whom he succeeded as Chief military Commandt of that district—died in 1834.— Was succeeded by Ugartacher.—

The Districts were called Departments— Departmt of Texas— Ramon Muscos was Govr: at the time; from 1827—until ——[blank]

At the battle of Madina Monchaca commanded the left wing and Ruis the left [*sic*] Monchoca was killed by a cannon ball. Arandondo offered, when he came into San Antonio, offered a reward of \$10,000— for Francisco Ruis' head—

No. 2370. HISTORICAL NOTES. LAMAR¹⁷

[San Buenaventura? Mexico, About 1847?]

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM JOHN VILLARS, NATIVE OF KENTUCKY.—

He says, he heard of a Book was written by a Frenchman named Menizee or something like it, respecting the wars of 1812 & 1813 in Texas— the Book, as he understood, was published in Cincinatti—

The first organization of Bernado's force was on the Sabine, 150 or 200 strong; they elected McGee Col. to command; Kemper, Capt— Fisher adjutant. Guteris generally remained in Natchitoches. Sanbranon then commanded the Royal force in Nacogdoches— about 300— or 400 men.

Sanbranon, went out to meet McGee— McGee's advance of four or five men encountered Sanbrannon— a fire passed— one mexican killed— Sanbranon retreated precipitately to Nacogdoches.—

McGee had 4 or 5 mexicans who had joined Juan Galvan, of San-tonio— Juan Sava, Magill Monchaca &C— (Galvan proved traitor afterwards)— Frenchman Despallia was captain over the mexicans who joined the service—

McGee published an order in which he told his followers, that the Govt of Mexico was to pay each soldier 40\$ pr. month & receive league of Land in Texas— that they were going into a catholic Country, and that they must respect the religion of the Country; and those who did not like these terms might leave &C— all agreed to marched—

McGee took up the line of march soon after the flight of Sanbranon; the second days march, he came to a Mr. Quirk's, where he surprised the some few men placed in advance as out post, & captured them; they agreed to join the Republican cause and was sworn in as soldiers of the Revolucion, by Antonio Flores; these new recruits were placed

¹⁷Numbered 1-40; pages 27-8 lacking.

under Despallia, and it was in this way that Despallia's company of mexicans commenced.— resumed their march to Nacogdoches; was met in three miles of the place, by the Alcalde at the head of 300 Citizens— he asked what was their object; it was explained— he said he approved of the Revolucion; that Sanbranon had fled from Nacogdoches, & that he the Alcalde & his men were ready to unite in the cause of Independence— they afterwards, most of them, did so.

McGee despatched a small force into town to take possession of the place— McGee found here 400 horses & mules belonging to the Spanish Govt; and also several hundred robers of wool, belonging to Sanbranon—

Despallia & another Capt were despatched in pursuit of Zambranon; they pushed him so hard that he left some of his provision & lances behind, which were taken by pursuers. Zambranon escaped—

McGee sent report of what had taken place to Bernardo, who was still in Natchitoches; Bernardo now came to Nacogdoches with his staff; and was joined by most of the Citizens of the place.

The mules & wool were sent to the U S & sold; with the proceeds of which clothing & stores &C were purchased— Ross took them in & sold them.

When Ross returned, he brought with him some additional force, so that all now amounted to about 300 Americans and nearly 100 mexicans. Marched to Trinidad; McGee urged the necessity of subordination; but the soldiers revo[l]ted at it— 3 pieces canon, 2 were four pounders 1 smaler— Marched for Santontio— nothing happened till they reached Brazos; which was very high, & was 4 or 5 days crossing— McGee advance was of mexicans & americans of equal numbers— At the Colorado they caught a spy of the enemy— he was on the top of tree, looking out; but not vigilant enough to save himself—

Zanbranon on arriv[in]g at Antonio told exagerated [stories?] about the advance of the Americans, greatly increasing their numbers; Manuel Solcedo & Simon Herrera were Governor's of Bexar the fi[rs]t of [them] was of superior rank —both ranked in the army as Cols— Solcedo writes immediately to his Uncle Demesio Solcedo, in Chihuahua, who was Commander in Chief of the Internal proviencies of the advance of the Americans— Demesio Solcedo, immediately raised and despatched a large force, to his nephew in Sanantonio, who marched without delay, to the Guadalupe, and there awaited the advance of the Americans; but when the spy above mentioned as in the tree, was caught, he gave information of Solcedo's movemts to McGee; who then changed his purpose, and instead of going directly to Sanantonio, took the Labahia road— at the Guadalupe, McGee met the Tonkaway indians, who told him that Solcedo, above, hearing that McGee had taken the Labahia road, had gone back to Sanantonio—

The march was continued to within 3 or 4 leagues of Labahia when McGee sent some spies into laberdie to ascertain its condition—no soldiers were there— the garrison had been just broken up & the soldiers called to Bexar. McGee entered the Town at night; the inhabitants were friendly; and expressed their surprize at the smallness of their force— but very little public stores were found— none of any advantage—

McGee despatched a guard 13 or 15 men, Americans, on the San-

tonio road; they were all captured & taken to Bexar by Solcedo's force which was then marching on Labahia; where they arrived unexpectedly to McGee, he not hearing anything from his spies, whose capture he was ignorant of—

Some slight skirmishing took place; but of no great consequence— it so happened, however, that the first shot from the American Cannon, took off a Mexican's head, which spread some alarm in their ranks.— Solcedo, however captured many of the American's horses— Solcedo encamped on the Bexar road, within cannon shot of the Fort. Simon Herrera encamped in the Mission; and on the south side, Domingas encamped— thus they surrounded the Americans & kept them close in the fort.— The second day, a slight skirmish ensued; in which one American was lost; American's commenced repairing the fort; mounted their cannon on new bastions which they made.

— When the guard, (which had been sent on the Sanantonio road and were captured), was sent out, another small party under McFarlan (a foreigner) to the nueces, where he encountered and Captured a Mexican Sargent & 25 men; on his return to Labahia, he found to his surprize the place surrounded by the Enemy, and greatly embarrassed him as to how he should get into the fort with his Captives— Under the shades of night however he got in with his prisoners— the prisoners, seeing the small force of the Americans, refused to joind the Revolutionary party, although they express their wishes for the cause. they were kept in Confinemt.—

There being no corn in the fort to feed the horses, it was necessary to graze them daily on the out skirts of the town— Galvan was entrusted with this business— he was bought up by Solcedo; and the traitor, with the small party with him, went over to the enemy taking with them 200 horses & mules; leaving but very few horses with the Americans— This event was followed by the desertion of a Spaniard named Don Bernardo, Citizen of the town who went over to the enemy, leaving buried in the ground, a large sum of mony, 3 to 5 thousand dollars— which he thought was secure— the Americans, however, found out where it was buried— obtained it, and distributed it among the soldiers—

The loss of their horses; the refusal of the people of the town to bring further provisions to them in the fort; the general apprehension that prevailed with the inhabitants generally in Labahia, tended greatly to dispirit the Americans. They were only About 250 or 300 Americans and some 50 or 60 Mexicans; and the enemy encompassing the fort was 3000 strong.— Under these circumstances, a consultation was held, and it was determined to propose some negociation with the Enemy; a white flag was accordingly sent to Solcedo, asking an interview with him. The interview was granted; and took place between his encampmt and the fort. McGee with his aiddecamp Murry & few others went out & met Solcedo with his staff.— Solcedo demanded that the Americans should deliver up their arms and also the Mexicans in their ranks; and depart the country, taking with them only one gun to every five men. The terms were indignantly repelled; and when McGee returned to the fort, every American resolved to die before they would compromise on such disgraceful terms.—

They were, however, reduced to great want. Their provisions were exhausted; and it was necessary to adopt some energetic plan to procure supplies. All the corn that could well be had in town was gathered and brought into the fort; but still they had no beef; and there was none to be had in the place. In this extremity, an obscure Mexican, dark as an indian, but little known or noticed in the ranks, at length proposed that he might be allowed to take a small party with him and bring in beef from the country. The desertion & treason of Galvan, made the Americans suspicious, and they were affraid to trust him alone; he, however, went (started at night) accompanied by some Americans—and after the elapse of a few days returned with 50 beeves, which he succeeded in getting into the fort. The beef was dried & preserved. Thus they had to live on beef & bread alone.— The Mexican's name was Savias, a brave man, who for this exploit so timely, was made a Captain, and proved to be a trusty man & good officer, & was true & brave to the last.—

The Americans, altho' resolved not to submit to the terms proposed by Solcedo, still felt u[n]able to meet 3000 men; and was greatly embarrassed as to what course they should pursue.—

Saml. Devanport, a wealthy man of Nacogdoches, had furnished the expedition with considerable supplies, and had accompanied them to Labahia. He held no Command, yet being a good friend to the Cause, and also a worthy and sensible man, he exercised considerable influence. Becoming disheartened at the great straights to which they were all reduced, he asked permission to leave the fort and to return home; it was granted him, and he departed at night with a few mexicans, and made his way safe to Nacogdoches— His departure contributed greatly to depress further the spirits of the Americans; one or two soon after deserted; and one went over to the enemy.— About this time Ross was sent to the U S for reinforcements.—

So soon as the terms of Solcedo were rejected by the Americans, Solcedo determ[in]ed to assault the fort; but having brought no Cannon with him, he delayed the attack until he sent to Sanantonio & brought 7 or 8 pieces of 8 pounders brass— So soon as they arrived, he fired into the fort; but done no great damage— about the same time he was reinforced by 500 Cavalry (under a Spaniard named Ogarte) which had been from the interior— This induced the Americans to make a second attempt at reconciliation; which, however, was insultingly resisted by Solcedo, who now felt confident of his victims.— He still demanded the delivery of Bernardo.

The Americans seeing no alternative but a desperate struggle, resolved to sell their lives at as high a rate as possible. They commenced preparing to meet the enemy. The Cannon was fitted up in a better condition; chains, slugs & shot were made for them; and a lance was forged and sharpened for every man; for they were all armed with rifles, having no bayonets or other weapons of war except their guns.

Slight skirmishing still continued every day between the parties, whilst these preperations were going on. At length a general action was brought on by the following accident. A white cow came strolling along, and as the American's provisions were not very plenty or very

fresh, some five or six of the men went out to Kill the Cow; the cow ran towards the Church which Herera was occupying with one thousand men. The impetuous pursuers of the cow followed until they arrived near enough to the Church to receive a heavy fire from the enemy; the garrison perceiving the danger of this small party, some 150 sallied out to their rescue. As soon as this was done, Solcedo, ordered his entire force out and prepared for a general fight. The Americans now came out of the fort and stationed themselves at several points to meet the enemy. Solcedo, advanced into town, having his ground disputed by every inch, his numbers, however, appeared to be too overwhelming to be driven back. By hard fighting his progress was checked and delayed but not stopped—he gradually advanced upon the fort. In this manner the battle, which commenced about 2 o'clock in the afternoon and lasted until 7 or 8 o'clock, when the Americans were forced to retire into the fort. The enemy also retired to their respective quarters, after having fired one dwelling and robbed many houses.— In this fight the loss on the part of the Americans was 13 or 14 wounded and some few killed.—

The battle was not renewed the next day. This allowed the Americans time to make a few further preparations for the next fight.— Solcedo had derived great advantage from the irregularity of the streets and the houses; Bernardo, accordingly, ordered the hacels [jacals] in the vicinity of the fort to be demolished. They were torn down and an open plain formed; with the exception of one stone building, near another which had been & was still occupied by the enemy's outpost. This was left; and at night the Americans planted a piece of Artillery in it, and converted it into a fortification.— Thus were the two outposts of the enemy in close juxtaposition— Soon after the fight, a Mexican named Delgado deserted, the enemy's ranks & came over to the Americans. He had been employed as one of the men in the outpost, and therefore knew the localities; under his piloting the Americans, occupying the stone building mentioned, attacked their neighbors and succeeded in making several captures, and putting the balance to flight, about 2 or 3 hundred.—

About this time a courier was recd at night bearing a letter from Ross; the despatch bore no very glad tidings; he spoke of a distant hope of raising additional men; but it was doubtful; and it was evident that they could not reach Labihia, (if raised) in time to succor.—

The enemy upwards of 3000 strong were all mounted, each having from two to three horses or mules, altho' they acted some times as infantry as occasions required. A strong detachment was sent out every day to gather grass for their cavalry. These parties would frequently circle around the fort by way of observations; and on one occasion the Americans resolved to catch them. This foraging party had to pass by a long, dense brush fence. The Americans hid themselves behind the same as to be unperceived; and as the enemy came along, a hot fire was opened upon them; several were killed and some prisoners taken, among whom was Corporal Tomas Examia, who joined with the Americans, was promoted, and remained faithful.—

The out post which had been broken up by the Americans, was not

reoccupied by the enemy; but every day the guard came and reconnoitered the place and retired at night. This continued for some time, until at length the Americans, hiding behind a brush fence, and they had done on a previous occasion, assaulted them capturing and killing a few & putting them to flight. Solcedo seeing this called out his entire force and marched them for battle; the Americans equally prompt, sallied from the fort to meet them. A general action now ensued in an open plain. It commenced very early in the morning, when it was foggy; and continued until after twelve o'clock.— In the beginning, the Americans captured a piece of the enemy's artillery; but was forced soon to give it up, by the enemy's cavalry. The contest was obstinate and bloody; the Americans yielded nothing; the Spaniards began to fall under the rifles so fast, that a slight giving way was perceived in the lines of the enemy. Artillery on both sides was actively employed. The Americans, seeing this agitation, pressed forward; the enemy gradually gave way, yet still continued obstinately to fight. The Citizens of the town, perceiving the advance of the Americans, and being pleased with their success commenced ringing the Bells and sending up rockets. This dampened the ardor of the Spaniards. They began to retire; and the Americans pressed upon them.— The party fighting about the house which had been occupied as an outpost, was forced to a deep ravine wherein they leaped; from which there was but one point of escape; and at that point they were met by the Americans and forced to surrender— The alarm in the ranks of the enemy now became general; and Solcedo retired precipitately, yielding the field to the victorious Americans. The loss of Solcedo was great; that of the Americans but few. About 150 prisoners were taken who consented to join the Revolution party, & by Antonio Flores was sworn to support the cause— They were organized into three companies— commanded by Magill Monchaca, Antonio Delgado, (the man who had deserted from the enemy) and Juan Sava.

The Americans had had music; in this fight they captured several drums & musicians; so that the next morning Solcedo was awakened by a Mexican Reveille from the American Garrison.—

Solcedo, tho' beaten did not leave the place, but retired to his former quarters, and evinced no further sign of fight. Monchaca Delgado & Sava harassed his spies every night; killing and capturing many. His soldiers too began to desert, some flying to Bexar and many coming over to the Americans, so that in a short time the Mexican force with Bernardo amounted to about 400 and the Americans probably 300— These things greatly dispirited Solcedo; and his army becoming generally disaffected, he raised his camp, set fire to the grass tents of the soldiers and took up the line of march for Bexar. He was followed by Monchaca, & some Americans, who cut off their baggage in the rear and brought it safely to Labahia; among which was wine, mescal and other liquors, which afforded the garrison an opportunity of getting lordly drunk. Solcedo reached Bexar without further molestation. Constant communication was kept up between Labahia & Bexar by means of the Mexican troops; so that Kemper was always fully apprized of what were the enemy's strength & designs.— Solcedo had no hope of any speedy reinforcements from the

interior, all having been sent him that Could be spared then from that quarter.

Ross had now arrived with some few men; Masicot a frenchman from N. O. brought also a small party; a company of the Cochattee Indians, mixed with Bedi Towakanays & Lepans, all amounting to upwards of 100; none of whom were any account except the Cochattees who fought bravely & suffered much. An old man 70 years old, native Bexar, named Baca, came to Labahia with four or five thousand dollars, which he gave to the cause and which was divided among the troops. He was made Govr. Labahia, and remained there for a while after Kemper left.

Things being all arranged, Kemper now took up the march for Bexar.— Solcedo hearing of the movemt, sent Herrera with 3000 men to meet him. Herrera stopped [at] a stream called Rosio, occupying the water. Kemper advanced; the forces met and the fight was opened by a personal conflict between Ross and a Col. Montero; the latter seemed to banter ross for a fight; Ross advanced and they slashed away upon each other with their sabres, and in their furious charge upon each other, as Montero's horse passed the other Montero was shot down The general action now commenced; it was brief but verry bloody; and resulted in the total flight of the Spanish force, and the capture of all their arms, amunition and numerous cavayard. The enemy fled in great disorder to Bexar; and Kemper continued his march to the first Mission, where he halted & encamped.— Here he remained only one night; and marched 10 oclk next day for Bexar; but before starting, the man who had deserted at Labahia, came into camp and desired to rejoin his comrads, but there was a general clamor against him; some calling out to Shoot him, & others to hang him. Kemper put it vote, and the majority was for his execution; he was hung accordingly just as the line of march was taken up.—

Marched to the nearest mission to Bexar, tarried that night & next day; troops from Bexar occasionally deserting and coming to the Americans— Some of the Mexican officers went out reconnating & captured a large cavayard 500 horses & mules & few prisoners.—

Arriving on the suburbs of Santonia, Capt. McFarlan was sent into the town to demand its surrender. Solcedo expressed a willingness to surrender to the Americans but not to the Mexicans. The negocia-tions being completed, the Americans entered the town, and Solcedo, Herrera and the principal men of the place

..... with, as he and the Mexicans might deem just; but his wishes being still resisted, he finally took possession of the prisoners by virtue of his authority as Commander in Chief, and partly by stealth, without the Americans knowing it, and ordered them 14 in number to be taken to the Rosillo where the last fight had been, and have their throats cut. The bloody work was done, (the executioner being the Delgado who had joined the Americans)—

On the hearing of the deed the Americans rose en mas against Bernardo execrated him, some resigning their Commissions & going home, and all threatning to do the same.—

Kemper no[w] obtained permission to return to the United States,

leaving Perry in command. McFarlan had been dispatched on the road to Laredo to look out; he, however, hearing no news of an approaching enemy, for some reason, took down the Nueces; so that Elizondo who was on his march to Bexar arrived at Alazan before his approach was known. From this point he sent a dispatch to Bexar demanding the surrender of the place and promising to allow the Americans to leave for the U S without molestation.—

Ross who was second in command, was attached to a Mexican girl, who persuaded him that the Americans were betrayed and sold to Elizondo, and that they would be delivered over to him on his arrival in town, and that Elizondo's promise to allow them to depart was only a part of the stratagem to entrap them; she advised him to make his escape in time—he took her counsels, and departed accordingly, late at night, accompanied by John Ash. He retired to the Trinity— His flight had a bad effect upon the minds of many; and some were in favor of retreating in good order to Nacogdoches until they could get further force. But this was generally opposed; and it was resolved to meet Elizondo— Preparations were made, and on Sunday morning Perry & Barnardo moved forward with their force, probably 300 Americans, 1000 Mexicans and some Lipan Indians. Young was along and managed the artillery well— The force was well prepared— The parties met about 10 o'clock, each being on a small eminence with a rivulet between them. The Battle commenced— both parties were obstinate. The Mexicans with Bernardo acted well, better than common— they moved slowly upon Elizondo, crossed the water—still advanced— they finally made their way into Elizondo camp—Cut down his flag staff, and finally put his force to flight, who retreated in great confusion, the Republicans capturing 2 pieces of artillery, of no service, and all their ammunition— The loss of the Americans was heavy, but inconsiderable compared to that of the enemy—The narrator of these events was an actor in the scene, and being wounded was taken among the wounded, where he saw the Frenchman Masicot, who was shot through & through.—

Masicot was secretary to Bernardo, but in this fight he acted as Perry's aid; performed his part well and died like a hero— The Cry—they run—they run fell upon his ears— who runs? he inquired—the Enemy, he was told—then I die contented—and expired immediately.— He was a fine looking man, and well educated—

In this fight all did their duty. Elizondo fled leaving, Amunition, provisions, horses and some money behind, which fell to the Captors— he never breathed until he got to Laredo.— He must have lost more than 150 killed, proportional number wounded, and many prisoners taken.—

Barnardo returned to Bexar— shortly after Don. *José Alvarez de Toledo* arrived. The Americans disgusted with the Conduct of Bernardo in having murdered the prisoners above mentioned, dispossessed him of the Command, and made Toledo General of the force. Guteris departed for his home, taking some few of his best friends, and leaving his family in Bexar.—

Aradondo who was on his way to Bexar fixed his camp some 10 miles west of the Madina—with 4000 men— Toledo prepared to meet him and advanced to the Madina— He crossed the stream and met

Elizondo, with a party of advance—skirmish ensued— Elizondo retreated leaving behind some artillery— Toledo pursued; but not in the order which he desired to preserve; the soldiers rushed forward with impetuosity, and came upon Arradondo well fortified and prepared for battle, unexpectedly— Arradondo opened hot fire upon them. The contest lasted long; and finally Aradondo's men gave way; altho' Toledo's men were greatly thinned and almost famished for water; at the moment, however, as Aradondo's force was giving way, they were re-inspired to another effort; and by a furious charge of their cavalry, ran over the Americans, and gained a complete victory.— Aradondo 20 peices of artillery some of them 12 pounders.

The Americans were slaughtered in great numbers—all who were taken prisoners the wounded & all wer[e] shot and hung up by the heels on trees. The slaughter continued to Bexar; no quarters were given to any overtaken of the Americans. Toledo made his escape to Bexar; collected his papers, and departed for Nacogdoches, leaving a letter on his table addressed to Arradondo, requesting him to be merciful to the prisoners, and stated that he expected to return again with a new force.—

Some 45 or 50 Americans, reached Bexar; but the Citizens there becoming alarmed for their their [*sic*] own safety, and hoping to make fair weather with Aradondo, took them prisoners, and delivered them over to Elizondo on his arrival in Bexar; and among these miserable recreants and traitors was a brother in law of Bernardo, who had served with Guiteres in labahia as Captain; but this new zeal did not save him; for he was shot with the prisoners.—

The families who were known to be in favor of the Revolution in Bexar, as soon as the[y] heard of the defeat of Toledo, left immediately for Nacogdoches; but they were pursued together with the few soldiers, mexicans and americans who had escaped, and were overtaken on the Trinidad.—

After the fight at Madina, Aradondo, remained at the Madina, and sent Elizondo in pursuit of the flying soldiers— killing all he overtook— When Elizondo got to Bexar, the Brotherinlaw of Bernardo, and some few other traitors, caught the Americans and some mexicans who had escaped, probably 50 in number, & delivered them to Elizondo, hoping by this to make peace with the Conqueror. But it availed him nothing.—

In two or three days after Elizondo's arrival in Bexar, Aradondo came also; he ordered Elizondo to pursue the fugatives, soldiers and families; which he did as far as the Trinity, where he overtook great many, killing all he overtook on the road. He overtook Antonio Delgado who was about to resist; but being assured that if he would surrender his life would be spared, he surrendered; was taken to Elizondo who ordered his immediate execution—

Guadana was badly wound; was attended in secret by his nephew, and was buerried by him, a mere lad—

Monchaca, was badly wounded and died on his flight.—

The Americans taken at the Trinity by Elizondo, were liberated, and allowed to go to the US.— Of the Mexican prisoners taken at the Trinity 64 were shot; some taken back to Bexar, together with all the Captured families.—

On his way returning to Bexar, at the San Marks, he was killed in his tent by a Lieutenant Serrano who was supposed to be crazed—serrano stabbed the priest Camacho and a Capt the priest recovered, but the capt died— Serrano, was sent into the interior & his fate not known.—

Aradondo on ariving at Bexar made prisoners of every woman whose husbands were suspected of being friendly to the cause the Revolution, and placed them in a place called Cuinta, where they were made to grind corn for the use of the army. The captives taken at Trinity were placed with them. They were treated with great brutality, whipped, ravished and maltreated in every possible form; and they constituted the best portion of the population— The brute who were placed as overseer over them was a sargent called Acosta, black ferocious villian who violated some of the prisoners daily and whipped others for their resistance.

Aradondo had in Bexar, among the males about three hundred prisoners, which he put in irons; and daily executed some of them in a manner most shocking; first shooting them, then dragging them round the public square, and then cutting off their arms and heads and placing them on public places— These scenes continued until he dis[posed] of the most of the unfortunate fellows.— The few who were not executed were liberated on the birth day of Ferdinand.—

The Battle of Madina was fought on the 18th August 1813. Aradondo left Bexar april 1814, leaving a strong garrison behind, and taking with him 13 or 15 american prisoner to monterey, where he set them at liberty; the narator of these events being one of them.—

The[y] published a proclamation on the King's birth day, granting pardon to the Mexicans who had fled to Nacogdoches and to Louisiana, and permission to return to Bexar. But few returned; Ruis returned after the Independence of Mexico; and it believed that Tarin, Capt.— He was in nearly all the battles— both were in Madina; a reward was offered for Ruis' head by Aradondo.—

McGee died at Labahia; whilst he was being buried, the enemy fired upon the party with their cannon, and took off the head of a Mexican.—

He was succeeded by Kemper.— Kemper went to the US and returned with Toledo— Ross returned to Bexar after his flight, and was in the Battle of Madina. He was many years afterwards murdered by his mexican servant.—

[Translation from the Spanish]

Bernardo Gutierrez de Lara, citizen of Revilla "the same who about the middle of 1812 returned to Texas, took the presidido [*sic*] of Ba[h]ía de[l] Espiritu Santo, besieged by Spanish Troops, and defeated them at once at Rosillo near Bexar, of which town he also took possession, forcing a surrender from the garrison, composed of more than 1000 good troops."

D. Pablo de Mendibil.

of the battle of Rosillo, and of the taking of Bexar, where Col Herrera, and D. Manuel Salzado, governor of Texas, were prisoners. These with the rest of the Royalist officers, who capitulated, were inhumanly and perfidiously beheaded by the Americans, the consternation of the

chiefs of those interior provinces reaching its highest pitch on account of this deed.”

ib [i]d

No. 2371. HISTORICAL NOTES. LAMAR¹⁸

[San Buenaventura? Mexico, about 1847?]

INFORMATION DERIVED FROM DR JOHN LONG, RESIDENT OF SANTA ROSA, COAHUHULIA, MEXICO.

Santana was captured in Texas in 1836—When he returned to Mexico, he found Bustamente in the Presidency, who had been recalled from his banishment.— This was in 1837— In 1838, Bustamente still in power, an order was given by the Govt. of Mexico, to disinter the bones of Iturbede, bring them to the City of Mexico and have them buried in royal style— Mass was ordered to be said throughout the Country,— and accordingly a fictitious funeral and burial of the emperor took place in every Church, in the same manner as when a King dies.—

This was portentous of some great design, and created general excitement in the Country. The mass thus said to the remains of the Emperor, was not to the croud generally; but was confined to the most prominent men of the towns & villages &C; none attended except those who were invited.—

About three months after this event, Urea, in Sonora, started the Federation War. His pronouncement in Sonora was responded to by Col ——— in Tampico. The country this side of the Mountains, seemed generally ripe for the movement.— The first movement was by Urea, who raised a force in Sonora, and was soon met and defeated by Genl José Ma. Peradez.— Urea, after his defeat, went, in cog. to Tampico, where he met with Genls Lemus and Mexia; They concerted a plan of operations; by which Mexia was to move into the interior, Genl. Urea to the Centre, San Luis, Zaccateccas &C, and Genl Lemus was to take charge of the war in, the Northern States, Coahula &C—

Mexia moved for the City of Mexico, with 3000 infantry and 800 Cavalry—the Govt. (or rather Bustante) became alarmed, he called upon Santana to help him to expel Mexhia— Thus do we see Bustante driven to the dreadful streights of invoking the aid of his deadly enemy who had banished him from the country, and who was still his rival.—

He was defeated by Genl. Valencia near Pueblo; was wounded, in battle, captured, & then shot by Santana.

During this time, Urea advanced with his force towards San Luis, and was defeated Valle del Mice near San Luis.—

Coahula, was precipitate in her action. As soon as the war was resolved upon, the impatient people rose, and not waiting until Lemus

¹⁸Numbered 1-27; page 19 missing.

could come up and consolidate the forces, they moved with a force 600 men, raised & marched in six days, without a dollar to support them except their own private funds, for Saltillo, where they were easily defeated by Genl. Garcia Conde, (also Govr) and Col Ugartecheer, in Consequence of the imbecility of the Chief officers of the Federals— Whilst the Federals were on their march, & near Saltillo, Conde hearing of their advance, came out to meet them— 5 leagues from Saltillo at Capillanias, Conde found himself with his force surrounded by the Federals; and would have been forced to unconditional surrender; but he persuaded the Federal officers, with Ruis at their head, to let him go, under the promise that he would leave Saltillo and not attempt its defence. So soon as he was at liberty, Licencia (or Lawyer) Eguira, insulted the Federals and laughed at them for their credulity— Conde, had agreed to give the Government up to Rodriguez, who was a noted federal, but instead of complying with his treaty, he entered Saltillo, made fight and repelled the Federals.—

The routed party, retired to Monclover where they rallied again, and made an attempt to organize a Govrmt.— *Bartola Cardanas* (relation of the one below about Renoso & C)— was made Governor.— He, however, had no power, and they were stagnant in this quarter for several months; until Lemus advanced with his force from below— he met Ampudia between Caldarete and Monterey; but after a short interview, they did not fight; and each took his own course, Ampudia going to Matamoras, and Lemus, to Saltillo, which place he took after a fight of 4 days & 4 nights, when Ugartecheer fell, and Conde soon after surrendered the town.

Lemus, when he met Ampudia at Caldarete, avoided a fight, because he had raw undisciplined troops and did not think it prudent to attack Ampudia's regulars.

After the Battle of Saltillo, Lemus went to Monclover; where he found the govmt, if govmt. it could be called, destitute of all means. He here attempted to recruit his army and prepare for a move on San Louis; but having but little powder, an american Doctor North, from N. Y. was employed to make powder.— Whilst these things were going on, Anya arrived at Monclover, from the interior—in disguise, accompanied by two men dressed in the Clothes of muleteers. About the same time, (perhaps a little before his appearance) Canalis & Zapata arrived also with their small forces from below.—

Here an intrigue commenced against Lemus, for the purpose of supplanting him in the Command. They accused him of treason & various things, and succeeded in turning the volunteer army against him. The regulars were still for him; for he was one of the best officers— He was however, put out of command, and Genl. Anya, the new Stranger, was made commander by the soldiers of Canalis, altho' he was not recognized as such by the Govt.— The army now under the command of Anya, moved down below, leaving Lemus at Monclover with a few men, only 150,—he then started for Texas, expecting to make his way with this small force. He came to Santa Rosa; where he was forestalled by Anya & others, who had sent runners ahead of him, telling the people that Lemus was coming only as a robber & C— Through the influence of Dr Long, however, these falsehoods were put down, and Lemus met with a friendly reception in Santa Rosa. From

here he went to Sanfernanda, on his way to Texas; but at that town, he & his brother were captured by Galan, & Monchaca, who sent him to Matamoras where he was placed in irons & detained until the Centrals embarked him for Mexico.—

Anya, & Canalis, went below— When Anya was despatched to Texas for aid.—

All this happened before the americans came into the Country to their aid; with the exception of Cameron, who had joined Lemus with a few men and done more execution in the fight at Saltillio than any other man.—

Anya being sent to Texas to invoke aid, went thence to N. O— and never returned to the Federation war. He sailed for Yucatan; & was in 1847 President of Mexico for a few days or weeks.

We will suspend the general narative to relate an adventure which is worthy to be remembered— I will narate it at length—

Few days after the defeat of the Federals at Saltillio, the garrisons in the town all rose.—

When the War commenced the towns all had Govt. troops in them; but the Federals being too strong for them, the officers were dispossessed, and the soldier generally remained either neutral or were in favor of the Federals.— After the defeat of the Federals at Saltillio, the people of the towns becoming alarmed, the military resumed command, and overawed the inhabitants.

The army thus left behind revo[1]ted and made a counter-revolution; and took Ex Govr. Francisco Vedouri and Don Marcil Borego, living in Santa Rosa, & head men of the Federalists, and held responsible by the Centralists for the revolutionary disposition of the people of Santa Rosa— Don Fernando Rodrigus, commande[d] the garrison here, 100 men;—

Doctor Long was the Son in Law of Bedowrie; and was at the time living in Candala. Hearing of the counter revolution D. Long immediately left Candala for Santa Rosa, taking with him his family and only 8 men which he had hired to accompany him.— On his way after passing Monclover he heard that Rodrigus had taken his father in law Bedowrie & Borego, a relation, prisoners and was about to shoot them. Long resolved to push forward to his rescue, altho' encumbered with his family and having only 8 men.— He spoke to his men and told them that he was resolved to rescue his father-in law or die; and in the event of his success, he intended to reestablish the Federal authorities in the town, and make the Centrals & their responsible for the outrages which they had committed; and that for beginning the work he had to rely solely upon them, and that if they would fight with him to the last, they should share the spoils, if successful, and if not they must fall with him. They all agreed to stand by them; and he swore them all by the most solemn oath that they would never desert him in any calamity, but live or perish with him.— With this he moved on— His coming to Santa Rosa was known to Rodrigus, and his numbers were greatly exaggerated. In the place of 8 men only, news had gone before him that he was advancing with a large force. In 8 leagues of the place he was met by on[e] Magill Muscos, who had been despatched by Rodrigus to warn Dr Long not to advance at the

peril of his life and also of that of his father in Law. Muscos at the moment of presenting himself, when he had hardly opened his business, was seized by the throat by Long, who said— "Sir you are my prisoner".— "I come said Muscos to serve you, by warning you of your danger". "I care not what is your purpose; you are my prisoner, of war & cannot depart" said Long

Muscus remonstrated and protested that he had no evil designs himself— He was placed under guard— but the guard not being very vigilant, he sprang upon one of the swiftest horses, bareback, and fled— he was pursued, but not overtaken— he escaped to town— Long, now dreading that Muscos would betray the weakness of his force saw that there was no alternative left to him, but to move on without delay, and get to town as soon as possible and serprise the place by a vigorous assault upon it at night. He knew every house and street in the place, having long resided there.— He hoped by this plan to throw the town in to consternation; and in the Confusion to either make his way to his father in law, or to slaughter some of his enemies, and thus aveng his wrongs; though it might be at the sacrifice of his own life— This plan he carried out— he arrived in town about sun set & took secretly, a strong position in a Tan yard. It so happened that the terrified Muscos who had made his escape, instead of telling Rodrigus that Long had with him only 8 men; he spread tidings thro' the town that Long had several waggon loads of Americans concealed in Waggons, and that he would not allow him to see their numbers; but that he was breathing death and vengeance upon all the town, and swore to make the streets run with the blood of every centralist in the place— In a word infuriated and implacable, and was resolved upon the murder and dessolation of Santa Rosa, and nothing but blood could appease him.—

Such was indeed the language of Long to his prisoner; who in reality believed what he told respecting the Americans in the waggons and the fury of Long.—

So that Long reached town, took his position without any one's knowing his real strength, or rather weakness; and all believed that he was well backed by sufficient Americans to execute his will.—

Soon after his arrival at the tan yard, a commission was sent to him, by Rodrigus, bearing a letter from Bedowrie to Long, stating that he was a prisoner with four men standing over him with drawn knives, ready to stab him at the firing of the first gun; and entreating his son in Law, not to make war, but by forbearing to save his life— Long received the bearers under guard not admitting them into the house so that they could learn nothing of his force, and replied, that the death of one man was nothing— that in Revolution thousands must fall, and the best among the worst; that he himself came for blood— that was his business, and that the Head and property of Rodrigus, his family and all his followers should pay for his crimes." This answer greatly confused Rodrigus; who now tried another experiment; by sending one of the prisoners, (a relation of Longs) and the officer second in command, to speak and plead with Long in person. Long refused to receive them; and lay down to take a short repose. This encreased the confusion of the enemy. Rodrigus now

prepared, not to attack Long; but to defend the place against Long's attack— The town was kept in confusion all night by his preparations.— During which time frequent attempts were made towards a reconciliation; but all in vain; the obstinate and implacable Doctor would listen to nothing. He was told he had come to save the life of his father in law; but that his continued resistance would inevitably seal his death. "I come to save no lives; but to take life; I come for vengeance and nothing more."

Rodrigus finding that nothing could be done with the Doctor, and dreading retribution if the place should fall into his hands, he proposed a treaty of peace and amnesty with his Prisoners, Bedowrie and Marcial Borego (who was related to the Doctor's wife) which they readily agreed to; and a Document was soon drawn up and signed by the parties, who mutually pledged to forgive the past and under all circumstances to remain in friendship for the future. Rodrigus, his officers and the two prisoners now went to Dr. Long and presented the Document for his signature. The Doctor replied that he would not place his name to the Instrument; but that he was willing to abide by its stipulations if the prisoners were immediately released and order restored. This was done; and when morning came, what was the surprise, of all and the shame and confusion of the military, when, upon opening the doors of his fortification, it was found that the indomitable Doctor had 8 muleteers to back him in his operations.—

The Doctor soon after this went to Monclover to learn something concerning the progress & condition of the War; he found everything in confusion; the army defeated at Saltillo had retired to Monclover, and was about to choose [or] organize a govermt. Ramon Muscos and Bartolo Cadenas were rival candidates for Governor— the latter was elected. Much discontent prevailed with the defeated party; and the[y] believing that no good was about to result, he returned, and advised his father law to leave the country, being old and very obnoxious to the Centralists; unable to resist persecutions or defend himself. They left for Chihuahua, and after travelling through a mountainous wilderness for 150 leagues, under great privations, they encountered numerous indians and (were forced to return to Santa Rosa. Bedowrie now set out for Bexar, where he had been governor; his removal was rendered necessary by the daily strength[en]ing of the Central power; and their unforgiving hatred of him.

Doctor Long still remained in Santa Rosa.— It was well that Bedowrie left him when he did, for very soon after his departure, Genl. Minyon arrived at Monclover, coming from the City of Mexico, with a large force which he left at Saltillo, taking with him to Monclover only about 400 men. Minyon, on reaching Monclover issued an Order for the apprehension of the principle Federalists in Santa Rosa, and to bring them on to Monclover. The order was given in secret; and before it was known that such an order had arrived, 25 of the most respectable men of the place were apprehended and put in prison. Doctor Long, having by accident got some little insite into what was going on, escaped to the mines which he was working. He was followed by 26 men; they ordered him to surrender, he refused; they threatened his life; he seized his rifle and stood in self defence with

no one to aid him except one faithful servant, Francisco Alvarado who drew his gun and stood by his master.— The Doctor thus kept them at bay from 11 Oclk to sunset, when they despatched to town for reinforcement to take him; 26 being unable to do it. The doctor and servant now retired to the mountains; where they maintained themselves for 8 day, when a pardon to the prisoners by Minyon.—

The 25 prisoners taken, were carried to Monclover, having their hands and feet tied and not allowed to dismount or stop in a shade on their route.— Before their [arrival?] there, the news had gone a head that Rodrigus and his force had not been able to capture the Doctor; so that as they passed the streets, the little boys would hallow out in derision, of the Officers guarding them “why did you not bring the Doctor? where is Don Juan?”— In 8 days they were pardoned except two Boregos and another, who were still detained and were to have been sent to Mexico; but made their escape.

Bedowrie who had gone to Bexar, returned to Laredo, thence he joined Zapata below and was in the Parbone fight. He then came to Santa Rosa; and with Dr Long his son in Law, proclaimed the necessity of a convention, and an election for members were held in Santa Rosa and the neighboring towns; but this attempt to establish a Govt was opposed by Canalis, and was not responded to from other quarters. A small Convention, however, held, convening first at Santa Rosa, and afterwards moving from town to town with the army, until they were pursued & forced by the enemy to retire Laredo, thence to Guerrero & Caso Blanco where they met Canalis and Zapata who had retreated there after his retreat from Monterrey.—

Here a government was formed, and had Bedowrie been placed at the head, different results would have followed; bu[t] instead of this Cardenas was made Governor. (The other Cardenas at Monclover was made prisoner, by Minyon & kept for some time—)

After the organization of this Govt Canalis came up to Sanfernando, where he was defeated, went to Texas to get aid. Bedowrie retired a while to Bexar again; but soon returned to Santa Rosa, where he was forced by persecutions to fly, in his old age to the mountains, accompanied by Dr. Long who maintained him there by his rifle for two months, when coming at night to Santa Rosa to learn what was the state of things, they were gratified to find that they had been pardoned by a special proclamation of Ariste.— Ariste and Ortega, had been deceived in regard to Bedowrie & Long; regarded them as being unduly persecuted from personal feelings of bitterness of Rodrigus and his faction, revoked the order which he (Ariste) had been induced to issue against them, to kill them wherever caught, and in the place of the same, Sent the proclamation already mentioned to Santa Rosa, for their full pardon; and for several days parties were sent to the mountains to let them know of their pardon, but they could not be found; and only ascertained the fact by coming into town at night to learn the news.—

* [Endorsed:] Mexico after 1836 (Information derived from Dr. Long).

No. 2372. NOTES UPON VILLA ALDAMA. LAMAR

[Laredo? Texas about 1840.]

State of Nuevo Leon. [Leon] Camp of San Pedro de Boca de Leones (formerly) (to day village of Aldama).

Aldama bore the name above—after the death of Aldama, the name was changed in honor of Lic. Dn Juan de Aldama, who was beheaded, in the Revolution— The name was given to the town at the suggestion of— José Manuel Perez, who was a delegate from the State of N. N. [sic] in 1825. José M. Perez born in the Aldama and was residing there at the time he was chosen delegate to Congress—he was also a member of the Congress that formed the Constitution of N. N. [sic] in 1825 He now lives now [sic] in Candala— Aldama came from Sn Migel el Grande.

Urrea resisted twice or thrice the execution of Santa Anna sent one of his *Aides* Col Portilla to carry the order into effect a few days after sent his Aide Col Migñon but before the arrival of Migñon the order had been carried into effect by Portilla—

Jose Luis Mora has wrote a History of Mexico & Miscellanies & in it is the Public life of Don Lorenzo Zavala—the work was written in Spanish published in Paris—

In the house of one . . . [blank] of Candela is a copy of a work written by one Villa Senora the Commissioner of the Spanish Govt to allot lands to the Spanish Emigrants—

Augustine de la Garza father in Law of Jesus Martines— Fras Adams of San Fernando has a copy of the Corillario [?] de los *Pre-sidios* Life of Padre Marjill is in the house of *José Maria Ramos* (dead) *Santa Rosa* Chronico of the Priests of Queretaro—

No. 2373. ANONYMOUS

[1847?]

On the Night of the 22 Sept. after Dark I received Orders from Gen Taylor to proceed to the Montclova road and take such position there as would enable me, should the enemy attempt to retreat by that pass to in form him of such movemnt as quick as possible and (to use his own words) do them all the harm I could— on my return to camp Genl Taylor Ordered me to remain in camp during the day— for the purpose of resting my Company at the time I received the Order the regmt was forming for the purpose of storming the Lower portion of the Citty I remarked to my Company that by G—d that would never do we were bound to have a Fight—and while the company were making hasty preperation To Join the regime[n]t I returned to head quarters and obtained leave to join the ballance you now I went as far in on the 23rd as he who went farther in—

[Endorsed:] Memorandum

No. 2375. A. YOUNGER TO LAMAR

[Red Oak] Navarro County January 23d 1848—

Gen. M. B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR

your's of 14th Inst has come Safe to hand by the goodness of Mr Hunt

You inform me of the price you now ask for your lands and what you asked when I saw you at Austin 2 years ago I know you asked \$1.00 pr acre when I Saw you and you Say I did not object to the price I know that to be the fact but as the Lawyer Said to the farmer Circumstances alter cases I am yet willing to give that price if I could git this lower 800 acres which is worth all the rest you have or ever Claimed here I do not believe that you at that time knew any thing of the Mistake I saw Mr Beaty Shortly after I saw you on his way to Austin he claimed the land for his Services as Locator and Said there was Some mistake he wanted to have rectified how it now stands I do not know perhaps you know and is near the office where you Can git correct information in respect to that mater if I do not git this land I expected to git I am not willing to give more than 50 Cts pr acre for the balance and dear at that we have bought of Sublett & Riggs at 15 Cts pr acre as good or better than yours there is thousands upon thousands here they dont pretend to ask more than 50 Cts pr acre for

Another Very strong reason is I have been informed by Mr Welch & others you offerd your lands for 50 Cts. pr acre to different persons I do not atach any blame to you or design and I am allso Satisfyed that you heard unfavourable news in respect to my trespassing and design I do assure you I felt morrally bound to Comply with the Contract we made; I have cut but a small portion of your timber Compared with others the man that settled on G. B. Lamars land not knowing where the lines run has made use of the timber on the uper 800 acres which was most Convenient the place I am on now the Irishman had Cut and hawled rail Cuts them and rails I had made 4 miles below fenced the farm I have here I can git Enough of timber without teching yours to do me and is trying to prevent others but Cant without some difficulty your 1600 acres runs with the creek the lands on each side is pore points the botoms narow timber indifferent I do not know of but one place that a man could git a farm of twenty acres the Colony lands join and is Prairie is all the reason I want yours

If you will come and see me and do not find what what [*sic*] I relate so I will pay you for trouble and expense If I thought there was any chance for us to trade I would come and see you and pay the money but I cant ride so far upon unCertaintys. I am scarcely able to ride I am afflicted with Rheumatism which is the main Cause of my delay in coming here Mr Hunt states that you owe him \$120— as for Locating lands I have a letter impowering me to recipt you for the Same Mr Hunt owes me this money I want you to inform me in respect to it.

I have given you a faithfull detail of what I think to be the Situation of our trade the Value of your lands that you now claim and what I am willing to do if you see proper to answer I shall take it

as a favour even if we differ in our opinions I hope it will be an honest difference

I remain as ever Very respectfully yours

A. YOUNGER

P S the lower 800 as I have called it is said here to be 640 if Beaty done any thing to Vitiate the Claim I suppose its his loss but I feel convinced at that time you had no knowledge of it A Y—

[Addressed:] Gen M. B. Lamar Austin Texas [Readdressed:] Laredo Texas

[Endorsed:] Navarro County

No. 2376. LAMAR TO JAMES WEBB

Austin 28 Janry 1848

DEAR JUDGE

You will find in this bundle, the general power of attorney given to yourself— A Deed to Mrs Stephens, and one to Mrs Sawyer giving to each of them 320 acres of the Jarbo track of Land— A mortgage on my Head-right in Fannin Co— together with the patent for the Same— Besides Jarbo's patent and my own, I leave 10 other patents.

The patents for my out Lots are in the Land Office; I leave 28\$ of Texas money to pay the fees for the same—

If Younger buys my Land, pay Capt. Cady and Lamar Moore what I owe them; also the note I gave Capt Howe for a horse.—

When you send my Headright patent to Fannin County to be recorded, please let Sam Roberts know that I have done all that I could with the Govr to procure him the Judgship—

Enclosed is five dollars to pay for Recording my Patent and the Mortgage given to G. B. Lamar; also I enclose Twenty dollars to be sent to Dr. Starr with my patents &c in part paymt for their recording— This is all that I can spare; I have reserved hardly money enough to take me to Laredo. Write Dr Starr that the balance due for recording will be sent him as soon as you can sell some of my land.—

Col. Bell will return here in 5 or 6 weeks; and if he desires to purchase my Cottage, he can have it for fifteen hundred dollars; upon a credit of ten for five hundred of the same, and twelve months, thereafter for the balance viz \$1000.— The property must be mortgaged for the payment of the money; and the whole fifteen hundred dollars to bear interest from the date of purchase. His notes, thus bearing interest I shall want to keep, to meet Gaz. B. Lamar's demands against me.

I will endeavor to see you in the morning before I start—

Duval must wait a while for his fee for drawing up the two deeds &C— If you get any money for my lands, pay him—

I write in a most infernal hurry—

Yours &C

M. B. LAMAR—

If Bell should not purchase my Cottage, I want James to rent it out; and he may have the rent for his trouble. M B L

[Addressed:] Judge Jas. Webb—

No. 2381. JOHN HAYS AND A. BELL TO LAMAR

Mier [Mexico] March 26th 1848

SIR

Mr J Seall the bearer of this is moving his family to San Antonio Texas He is brotherinlaw to Mr Dwyer in San Antonio and is now settling on his land in that vicinity He is Gentleman and if you can do him the favor to give him some protection until he passes with his family through the dangerous part of the route from Laredo to San Antonio you will confer a lasting favour upon Capt Bell & myself as we both feel anxious for his welfare and safety His wife is the sister of mine and also of Capt Bells

He has been at different times of service to the Americans here and is now about to become a permanent citizen of your state

Mr Dwyer joins in this request and any thing you may see fit to do for him will be fully appreciated by your friends

JNO HAYS
A BELL

P. S Should it be possible allow him a small escort as far on the road as you can consistently with your official duties JNO. H

[Endorsed:] John Hays A Bell

No. 2383. RAMON AND OTHERS TO GENERAL WOOL

[Translation from the Spanish]

REPRESENTATIVE COMMISSION OF THE PEOPLE—

The enclosed copies, numbered one and two, obtained from the Commissioners of this vicinity, and the reply of Capt. Mirabeau B. Lamar, advise Your Excellency first, relative to giving prompt fulfillment to the observance of the treaty between the United States and Mexico, celebrated in the Capital of Mexico on the 29th of last February and ratified on the 6th and 8th of the following March by the Hon. General in Chief of the Mexican State of Querétaro, with the consent of the supreme powers of both countries, between the United States and the States of Mexico; and second, relative to the difficulties presented by the Hon. Lamar in order that it may be observed under the principles which it sets forth, and for the purpose of obtaining from Your Excellency the necessary declaration, now that it is understood that this town, like the others in Mexico, agrees to reestablish its municipal authorities in conformity with the literal interpretation of article 6 of the aforementioned treaty, as well as all the rest of the points contained in it. This commission petitions Your Excellency that you may have the kindness to issue your orders expressly to the aforesaid Hon. Lamar in order that he may leave this community in the liberty of exercising the powers which for the present are conceded to them as Mexicans, in the meantime that their own communication presents it in due form to Your Excellency, as their Superior Chief. The Hon. Lamar himself after replying to the only point which was touched upon in our communication, brings in details, or minutiae altogether obvious; but Your Excellency will permit us, now that by chance we speak of them, to inform you of some particulars, He says; that for more than

twelve months the inhabitants in this village have been contented and happy on account of the protection of their personal rights, the defense of their families against the Indians, enjoying prosperity and peace; and, having in mind such expressions, we believe without doubt that such must have been the instructions with which he was charged by the Supreme orders of a Government from whom such was to be expected, and that he must have directed his intentions to such a noble object; but unfortunately, we have not seen their realization. On the contrary the people have not enjoyed these guarantees, and are making it known to Your Excellency, that before their powers were destroyed by the same Hon. Lamar, they suffered oppressions of great magnitude, even to the point of seeing one of their own citizens assaulted in his own house. Can this be called protection of our personal rights? The barbarian indians, whenever they have wished, have committed robberies and assassinations, as is their custom; and although it is true that sometimes parties of American troops have been sent out to pursue them with the object of warning them by punishment. The case has not arisen in which this has happened, the cause being unknown. With the exception of one or two [cases] in which, accompanied by Mexican citizens, they have succeeded in overtaking them recovering from them some clothing or jewelry of their use. In the interior of the town they frequently resent offences; the residents complain that in their very sight and on opportune occasions, their property is taken away from them, likewise the cattle are carried off which the troops need for rations; when the proprietor comes up at once to reclaim the beeves, he is paid whatever price he asks; when this does not happen, nobody is paid; it being worthy of note that the beeves that are caught and brought are killed, with the attendant circumstances that those which are not shot in the head are left wounded and exposed to die, and the proprietor loses all, as has happened and is happening. There is more: this conduct is imitated particularly by all of the American soldiers who have wished [to do so] and it is spreading greatly among the bad Mexicans who cannot be hindered on account of the total lack of the Administration of Justice, so that in a short time while this disorder obtains the army will be left without this help, and the people without the property which is the only means of subsistence that remains to them. By all which Hon Gen. the commission of the people, pray Your Excellency very highly that you will please answer this communication opportunely—

God and Liberty. Laredo, Mexico April 10, 1848—JOSE MARIA GONSALES—JOSE MARIA RAMON—BASILIO BENABIDES—Hon. General in Chief Wool of the American troops in Monterrey.—

[Endorsed:] Mexican

No. 2386. INHABITANTS OF SANTA ROSA TÓ LAMAR AND OTHER OFFICERS AT LAREDO

[Translation from the Spanish]

The Fellow Citizens of Your Excellency in the whole extent of this valley, together with the native residents of the same, request the honor of your presence and that of Your Honorable Officials at a dance which they have planned to give to night at the house of D. Firso Castillon,

which will begin at seven; this favor, which they have no doubt of receiving from Your Excellency, will obligate them to be eternally grateful.

Santa Rosa, [Mexico] May 20, 1848.

The Hon. General Mirabeau B. Lamar. and the Hon. Officials.—

No. 2387. JOSÉ A. MENCHACA TO TEODORO SÁNCHEZ

[Translation from the Spanish] San Fernando May 25, 1848.

To the Honorable Dn Teod[oro] Sanchez.

MOST ESTEEMED SIR:

Although I only know you by sight I do myself the honor of informing you of this; I have sold for 25 pesos to Dn. Luís Galan your son-in-law a mule which I lent to Dn. Andres Martines (two years ago) with the sole object of serving the said gentleman and that he might be supplied with beasts when his son was going to marry at Lampasos; as your son-in-law knows the mule very well he must know that he was as good for a pack mule as for a saddle mule he has given me 25 pesos for it; in spite of its not being in my possession; on account of which I beg of you please to bring said mule to Luís or to command that he be sent by a safe messenger. I believe that Dn. Andres is a gentleman but if he refuses to give up a good mule or the 25 pesos take anything whatever from him in payment and do me the favor of sending it to us by a safe messenger, as it is not bad to know the men.

All of this I beg of you in the name of Luís, who yesterday went out to follow some Indians, and at this hour, in which the swift messenger has presented himself, my little god-mother, Catarinita, I think must be sleeping, since I have not wished to lose this occasion to ask this favor of you as well as to subscribe myself your sincere servant.

JOSÉ A. MENCHACA [Rubric]

[Endorsed:] Mexican letter

No. 2389. RETURN OF SICK AND DISCHARGED AT LAREDO GARRISON

Laredo June 14th, 1848.

Jno Williams)			1
Alexandre)			2
John Kennan	"	sick	3
B Lackens	"	sick	4
Scot	"	sick	5
Voit	"	sick	6
Langeanau	"	sick	7
William Davis	"		8
Ire Crumpton	"	sick	9
Peter Woods	Discharged		10
Templeton		sick	12

[Endorsed:] Sick List

Lieut P. C. PAUL

No. 2393. FORAGE RETURNS. LAREDO GARRISON, TEXAS

Return for Forage for Sixty five Horses in the Service of Mounted Texas Volunteers for Four days, commencing the 16th and ending the 19th September 1848

	No. of Horses	No. of Oxen.	No. of Mules	No. of Days	Daily Allowance for Each Horse			Total Allowance			REMARKS
					Corn, Quarts of.	Oats, Quarts of.	Hay, Pounds of.	Corn, Bushels of.	Oats, Bushels of.	Hay, Pounds of.	
	65		4	8				65			Detachment of Captain Lamar's Company.
Total.....											

I CERTIFY, On honor, that the above Return is correct and just.

W J PEACE 2nd Lut
Comd Detachment

Received, San Antonio de Bexar 16th September 1848, of Captain Morris S Miller Asst Quarter Master—United States Army, Sixty five bushels and — quarts of Corn, — bushels and — quarts of Oats, — pounds of Hay, in full of the above Requisition.

(SIGNED DUPLICATES.) W J PEACE 2d Leut Comd Detachment

[Endorsed:] Lt. W. J. Peace 16th September 1848

No. 2394. TEXAS MOUNTED VOLUNTEERS TO P. H. BELL

San Antonio, Texas, 27th September 1848.

To Col P. H. BELL,

DEAR SIR

The period is at hand when we must bid adieu to our officers and Companions in the military Service; of the U S yet we cannot consent to part “with you, as our Commander without being permitted to express, in some degree the high esteem in which we hold you as a man and an officer. Ever faithful, as you have been to that Service and to the true interests of the Country, you have justly gained the love and confidence of all who have served with, or under you. The prime of you[r] life has been spent in Texas, aiding her with your personal Services and suffering much in her cause from an early period of her Revolution down to the present day; and through all the vicissitudes and trials of border warfare and frontier life, you have not only mentained the high reputation for chivalry which you so well earned at Sanjacinto, but you have preserved inviolate the lofty sentiments of honor and the dignified deportment of the true gentleman; and it is for these things that we now offer you from a sense of duty, this public expression of our esteem & friendship for your future prosperity & happiness.— . . . [Incomplete]

No. 2395. S. G. HAYNIE AND OTHERS TO LAMAR

Austin Nov'br 28th 1848

HON'D SIR:

The pleasure of your Company is respectfully solicited at a Ball and Supper, to be given at the capitol on Thursday Evening next, complementary to the Officers of the United States Army, now in this city.—

S. G. HAYNIE)	
JOHN S FORD)	
S. CROSBY)	Com't of Invitation
JNO M SWISHER)	
JAS H RAYMOND)	

[Addressed:] Genl. M. B. Lamar. Present.

[Endorsed:] Ball Invitation Austin

No. 2397. LAMAR TO J. P. HENDERSON

Galvezton 5rd Janry 1849.

DEAR GENERAL

I addressed a letter to you sometime since from Austin, Travis Co respecting my Eleven League Grant— In that letter I requested you to reply without delay to the enquires contained therein & to direct your answer to me at Galveston where I should remain until I could receive it— I have now waited nearly a month to hear from you but have recd nothing from your hands— My delay here, has put me to much inconvenience & expense— I can remain no longer, and must therefore request you to send your replies to my letters, to me at Macon Georgia, to the care of Dr. Thos. R. Lamar my brother— The questions [which I asked in] my first letter, I beg leave to present again, as I am deeply interested in the subject matter of them— You will please therefore, inform me, whether you have had the Deed & titles of Zavala and his wife to me recorded? What compromises have you made with the intruders on Said land? How many suits in Court have you instituted against those who refuse to Compromise?

What will the probable results be, in your opinion, respecting said Land— will I finally lose it or be able to keep it? What are the chances & what are the principal difficulties you have to encounter? Please respond to these enquiries as soon as possible; and also give me such counsel and advise respecting the entire matter as you may think will be useful to me.—

The grant, as I have stated heretofore, belongs to a company, and I am more than anxious to have their interests & rights protected— with regard to the small interest which I hold in the same, I am willing to loose if that could be the means of securing the others— I am concerned only on their account; and as I am now going to Georgia an[d] shall see them there, I wish to be [able to give] them all the information . . . [faded] necessary for them, and I must depend upon your furnishing it as soon as possible.— I sincerely hope that I may find a letter from you on my arrival at Macon.—

Your sincere friend

M. B. LAMAR—

No. 2399. LAMAR TO J. P. HENDERSON

Was. City [D. C.] 27 March 1849.

Genl. HENDERSON

DEAR SIR—

By Genl. Rusk I embrace the opportunity of writing you once more upon the subject of my Eleven League Tract. I have written several times before, but have recd. no replies— I hope that you will with as little delay as possible, respond to the following enquiries which were contained in my former letters—1s. Have the Papers been all duly recorded? 2nd what compromises have you made with the intruders? 3rd what suits have you instituted against them? 4th. What are the Chief obstacles you have to contend with, and what counsel & advice can you give me in relation to the whole matter?—

It is important to the persons interested with me in said land, that they should know something about its condition— Your letter in answer to this, you can direct to me at Macon Georgia; or you can correspond with the other own[e]rs of said Land by addressing yourself to John Fountain, Columbus Georgia who will be pleased to hear from you— As I am not stationary, & may not be very soon, it would be best for you to write to Mr Fontain instead of me; but be pleased to write to one or the other.—

Yours respectfully

M B L[AMAR]

No. 2401. JAMES WEBB TO LAMAR

Belle Monte June 1st 1849

DEAR GENERAL

In consequence of a severe attack of Cholera while in New Orleans, which detained me there for nearly three weeks I concluded to change my route from Santa Fe to Austin— This was done however with a struggle and in compliance with the advice of my physicians who assured me that my Constitution and general health was so much impaired that I was by no means Capable of undergoing the fatigues attendant upon such a journey— I was particularly desirous of proceeding on, as I had undertaken the Mission, but more especially as father seemed desirous of my accomplishing the end which I had undertaken— Since my return he assures me that he is more than pleased that I pursued the course which I did, and that he afterwards regretted my going on, as the Cholera had broken out again in New Orleans after he wrote to me— By- the bye, I sat down to write you strictly a letter on business and have digressed upon family affairs—

Upon returning to Texas I enter'd upon the duties of my profession, and one of the first Cases upon *my docket* is your Case vs. Grooms— When you were here in Jan. 1848 if you recollect, you instructed me to inform Col Grooms that you would expect him to pay rent from the first of Feby 1848— as long as he continued an occupant of the Cottage— I did so; and since my return from Geo. by virtue of your power of Atty to me (in Feby 48) I have made out and had presented to Col G— his Acct for rent— which he did not pay but said he would write you upon the subject— My object in writing is

to let you know how it stands— The money can be collected without doubt, as he has plenty of property and Alfred is Monthly receiving a good salary from Govt.

Gratitude alone I should think would have prompted him to come forward & tendered the amt for one years rent after occupying the premises for more than three years free of charge— Please write me immediately— for I shall bring suit at the next term of the Dist. Court—

The family are all well and join me in affectionate remembrances to yourself Brother and family—

I shall write to Cousin Loretto & Cousin Eliza today—

Say to Cousin Lavoisier that I am very anxious to hear from him and now that I am at home— our correspondence will not be disturbed

Very truly Yrs

JAS. W. WEBB

C or Genl Harney will take the "Georgia Cottage" at \$1200. Brewster refuses to give possession, but Father will arrange that J. W. W.

[Addressed:] Genl Mirabeau B. Lamar Care of Dr Thos. R. Lamar Macon— Bibb Co Georgia

No. 2402. LAMAR TO ——— FONTAIN

Near Macon [Georgia] Aug 1849

Mr FONTAIN

DEAR SIR

The papers in my possession relating to the Company Lands in Texas I herewith send to you, because it is entirely out of my power to attend to the business of the Company. My own individual affairs are in most desperate condition from which [I] fear that I may not be able to relieve t[hem]. I would advise an agent be de[spa]tched to Nacogdoches to see Genl He[nder]son and ascertain what he has done and the real condition of the Eleven league claim.— I think it was in Decr 1847 I employed Genl Henderson to compromise with the persons who had intruded upon said land upon the condition that they might retain their possessions by paying a fair and equitable price for the lands which they had so uncerimoniously surveyed and occupied. If they were unwilling to do this, Genl Henderson was instructed to institute suit against them and eject them by Law.— I have repeatedly written to him to ascertain what he has done in the matter, but I have not received any answer to my letters. Hence the necessity of sending some one there to enquire into the state of affairs. If this cannot be done now, I would advise you to write to Dr James H. Starr of Nacogdoches, The only man in that section in whom I have any confidence.— He would probably see Henderson himself and would procure from him the desired [inf]ormation.—

The Titles to Strode's l[and]— is in the office of the county Court of G[onz]ales, sent there to be recorded. Th[e contr]act is all safe. *Mordica's* Land has never [been] surveyed, or located. He died before obtaining a *Certificate* from the county commissioners, without which no location can be made. I left the papers in the hands of Benj Franklin at Galveston, that he might ascertain whether a certificate

can now be obtained, and if it can he was authorized to procure it. I dont think I passed the titles to Franklin myself— I believe I left them with Genl McLeod to be given to him with the above instructions. I had previously spoken to Franklin about the matter and requested him to attend to the business—

Another paper (a contract made with Zavala for some of his *premium* lands as Emprisario) was also placed in his hands for him to examine in to its validity and value. I think Zavala at the time of executing the paper in reality had no premium [lan]ds to dispose of— He is dead.

The s[even hund]red dollars which you sent me was not applied to the purpose intended. I recd. it on the eve of my leaving the country— it passed, the most of it, into the hands of a friend, from whom I have not recovered it— As matter of course I am responsible for it to the Company

I shall be in Columbus in a short time

Yours most respectfully

M. B. LAMAR

The interest which I have in said Lands I have determined to abandon rather than encounter the vexation of vindicating my rights— Indeed, I expect the whole will be lost.

No. 2407. HISTORICAL AND BIOGRAPHICAL NOTES.
LAMAR¹⁹

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

Teran doubtless secretly cherished the hope of a Northern Confederacy, and wished to make fair weather with the people of Texas, with a view of getting this State to go with him in the project— See Henry Austin's letter Matamoras July 2— 1830

Teran was military commandant of the No[r]thern Division— it was partly thro' his machinations that troops were introduced into Texas at the various posts— Henry Austin wrote to Stephen F. Austin, that we had nothing to fear from this introduction of troops, in as much as they would be widely scattered, but few at any one post, and because of the difficulty of ever concentrating— his fears were that they would ultimately lead to a misunderstanding between the Genl. Govt & Texas. Henry Austin whilst in Matamoras, had Teran to dine with him frequently aboard of his Steam boat; Teran at the time held some commission to examine the navigability &C of the Del Norte— He was now playing the man of science; but subsequently when he was appointed Commandant Genl of the Eastern Division, he suddenly be-

¹⁹Pages 1 and 10-15 of the document are omitted. Page 1 is copied from Filisola, Vicente, *Evacuation of Texas*, 30, which gives the Mexican forces at the battle of San Jacinto. Pages 10-12 consist of a copy of a letter from Stephen F. Austin to Maria Brown Austin, January 20, 1821; pages 13-15 of a copy of a letter from Joseph H. Hawkins to Maria Brown Austin, June 27, 1821. The two latter are printed in Barker, E. C., *The Austin Papers*, in *Annual Report of the American Historical Association*, 1919, II, 373-4, 397-8.

came quite military & put on the heirs of the great man.— He was doubtless at the bottom of establishing military posts in Texas.. The Origin of Bradburn— this abandoned scoundrel was commissioned to repair to the U S to ascertain what was the object of that Govt. in placing troops on the Sabine and also to pry into the disposition of the Texan colonist. He returned & reported that the object of the U S was to prevent smuggling; and as respects the Colonists, they were not disaffected—a few wild young men were disposed to be unruly, which could be easily remedied by giving to Col Austin power to manage them as their conduct might require— Bradburn was commissioned now as commandant of a post to be established on the west end of Galveston Island; he persuaded Teran to let him fix his post on the Trinity to which Teran consented, which when Bradburn came on was done at Anahuac. Bradburn told Capt. H. Austin, that Teran had promised him Empresario privileges and a large quantity of land on the Trinity—he was told that Teran had no authority to do so, and that he Bradburn could not hold the land; that the land in that quarter was all included in former Empresario's grants and the most of it located by individuals— He replied that he did not fear for Teran was omnipotent; "Yes said Capt. Austin, "and your titles will hold good only whilst his omnipotence lasts— He was reminded that he would not have Mexicans but Western Americans to deal with—a truth he subsequently learned by sad discomfiture—See The "Texas Gazette" No. 28—June 19—1830

Capt. Henry Austin was the first man to introduce a Steam Boat into Texas— He had been a year in enterprizing projects on Delnorte; he had taken a Steam Boat there with a view of opening trade with Chihuaha—he expended large amt. of money, effected little (See Genl Austin's letter to him about the navigation of Del Norte) and then came round to the mouth of the Brazos and ascended to Brazoria with his boat; this was the first on this river, as it had been the first on the Delnorte— On his reaching Brazoria, see his letter to Genl. Austin dated August 25—1830— Capt. Austin proposed to unite the waters of the Brazos with Galveston bay, by means of a canal— When the Canal is spoken of, this is the canal meant— Gross, Wharton & others were all opposed to the project because the projector's name was "*Austin*" which they said would monopolize every thing in this country—

MOOREHOUSE, EBERLY & C

Coss with 500 men was at Staffords; Morehouse with his command was near on opposite side of the river; Eberly with his company down about Bigham's 10 miles more or less below Morehouse; Morehouse sent down to Eberly to come up and join him and whip Coss; Eberly refused, saying that he would not be caught in another Fannins scrape; he accordingly retreated down the river to Velasco where he had been invited by Bell who was there with some negroes fortifying; 10 of Eberly's men however left him to join Morehouse with the prospect of fight. Eberly soon after arriving at Velasco, was induced to leave the place in consequence of the apprehension that Urea's soldiers at

Matagorda or some others would be upon him; he took down the beach, towards Galveston and on arriving at the Bay, actually with their horses swam to the Island. He had about 50 men—

Cook who had been sent from Grosses to bear some dispatches to Morehouse, probably ordering him to the main Army, he went down on the West side of the river; he was discovered & chased by a party of Mexicans; he out run them and when night came on eluded them by going into a point of woods, Baker joined us the morning after we left Grosses— Martin made his appearance & asked to go to take care of the family he hobbled his horse and was about rolling himself up in his blanket, when suddenly he heard the tramping of horses feet— it was his persuers—his own nag snorted broke her hobbles & put out into the Prairie The Mexicans seemed to take no notice of the circumstance, believing probably that the animal was a wild mustang, and passed on quietly— Early in the morning Cook rose and and [*sic*] in peeping from his hiding place, discovered nothing of the enemy, and seeing a small speck apparently about 3 miles off in the prairie, he concluded it might be his nag; he went after her; the animal however was not to be caught; she hoisted head & tail & circled round her master in perfect defiance; Cook then gathered some grass & coaxing the provoking & revolting creature he finally succeeded in catching her— and it was well that he did, for he had not more than mounted, before his former enemy were now on their return & spying him, gave him chase for many miles; Cook however escaped & bore his intelligence or orders to Morehouse & C—

After Eberly declined joining Moorehouse, More House not knowing the movements of the main army still continued at Staffords; after the battle of the 21—a messenger reachd the camp from Morehouse, asking for Orders, Houston replied “have you found me at last” When Burleson was dismissed with his men to follow the Mexicans, he found Morehouse at Staffords who joined him

COLORADO.

Sesma was encamped on the west side of the River; and Houston on the east side; the former had about Seven hundred men; and the latter about 15 hundred. Our men were all anxious to fight; Houston objected, saying that he had no cannon. Now was the time to have fought. Gaona was lost up about Bastrop— Morea was ordered to join Urrea at Matagord— Toleo was ordered to reinforce Sesma expecting that Houston would attack him; but before Tolo arrived Houston retreated—

GENL AUSTIN

Genl. Austin would have been Govr at the time Smith was Elected, if he had not encountered Houston's hostility— I asked Genl Austin about the matter; he told me that he wrote to the Council to obtain the services of some Genl. from the U S of reputation who would have the confidence of the people here—he said he was induced to write such because Houston declared he did not want nor would he have the command; when he wrote the letter Houston took it in great dudgeon; opposed Genl Austin as Govr. in revenge & had him defeated; although

he took care himself, for appearance sake, to vote for himself, with a knowledge that the vote would avail him nothing—

SANTA ANNA

He boasted that when he came into power he amalgamated all parties, by not persecuting any. His leniency for a while was carried to such an extent that a long time elapsed without any execution for crime whatever until the audacity of high way robbers rendered it necessary for him to change his policy, which when he done, he ran into the opposite, and became as cruel & bloody as he had been forgiving & lenient— Orders were given for Robbers to be executed by the military without trial; a sanguinary decree, so faithfully & promptly executed, that it could not fail speedily to have the desired effect of expelling them from the roads & highways—

The Congress of Mexico passed in 1835 a Law of general Amnesty to all except Foreigners & citizens of foreign birth.— Whilst Williams was at Monclover during the session of 1835, he writes to Genl Austin in Mexico, that his release is near at hand; for our Legislature was about taking some step toward that object. He writes thus—"The body, I am informed, resolved that an *iniciativa* should be made to Congress; that the Legislature would not be satisfied with an amnesty law that excluded from a participation of its benefits, its citizens because of foreign birth, and requesting that such be included"— In the same letter he writes "I had intended this for a long letter but a part of the day I and my companions have been under arms by request of the Govr. to sustain the authorities against an expected attack"

GENL AUSTIN

When he was invested with absolute mi[li]tary, ju[di]cial & Legislative powers, previous to the constitution organization of Texas, There is no instance of abuse of power— He organized the militia as a defense against the Savages; and as a Judge seldom had to make a judicial decision: for when applied to by disputants, he always was able by his friendly advise to reconcile them & get them to settle their differences amicably between themselves—

There were but few exceptions— In criminal cases he was lenient & never excessive in punishmt. As a Legislator his laws were always satisfact[or]y to the governed & conducive to the weal of the Count[r]y, never founded in selfishness revenge or private objects— In the summer of 1826 he gave public notice to the people that his health being bad and because of the high necessity of attending some little to his private affairs, which he always neglected, they must make arrangements to do their own Legislation. A voluntary sacrifice of high prerogative which nothing but the most exalted patriotism and disinterestedness is capable of making— During all this time there was no discontent in the Colony or dissatisfaction with his administration; No such thing as party was ever Known Genl. Austin, in 1832 acted

as Col the Regt. and as such issued orders to Jesse Grimes 13th augt. 1832; probably because of the Nacogdoches & Anahuac scrapes—

ANTHONY BUTLER

Was sent by Genl Jackson in great haste to Mexico as minister plenipotentary for the purpose of enabling him to say something in his message to Congress about Mexico & Texas, when suddenly Butler made his appearance in Texas on his own private speculative purposes—

Jackson had been negotiating for the acquisition of Texas by purchase—

MOSES AUSTIN

M. Austin, when he had finished his business in Bexar, and was nearly ready to depart, he heard that there was a man in Bexar who was on the the [*sic*] eve of leaving town with a gang of mules—this man was Kerkendall; Austin sought him out & prevailed with him to remain a few days until he Austin could get off. The journey was a long dangerous and fatiguing one, not to be performed alone. Kerkendall consented to wait— Austin gave him money to buy powder & other outfits— He gave a fine gold watch, one his mother gave him, an old family heirloom, for a mule a fine mule & equipage— Kirkendall & himself now left Bexar—they travelled on together for a good while with mutual confidence & harmony— The powder got wet & destroyed, which was the main dependence for subsistence; the small store of buiscuit was now growing very short; there was every prospect of sufference. One morning when Austin arose, he missed his travelling companion, who had taking his fine mule and decamped with all the stores leaving him nothing but the horse on which Austin was travelling; not a mouthful to eat and no powder to kill game— In this situation he travelled 8 days without any sustenance to support life except acorns pecans roots &c— He finally reached Hugh McGuffin's near the Sabine so emeciated & worn down that he could not walk— he met here his nephew Bates who had been sent in search of him; he remaned 5 or 6 weeks before he was able to proceed homeward—

Moses Austin had departed from home his family new not whither; after the lapse of some time Mrs Austin his wife, became so uneasy that she sent her nephew to the Spanish dominions to ascertain whether her husband had gone in direction— As this young man, Bates, was proceeding toward Nacogdoches he stopped one night at a man's house by the name of Hugh McGruffin & A stranger came at night and called for assistance, a mere skelleton on the verge of death by starvation— As he entered the house, the young man Bates recognized the voice but not the form of his Uncle of whom he was in search— It was Moses Austin— he gave the preceding account of his mission and success & subsequent suffering to Bexar.

Moses Austin on his arrival at Bexar was suspected of being a Spanish Spy, and was ordered to leave the City in 24 hours; the order was so peremptory that he durst not disobey; he departed but met Baron De Bastrop a short distance from Town, to whom he imparted his project. Bastrop & him had been acquainted in Missouri; the Baron bade him return and it was through this patriotic philanthropist, that Austin presented his petition to the Authority of Spain,

He remained but a short time say some 19 days in Bexar and departed for home much pleased with the prospects of success from the flattering accounts Bastrop gave him.

His journey home was full of suffering— Sure enough the Baron faithful to the interest of his friend had the petition presented, the grant confirmed by the King— And sent it on to Austin in Missouri; but it came as the adventurer was on the eve of taking his leave of all sublunary things—

Married on Thursday the 29th day of March at Herculaneum John W. Honey Esqr. to Miss Mary S. Austin, daughter of Mr. Horace Austin all of Hercul[aneum]

From sweetest flow'r's the busy bee
Can scarce a drop of honey gather,
But oh! how sweet a flower is she
Who turns to Honey altogether—

Short & Sweet

The above Miss Austin was raised by Moses Austin & was his niece—

RELICKS IN THE FAMILY

A silver pipe neatly made and finely carved, belonged to Abia Brown A splendid pair of Shoe buckles worn by Mrs Mary Austin wife of Moses Austin, at Mrs Washington's Levee whilst Washington was President—

Moses Austin & family was on friendly & intimate terms with Washington and family—

A hatchet which Moses Austin carried with him and blazed his way to San Antonio

A sword, the first worn by Stephen Austin and carried with him in his first trip to Texas and to Mexico—

The above articles in the possession of Mrs Perry on the Brazos, sister of Stephen Austin—

See Archibald Austin of New York, brother to Henry Austin & Mary Holly, he has the likeness of Stephen F Austin in miniature—

Mrs Perry on the Brasos has Moses Austin's miniature in a breast pin, taken when her father was about 21 years old before he was married—

Mrs Whitesides went 20 miles to her neighbor Mrs. Cole to help her to get dinner for Col Austin on his return from Saltillo—he was always hailed with public greetings & demonstration of joy & confidence —he went 40 miles to dine with his nearest neighbors—

Once when they were greatly despondent at the prospects, he called

much fatigued at Whitesides; when the good lady prepared as good a supper as she was able, coffee made of parched corn, the table was the mud floor of the Cabin, & the cloth a Buffaloe robe.

The lady apologized for her poverty; the Col. told her to heed it not—she said she did not mind it as for herself, but she regreted she could not better supply his wants, as he was sick & fatigued—he replied by saying that “Better days may yet be mine; at least I hope they may be thine, believe me”—Such was contented situation under all circumstances—he was a true philosopher

Whitesides had on coming to the country, lost by misfortune all his property & effects & hence their poverty on this occasion.

CHARACTERISTIC ANECDOTE

When the Commissioners Austin, Archer & Wharton were travelling the U S, Genl Austin as the founder of this Country necessarily attracted great curiosity and attention. Wharton a little sore that the Genl. should engross the public mind, observed that when they should reach Tennessee where he had long resided & was well know, that there it would no longer be as which is *Austin?* but the enquiry would be where is Wharton? His hopes of notice however on arriving in his native State was not realized, for the question was still heard “which is *Austin?* Archer, destitute of such vanity, observing his friend’s mortification & disappointmt, remarked by way of tantalizing him, well Wharton, we are now in Tennessee, and as you are to be the Lion here you must let me be the Lion in Virginia; that being my State I shall be able to knock the shine off you & the general— This was told by Archer to Mrs McKinstrey & by her to Mrs. Perry—

Austin in a Letter to Henry Austin says that Archer was a noble fellow, that Wharton has some respectable ability but was too vain & fond of notariety which effected his usefulness—

BANK.

Genl. was urged to take an interest in this institution; it being deemed that such a course would inspire public confidence in the project; a short time before his death, when just below total mental aberration Dr. Archer came to McKinstrey’s to get Austin’s signature; Capt. Henry Austin told Archer that the Genl was not in a proper state of mind to commit himself irrevocably in so important affair involving his whole estate. Archer insisted; Capt. Austin was peremptory in his refusal, & the former was forced to retire without accomplishing the object of his visit. Henry Austin placed a spy upon the actions and views of these banking men; this spy had reported that the company in conclave had made this declaration—“that if the Genl. was really about to die, it was the more important to have his signature.” I do not know exactly whether this was before Archer’s visit, or whether Archer now made a second visit; be it as it may, whether one or two visits, Henry Austin, was in possession of the above remark— so that in his interview (which? the first or last I do not know) with Archer he repelled the application. Archer then foiled,

observed that if Genl Austin would not sign his name & become president, he must sign his relinquishment. Genl. Austin heard this conversation and called to Henry Austin, saying "Henry bring him in, I am willing to sign the relinquishment;" which he did, and the matter ended. Archer became the Prest previous to Archers visit, Genl. Austin, whilst lying before the fire much exhausted, said Henry I want to tell you something, but I cannot make it intelligible; my mind is all chaos—he the[n] spoke incoherently; something about taking an interest—signing bonds—they want me to be the prest. but I cant. Henry Austin gathered enough from this to enable him to better understand Dr Archer's visit when he came for the Genl. name to the Bank Articles—

May we not look forward to the pleasing period when Texas shall be densley populated; When sience & Literature, aided by wealth, shall shed their benign & glorious beames abroad like the burning eye of day; then we shall see schools, Colleges, and every institution ministr[er]ing to the wants of man and Glory of God. Some other Franklin will &C— Whilst Jeffersons in the Cabinet and Chathams in the Senate &C—

Peel purchased some mamouth bones, which he exhibited, from time to time adding to his shew some new & interesting relick or curiosity, until from his humble start, lo! the Museum of two Cities Sprang, the One at Philidelphia by the Father; the other at Baltimore by the son. And may not the little relicks of this family form in some future day the neuclus of a similar concentration of Science & Curiosity; May not the pipe of the Grandfather; the hatchet of the father & sword of the son be to Texas what the Mamouth bones were to Pensylvania and Maryland.

The one had an innate reverence of truth; the other was to its habitual contemner the word of the former casually droped was more to be relied on, than the oath of the latter sealed upon a stack of bibles as high as the tower of Bable.

The Schoolboy inverts the order of his sums to prove their correctness; do the same with this man's statements; their correctness or truth may be found as the boy proves his sums by working backwards.

ANAHUAC

When Traves took this place—a previous meeting of the authorities at San Fillipe had ordered the place to be reduced; Travers was deputed to the task; on his way to Anahuac, he recd an express from the authorities at San Fillipe countermanding what had been ordered; but Travis refused to obey the countermand, and proceded on to the reduction of the place. This done, on his return to San Fellipe, he found that the Authorities there had censured what he had done.—

GOVR. SMITH

The quarrel between this officer & the Council was caused by the following circumstance. A loan of one hundred thousand dollars was

to be made for the support of the war. McKinney was to negotiate it; the council from some cause, perhaps, the infamy of Williams' character, refused to let William's name appear with McKinnie's. McKinny told them that W— was his partner in trade, and as it [was] the transaction not of himself but of the firms W's name must be inserted. the Name of Williams with that of McKenny's was inserted in the draft by the Secy. of the Council (Mr. Stewart) without the Knowledge of the Council; when it came to their knowledge, they objected to the draft and said another should be drawn in its stead; late one night at 11 or 12 oclk the Secy waked up the Govr. and presented another draft for his signature saying that the former one was annulled by the Council and was in the office; the Govr signed the second one; and afterwards demanded the first one to be destroyed; but it was not to be found in the office. As Williams was known to be concerned in great speculations and perhaps not standing very high with the Govt; Smith conceived, that there was some rascality in the affair which he could not fathom, and accordingly addressed the council in tremendous epithets in a private Message; at the same time writing however a secret note to several of the members that they were not to consider themselves included in the implications of the message. The matter soon became public and a quarrel ensued— the Council threatened impeachment &C.

GENL. MINA

Was the son of the Mina who figured so largely in the hystory of the Wars of Spain. He sailed for the mouth of the Sabine from Madrid, with a view of getting American soldiers to join him in the war of the Patriots against the Royalists in Texas; he landed however from some mistake or from some cause unknown to me, at the Brazos St Iago, With 15 Americans, which he had brought with him (I believe) this was in 1816— His expectation was to be supported by the Rancheros who it was said were all patriots & ready to sustain him; he gathered a small force and moved toward the Nuaces; on his way had a severe engagement with the Royalists, in which he was successful; he pushed on intending to go La Bihia fighting almost every step and daily expecting but not receiving reinforcemts. Some where not distant from Refugio, between there & Copeno, wearied out and exhausted with hunger, fatigue and hard fighting, he & his men lay down to rest or take what they call a *siesta* a part of Arredondo's army from Bexar, on their march to Labihia heard of them and came in hot pursuit of them; they came upon just at this moment when they were all asleep. The Centinels had either been taken prisoners by surprize or had proved treacherous. The Royalists at one destructive fire killed nearly the whole of Mina's force, whilst asleep. The living sprang up & discovered themselves in the hands of their enemies. The Americans I believe were turned loose— (I have heard that they were shot because they hailed from no country—had no citizenship in this country as Citizens nor any pasport to sojourn in it as strangers) The Mexicans were shot and Genl. Mina was tied to a wild horse and kicked to death—

ANTHONY BUTLER

Genl Austin was indebted to him for the hire of negroes at the mine of Barton—

In 1829 Butler came to Texas to see Genl Austin to get something from him. Butler himself was bankrupted— A difficulty ensued between him & Genl. Austin in their settlement. The over zealous friends of Austin, Spencer Jack and others, drew up a paper notifying Butler that he must in 24 hours depart the country; I believe however the paper was never handed him. A duel was now about to take place between Austin & Butler, which was fortunately arrested by the efforts of Robt. M. Williamson The parties shook hands and their money matters was arraigned between them to their mutual satisfaction—

Butler when appd. Minister was ordered to Repair to Mexico in haste; when he was next heard of, he was in Texas; this conduct is thus explained; he had lands here and debts due him for rent & other things, from property acquired from Austin in his settlement; he came thro' Texas to make collections, to raise the wind, to take him on to Mexico; and also to get an Interpreter to accompany him; the Interpreter was young Pettus— That he came thro' Texas to attend to his private affairs is likely; but I do not see how his necessities could *force* him to this, in as much as he could with his sallary & outfit of office, have raised the wind in the U S as easily as to collect dues in Texas—he doubtless came thro' here that his affairs might be arranged before going to Mexico—

 IN 1832

After the taking of Anahuac & Velas[c]o, the people proceeded to drive the whole of the troops out of the Country, from Tenoxticlan, Goliad Bexar & C, and left the[m] free from soldiers— They all went into the Interior to Coss who was comt. of the Eastern division, stationed I know not where, perhaps at Monterrey or Saltillo or Matamoras,

GENL MINA

An Expedition was fitted out for him by Grimes & C— And sailed for Galveston Island—the vessel was wrecked; out of 78 lives, only 12 were saved— a ratf [*sic*] was made 10 men on out; one died a fat man by the name of Saml. Davis—died for the want of water; he was eaten by the other 9—who were finally saved; 3 others were saved on spars—2 Thousand stand of arms, amunition & C all lost— This was in Decr. 1815— In the spring of 1816 Mina was fitted out for another expedition & landed at Brazos St Iago —He met his fate at a town some distence from Refugio— Hall

 MADINA

After Bexar was taken, the most of our old soldiers, were furloughed; the army was sustained by new recruits. Arredondo came on with a royal Army—he was easily conquered. After his defeat another royal

force made its appearance under Arredondo. Our Genl. Bernardo was superceded by Toledo. The change was disagreeable to the soldiers—he led our army to Medena, and there was entirely destroyed—

PRISONER AT BEXAR

When Mrs Long was at Bexar, there was one day a great parade in the Streets; when enquiring the cause, she saw a prisoner just lead from Jail, tied on a mule; his hat covered over with silver imitations of every variety of animals— He was emaciated and was begone, a mere skeleton, who could not to all appearances live many days— He was now started to Monterrey, whence he had been brought. His history was brief. He had suddenly appeared in the streets of Monterrey a stranger to every body and without being able to give an account of himself. He spoke no language known to any one in the Interior or in Texas; but by signs, the people at Monterrey learnt or or [*sic*] thought that they under stood him to lay claims to Texas as his province & that he was supreme Govr. of it. He was apprehended as a spy, brought to Bexar long imprisoned there, speaking fluently in some unknown language, without understanding any one or being understood by any; and after being worn down to an anatomy in prison, they now started with him back to Monterrey, having nothing to urge against him other than that he could speak none of the dead or living languages known to the Mexicans— He was never heard of more—his fate as well as his history being a mystery—

No. 2409. HISTORICAL NOTES—ANONYMOUS

[Translation from the Spanish]

[About 184—?]

A beginning so bloody, the disorder necessarily consequent because of the ignorance of the leaders, and the absolute moral incapacity of those tumultuous masses, could not fail to produce confusion, an absolute lack of all discipline. The hordes of Mexicans under the standard of the Aztecs had more order and greater uniformity than the tumultuous cohorts of insurgents swayed by Hidalgo. Such were the results. The country was made a field of depredations comparable to those of the Vandals or Goths; and the standard-bearers of independence seemed to me rather more like imitators of Atilla than successors of Washington. This was, nevertheless, the origin of the independence of Mexico.

A few troops disciplined by the Spanish chiefs were pursuing and routing those colossal bodies, which like the giant of Daniel had feet of clay. Indeed eighty thousand men in Las Cruces seven leagues from Mexico routed forth the Spaniards; but before three months, these same conquerors were destroyed in Aculto, twenty leagues to the north west of the same city, whence they retired, and the Spanish General Calleja began his cruelties from that time forward imitating his enemies. Afterwards nothing stopped the triumphs of the Spanish, and Guanajuato, Guadalajara, and all the places which they entered were the theater of bloody executions, of butcheries, even greater than that of Alipodromo. Those among the Spanish chiefs most distin-

guished for their cruelty and valor were Calleja, Negrete, Cruz, Concha, Evia, Arredonde, Venegas; in this number should be counted some Mexicans who imitated in their . . . [illegible] and they are Yturbide, (distinguished for his valor and cruelty, and more for his change in favor of independence in 1821) Bustamente, Armijo, Barreган, Rincon and others, less known than

Among the insurgents likewise, were distinguished Hidalgo, Allende, Aldama, Matamoros, Guerrero, Victoria and others. The revolution continued bloody and destructive for six years until the fall of the most distinguished chief, Matamoros, caught and shot by the Spaniards. In 1817 there succeeded to the viceregency of Calleja, General Apodaca, a humane man, who substituted means of persuasion for the cruel butchering of Cajella [*sic*] and his subalterns.²⁰ When the revolution was in its decadence (1817) there appeared in the plaza of Mexico a Spanish leader who after having displayed great valor in favor of the independence of his country in the war against Napoleon was obliged to abandon it fleeing from the domestic tyranny of Ferdinand VII. This chieftain identified himself with the independent Mexicans of that epoch and after having fought with the royalists in some encounters was routed and assassinated in Silao, a village of the plains. The insurgents themselves were the principal cause of his misfortune,

In 1818 New Spain, the name which the present Mexican Republic then was called was almost entirely peaceful. An obscure chief General Guerrero, afterwards president of Mexico (in 1823), alone remained with arms in his hands in the mountains of the south of Mexico, fleeing before the Spanish detachments.

But there was being prepared silently in the country, and one might say without even the knowledge of the future authors, a great revolution, moral and political. There was being circulated already in the hands of the middle classes, the works of many writers, national and foreign, who had for their object to prove the justice of American independence, by exaggerating the cruelties of the Spaniards and the tyranny of their government. These and the anonymous works of some philosophers and politicians which had been introduced into the nation, translated into Spanish, and taught to the people in the six years following the Spanish constitution of 1812, changed the opinions of the Mexican Military Chiefs and of the men of the country who read those books, a little before forbidden by the inquisition and never before introduced into the country. But the mass of the people did not participate in these benefits.

When in 1820 the Spanish constitutionalists succeeded in triumphing over the absolutism of King Ferdinand, and forced him to adopt the constitution in New Spain, there appeared one of those political phenomena which are common in revolutions of the people. The clergy who saw their privileges threatened by the triumph of liberal ideas in Spain, the lesser aristocracy who hated the leveling principle of the constitutionalists, the leaders of the former insurgents scattered in various parts of the provinces, and many military chieftains whose opinions had changed in favor of the independence which they for-

²⁰The first two paragraphs and the third to this point are from a copy by Lamar. The remainder is from a copy in another hand, perhaps that of the anonymous author.

merly detested, directed their minds and sympathies to one point only,—to the great end of creating in Mexico a Constitutional Monarchy which should not have the democratic tendencies of the one established in the peninsula.

On this general opinion was founded a great conspiracy in the hearts of all classes without being worked out and organized and there was only one chief of reputation and renown who might serve as the central point and raise with firm hand the national standard. Dn. Agustin de Yturvide Colonel of a regiment, born in Valladolid of a Spanish family, a person distinguished by his valor, by his activity, by his mental talent and his energy as well as by his cruelties against the former insurgents on whom he made war without quarter, he was the man whom providence destined to be the leader of this new and more successful revolution.

A plan upon the bases of *monarchy*, the intolerant Catholic Religion, and union between the old and new insurgents; between Mexicans and Spaniards, was proclaimed by the new Corypheus in Yguala, forty leagues from Mexico, and the Viceroy Apodaca called with a loud voice to the former defenders of Spanish integrity. His surprise and his embarrassment were equal when he only saw accede to his defense the Spanish troops whose ranks were now cleared of the Mexicans who in former times had filled the vacant places. Few, very few sons of New Spain came up to occupy their former places. The Bustamantes, the Santa Annas the Barraganes, the Cortasares immediately united themselves under the standard of independence, and the former insurgents were reenforced by the batallions and Regiments which three years before had overcome them. Before six months time the Spanish were reduced to the great cities of Mexico, Puebla, Vera Cruz, and Querétaro when an important event came to terminate the revolution for Mexican independence and sanction it forever. This was the arrival of the young Viceroy Dn Juan O'Donoju, who arrived at Vera-cruz in July, 1820.

The new Spanish chief came from the peninsula impressed with the necessity of making amicable transactions with the independent chiefs and the plan of Yguala seemed to him the best arrangement that Spain could get. In effect a prince of the Bourbon family of Spain was called to occupy the throne of Mexico. The property and offices of the Spanish residents in Mexico were protected and they continued enjoying the commercial advantages which their position as capitalists gave them. On these bases, O'Donoju made a treaty with Gen Yturvide in the town of Córdoba, August 1821.

Yturvide formed a junta of government of many personages in order to call an assembly with the name of constituent congress, Yturvide himself to govern *ad interim*. The Junta gave him the title of General, admiral, liberator and other similar titles with a donation of a million pesos which was not paid.

The Congress opened its sessions in Mexico in February, 1822, and from its first session declared the treaty made with O'Donoju legitimate and the conduct followed by Yturvide patriotic. But there was a strong party of opposition composed of Spaniards and republicans, the former because they accused Yturvide of intentions of supplanting the Bourbon family on the throne of Mexico; the latter, because seeing

nearer the establishment of monarchy in the family of Yturvide, would prefer the calling of one of the Bourbons, for which arrangement many steps were necessary. Among them, the acknowledgment of the independence of the Mexican empire, as it was then called, a measure that found an opposition almost invincible in the *Cortes* and in the Spanish government.

He who writes these notes was a member of the Mexican Congress and had been of the Spanish *Cortes* the year preceding. Consequently he had knowledge of the narrow and obstinate politics of the people of the peninsula and the convictions of the citizens of the *cortes*. The Almagros and Pizarros would not make such an acknowledgment very enthusiastically [?] A year had not passed, nevertheless, since the Spaniards had been thrown out of the Mexican territory when Yturvide was proclaimed emperor by the common people and the garrison of the capital. Congress acquiesced in this act by violence and subsequently sanctioned it by a consent less exact.

Yturvide had opposed to him as his opponents the Spanish residents in all the territory of Mexico and the Republicans. These united to overcome the Emperor himself and a republic was spontaneously established among a people who had been educated by the inquisitorial Jesuits and the soldiers. Was it possible to have peace long?

Thus it has happened, and since the democratic system was nominally established Mexico has been the theater of continual revolutions under the leadership of military chiefs.

Santa Ana has been the last who has figured on the scene and his name after having been made famous in the interior by his fortunate enterprises has been stained by his bloody conduct of the expedition to Texas.

The Texas territory disputed for many years between the governments of Louisiana and New Spain was definitely annexed to the Mexican territory by the Treaty of Florida in 1819. After the independence of Mexico, the Americans and some islanders commenced to colonize this fertile region then inhabited in its greater part by wild Indians and savage beasts. The colonists received the sanction of their possession from the Mexican Congress, and their rapid progress displays the power of their industry when they do not encounter obstacles in the government and in the laws. Luckily, the government of Mexico was very distant from the active colonies and they prospered by the very abandonment in which they found themselves without the intervention of soldiers or Mexican authorities.—

The colonies were faithful to the established authority, the nominal federation of Mexico, but Santana having destroyed the constitution the Texans said the military power of Mexico would come at once with their legions upon them. [Zava]la from Paris, where he was minister plenipotentiary for Mexico, renounced this splendid destiny went to Texas to urge war against an ambitious chief and a perfidious government that failed in its most sacred promises. Zavala, Mexican by birth, was the first apostle of the war of independence, and it may be said that he was the creator of this new republic.

No. 2412. NOTES ON THE "FREDONIAN WAR." LAMAR

[184—?]

Mateo Ahumada writes from Sanfilipe, dated 4 Janry 1827 a letter to "*Citizen Richard Fields of the Cherokees*" dissuading him from joining the Fredonians—telling him to meet him, Austin, and the "*Chief of the Department of Texas Jose Antonio Saucedo*" "at the Trinity River at the Crossing of the main road near the Lomo de Torro or this town" where they could discuss & settle all differences. He says that the Govt. of Mexico does not want to declare war on the Cherokees; and that if they had not obtained Land it was because they had not applied properly to the Congress of Coahula & Texas or because of some neglect of their agents at Mexico—

Austin writes a letter to J. D. Hunter, 4th. Jany 1827—dissuading him from the Fredonian War—

B. W. Edwards writes to Col. Austin dated Nacogdoches 21st July 1826, detailing many abuses of the Govt. heaped upon his brother Haden Edwards; the calemis [calumnies] of his character; the various orders recd. from the Govt. in relation to his Grant; threats that the Grant shall be taken from him; yet no charges or complaints specified against Edwds; these things induce Ben, W. Edwds to write said letter Calling on Austin for Justice & C Among other things he uses the following language—to wit: "Col. Austin, these abuses and outrages upon the Americans will not be tolerated long!! The rumbling of the Volcano has already become audible around us, and if any accident should cause its explosion in any part of its surface, not all *our efforts* could arrest its progress. It is upon you then that I mostly rely in *preventing* the storm that seems to be now coming on."

When this letter was written Haden Edwds, had left for the US, and left his brother in charge of the Colony until his return—

Col. Jas. Bowie writes from San Augustine August 8th 1832, that the 12 Regt. of Infantry formerly of Nacogdoches & in command of Col. Jose de las Piedras, is a prisoner in town, soon to be dispatched for Anahuac, & that the Regiment has put itself under his command & are now on their march for San filipe, and being in distitute situation he asks for them some horses and provisions—

He says in the fight at Nacogdoches about 33 Spaniards were killed, & 17 or 18 wounded; on the other side the Alcalde, and 3 to 7 wounded—

No. 2414. ANECDOTES OF SANTA ANNA. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Richmond? Texas 184-?]

Everybody knows what were the causes which influenced Santa Anna to declare himself against Iturbide in 1822, but few persons can know that in order to free himself of the presence of General Echavarrí in Vera Cruz whom the Emperor had sent to watch him, he agreed with Lemaur, who was governor of the Castle of Ulua, offering to deliver the place to him, and in order to do so asked that he

send some troops at night to take possession of the principal points.— The object of Santa-Anna was to cause an alarm in the city by opening fire against Lemaur's Spanish troops taking advantage of the darkness of the night and the confusion in order to assassinate General Echavarri. Everything happened as Santa Anna had calculated, except the assassination; because at the moment the assassin was going to shoot Echavarri, he leaned in order to speak with one of his assistants and the balls passed, killing a sergeant who was at his side.

As Santa Anna is a man without education, without political principles or morals, his life is a web of inconsistencies and contradictions. And so hardly two months had passed since the termination of the campaign which resulted in the fall of the Empire and the establishment of the Republic, when he proclaimed himself Emperor under the name of Antonio I in San Luis Potosi, by the very soldiers whom he was commanding. But Public Spirit, which at that time was running very high in favor of Republican principles, was a barrier that he could not overcome, and he desisted immediately in his pretensions, adopting the opposite extreme. He declared himself protector of the federal system which was beginning to be general in the country (1823)

Under the Presidency of General Victoria, Santa Anna had an unceasing and severe persecutor in the minister of War, General Pedraza, to which personage the wicked conduct of Santa Anna was not pleasing.

So when in 1828 elections were held for President of the Republic and when Pedraza had obtained the legal majority of the votes, Santa Anna, uneasy lest a man whom he feared might be placed at the head of affairs, managed to seduce some troops in Jalapa and with them took possession of the fortress of Perote and declared himself against the election that had just been held saying that General Guerrero should be the President and not Pedraza. The termination of this revolution was in conformity with what Santa Anna proclaimed, because General Guerrero had a strong party in his favor, and in consequence Pedraza had to leave the country in the early part of 1829.

Hardly a year had passed since Guerrero held the Presidency when Santa Anna, unmindful of what he owed to this singular man, in order to overthrow him started in the city of Jalapa a revolution to which afterwards he gave his name, seduced the troops and in short, succeeded in carrying out the conspiracy against what he himself had done a few months before. (December 1829)

Although he had contributed powerfully in the elevation of Bustamante, nevertheless he was not contented with the turn which affairs were taking and, as he saw that in the immediate election of President, he himself was not considered, a thing to which he had aspired for a long time past, he started an open revolution against the administration of Bustamante in the City of Vera Cruz on the 2nd of January 1832.

In his plan, he called to the nation to check the backward movement of the government of Bustamante that was tending to destroy the federal system. The basis of his revolution was the call of General Pedraza as the legitimate President of the Republic. After a year of struggle, the revolution terminated with the triumph of the federal

cause, headed by Santa Anna, and Pedraza was placed in the seat of government.

At the beginning of 1833, he proposed a law of ostracism for 52 of the most influential persons of the Servil party; he personally wrote the names of the unhappy men on a list which he sent to Congress and some months after, when he himself adhered to the Servil party, he declared that the law had been dictated by party spirit and that Congress on making it public had committed an arbitrary act and a usurpation of power.

His break with the Congress of 1833 and 34 had its origin in the fact that a great majority of the deputies and Senators were in favor of carrying out the reforms which they had begun.

What most attracted the attention of Santa Anna was the insistence with which the legislative power employed itself in destroying the power of the Clergy and the Army; this conduct of the deputies was modeled on what all the legislatures of the States were observing, from whom they were receiving frequent instructions which had for their object the leveling of all things to the republican system which was dominant. As Santa Anna observed that the reforms were being made without the people objecting to them, he fomented in secret the revolutions of Generals Arista and Duran known by the name of the revolution for religion and law. All of the rank and file took part in the military movement against the reforms, but the militia of the States and the people sustained Congress and finally after eight months of continual strife, the militia triumphed over the mercenaries, and Arista and his partisans were expelled from the republic, (Nov. 1833). Santa Anna who saw that public opinion was against the military movement, abandoned the very persons whom he had incited to the revolution, and even directed the campaign against them.

After these events he asked permission of congress to go to his *hacienda* under the pretext of being sick. There he came to an agreement with the absolutists, and when he left to return to the government, he already had his plan figured out to overthrow the popular party and the federal institutions.

Much has been said and written about a letter which at that time Santa Anna wrote to Mexía inviting him to abandon the popular cause and join him in order to establish in the Nation a theocratic military government; but it is beyond all doubt that, although Santa Anna denied afterwards that he had written such a letter, as on many other occasions he had denied acts the most public and proved, there is no doubt, I repeat, that the document was autographed and his conduct after that event sufficiently proves the truth.

What could have been the object of Mexía and of the federalists in forging such a letter? Mexía did not make any use of it until Santa Anna himself wrote him to present it to the government, and it is clear that in a matter so delicate it would not be merely for the pleasure of amusing himself that he would do so.

Moreover, in case of doubt, we should give our attention to the facts and all of them speak against Santa Anna, since we have seen realized everything set forth in the letter, and Mexía could not guess such things.

When Santa Anna returned to Mexico, and again took control of

the govt. (which control he ought never to have turned over to Farias because he knew he was already conspiring against the institutions) Congress was occupied in a multitude of laws and decrees highly beneficial to the country.

The abolition of the ecclesiastic tithes, the abolition of civil coercion in order to conserve the monastic votes—the embargo and nationalization of immense lands held in mortmain (religious orders of both sexes) (200 million dollars) a reduction of the army to less than one half of the old standing, the abolition of the old system of public education &c., all these laws were directly attacking the intentions of Santa Anna, who having been won over by the friars, was occupying himself at the time in a reaction that would impede the progress of affairs. A small legal technicality gave him a pretext, and in the early part of June he dissolved the Chambers by force of arms. The Federal Constitution stated, “That the ordinary sessions of Congress should terminate on the 15th day of April, but by an agreement between the chambers only, they could continue for thirty days more. As Santa Anna had intentionally allowed the time to pass which the constitution granted him for placing his veto to the laws; with the intention that those matters would not again be considered until the ordinary sessions, the deputies agreed to suspend the sessions, allow fifteen days to elapse and at the end of these to continue the other six sessions that were lacking so that by the time those six sessions had been continued (ten days) the time would have already expired which the constitution allowed the executive for publishing a law, or for returning it to Congress with his observations.

Affairs being thus arranged the members of the two chambers assembled on the first day of June for the purpose of continuing the six last sessions of the thirty days that were lacking and of naming a President for the two houses according to the rules.

At once the government was advised by an official letter, and by another official letter the Secretary of State was called in order that he might reply to strong charges that were being brought against him. The session lasted all day and at night a note from the executive was received in which it was said that that assembly of deputies was not recognized as legal on account of the legal time having expired in which the Congress could be convened.

Some States declared themselves against this scandalous violation of the people’s rights, but Santana disposed of the national force and dissolved all the coalitions that they formed in Michoacan, Puebla, San Louis Potosí and Guadalajara, always protesting that his intentions were no other than to stop the advances of the reformers, but under no circumstances would he permit any attempt against the federal constitution, which system he would sustain at all cost. With this false promise he deceived some of the governors of the states, particularly the one in Zacatecas (Don Francisco Garcia).

Mexía was the last who succumbed in Guadalajara, after General Moctazuma had done so in San Luis Potosí.

As soon as Santa Anna had dissolved the congress, he called to the management of affairs all those men who, having declared themselves against the federal institutions, were out of public office.

In consequence of his measures everything was being carried on as

he desired which was to destroy liberty, establishing a system in which he might enjoy greater power than that which he had as President of the United States. Only one obstacle had to be overcome and this was the resistance that the state of Zacatecas would make against his power whenever the dissolution of the federalists should be pronounced. In order to seek a pretext with which to march against Zacatecas he had the new Congress to pass a law by which it was ordered that there be no national Militia, and that the arms they had in the States should be delivered to the general government.

The State of Zacatecas opposed this great usurpation of power, although Santa Anna assured them officially through the Minister of finance (Gutierrez Estrada) that that measure had nothing of malice for the future, and protested that in no case would the federal system be attacked.

The Zacatecans enlisted for the campaign and started out to defend the rights of the people by force of arms; but they were betrayed in camp on the 11th day of May and with this catastrophe the Mexican federation (that Santa Anna proclaimed everywhere by his legions) was killed.

The authorities of Coahuila and Texas were involved in the common misfortunes of the country. General Cos dissolved the legislature, imprisoned the Governor, the deputies and other high officials and from that time an unchecked militarism ruled the Nation.

From that time dated the epoch of separation of Texas from Mexico.

N. B. The conduct of Santa Anna was so mysterious and criminal that a little before he marched against Zacatecas, he compelled the Minister Gutierrez Estrada to write a letter to the authorities assuring them that the federal system would be maintained. After his casual triumphs and when he began to proclaim Centralism everywhere, the minister energetically opposed this act of treachery, and made a solemn and public protest against it and issued a manifesto to the Nation in order to prove that he also had been deceived, and he resigned from the cabinet and even left the Republic.

Mejía was for a long time united with Santa Anna while Santa Anna was working for the welfare of the people, and to this man, whom Santa Anna had tried to offend in a thousand ways, he owed much in his campaign of Oajaca and in that of 1832. If it had not been for Mexía who was the one who gained the battle of Palmar at the very moment in which Santa Anna had been overcome by General Fácio, without doubt the campaign would have ended disastrously. It was also Mejía who assaulted Puebla some days after and to make a long story short all the military successes Santa Anna had were on account of the cooperation and good conduct of Mexía and General Arago.— Mexía as a Senator in the general Congress always sustained the rights of the people, he was always one of the opposing force when Santa Anna was in power, and many of the celebrated laws of that time were works of Mexía, Zavala and Reyon. It only remained for Mexía to profess these principles in order to be an enemy of Santa Anna with whom there was always strong friction, because he did not wish to abandon his liberal principles.

Although Mexía was a military officer he had always been against military privileges and against the monopoly of the Roman Clergy.

Mexía's expedition to Tampico in November 1835 was for the purpose of proclaiming the federal principles, which Texas had already proclaimed. They have accused him of securing volunteers in New Orleans to go to Texas; but this is not true. Mr. Christy was the person who secured them, telling them that they were going to sustain the same cause that the Texans were upholding, but that they were going to disembark at some point on the coast South of Texas. The expedition of Mexía was well arranged, but he had the misfortune of being wrecked upon entering the Port of Tampico on the night of Nov. 14th, and so it was impossible to surprise the garrison that had been prepared to receive him, because he had been on the bar twelve hours, and everybody knew of his being near the City. Also some persons have wished to take the credit of having contributed to this expedition, but this is not true; the funds for the expenses were furnished by Mexía alone and his friend Colonel Peraza. He himself assured a friend of mine of this fact and also stated that he could prove it against any one saying the contrary.

The Count Moctezuma a native of Spain, but a descendant of the old Emperor of Mexico, escaped from Madrid in 1821 in order to come and proclaim the Independence of the Country of his forefathers, acting on the advice of Zavala. But while in France hearing that Iturbide had done so already, he stopped his march and came afterwards to live in New Orleans where he committed suicide on account of family troubles.

When General Lopez de Santa Anna was prisoner in Texas, I was at that time Secretary of War in which capacity it was my fortune, good or bad, not to be in accord with the majority of the cabinet with respect to the question of what should be done with the distinguished captive. Some were in favor of making a treaty of peace adjusting the boundaries of Texas and recognizing her independence; while the rest opposing this policy contended that in place of considering Santa Anna a prisoner of war, he should be judged an assassin and as such be condemned. Those who are familiar with the history of Texas, will remember the fate of Colonel Fannin and his brave companions who were sacrificed for the vengeance of Santa Anna in spite of the terms under which they had surrendered to a superior force after a well fought battle. The conditions of the surrender were, first that their lives should be spared and second that in ten days they should be set free and he would permit them to leave for New Orleans, but instead of this being carried out in good faith, they were executed by order of General Santa Anna in opposition to the supplications of several of his officers. For this atrocious act so full of treachery and opposed to all the laws of warfare and of civilized nations, some of the members of the cabinet were opposed to treating with the prisoner under any considerations and insisted that he ought to be punished as a criminal. Among those who held this opinion, I was one, and in an official document I stated the reasons that compelled me to the decision which I had taken.

When Santa Anna saw the light in which I viewed his conduct and character and how unfavorable and unpropitious were my sentiments toward him on account of that atrocious crime, he manifested a desire

to speak with me personally about it, in the hope of justifying himself in my eyes and inducing me to cease opposing a treaty for his liberation that was then under discussion in the cabinet. Accordingly I went to see him; and during the visit the captive President employed all his eloquence and power of persuasion to catechize me and obtain my approval in regard to his release, concluding his long harangue by expressing his entire confidence in my good disposition to do everything that justice and humanity might demand; to all of this I responded in substance as follows: That I considered it a thing outside of all reason for him to ask me to consent to give him his liberty, while I remembered so vividly his cruel and perfidious treatment of colonel Fannin and his Georgia Battalion, having them shot in spite of the terms of their capitulation. I told him that the blood of those men clamored for vengeance. But leaving aside personal considerations, since it was natural to suppose that I might have [them] on such an occasion, considering that Fannin and those who were sacrificed with him were all my intimate friends, I expressed the necessity of demanding satisfaction, not on account of personal vengeance, but as retribution for the crime and as a just punishment for having violated the sacred laws of modern warfare, stating at the same time that I would consider myself but scarcely less culpable than he if I should permit such a grave crime to pass without the deserved punishment.

In answer to this Santa Anna told me that he was not to blame for this; that all the hatred and ill will engendered by that mournful event should justly fall upon the superior authorities who commanded him; this he affirmed in a most solemn manner, as if he were on oath, that the ordering of the execution of Colonel Fannin and those that were with him had not been made of his own free will, but in obedience to the Supreme Mexican government, that had decreed the death penalty against all the American volunteers, denouncing them as pirates and commanding him to treat them as such anywhere they could be found, adding at the same time that if he had disobeyed the execution of said decree, he would have been punished for it and relieved of the command of the army. To pardon Fannin was to ruin himself.

In order to admit such a weak excuse and not at all rational in extenuation of conduct so atrocious, it would be necessary to lose common sense, and consequently I responded to the criminal Chief in the following terms;—that no one is obliged to commit any crime violating the laws of God, of humanity, and of the most solemnly pledged faith, in obedience to an arbitrary, cruel and treacherous government; and that I could not understand how an honorable man could do it with the mere object in view of holding his public office and to fulfill his ambition.

Under any point of view whatsoever the shooting of Fannin and his companions, after celebrating a treaty with them in which their lives were granted them, was nothing less than perfidy and assassination—two crimes of the greatest atrocity—that could neither be excused nor pardoned simply because they were committed to please a corrupt government, or because it was necessary to promote the aggrandizement of an ambitious man. Such excuse instead of being a justification is rather an insult to the human understanding, and an aggravation of the crime.— Moreover, I said to him, reprisal is not always improper

in war.— On the contrary, it is the duty of the government to have recourse to it whenever there may be some well-founded reason for believing that it will have the effect of preventing cruelty and crime, and holding war within its own proper and legal bounds, and without doubt this principle could not be applied or practiced with more propriety and justice than against the one who lends himself as an instrument of a tyrannical government in order to carry out his infernal purposes.

At this point, as if by silent consent, we dropped the subject and spoke of other matters less personal and more agreeable to both parties. Having finished our conversation I said good day to the prisoner and left for home. This was the last meeting between us with the exception of one other which took place near the village of Columbia, where the government had been moved, likewise the prisoner.

While Congress was holding its first session in that village, I was visited late at night by Mr Stephen F. Austin presenting the respects of Santa Anna and supplicating me in his name to go to see him that very night as he had some important matters to discuss with me. At first I asked Mr. Austin to please excuse me for it was very late and the weather bad; but being informed by Austin that he as well as Santa Anna desired me to go, I consented at once to accompany him. Upon arriving at the lodging of the prisoner we (Mr. Austin and I) found him in good humor although he had been anxiously awaiting our arrival. Very soon his purpose was expressed. It was nothing but to move me to compassion by his supplications and to persuade me to exercise my influence in favor of his being set free, directing a letter to the Army which was then the principal obstacle to his leaving the country.

It would be useless to state the various arguments that the unfortunate general employed on this occasion in order to secure my favor, since it would be only a repetition of those he had used many times before. Suffice it to say that the hope which he had for carrying out his object with me was founded on the consideration that on his arrival in Mexico he would immediately recognize the Independence of Texas and establish the Rio Bravo from its mouth to its source as the national boundary between the two countries. I listened to him with due attention, and when he had finished his discourse which was somewhat long and animated, I answered in the following manner, which was in substance, that without doubting his word or having any lack of confidence in his desire to comply faithfully with his promises that I could do no less than suggest that on his return to Mexico he could not verify it, however much he might be disposed to fulfill his word and to do all that honor might demand, nevertheless, it was more than probable that the power to carry out his desires would be lacking to him because it was well known that the sentiments of the Nation were opposed to the recognition of the independence of Texas and that any treaty whatsoever made with him with this purpose in view would not receive the ratification of Congress, without which no treaty would be valid or have force. He made light of this difficulty and disposed of it in a summary manner. These are his most memorable words. "The Army," he said—"is the government of Mexico, and I am at its head."—"Do not speak thus"—I said to him—"When in Velasco you en-

deavored to excuse yourself for the assassination of Fannin and his companions; then you said that Congress was the supreme power of the Nation and you as a subaltern had not done anything except to obey your superior whose punishment you had reason to fear.—

Here there was a pause in the conversation. After some moments I spoke and directing myself to Santa Anna I said, Sir all the considerations which you have presented in favor of your immediate freedom, I have heard before, and after considering them well and duly weighing their importance I have given my decision in this matter and I cannot perceive any reason for changing my opinion or revoking what I have done. My decree is the same. Nevertheless, if you have other new suggestions to present I shall be ready to hear them. The General stated that he had nothing more to say, therefore Mr. Austin and I prepared to leave, which we did in a few moments, not without bidding the captive President good-bye in civil and polite manner. Mr. Austin asked me Did you hear what Santa Anna said about you upon leaving the door? I answered no, what was it? He said, responded Austin "There goes the shadow of Farias. I do not know what the prisoner meant by this, but if his object was to insult me, and lower me by comparing me with that celebrated and patriotic republican who had frequently embarrassed Santa Anna in his ambitious designs, I cannot take offence at such a fruitless effort, rather I consider it a compliment to be compared to a man like Farias who in the midst of almost universal corruption, could preserve a character without stain and leave in the history of his country, a name that will adorn it always. Such was the Vice President Valentin Gomez Farias, an honorable man and a true friend of his country.

There is hardly a crime that this man has not committed; neither has he been known to practice a single virtue. Nevertheless in the midst of his numerous depravities, I do not deny that he possessed some exterior qualities that are agreeable and pleasing, such as courtesy, politeness and vivacity which in him, however, is only cunning, refined, cultivated, perfected, in order to deceive the world and promote his ambitious purposes.

He was born in Vera Cruz of a family of the middle class, respectable, but poor. His father was a notary public of Vera Cruz, whose fortune was too small to give his son an education outside of reading, and writing. Of grammar he knows nothing and for this reason it is not strange that he makes so many grammatical errors in his conversation. The official documents and other writings that have been published over his name and signature, were not written by him; but are the productions of his secretaries and of men of literary talent whom he has always had around him and who at last were paid with ingratitude. I do not wish to say that he has no influence, on the contrary he is an uncommonly gifted speaker, but it is said by those who know him well that his language is seldom correct and never elegant and refined.

From this humble beginning he arose to the most important and exalted positions; and for many years has guided and directed the destiny of his country, submerging it in interminable difficulties until he dragged it almost to the verge of ruin.

The world often attributes luck to talent. This, however, is a mistaken idea, although it has come to be general and prevails almost universally. He who does not care by what means he succeeds in rising to power, in amassing great fortunes or accomplishing any enterprise, will always be considered by the masses as somewhat superior to the ordinary person; and he is indeed, in many instances; but it is not necessarily in regard to the mental faculties; because ingenuity is not always indispensable in order to assure a happy ending. This, especially in political affairs, depends more on the moral and physical qualities than on the intellectual. Frequently passion and intellect are confused one with the other; while in reality there are no two things more dissimilar in their nature. A fool may have vehement passions, and on the strength of them can work more effectively in many cases, than the wise without them. Revolutions are born of men's passions, and are not the result of thought or mature reflection, and therefore one does not need to know much to start a revolution; to accomplish this, it is enough to have a strong spirit and great daring, and he who possesses these qualities, however limited his knowledge, can always place himself at the head of affairs and direct the tumult. The good or bad ending of a revolution does not depend so much on the wisdom as on the virtue of him who directs it.

Talent does not always determine great enterprises, because this gift is nothing but a phosphoric light without heat and incapable of making much of itself; but passion is a volcanic fire whose blaze can devastate and consume cities and spacious plains. It does not ask much help of talent, because of its own energy it can achieve all it aspires to. A man of active and vigorous physique possessing an iron will, unlimited ambition and untiring perseverance, what is there he cannot do with these qualities? And besides these, if he is destitute of all moral principles in order to keep himself in his course; without conscientious scruples, without shame, cruel, treacherous and sly he cannot conceive of any enterprise for personal aggrandizement unattainable for him.

Projects, it matters not how great or how impossible they appear, are never beyond the reach of a man endowed with such a character, it matters not how limited is his understanding. Who will dare to compare the intellect of Daniel Webster with that of General Jackson? Nevertheless, with all his powerful talents he could not elevate himself to the Presidency, while Jackson with only common intellect could by the strength of his violent and dominant passions, raise himself to absolute power and place his foot on the throat of the Nation. Having in mind the destruction that we have tried to outline, you will see at once the real ability [?] stimulated and incited by the passions, can never produce any palpable effects in the political business of the world, nor lead its possessors to power and glory.

From his most tender years Santa Anna dedicated himself to military service, without any other object than to receive the salary of a cadet in order to support himself.

At the beginning of the revolution he began his prowess in the service of the King of Spain against Independence, without making himself of note until the year 1813 in the expedition that he made with General Arredondo against the republicans, under the command

of General Alvares Toledo, who were occupying Texas; but not by any glorious acts as a soldier, but by the most corrupt conduct and by the most subtle immorality. Gambling was his favorite passion and in order to satisfy it, he did not fail to practice deceit, tricks nor theft.

One day at Bexar he found himself without money on account of gambling. Loving his vice more than he abhorred crime or feared public hatred, he forged the signature of the General, placed an order for the delivery to himself of the sum of \$500 from the military treasury; the treasurer paid it and the money was gone in a few moments.

When the theft was discovered they arrested him, and also the other petty official named Saldaña whom he deceived, sending him to get the money, and charges were made against them. Saldaña was vindicated, and Santa Anna was to be taken from Bexar to Monterrey as a prisoner. The women by their pleadings, appeased the anger of Arredondo and the case was allowed to rest, the criminal being left without vindication and without punishment. This impunity encouraged the immorality of young Santa Anna, and some time after he repeated his achievements forging the signature of the old, respectable Don Antonio Quintero for a check of \$6000.— The crime being discovered he was shut up in prison and without doubt this time he would have paid, the penalty for his crime, if [it had not been for] the great kindness of Quintero who went so far as to take great pains to prevent the trial taking place, which he secured with much hard work, in spite of his animosity towards Arredondo. Returned to his liberty, which was effected by the generosity of the very one whom he had offended, his reward was to go from Monterrey to a near-by town in company with another petty official, who today plays a great part in this republic, dealing in documents of Santa Anna's fabrication [?]. These two were going together with commissions to look for substitutes for the Battalion of regulars of Vera Cruz. As those people did not like to change the plow for the gun they entered into transactions with Don Antonio who sold, (as a great favor,) to the poor ranchmen exemptions from service, receiving from some ten dollars, others twelve or fifteen according to their means. These and other acts were so scandalous that finally Genl Arredondo had to take firm steps against Farfulla (a nickname by which Santa Anna was known at that time), and against two other brother officers. All three were sent to the Castle of Uluá. The charges brought against Santa Anna for forgery and theft were in the archives of the General Commander of the interior States of the East until Don Felipe de la Garza as general commander by agreement with his worthy friend, Santa Anna, destroyed them, and this is the reason why Santa Anna did not proceed against him at the time of the expedition of Barradas.

No. 2415. CONDITION OF THE STATE OF TEXAS. LAMAR

[Fragment. Translation from the Spanish]

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

With more than ordinary pleasure I extend to you felicitations, and congratulate you on the present condition of our State. Its population and resources are increasing daily. Health, wealth and peace shed

their benign influences over the land more favored than any other country whatever—enjoying almost all that the heart can desire, a delicious climate, a fertile soil, and liberty without precedent, we should express our thanks to the Supreme Being from whom emanate all these blessings, Every branch of industry is well rewarded and prosperity reigns everywhere. This condition, so encouraging to our country, inspires the hope that soon the epoch will arrive in which the State of Texas can assume among the other States of the Union that elevated rank of which it is deserving, no less on account of its widespread territory, and the mineral wealth which sleeps in the bosom of the mountains, than on account of the enterprise, the culture and the virtue which prevail among its inhabitants— Who that has a spark of patriotism in his heart, does not rejoice at the prospect of its future greatness? The gift of prophecy is not lacking to foretell the splendid future which awaits it.—

No. 2416. SANTA ANNA THE MODERN NERO. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish] [Richmond? Texas 184—?]

Let us turn our eyes towards any of those bloody tyrants whatsoever whose assassinations blacken the pages of ancient history—Nero, for example—and let him be brought to judgment for the multiplicity of his iniquities against God and nature. Behold him in all the pride of his power; the wheels of his chariot grind the bones of his enemies, and the banner of extermination is stretched before the eyes of an unfortunate people. Contemplate him in his hours of rejoicing—the lament of the widow is the music of the festive Salon, and the tear of the orphan the nectar of the banquet.— Contemplate him in his moments of cruelty and anger—he tramples with his heel of iron the bosom of beauty, and drinks the blood of the tender infant. Suppose that he should be judged before us in all the fullness of his iniquity, with the accumulated crime of forty years hanging over his head and mocking at us— Suppose that it could be proved, that the history of all his life has only been a continued series of carnage, rapine and desolation, and that even in the midst of a burning City, he was able to employ himself in the diversion of music and march over the prostrate bodies of the dying and of the dead because of his instinctive love of cruelty and of blood? I ask in the name of outraged nature and of insulted justice, what shall be our judgment against a demon so atrocious? Every virtuous emotion, every manly sentiment, every ennobling principle of the heart, proclaim with voice of thunder— instant death and eternal shame. But let us suppose, that in opposition to all the eloquence of nature, we whisper in the ear of the proud criminal that he possessed gold, power and dominion, and that notwithstanding the fact that his crimes were many and great, he could still elude the punishment that his villainy deserved, provided he should give us gold in order to pay our public debt, provided that he will aggrandize our national boundaries and should elevate us in the balance of power— I ask in the name of the public good, what judgment would mankind form of such a transaction? What other [judgment], except that we had stained the luster of our national shield, sacrificing honor for the public welfare?

Now then permit me to ask what difference there is in this imaginary case, and the true one which is under consideration? Who is Santa Anna but the Nero of today? Is he not the enemy of all virtue? Is it not he who has trampled down public liberty? Is it not he who has feasted on human blood, depopulated towns, violated treaties? And does he not present himself before us, as the invader of our country, and the bloody butcher of our friends and brothers?— Why then vacillate in giving him the punishment which his deeds demand. Negotiating with him for his life and liberty, do we not make it evident to the whole world, that our abhorrence of the crime is subordinate to our attachment to our interest; and that we are soon to drown the course of justice for certain political advantages, which we could so easily acquire by our arms, and which I fear even after all negotiation, we shall have to buy and maintain with our valor. Of little merit is that political dignity purchased at the price of honor. I am certain that there is not a valiant man whose faithful sabre flashed like a meteor on the plains of San Jacinto, who knew that his loyal sword drank the blood of his enemy in vain, when he hears that the principal object of his vengeance has been permitted to buy his life and to leave the country in liberty and peace. It will be useless to speak to him in regard to Independence and national rights, as long as the bones of his assassinated brethren lie bleaching on the prairies unavenged. Treble the advantages acquired by this negotiation will be considered of little merit and without value, when weighed against that noble and elevated resentment which the Soldier feels for the outrages received. On the day of the battle the stirring-animated cry was "Alamo"— And why? Because it was known that the murderer of the Alamo was then in the field. He it was for whom they searched. It was not against the poor and weak instruments of his tyranny that we fought. They fell, it is true, before our avenging blows as grass before the sickle of the reaper, but it was because they hindered our advance against the audacious Moloch.— Across a forest of lances, and a hail of grape and canister, we threw ourselves upon the insolent offender, and the exultant spirits of the Georgia Battalion, acclaimed their hour of vengeance fulfilled. Behold a frightful vision called policy places itself between the victims and the avenging blow and covers the assassin with a piece of parchment and a little sealing wax.

No. 2417. LIFE OF SANTA ANNA. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]²¹ [Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

PREFACE.

In bringing to light the life of General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna it will be necessary to state that we enter upon the work with pleasure; not only because it is to be a brief summary of the history of one of the most unfortunate lands of the new world and an example of the abuse of power which one of its sons had made, but also because it is written by a skillful pen and with all of the precision and exactness of historical truth.

²¹Translated by Miss Katherine Elliott, archivist, Texas State Library, 1918-1925.

The author is General Mirabeau B. Lamar. Those who are acquainted with him know that reason and impartiality have always dictated his literary works; and that, although born in a foreign country he writes our language properly and correctly. Again, his reputation as a distinguished writer would be sufficient to present him to our readers in an advantageous light, did his name not already belong to the future by occupying a page in the political history of the American union, not only as an able statesman and an orator of genius and enthusiasm, but also as a valiant champion of the rights and independence of Texas.

From its beginning the work was intended for the people of Mexico and was carried on in moments in which this country was fighting against tyranny, without any other object than that of aiding its sacred cause [by] revealing to the nation the true character of its despotic oppressor. With this purpose in view, the work not only was written in Spanish, but it was written, as you will see, in a simple style, adapted to the majority of readers, and without any literary pretension. The protagonist of the work having been later expelled from the country, the author ceased his work, and his friends could not persuade him to resume it. It is to be lamented that he did not continue it, for the reason that no one could better trace that part of our hero's career which relates to the invasion of Texas than General Lamar. Under these circumstances, after procuring the manuscript for the purpose of reading it, and with the conviction that its publication, even in its incomplete state, could serve the cause of truth, we have succeeded in obtaining the permission of the author to give it to the public on our own responsibility.

Lovers of the country in which Cortes raised the standard of civilization at the sound of thundering artillery, having sympathy for the people who have for three centuries dragged the heavy chains of an unjust monarchy, and being desirous of sending up the cry of hope and courage to those who aspire to destroy the power which the sword of the soldier and the precept of the priest still have in Mexico, as a lamentable consequence of its past condition, we do not doubt for a moment that the present book with its philosophic tendency and historical exactness will be of importance and general usefulness in a nation where the press, in scorn of republican institutions, is subjected in permanent slavery to the imperial will of an ignorant and egotistical clergy, and to the mercenary caprice of mandarins.

The work is divided into two parts. The first opens philosophically and logically with the beginning of the revolution in Mexico, and closes patriotically and gloriously with its independence of Spanish despotism. The second part contains a detailed narration of the life and deeds of General Santa Anna from his early years to the beginning of the invasion of Texas, and is enlivened by numerous anecdotes which often bring a smile to the lips. The author does not pretend to conceal the hatred with which his hero inspires him; but one cannot doubt the truth and exactness of every particular in the book in view of the fact that they have all been culled from the most authentic documents and most creditable sources.

As a timely appendix to the work we have thought proper to conclude by copying the letter which General Lamar wrote to the Presi-

dent and Cabinet of the Republic of Texas relative to the political policy which should be adopted regarding General Santa Anna and other prisoners. The author at that time performed the duties of Secretary of War, in which office he gave more than one proof of his diplomatic ability and patriotism, in that way beginning the brilliant political career which later elevated him to the Presidency. The letter is not only a proof of the firmness with which General Lamar has always sustained his principles, and of his convictions of Santa Anna's crimes; but it is also a model of its kind in which severity of logic graciously entwined with rhetoric combine to make the author's genius sparkle as the light that shines through the windows of an illumined cathedral.

The reader could do no less than appreciate the merit of the work in general and the resemblance to the characters which, delineated with accuracy and vigor, appear in it; although he is surprised, as also are we, to realize that Santa Anna, by belonging to all political parties and employing calumny and treachery to satisfy his thirst for gold and his desire for power, has ruled the destinies of Mexico for twenty years while that country, engulfed in ignominy and degradation, has not taken a single forward step on the road of improvement and progress.

In the service of the Spanish monarch at one time, later under the flag of freedom, afterwards converted into a Centralist, a Democrat during the insurrections, a despot when he became President, without genius, education or military strategy, contrite in the Church today and draining the cup tomorrow, in the gaming house or in the brothel house, a coward and traitor always, General Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna has more than once represented the beautiful country in which he entered the world, with the sword in one hand and the image of the martyr of Judea in the other, as the executioner of his brothers; he has obstructed the path of liberty with human hecatombs; he has scattered ignorance and fanaticism in turn; he has appropriated the public funds; he has sold offices and decorations at auction; he has imprinted his unclean lips upon helpless beauty; he has outraged the sanctity of matrimony; he has conspired to adorn his degraded brow with an imperial crown; he has demoralized the army by sacrificing the veteran commanders; and finally, he has permitted foreigners to devastate his country by taking possession of its provinces and by tearing down the flag of the Fatherland with profane hands.

Sad, sad indeed would have been the fate of Mexico, if the government of General Santa Anna had continued a few more years. To ask beneficent and wholesome measures for the nation of his administration would have been to hope that the storm would respect the rose of summer, or to pray that the pilferer would protect the white dove. Fortunately, despots fall at the impulse of an emboldened people, and it has not been very long since General Santa Anna, despite the fact that he has always maintained his government by the force of arms, has learned this truth, and, like the hyena which flees and hides in the intricate wood after he has trampled the beautiful, happy vales and spattered his pursuers with blood, is seeking refuge in another clime.

Perhaps the day is not far distant when the beautiful Venus of Ana-

huac will arise, shedding the light of prosperity and fortune upon Mexico, and this country, freed from Spanish despotism and in fraternal union with Cuba and Puerto Rico, may form, as the illustrious and republican Count of Pozoz Dulces says, "the peaceful barrier which is to separate North and South America in the future, situated, as it is, between two civilizations and two nationalities, not antagonistic and inimicable, but rival and progressive in all the sublime conquests of humanity."

Among other things, we hope that the true patriots of Mexico will accept this work as a weak attempt against tyranny and as proof of the sympathy which we feel for the country of the Hídalgos and Morelos.

CHAPTER I.

Origin of the Mexican Revolution. Hídalgo's calls to arms at Dolores. Allende and others unite with him. Capture of Guanajuato. March to Mexico. Arrival at Valladolid. The reinforcing and receiving of more than a million pesos. Hídalgo proclaimed Commander-in-Chief. He dons the military uniform. Appointment of a number of commanders. Hídalgo enters Toluca with fifty thousand men. The Viceroy sends Trujillo and Iturbide against Hídalgo. Battle of Las Cruces and the overthrow of Trujillo. Hídalgo advances to the Capital. Sudden retreat. He encounters Calleja. Battle of Aculeo. Hídalgo defeated. He goes to Guadalajara. Allende in Guanajuato. Battle of Marfil. Allende joins Hídalgo in Guadalajara. Calleja enters Guanajuato. He executes fourteen thousand inhabitants in the public square. Hídalgo fortifies the bridge at Calderón. Calleja advances to meet him. Battle at Calderón. Total defeat of the Independent forces. Hídalgo retires to Saltillo. He delivers the command to Rayon. He leaves with Allende and others for Texas. Elizondo betrays him at Acatita de Baján. He is captured and executed together with others.

LIFE OF GENERAL ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA.

INTRODUCTION

CHAPTER I.

THE MEXICAN REVOLUTION FROM ITS BEGINNING TO THE DEATH OF HIDALGO.

Before occupying ourselves immediately with the life of our hero, we believe that it will not be out of place to present to our readers a preliminary sketch of the Mexican revolution. This will serve as an introduction to several characters who will figure more or less in the course of the biography which we propose to write. In this part of the work we will not offer anything which is new or original. We aspire only to the merit of making our compilation accurate, brief, and clear.

The Mexican revolution was not the daughter of the free will of the people. It originated with the ingratitude and jealousy of the mother country. Although there had existed for more than three centuries countless causes which would provoke colonies to take up arms, the people, far from meditating such a movement, had remained faithful to their allegiance to the Peninsula until 1808, and had sympathized profoundly with the mother country in the misfortunes of that epoch. The imprisonment of the royal family by Napoleon and the occupation

of Madrid by Murat caused general indignation in Mexico, and none thought of availing themselves of the misfortunes and tumult in the Peninsula to shake off the colonial yoke and proclaim independence. On the contrary, there was universal enthusiasm for the mother country, and large sums were raised and sent to assist in the war which the *Junta de Seville* had declared against France. We do not give the Mexicans any credit for this mistaken devotion towards their oppressors, but rather we believe that they deserve blame and censure for having adhered so long to a power which had cruelly trampled upon them when they should have turned their backs upon them two centuries earlier. We mention the act of adherence to that power only as an example of the blind infatuation of the creoles of that epoch. Loyalty and submission from force of custom and habit had come to be second nature to them; and, instead of vindicating their rights and aspiring to national independence, they forgot their own injuries in their noble resentment against those who fought against Spain. As a result of the ingratitude to which they were subjected, they awakened a short time afterwards from this misleading devotion.

The events at Bayona filled Spain with confusion and anarchy. There was no firm or permanent government in the country. Fernando VII, Murat, and the Supreme *Junta de Seville* all gave orders to the Colonies, and these orders were so contradictory in nature that it was impossible for the Viceroy of Mexico to execute them, and very embarrassing to him to know whom to obey. In this dilemma the Viceroy Iturrigaray, supported by the Council of Mexico and many of the most illustrious citizens of the Capital, proposed the formation of a provisional government in imitation of the mother country [to be] composed of representatives of the provinces, with a view to avoiding the horrors of anarchy which threatened the country. No one could doubt that [this government] was dominated by the purest motives, and that it had no desire to be disloyal to the mother country; but the measure, in spite of its usefulness, awakened the jealous opposition of the peninsular Spaniards in the Capital because the plan was popular and democratic in nature, and called together the Creoles and the Europeans in general council. This was offensive to the latter, not only because it placed the Spaniards and Creoles on a level, but even more so because it recognized the right of a people to look after themselves in time of danger. That the people should think and work for themselves under any circumstances was the greatest of all treason, and in order to drown such dangerous doctrine in its infancy and to punish those who wished to introduce it into public affairs, the Spanish residents of the Capital seized the Viceroy, Don José Iturrigaray, at midnight on the 15th of September, 1808, and sent him and his family as prisoners to Spain.

This violent measure against a public official who had committed no crime other than that of respecting the natural rights of the Mexicans and of working for the good of the nation, could do no less than open the eyes of the Creoles with respect to the inveterate hate which the native Spaniards felt towards them; and Spain's approbation of the outrage of the subsequent treatment which was given the unfortunate Iturrigaray,—and the persecution of those who had favored the plan, together with the honors and presents which they lavished upon those

who had arrested the Viceroy,—all showed very clearly how little the latter nation considered the rights, safety, and welfare of Mexico. For the purpose of assisting the Peninsula out of the chaos in which it found itself, and of establishing something similar to order and government, several of the provinces had formed administrative *Juntas*; but when the same thing was attempted in Mexico under similar circumstances, it was denounced and punished as a rebellion. That which was patriotism in Spain was treason in the Colonies. The absolute disregard of justice and humanity, which this malignant distinction manifested, engendered the first thought of revolution and convinced the Mexicans of the necessity of resorting to force in order to protect themselves and vindicate their rights. The generous sentiments which had been entertained for the king and his cause were suddenly converted into mortal hatred, and the desire to protect their rights and avenge their wrongs took deep root in the heart of the nation. In a short time their vengeance broke out into open warfare.

Such was the immediate cause of the revolution. There can be no doubt that Mexico would have declared her independence in a few years, if the events of 1808 had not taken place, because it was not possible for Spain to maintain her dominion in a country which was growing so rapidly in strength, knowledge, and resources. That which would have arrived with the practice of prudence and justice was accelerated in the manner which we have just indicated.

The first cry of alarm was given on the night of the 16th of September 1810, in the town of Dolores, by the priest, Don Miguel Hidalgo y Costilla, a man of superior intellect and irreproachable character, who possessed many noble qualities and who was loved by all who knew him. He had formed an extensive conspiracy to shake off the yoke of Spain, but on the eve of its execution a canon of Valladolid named Iturriaga betrayed him revealing the plan on his death bed to a priest named Gil who lived at Querétaro. This hastened Hidalgo's movements and compelled him to enter the field ahead of time. Allende, Aldama, and Abasolo, who were captains in the Spanish army and natives of the town of Miguel el Grande, where Allende had a small force at his command, all united. These conspirators would have fallen into the hands of the Government, had it not been for the secret warning given them by the wife of the mayor, Dominguez, who had been appointed to arrest them. There was no time then to spare. The standard of independence was immediately raised, bearing the device "death to the Spaniards," and in a short time it was surrounded by hordes of ignorant unrestrained Indians who rejoiced in the opportunity of having revenge upon a people who for three hundred years had trampled upon their unfortunate race. At the head of this disorganized multitude of almost twenty thousand men, armed with picks, sticks, clubs, knives, and other mining and farming implements, Hidalgo marched against Guanajuato, a rich and populous city. He arrayed his tumultuous troops in the front of the city, and demanded its surrender, promising that the Spaniards' lives would be spared on condition that they should offer no opposition. This proposal having been rejected by the Governor Riana, Hidalgo took the place by assault on the 28th of September, and in its capture he obtained great sums of money which he lavished upon his barbarous followers, paying them

at the rate of a peso a day. Here were committed the greatest scenes of cruelty and abuse. The city was sacked for three days, and one Spaniard barely escaped the vengeance of the infuriated Indians, who could not be restrained.

From Guanajuato Hidalgo started for the Capital on the 10th of October, travelling by the road to Valladolid, which place he reached on the 17th, having had several slight engagements on the way. He was received with the most enthusiastic demonstrations of joy by the inhabitants, who reinforced him with two regiments of militia and gave him more than a million pesos. Withdrawing to Indiaparapeo, he was there proclaimed Commander-in-Chief of the Mexican forces on the 24th of October and he then pulled off his priestly robes and donned the military uniform. Here Allende, Aldama, Jiménez, Abasolo, Arias, Ocón, and the two Martínez brothers were appointed generals. Among the new recruits there was one, the celebrated Morelos, who afterwards attained high rank and great distinction. By this time Hidalgo's army had increased to more than fifty thousand men. At the head of this army he started to Toluca, a distance of eleven leagues from the City of Mexico, where he arrived on the 28th of October.

These movements caused the Royalists great alarm, which was further increased by the rapid progress of the revolution in other parts, several of the provinces having revolted. But the new Viceroy, Don Francisco Javier Venegas, who had been installed only two days before the war cry was sounded at Dolores, displayed great firmness in his measures against the insurgents [in] fortifying the city and inspiring the European population with courage. He was an ignorant and cruel man, without political or military ability, but he possessed considerable activity, energy, and courage. Taking advantage of the superstition of the people, he invoked the curse of the Church upon the insurgents. The Archbishop of Mexico excommunicated them en masse, declaring them heretics and cursing them in body and in soul. The ceremony had its effect; it terrorized the timid and ignorant ones, and seriously decreased the popularity of the cause; but, nevertheless, these threats did not have any influence on Hidalgo's troops, for as he himself belonged to the priesthood, he knew how to turn against his adversaries their own thrusts. In order to enhance the effect, Venegas appealed to the image of the Virgin de los Remedios; he threw his sceptre at her feet, imploring her to take the reins of government in her hands and save the country. However, he did not entirely confide the security of the city to the Virgin, but he sent Colonel Trujillo with two thousand men, accompanied by Augustine de Iturbide, who was then a lieutenant in the service of the King, to hold back the army which was approaching. The two forces met each other on the 30th of October in a place called Las Cruces, and the result was the defeat of Trujillo who, in a report which he sent to Venegas, boasted of having shown a flag of truce, and after having demanded and received said flag, he ordered those who carried the flag to be shot, thus freeing himself, as he said, of them and of his promises.

After this battle, Hidalgo advanced upon the Capital and arrayed his army within sight of the City. The Government forces were found scattered in various parts of the country, while the troops which re-

mained in the City (about two thousand men) did not exceed the number of Creoles who were ready to unite with the insurgents in case they made an attack. Under these circumstances the capture of the Capital would have been inevitable, if a skillful officer had attacked it vigorously. A decisive blow at this particular crisis would have ended the contest and liberated the nation; but for some reason which has never been satisfactorily explained, Hidalgo, instead of attacking the city, began a sudden retirement toward Guanajuato. In his disorderly march he suddenly met Calleja who had just arrived from San Luis Potosi, greatly fatigued, with ten thousand men. The two armies met on the 7th of November at Aculeo, and after an obstinate battle of several hours, the disciplined troops routed the disorganized multitude, and the unfortunate Indians, surrounded and rushed upon in confusion, were assassinated in great numbers. Hidalgo with the rest of his army went to Guanajuato, and from there to Guadalajara, leaving Allende with a small force in the former place. Calleja continued his march toward Guanajuato and met Allende near that city in a narrow passage at Marfil where they engaged in battle; but the latter, not being able to fight his adversary, retired towards Guadalajara to join Hidalgo. In the meanwhile, Calleja entered Guanajuato, took possession of the place without opposition, gathered, according to certain reports, fourteen thousand men, women, and children in the public square and put them to death, taking this means of killing them, as the butcher of old Spain said, "in order to save his powder"—a horrible act for which the Government of Spain afterwards rewarded him by appointing him Viceroy in place of Venegas on the 4th of March 1813.

Notwithstanding the fact that Hidalgo's losses increased to nearly thirty thousand men, his army still approximated eighty thousand, and it had progressed some in organization and discipline. He reached Guadalajara on the 14th of November and was received with general enthusiasm. He determined to stand firm here and offer battle to the enemy. With this [purpose] in view he fortified the bridge at Calderón, about eleven miles from the city, where he decided that the action should take place. He had hope of making reparation for his former disasters. He made a speech to the army, telling the Indians the importance of not becoming disorganized as on former occasions. Satisfied with his preparations, he calmly awaited the arrival of his adversary. Meanwhile, Calleja, after remaining six weeks in Guanajuato and increasing his forces, began his march toward Guadalajara; and on the 16th of January, 1811, he reached the passage of the bridge at Calderón, where his opponent awaited him. On the following day a bloody battle took place which ended in the complete defeat and dispersion of the independent forces. The Indians fled in all directions and were pursued and killed by the thousands. Among those killed in this battle was the Count of la Cadena, second in command in Calleja's army. In reward for this victory, this inhuman monster (Calleja) was made Count of Calderón by the *Junta de Seville*.

Hidalgo succeeded in retiring with four thousand men to Saltillo where he put Rayon in command while he, Allende, Abasolo, and others, with a small escort, continued their march toward the Rio Grande with the object, so it is stated, of organizing an army in the Province

of Texas. Hidalgo, having obtained and taken with him three hundred thousand dollars with which he intended to buy arms and other necessities of war, sent Don Bernardo Gutierrez de Lara to the United States for that purpose, and also to cultivate friendly relations with the Government and to request its aid. But very shortly after the departure of that agent those unfortunate commanders and their companions were delivered over to the enemy at a farm near Saltillo, called Acatita de Bajan, by the traitor, Ignacio Elizondo, in whom Hidalgo had placed unlimited confidence. They were arrested and captured on the 21st of March, 1811, and some fifty of the party were executed at that time. Hidalgo and Allende were taken to Chihuahua where they were shot by the order of Salcedo; Allende on the 20th of June, and Hidalgo on the 27th of July.

CHAPTER II.

Rayón continues the war after the execution of Hidalgo. Remarks relative to the conduct of the Royalists and Independents. Names of some of the principal leaders of both parties. Reflections. Rayón creates a national *Junta* at Zitacuaro. The *Junta* proposes to continue the war under the principles of civilized nations. The Royalists reject the proposal. Calleja takes Zitacuaro. His cruelties and crimes. The *Junta* escapes to Zultepec. Morelos. His operations. He advances toward the City of Mexico. Calleja besieges him at Cuatla Amilpas. Morelos is forced by hunger to evacuate the place. He escapes with his army. Cruelties and crimes of Calleja in taking the place. Morelos organizes his troops at Izucar. He captures Chilapa, Tehuacán, and Orizaba. He defeats Regules. He takes Acapulco. He organizes a national congress at Chilpancingo. He goes with Morelos to Apatzingan. At Valladolid. He publishes a declaration of independence and makes a constitution. Morelos is compelled to abandon Valladolid. Defeat and imprisonment at Matamoros. Capture of Morelos. His death. The revolution weakens. Bernardo Gutierrez's operations. Bravo escorts the Congress to Tehuacán. Teran dissolves it. Disagreement among the leaders. Arrival of Apodaca. The moderation of his measures. The war ends. Arrival of Mina. His career and death. Guerrero still continues in the field of battle.

CHAPTER II.

FROM THE DEATH OF HIDALGO TO THE END OF THE FIRST REVOLUTION.

The revolution did not die with Hidalgo. On the contrary, the contest continued with greater energy and progress than before. Guerrilla chiefs arose in several of the provinces, and in a short time communication between the Capital and Vera Cruz was destroyed. From the death of Hidalgo to the glorious end of the Revolution there elapsed an interval of more than ten years. It is impossible, in a summary such as this, to attempt to sketch even briefly, the many battles which took place during that period, much less to enter upon a relation of the events and interesting circumstances which were connected with them. We believe it most proper to cast a general glance at the principal operations embracing some of the most important events and permitting the reader, if he desires a more complete knowledge of the subject, to have recourse to the works of Zavala, Robinson, Ward and others from whom we have taken a great part of our material. In the first place, we will present a cast of the principal actors who distinguished themselves most in the great tragedy among both antagonists. We call it a tragedy, because the fight, instead of being carried on

under the accepted laws of modern warfare, was nothing more than a series of human butcheries, rapes and desolations. Probably no other struggle of the present age has been carried out with greater ferocity, perfidy and cruelty. The Royalists say that the insurgents gave the first example of these cruelties; that the war began with the cry of "Death to the Spaniards"; and that the principle was carried to the extreme in the capture of Guanajuato. This is true except for the following reason. It happened thus, not because of any deliberate intention, but because of imperious necessity. The insurgents had been discovered, and there was no possible means of avoiding the vengeance of the Government except by employing the Indians, whose sympathies and services could be obtained, only by inciting them to avenge their own injuries. Bringing them into the fight was therefore an act of self preservation; and the excesses committed afterwards were born of the impossibility of subjecting and restraining their race when once aroused. It should be remembered that the insurgent chiefs petitioned the Government several times to abandon that barbarous system and carry on war according to the usages of civilized nations. This proposal in favor of moderation and humanity was always received with contempt and followed by some act of even greater atrocity. It can be further said in favor of the insurgents that they did not always work under the principle of reprisal; that at least they pardoned the prisoners and abstained from all violence when they had been provoked to commit it; while the Royalists, on the other hand, never lost an opportunity of assassinating their prisoners and decimating the inoffensive inhabitants of the captured towns. As a result, the attempts of Mr. Ward and other authors on the side of monarchy and despotism to stain the honor of the insurgent leaders and to lessen the atrocities of Calleja and other royalists should have no effect whatever on the impartial judgment of the world.

This necessary explanation having been made, we shall continue with our subject. The leaders on the side of Independence who continued the war after the death of Hidalgo were Rayón, Matamoros, Guerrero, Terán, the Galeanos, Victoria, Osorno, the Bravos and many other lesser celebrities, all of whom worked independently at the head of their respective forces, without recognizing any superior authority. This desultory war continued for several months until Rayón, who had begun to assume the command of the army and who was generally considered the first in command, feeling the necessity of coalition and unity of action, conceived the idea of organizing a national *Junta*, which should be recognized and obeyed by the various leaders as a central head with the authority to direct the movements of all. We shall occupy ourselves with this later.

Among the most notable leaders on the side of the King were Calleja, Cruz, Concha, Negrete, Arredondo, Echavarri, Iturbide, Bustamante, Barragán, Pedraza, Cortazar, Rincón, Andrade, Calderón and others, most of whom will appear in the biographical portion of this volume. It is sad to contemplate that some of the above mentioned leaders and several others were Mexicans, sons of the country, Creoles by birth, who should have felt as acutely as the rest the chains which the patriots were trying to break; but instead of sympathizing with their outraged country and fighting in defense of their rights, they

turned their backs upon them in favor of power, which they trampled under foot; and, with the exception of Calleja, Cruz and a few others, they were more ferocious, inhuman and cruel in the persecution of their own countrymen than the Spaniards themselves. This will not seem natural, but it is easily explained, for it is known that in all civil wars no man fights with such fierceness as the one who betrays the country of his birth and rises against the life and liberty of his fellow-country men—a crime which no one can commit without first abjuring all feeling of shame, piety and remorse, and converting himself into a monster. The scenes of horror, cruelty and crime which darken and disfigure the annals of that revolution were not due solely to the Spaniards, but many of them were committed by the Creoles themselves; and if it had not been for these, Spain would not have been able to maintain her authority in Mexico a single month. This is certain and undeniable; and the reader will see in the course of our narration that after the independence of the nation was assured, the same Creoles who committed the greatest atrocities in the Revolution undertook to establish a despotic government. They were always opposed to the freedom of the people, and they were the authors, with the Spanish royalists, of nearly all of the subsequent disgraceful events in the nation. Note this act. The *Junta*, or Central Government of Rayón was established on the 10th of September, 1811 in the town of Zitacuaro, and received the general approbation of the Creoles. It was composed of five members elected by the citizens who could come together for that purpose, Rayón being at their head. It is recalled that one of their first acts was a notable manifesto which was sent to the Viceroy, containing proposals of peace and a strong remonstrance against the sacrifice of prisoners and other acts of wanton cruelty. The only response made was an order that the manifesto should be publicly burned, and another order that a strong army should march against the place from which it had been sent. Zitacuaro was well fortified and was a natural stronghold, so that the independents had been able to hold it for more than a year against several enemy attacks; but the present attack (January 2, 1812) ended by the capture and destruction of the place after several hours of severe fighting. Calleja commanded the Spanish forces, and upon entering the public square he decimated the inhabitants, confiscated their property, and destroyed all the buildings and houses in the town with the exception of the church. The *Junta* escaped to Zultepec where it resided until the installation of a Congress which was afterwards formed at Tulancingo.

About this time the celebrated Morelos commenced to figure. At Valladolid (October 1810) Hidalgo had appointed him to the office of Captain-General for the provinces of the southwest coast, where he immediately went and organized a thousand men. On the 25th of January, 1811 he surprised and dispersed a large army under the command of Don Francisco Paris, taking 700 prisoners whom he treated humanely, and capturing 800 guns and a considerable sum of money. This was the beginning of that brilliant career which placed him at the head of the revolution and shed such glory on the Mexican arms. After marching from victory to victory, destroying and dispersing all the forces arraying against him, he finally began his march against

the Capital. Venegas, alarmed at his approach, ordered Calleja, who had just captured and destroyed Zitacuaro and who was still at that place, to march with all possible speed to the Capital to repel the invader. Calleja left for the Capital without delay and upon arrival there had a disagreement with the Viceroy which would have ended in complete hatred had he not suddenly met with Morelos, who was then at the most only a few miles from the City of Mexico. Seeing that his forces were inferior to those of Calleja and that he was being pursued by him, he fortified himself in Guanatla Amilpas and was attacked on the 19th of February, 1811, but without any decisive results. After six hours of severe fighting Calleja was compelled to retire, and, abandoning the idea of taking the place by assault, he laid siege to it in the usual manner and sustained the siege with such severity and good results that Morelos finally found himself compelled by hunger to evacuate the place. This he did on the night of the 2nd of May. The inhabitants, fearful of suffering the same fate as those at Zitacuaro, left the town with Morelos' forces but they were overtaken by Calleja and more than four thousand of them were put to the sword. Morelos meanwhile eluded the pursuit of his adversary, disbanded his troops with the order that they were to reassemble at Izucar which was then in Bravo's possession. His army disappeared in a moment as though by magic, but it reassembled two or three days later at the appointed place and Morelos found himself again ready to continue the campaign.

There is a circumstance connected with this event which is worth recording here. In the disbanding and the reunion of this army there were only seventeen who fell out; among these was the father of General Bravo. He had fallen into the hands of the enemy. His son had in his power at that time three hundred Spanish prisoners whom he offered to exchange for his father. The proposal was rejected with insult. Bravo immediately freed his prisoners in order that he might not be tempted in the agony of his suffering to put them to death in revenge for the assassination of his father. Is it not lamentable to think that a man capable of doing so noble an act should afterwards have become so degraded as to betray his friends and the best patriots of his nation? In truth, this same Bravo, as the reader will see farther on, without any reason to justify him, when he was Vice-President of the Mexican Republic several years later, conspired against Victoria for the purpose of usurping the Presidency and was one of the most active agents in the overthrow of the valiant and unfortunate Guerrero.

During this period Morelos was recognized and obeyed by all as the supreme military commander of the Republic. He had no rival in the confidence and affection of the people, and it was only necessary for him to state his will for it to be done. His influence over his troops was unlimited, and his example of activity, devotion and valor inspired the rest of the leaders, inciting them to put forth their greatest efforts. Again placing himself at the head of his troops, he left Izucar, defeated three divisions of the Spanish forces, captured in turn Chilapa, Tehuacán and Orizaba, defeated Regules at Oajaca, and shortly afterwards planted his triumphant flag at Acapulco (August 20, 1819). These were the brilliant days of the revolution when the

fame and power of Morelos were at their height. This extraordinary man did not become intoxicated with the glory of his high position, but on the contrary, he had modest pretensions and simple tastes. Superior to the other leaders in intellect, he nevertheless was not ambitious, egotistical or vain, and he devoted himself entirely to freeing his country from the chains of tyranny, and to making it happy and glorious, not coveting any reward but the consciousness of doing good. Thinking that the time had come when it was necessary to organize the civil government, not only in order to free himself from the responsibility of being the only leader of the revolution, but also in order to give stability and dignity to his operations and to attract the attention and respect of foreign powers, he called a National Congress composed of forty individuals, including the original members of Rayón's *Junta* at Zitacuaro. The Congress assembled on the 13th of September, 1813, at the town of Chilpancingo and worked with Jose Maria Liceaga as President. This body, upon being forced out of this place, removed to Apatzingan in the Province of Valladolid where it drew up a formal act of the independence of the country, and completed a constitution (October 22, 1814) which was promptly accepted by the people and was sworn to by all of the provinces in which the standard of Independence had been raised.

There can be no greater evidence of the disinterested patriotism of Morelos than the organization of this Congress. Nevertheless, the good which was expected of it was never realized. On the contrary, it was an obstacle in the progress of the revolution, since the military leaders were retarded and stupefied by the unending discussions which took place continuously. This destroyed all the confidence between the civil and military powers and placed them in a state of antagonism, so that the war on the side of the insurgents began to wane under the new government and finally became disastrous to the cause of independence.

Morelos himself never lost his activity and energy, and in the forty battles in which he was engaged he was never defeated except in the attack on Valladolid. Having marched against the city with 7000 men, he was not only repulsed by the Spaniards, but was compelled to evacuate the province. This was the beginning of a series of reverses which ended with his downfall. On his retreat from Valladolid he was accompanied by the Congress which had to work under the shadow of the army. When one of his divisions under the command of Matamoros was defeated on the 6th of January, 1814 that leader was made prisoner by Iturbide, who by that time had attained the rank of Colonel. Not much later (1816) this result of having to send many of his peninsular forces to Texas, Bernardo Gutierrez de Lara was causing great havoc for the Royalists. He had been sent as an agent to the United States by Hidalgo, as we have already mentioned, but not being able to do anything with the Government at Washington, he organized five hundred American volunteers and marched with them to Texas. Having increased his forces by a number of Cochatte Indians and some of the inhabitants of the Province, he succeeded in destroying three of the best armies which they could send against him and which approached in numbers ten thousand men. Having the atten-

tion of the Government directed toward the Province in this manner was a great relief to the leaders who were fighting in the interior. Gutierrez was dismissed from his command and Toledo appointed in his place. The latter was routed by Arredondo in the battle of Medina, which ended the war in Texas. In this memorable fight that handful of heroes who had so gloriously survived all of their previous conflicts were dispersed, pursued and assassinated with unparalleled cruelty by the same Elizondo who had betrayed Hidalgo at Acatita de Baján. That treacherous and cruel monster soon had his punishment, for he was assassinated a few days later.

The decline of the Revolution dates from Morelos' tragic end. The fighting continued, it is true, but without strength or good results for he who had been the life and soul of the enterprise ceased to be when he was most needed to conserve the harmony and union among the leaders, to encourage their patriotic sentiments, and to restrain their egotism. Bravo, who was in command of a division of the army when Morelos was captured, succeeded in escorting the members of Congress to Tehuacán at which place disagreements soon arose between them and the soldiery. The latter did not respect the authority of Congress after the death of one who had given Congress its existence. From that moment the revolution began to wane and it did not revive again. There were unending disputes among the leaders. All aspired to the supreme command, yet none of them had inherited the virtues and qualities of the unfortunate and great champion of the independence of his country. Only Morelos possessed the ability and influence to govern the people, by consolidating their energy and properly directing their efforts. He had not left anyone who could occupy his place, and the disagreement and fighting which took place after his downfall could not but produce the most deplorable and sorrowful consequences.

When the Congress reached Tehuacán Terán was for a moment very attentive to it, pacifying it in the hope of obtaining the appointment to assume the principal command; but not having attained this object, he dissolved Congress by a military order of the 22nd of December, 1815 and substituted a government of his own creation, placing himself at his head. This arbitrary act was a sign for a general division among all the leaders. Harmony and confidence had reached their limit, and each leader retired with his respective forces. Terán commanded in Oajaca, Victoria in Vera Cruz, Rayón in Valladolid, Guerrero in the south of Mexico, and Father Torres in La Baxia; but being unable to accomplish anything because of their disunion, and not caring to render mutual assistance, one after the other, they retired from the contest or roved the country hunting a safe asylum.

In the middle of this deplorable state of things, when the hopes and fortunes of the patriots were vanishing daily, the new Viceroy, Apodaca, reached Mexico. His arrival was the beginning of a new era. Finding the country almost exhausted and the insurgents half subjugated and inclined to peace, he conceived the hope of ending the contest without the necessity of shedding more blood. He thought that he could restore tranquility and influence the nation to return again to its allegiance to the King by a system of moderation, liberal-

ity and indulgence. Accordingly, he announced his intention of adopting a policy opposed to the cruel policy of his two predecessors. His object was not the subjugation of the people, but the reestablishment of order, not the destruction of the insurgents, but their security and well-being. He wished to pardon the past, to abandon violence, and to protect peaceful citizens. It thus happened, then, that he invited those who had been listed in the revolutionary ranks to return to their homes without fear of being punished and to continue their ordinary labors under the protection of their flag. The suave tendency of this policy was as different from the exterminating vengeance of Venegas and Calleja as the seraphs of Heaven are from the fiends of Hell. It was timed opportunely and had the desired effect. The people, tired of a bloody and obstinate war from which they had reaped nothing but misfortune, and which became more hopeless each day because of the dissension among the leaders, rejoiced at the prospect of attaining that temporary rest which their long and continued sufferings demanded and availed themselves of the opportunity of once more enjoying the peaceful scenes of their private and domestic life. To be able to do this without molestation and free from all danger under those circumstances, was a boon and a blessing which very few had the courage to reject. For that reason Apodaca's proposal met with general approbation. The nation surrendered its arms, and in less than twelve months after his landing, this diplomatic Viceroy had the pleasure of seeing the rebellious people in the state of peaceful submission to the authority of their master, the King.

Such was the situation of the country when Mina arrived with three hundred men, principally Americans, for the purpose of raising the war cry again. From Soto la Marina, where he disembarked on the 15th of April, 1817, to Baxio he had to cut his way with the sword, performing incredible acts of valor and heroism at every step. This part of the country was governed by the infamous Father Torres who had appropriated the principal command and established at Janjilla a sort of governing *junta* which was subject to his will. Jealous of Mina, he refused to assist him or cooperate with him, and the fearless Navarro, after fighting valiantly and repeatedly and suffering excessively, was finally captured at the Venadito ranch and executed near Los Remedios on the 11th of November, 1817 at the age of twenty-eight. Apodaca received the title of the Count of Venadito for the capture of Mina but it would have been more just [to give it] to the treacherous priest who betrayed the unfortunate commander.

Nothing but disaster followed this. Sombrero had now fallen. Los Remedios suffered the same fate in February, 1818. The garrison, forced by hunger to evacuate the place, was pursued and all but Torres and twelve of Mina's soldiers were put to death. There were a great many women in the fort whose fate was too horrible to record. The fort of Janjilla, which was the last haven of the independents in El Baxio, was surrendered the 6th of March. The members of the *Junta* fled to *Tierras Calientes* in Valladolid, where they resigned their offices and formed a new government. The first act of this government was to take the command from the disorderly Father Torres and appoint Arrago one of Mina's officers, in his place. The Father rebelled against

these proceedings and had to be reduced to obedience by the Gyre, the name by which the celebrated Delgado was known. Torres was afterwards assassinated by a companion in a certain quarrel which had its beginning in a game of cards. The Gyre, who was a bold guerrilla fighter and a good patriot, was captured and executed by Colonel Anastacio Ignacio Bustamante, who was later Vice-President of Mexico. Thus ended the contest in this portion of the country.

The death of Mina may be considered as the end of what is called the first revolution. In 1819 there was only one general who still maintained a hostile attitude toward the Royalists, and that was the celebrated Guerrero, one of the patriots of the revolution and equalled only by Don José María Fernández, known in history by the name of Guadalupe Victoria, in whom not the least fault could over be found. In this state of affairs Apodaca wrote to the Spanish Government that the war had ended, that the country was peaceful, and that not another soldier was needed to maintain authority and preserve public order.

CHAPTER III.

The Constitution restored in Spain. The Viceroy Apodaca opposed to its establishment in Mexico. The Royalists support him. The Clergy in favor of independence. Enthusiasm of the Creoles. Guerrero's forces increase. Apodaca appoints Iturbide to march against Guerrero and declares in favor of the King's cause and against the Constitution. He takes the command of the army from Armijo and gives it to Iturbide. The latter marches against Guerrero. He appropriates a million dollars which he had been ordered to take to Acapulco. Joins Guerrero. Declares in favor of the independence of the country. Plan of Iguala. Apodaca retired from office by the Spaniards and Novella put in his place. Liñan follows Iturbide. The war is weakly supported by the Royalists. Many of the Spaniards desert the royalist cause and join Iturbide. Arrival of the new Viceroy, Odonojú. Cordova Treaty. Entrance of the independents into Mexico City. End of the Revolution.

CHAPTER III.

Apodaca was mistaken. This triumph of despotism was not long-lived. The nation had dropped asleep for a moment; but it awoke with renewed vigor. The people were tired, but not conquered. The love of liberty still animated them, and the patriots only awaited an opportune time to begin hostilities again. Such was the sentiment prevailing in the country when the triumph of the liberal party in Spain and the restoration of the Constitution gave a new impulse to the Mexican nation and awakened a general desire to begin another war.

The Constitution was received in Mexico in April, 1820 with orders from the mother country to publish it and swear to it, which were carried out without delay. Nevertheless, the Viceroy and the monarchical party well knew that, although the perjurer Fernando VII had sworn to uphold the Constitution, nothing would please him more than to see it destroyed and its establishment in the colonies prevented. Therefore, Apodaca, together with a small party of the obstinate defenders of an unlimited monarchy, secretly decided to oppose it. Many of the royalists who were opposed to the independence of the country and desired a limited monarchy, however, were in favor of the liberal

party in Spain, and consequently, friends of the Constitution. These, as it is supposed, could do no less than fight the plans of the Viceroy.

The clergy was the dominant power of the nation. The first revolution had not been a success, and, although its motive force had been a priest, and many of its greatest luminaries, as Morelos, Matamoros, Dr. Cos and others, belonged to that body; still, it cannot be denied that the influence and power of the church were directed with great vigor against the fight for liberty, and were indeed the only obstacle in the way of the patriots' success. If it had not been for the opposition of the Church the nation would have attained its independence almost without the necessity of resorting to arms. Which party, then, would the clergy decide to join in the second war? Would they join the Viceroy or the people? Fortunately for Mexico, there were principles in that Constitution which alarmed the friends of ignorance and superstition, and made them tremble for the ministerial power. This, together with the decrees of the Spanish *Cortes*, which confiscated much Church property and reformed the principal abuses of the Church, compelled the clergy to rise up against the mother country and to preach in favor of Mexico's independence as an indispensable measure for the preservation of the Catholic religion.

But it should not be inferred from this that the priests had become the friends of liberty, or that they were interested in the happiness of the people. Far from that. As the friends of absolutism they were animated by no other motive than that of separating the country from the democracy of Spain, in order to keep it in perpetual despotism and to consolidate the power and dominion of the Church. Thus we shall see how different were the motives of the different classes which co-operated in this second conflict, for, while the people were fighting for independence and the establishment of a happy and illustrious free government, the religious community which assisted them in the cause of separation did so with the opposite purpose of relentlessly confining the country in the iron chains of tyranny and superstition.

The spirit of liberty was everywhere manifest. Guerrero's forces immediately increased materially, and the nation rapidly prepared itself for a general eruption. However that may be, the Viceroy was not discouraged in the conflict. He had quietly and secretly recruited new troops to attain his ends; and, although the Royalists were divided and the Creoles united, and the clergy had joined the latter, he was, nevertheless, determined to maintain his Sovereign's cause at any cost. There was no time to lose, and he selected Iturbide to carry out his plans, believing that there was no person better suited than he for such a task.

Augustin de Iturbide was a native, born in Valladolid de Michoacan in the year 1784, and at the beginning of the revolution he showed great devotion for the cause of independence; but not being able to attain at one jump the rank and honors to which he aspired, he deserted the insurgents and enlisted under the King's flag. In this service he advanced rapidly. His activity, energy and cunning, combined with a perfect knowledge of the country, made him a formidable fighter, and the untiring vigor and success with which he carried on the war against his countrymen made him one of the Viceroy's favorites, so that in a short time he attained an independent command and

as its leader he became the terror of the insurgents and gained great reputation for his cruelty. He was considered more cruel and rapacious than any of the Spanish officers, in assassinating for the love of the crime, in plundering the people and defrauding the government, and finally, in dishonoring his career in such a way that they were forced to discharge him from the service for his atrocities and bad conduct. From 1816 to 1820 he held no public office. Such was his situation when Apodaca called him and communicated his plans to him. His appointment was not accidental. Iturbide greatly desired it, and he neglected no efforts to obtain it. With this in view, he frequented the same church that Apodaca attended, pretended to be in spiritual retreat, doing penance, as it was generally thought, for the crimes of his past life; but he was really doing it in order to obtain the confidence of the Viceroy and to insure the command he desired. His plan succeeded. Apodaca confided in him the execution of his plans, and in the eyes of all he could not have appointed a more useful instrument. His first measure was to take away General Armijo's command over a large force which was stationed between Mexico and Acapulco and to place Iturbide in command. This was necessary, as Armijo was a defender of the Constitution and was disposed to support it with his troops. Iturbide left the Capital to take command on the 1st of February, 1821, with the understanding that he should declare in favor of the King and march against Guerrero, whose forces, as we have said before, had extraordinarily increased.

It is not our object to investigate motives, but merely to refer to events, and, therefore, without detaining ourselves to investigate the causes which served to support Iturbide's conduct, we will satisfy ourselves with stating that, as soon as he found himself at the head of this force, he betrayed the Viceroy instead of carrying out his plans; and in fact, he had accepted the command for this purpose. There is little or no doubt that he was secretly hostile to the King's cause before he received his commission and had resolved to desert it and join the Creoles whose blood he had shed so profusely. The time and circumstances being favorable to the contemplated change, he began to carry out his plans by strengthening himself with nearly a million dollars, which he had been commanded to take to Acapulco, and then by uniting with the very person whom he should oppose.

When the union of Iturbide and Guerrero was announced (as it was two days after he had gotten possession of the money), the entire nation awakened with a frenzy of joy. Thousands of men ran to join his standard; and, like Morelos, he soon found himself surrounded and followed by a powerful multitude. The crimes and treachery which had stained his career for many years were forgotten and pardoned in the glorious hope of an early and certain independence. No one doubted the result. Neither did they doubt the sincerity of the new champion of liberty, but rather they all wished to trust their fortune in his hands. Guerrero resigned the principal command in his favor, and Iturbide, recognized as the commander of the revolution with the entire confidence of the party, on the 24th of February, 1821, published what is known in history as the plan of Iguala, thus called because of the name of the town where the event took place.

The fundamental principles of the new order of things are stated

in this document. The nation is proclaimed free and independent; the Roman Catholic religion is declared the religion of the State to the exclusion of all others, and the government is declared a constitutional monarchy. The Crown is offered, first to Fernando VII, and afterwards to Prince Carlos and Princess Paula; and in the case that all of these refuse it, the nation is free to elect an emperor from any of the ruling families. Until this organization should take place, the nation would be governed by a *Junta* headed by the Viceroy, the Count of Venadito. The Africans and Indians should have the right of protection, and the chance of holding any public office. Equal rights, privileges and protection should be assured the Spaniards and Creoles by placing them upon the same footing without any distinction, and all persons holding public office, whether of one class or another, who joined the revolt should continue in office. By a subsequent proclamation all the King's officers were offered a commission in the Independent army next in rank above that which they held in the service of Spain.²²

Such were the principal articles of the system proposed by the new defender of the country's liberty, and none better adapted to the time and circumstances could have been framed. It was a master stroke of policy and wisdom, uniting in one common cause the persons and classes whose principles, designs and interests were diametrically opposed. The Clergy was satisfied with the plan, because it left its power and possessions intact and protected them against modern innovations; the majority of the Spaniards accepted it because it assured them safety and support, and at the same time offered the throne to the Bourbons of Spain; and the Creoles, although they were not satisfied with this last article, nevertheless adopted it because it unequivocally established the independence of the country. These three objects, independence, religion, and the union of the Spaniards and Creoles were named the three guarantees, and the army which was to support and defend them was to be called the Army of the Three Guarantees. A copy of the plan was sent to Apodaca, as soon as it was published, and this was the first news or intimation that the Viceroy received, of the hostility of his disloyal subject.

The war then began openly, Iturbide defending the cause of the people, and Apodaca that of his Sovereign. The latter's forces were insufficient for the purpose, and the party adhering to him was very weak compared to its opponents, consisting only of the Spaniards of the old hemisphere, the friends of absolutism who still adhered to the old order of things. On the other hand, the independents were very differently situated in this war from what they had been in the first. Hidalgo was a priest sufficiently endowed by nature but without any military experience or knowledge of government. Neither did he have the necessary means for carrying on war. He commanded an army of ignorant Indians, without arms, without organization and without competent officers. His overthrow was a natural consequence, but there were now in the field renowned military leaders at the head of forces which were well disciplined, abundantly equipped and composed of intelligent people, equal to the enemy in skill and valor and doubly

²²Though not made clear in the Spanish, the subsequent actions of Santa Anna show that the new rank was to be one grade above that held in the royal army.

inspired by the justice of their cause. Victory could not but crown their efforts.

Mr. Ward, in his history²³ of this epoch, expresses the opinion that the revolution could have been repressed at this particular crisis, if the Viceroy had placed himself at the head of the troops which had assembled in the Capital and had vigorously pursued Iturbide, but such an opinion can hardly be supported by the real condition of the country, because the desire for liberty had become so general and irresistible that it caused a total separation of the Creoles and Spaniards and left the cause of the Royalists without other support than their own expeditionary troops. The natives were never to be seen again co-operating with the forces of the King, and without doubt Iturbide's real motive in placing himself at the head of the revolutionary party was his perfect knowledge of the nation's deep feeling in favor of liberty and independence. He saw how easy it would be to break the colonial chains, and believing that it would not do less than place him at the head of a new monarchy he threw himself into the undertaking, enticed by the splendid rewards which he saw in the future. That he was impelled by the love of liberty or by a desire to promote the happiness of the people are motives and virtues which, in our opinion, the world has not conceded him, and which have not been claimed for him by his friends.

We will not discuss the details of the struggle, because our present purpose does not require it. It will be sufficient to say that the war was conducted weakly by the Royalist party and with poor success, while it was prosecuted by the Independents with unusual vigor and constant success. At the beginning of the struggle the Spaniards in the capital deposed Apodaca on account of his supposed inability to extricate himself from the difficulties of the time, and placed Captain Francisco Novella at the head of the Government. However, this change did more harm than good. His appointment caused a division in the Royalist ranks which somewhat abetted the insurgents. The King's party could not accomplish anything. Liñan, at the head of the Monarchical forces, pursued the active and errant Iturbide, but in spite of all of his marches and counter-marches he was never able to overtake the cunning and ever-wakeful liberator. Moreover, the revolutionary forces were filled with enthusiasm and strength at the sudden reappearance of Guadalupe Victoria. This invincible champion of their Country's cause had been in hiding for a long time in the mountains, but on hearing of the new revolution for liberty and independence, he came out of his hiding place and entered the field again. He took command of one of the divisions while Iturbide remained at the head of the other. It was impossible for the Royalists to resist two such commanders as these, supported, as they were, by the undivided forces of the country's native sons. Bustamante, Barragan, Cortazar, Quintanar, Andrade and other native chiefs, who for a long time had fought against the liberty of their country and assassinated thousands of their brothers, on seeing the inevitable result of the struggle, abandoned the King's cause and followed the standard of the victorious patriots. Negrete, Echavarri and other Spanish officers followed their

²³Ward, Sir Henry George. *Mexico in 1827*, London, H. Colburn, 1828.

example. They saw that the Royal power was about to fall and they thought it wise to look after themselves by embracing a seasonable change. These were unmistakable indications that the final triumph of the cause of independence was approaching. Everybody recognized it as such, and the nation rejoiced in the hope of seeing their most cherished hopes realized.

During this interesting crisis the Viceroy Odonojú, sent to replace Apodaca, arrived in the country. He landed at Veracruz in July 1821. In a moment he saw the real condition of the country; he knew that the colonial chains had been broken forever. The authority of the insurgents had been recognized everywhere except in the Capital, and it was obvious that in a short time, this city would be compelled to yield before the powerful force of circumstances. It would be vain for Odonojú to struggle against fate. Nothing could be done. He had neither forces nor money. The only alternative was to return to Spain or to treat with Iturbide. He decided upon the latter course, co-operated with the liberator in consummating the independence of the country. With this purpose in view a treaty was made at Cordova in August, which was somewhat similar to the plan of Iguala. Iturbide advanced toward the Capital immediately, and after a period of about four days, through the influence of Odonojú, the Army of the Three Guarantees entered the Capital without resistance on the 27th of September, 1821. Thus the independence of Mexico was brought about by a sudden revolution in which scarcely any blood was spilled.

Having extended our historical introduction farther than was our first intention and farther, perhaps, than that of the reader, it seems proper that we should introduce our hero into the scene without further delay. This we shall do in the next chapter.

CHAPTER IV.

Birth and education of Santa Anna. He enters the army. He figures in Arredondo's expedition against Texas in 1813. He forges a check on the Treasury in San Antonio. He is placed in prison in Monterrey. Arredondo pardons him. He commits a second forgery and escapes again. He is commissioned to recruit soldiers. He is held in Vera Cruz for his bad conduct. Garza withdraws his proofs of Santa Anna's forgery. Anecdote. Santa Anna leaves Vera Cruz for the Capital. He is appointed Field-Aide to the Viceroy. Shortly afterwards he is promoted to a Captaincy. Iturbide's battle cry. Santa Anna marches against the Independents in Orizaba. He betrays Miranda. He deceives Joaquin Herrera. He declares in favor of independence. The following day he receives his appointment as Lt.-Colonel from the Viceroy. He enters the Independent army with that rank. He figures in the surrender of Alvarado, Jalapa and Perote. He appoints himself Commander-in-Chief of the Province of Vera Cruz. He repels an assault on the city. Second assault. Third assault. Surrender of Vera Cruz. Rincón is appointed Governor of the city, and Santa Anna leaves for Mexico.

CHAPTER IV

Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna was born in Veracruz on the 21st of February, 1796, of a family of the middle class. His father, a notary public in that city, was in such poor circumstances that he was unable to afford his son any higher education than that acquired in the primary schools—that is, to learn to read and write and count, but without obtaining any knowledge of grammar. For this reason he made a great many errors in conversation, a fault which he has not yet over-

come, because of his aversion to books and his inability to cultivate the manners of enlightened society.

He decided upon a military career in 1810, his father having placed him in the army at fourteen years of age in order that he might be supported by the stipend paid the cadets. Thus associated in his youth with rude and uncultured soldiers, he necessarily acquired the low inclinations and vicious habits which always pertain to that class. These grew with time, greatly increased with indulgence, until they came to be second nature with him and to form the most prominent qualities of his character, so that his depravity is now almost as notorious as his good fortune.

His early deeds were not very promising in character, and they better predicted a rise toward the gallows than toward the Presidency. He began his military career in the service of the King of Spain, by opposing the liberty and independence of his native land, but he did not distinguish himself until 1813 in General Arredondo's expedition against the Republicans of Texas which province was occupied by Bernardo Gutierrez, and afterwards fell into the hands of the enemy, while his successor Toledo defended it. During this interval our hero began to distinguish himself. His prowess was not yet that of a military commander, but rather that of a criminal. It is not known that he won any laurels by his courage on the field of battle; but his reputation as a dissolute youth given to all kind of vices and excelling all competitors in refined immorality is still remembered by some of the old inhabitants of San Antonio. Gambling was his dominant passion, and he would stop at nothing in order to gratify it. Finding himself at Bexar at one time without funds, and not being able to obtain money by the means he always employed, i. e. robbery, deceit, and prevarication, he decided to forge the General's signature and accordingly made out a check of five hundred dollars for the military treasurer to deliver to him. This was done, and the sum thus obtained was lost in a short time. The robbery having been discovered, he was arrested, as was also an officer named Saldaña who delivered the money to him. Criminal proceedings were instituted against both, but Saldaña, having proved his innocence, was freed, while Santa Anna, whose guilt was evident in the eyes of all, was conducted as a prisoner to Monterrey for punishment. Thanks to his lucky star! he was never made to appear before the Court. The petitions made in his favor by some women appeased the wrath of Arredondo, who allowed the affair to drop, and in this way the criminal escaped without being acquitted of the charge or punished for it.

Instead of profiting by his past experience and behaving better in the future, his last impunity had no other effect than to make him bolder in crime. A short time afterward he was again caught in a similar crime, having forged the name of an ancient worthy, Don Antonio Quintero, in a bill of exchange to the sum of six thousand dollars. He was again made a prisoner; and it seemed almost impossible that he could escape a second time, but fortune still favored him, for Mr. Quintero, instead of prosecuting him, as a merciful man, used all of his influence to save him by imploring General Arredondo to pardon the criminal in consideration of his penitence and his promise to reform in the future. He succeeded in obtaining his end, but not

without much difficulty, because Arredondo's anger was great and Don Antonio was not his friend.

Again placed at liberty by the generosity of a man whom he had so deeply wronged, his reform consisted of nothing more than changing one sort of crime for another. Don Farfulla—a nickname by which Santa Anna was known at that time—in company with another officer left Monterrey for a neighboring village. These two petty officers, with a number of recruits, were commanded to complete the battalion of regulars at Veracruz, but instead of complying with their orders faithfully, they adopted the following system of robbery and plunder in order to fill their pockets. The country people, not wishing to change the plow for the sword, were told by those bribers that they would be exempt from the service on condition that each one would pay them what he could, a proposal which the country people accepted joyously, some giving five, and some giving ten and fifteen dollars. Those who did not have money gave horses, hogs, fowls and other things sufficient to satisfy their greediness. This conduct and other actions, equally shameful, reached Arredondo's ears, and this officer immediately ordered them to be arrested and placed in the fort of San Juan de Ulua.

The legal proceedings brought against Santa Anna for his forgery and robbery remained in the archives of the office of the Interior States of the East until Don Felipe de la Garza, with the consent of his worthy friend, Santa Anna, withdrew them while he held that office, and as a reward for this service Santa Anna did not take any steps against Garza for his cowardice and treachery during the Barradas expedition. This was the same Garza who shot Iturbide.

It is said that Santa Anna courted a very beautiful young lady, a sister of Don Antonio Navarro of Bexar and that his pretensions were disdained because of his act of forgery. It is also declared that for this reason Santa Anna kept Mr. Navarro a prisoner at Perote after he had liberated the remaining unfortunate members of the Santa Fé expedition. We cannot vouch for the truth of this story.

This period of Santa Anna's life is not filled with heroic deeds worthy of a young soldier. It is only known that in Veracruz, he undertook to court the favor of the Spanish Governor Davila; but in spite of all the indulgence with which this old man treated him, Santa Anna's conduct became so intemperate and shameful that this wicked young man found himself under the necessity of leaving the city. He went to the Capital and presented himself to the Viceroy Apodaca. There, as in Veracruz, he flattered the public authorities until finally he succeeded in attaining the appointment of Field-Aide to the Viceroy. A little later he was appointed captain and given the command of Taralios in the province of Veracruz. While he was holding this office, he continued the ordinary course of his life until the battle cry of Iturbide opened up a new field to Don Farfulla for his designs.

As we have stated in the introduction to our sketch, the second revolution came to an end with but little bloodshed. The greater part, perhaps all that was shed was due to the crimes of Santa Anna. The people against whom the Independent forces marched generally surrendered without offering much resistance. The part which our hero took in this conflict from the Iguala revolt until the liberator's tri-

umphal entry into Mexico does not lack interest in consideration of the fact that it discloses his general character and at the same time is an example of the conduct and the principles which have since marked his career.

It will be remembered that Iturbide had proclaimed that the officers of the Spanish army who would join the insurgents should hold a commission next to that which they held at the time they deserted their ranks. Santa Anna wished to profit by this proposal, but he did not wish to do it until he had attained the rank of Lt.-Col. from the Viceroy, so that he could enter the liberator army as a full Colonel. He attained his end in the following manner.

The impulse communicated by General José Joaquin Herrera to the Independent party in the province of Veracruz, and the fear that General Miranda, occupying Yztapla with some independents, would march against Orizaba, obliged Governor Dávila to send a force to that place in order that it might remain faithful to the King. Santa Anna, having given so many proofs of his loyalty to the Royalists, was offered this command which he accepted. He immediately marched to Orizaba where there was a strong party in favor of the Independents. He spared no efforts to gain the confidence of one José Maria Tornel, an insurgent who had been pardoned and was then a Royalist lieutenant. At the same time Santa Anna was secretly anxious to join the new cause, but he did not want to do it immediately for the reason that we have already expressed, namely, until he should obtain the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel from the Viceroy.

Santa Anna had scarcely reached Orizaba when the vicinity of that place was occupied by General Miranda, called The lame, whose forces were daily increasing. An emissary was sent to him to inform him that Santa Anna wished to join him and would have done so before but for fear the people of Orizaba would offer some resistance, their own forces being much too weak to support themselves. He proposed that Miranda advance with his troops close to the city on a certain day and that at night Santa Anna would leave the city and go to some appointed place in order to effect the desired union. Miranda accepted the proposal and carried it out in good faith, not suspecting the snare which the infamous falsifier was preparing for him. According to the agreement, Miranda marched with his troops to within a short distance of the town and found Santa Anna at the appointed time and place. The conference agreed to devise necessary means for compelling the people of Orizaba to declare in favor of the principles proclaimed by the Independents. This having been agreed to, Santa Anna retired, and Miranda, full of confidence, went to sleep. But a short time afterwards, in the midst of the silence and darkness of midnight, Santa Anna suddenly attacked the Independents, surprised and routed them, and at dawn returned to Orizaba extolling his triumph and ordering a solemn *Te Deum* to be chanted in the village church which he hypocritically attended while his hands were still covered with the blood of the valiant men whom his savagery had sacrificed. He immediately sent word to the Viceroy, informing him of the victory obtained for the arms of the King, his master, over the enemies of the most benign of monarchs.

While he was awaiting the reward of his villainy, he sent secret agents

to Colonel Joaquin Herrera, not only excusing himself for all that had happened to Miranda, upon whom he did not hesitate to throw all the blame for the events which we have just mentioned, but also informing him that in a few days he would declare in favor of the Independents and would march with all of his troops toward El Desierto. Herrera ignored the stratagem which he had employed against his companion in arms, Miranda, and accepted this offer, urgently requesting him not to delay his promotion. But Santa Anna hoped to receive his promotion to the next rank from the Viceroy and delayed joining the Independents by using light excuses which he had the impudence to state were for the success of the national cause.

Thus we view this precocious monster, deceiving and assassinating the friends of liberty and independence whose cause he intended to embrace in a few days, using these means to obtain an appointment from the Viceroy whom he was betraying at the very same moment.

Losing the hope of obtaining the aforementioned appointment, and knowing that time was passing, that the holy cause of freedom was advancing with great enthusiasm, and that some of the officers were taking advantage of the spirit of the times and were rapidly joining the standard of the country, he finally decided to join the ranks of a cause against which he had fought eight days before without waiting longer for his promotion.

He declared in favor of independence at *Tierras Calientes* and the next day he received from the Viceroy Apodaca an icy answer enclosing the Commission of Lieutenant-Colonel, for which he had waited with such anxiety, and which was the price of his betrayal of Miranda. Notwithstanding the fact that he had changed his standard, he decorated himself with the insignia of the new rank which he had received from the Spanish Government. Iturbide later confirmed his rank of Lieutenant Colonel, but refused him the rank of Colonel which he had tried to obtain by such treacherous and cruel methods. As the independent leaders had scattered throughout the nation encouraging the people, Santa Anna did not delay in increasing the number of their party in *Tierras Calientes*; and his first achievement of any consideration was the capture of Alvarado where Lt. Col. Topete was in command. There he increased his ranks with the same soldiers who a month before had defended the unjust cause of the King.

His envy and jealousy did not permit him to perform any service, though it should be of the greatest importance to the country, that could possibly redound to the credit of another. He refused to cooperate with his superiors because they were generally inclined to monopolize the honor of the victory, and the failures of the other leaders always gratified him more than their victories. We will illustrate this magnanimous action by an example. The reader will find others later on. Colonel Herrera, Commander-in-Chief of the province of Veracruz, on finding himself besieged at Cordova by the King's troops under the command of General Hevia, sent word to Santa Anna to hasten to his assistance. Santa Anna disobeyed the order, making use of some light pretexts to which he always recurred on similar occasions; but the officers under his command, knowing that there was no obstacle to prevent his going, began to protest so vigorously that he was compelled to go. He arrived in time to save Herrera from sur-

render, a misfortune which Santa Anna had hoped would befall that gallant patriot, because Herrera possessed greater prestige and enjoyed more public favor than himself, and because Herrera stood in his way.

Our hero was present at the surrender of Jalapa, which place was occupied by Calderón, Obregoso and Rincón; and he was also at the siege and capture of Perote. After these events he publicly usurped the rank of Colonel, although he had no legal right to it, not having been more than a captain when he deserted the King's cause for that of his country. Notwithstanding this fact, by his own authority he appointed himself commander of all the Independents in the Province of Veracruz, and in the same manner enjoyed the pay, honors and rank of Commander with as much boldness as though he justly merited them.

Though at the head of a weak force Farfulla entertained the idea of surprising the nation by taking the city of Veracruz. He was foolish enough to undertake it. Ignorant in the extreme of military tactics, he advanced toward the public square with a handful of soldiers, flattering himself upon a grand and glorious outcome; but he had scarcely come within cannon-shot of the walls when he was compelled to retire hastily and seek shelter on the sandbanks. The only profit which he reaped from his high plans was the death of many valiant men sacrificed for his arrogant folly.

Even more shameful and unfortunate was his second attempt. The time having come when it was necessary to take the City of Veracruz, general preparations for that purpose were taking place. However, Santa Anna, who then still had that voracious ambition which has been so fatal to his unfortunate country, feared that some other commander more skillful than he in the art of warfare would have the honor of taking the city in which he was born, and decided to take it with his own forces, which had increased, and without the cooperation of other officers; and accordingly, he accomplished his purpose by an attack at night. He ordered some of his troops to scale the walls of the San José Fort, with instructions to put to death the garrison which defended that post, and immediately afterward to open the door of the Merced so that he could enter with the remainder of his troops. This was done, and everything promised a successful outcome; but on reaching the public square Farfulla began to talk, and left his troops to visit his lady love. His soldiers, not having a leader to direct them, gave themselves up to untimely pleasures and, as a result of this schoolboy escapade of Don Antonio, many of the inhabitants armed themselves, united with the King's soldiers, and completely routed our Napoleon (in parody) who, leaving his lady love, shamefully fled and abandoned his army without even ordering retreat to be played. Taking refuge on the sand banks near the city he ordered several of his officers to get his soldiers out of the square where he had so cowardly abandoned them. In this way Don Antonio de Santa Anna began his knightly deeds.

As the revolution was progressing rapidly, Santa Anna had little difficulty in increasing his force, so that in a short time he found himself at the head of an army sufficiently formidable to besiege Veracruz properly. The siege was so vigorously maintained that the Royalists

were compelled to treat with their opponents. When this was done the inhabitants of all parties and classes petitioned Iturbide not to permit Santa Anna to enter the city with his troops, (so hated was he by all), and to appoint Manuel Rincón Governor of the place. Iturbide granted the request, and this was the cause of the deep enmity which afterwards existed between the two commanders, Rincón and Santa Anna.

After the surrender of Veracruz, Santa Anna left for Mexico City, where he played a leading part among the courtiers, surpassing all in his villainous praises of Iturbide. He flattered him one moment and betrayed him the next. As the fall of the liberator is connected with the history of our hero, it would not be out of place to get a retrospective view of his sudden rise. We shall devote ourselves to this in the following chapter.

CHAPTER V.

Political parties after the revolution. Their different purposes. Iturbide appoints a legislative *Junta* of thirty-six members. They create a regency with Iturbide at its head as General-in-Chief. Congress assembles. It divides into parties. Disagreement between Iturbide and Congress. Dávila decides on a counter revolution. He accepts the regency in a secret session of Congress. Yañes accuses Iturbide. The Commander-in-Chief contradicts the charge and accuses some of the members of Congress. General confusion. Iturbide retires. The regency changes. Congress reduces the army. Iturbide incites the soldiers to proclaim him Emperor. Great disturbance in the Capital. The soldiers and the people force Congress to confirm Iturbide's appointment as Emperor. His coronation.

CHAPTER V.

The jealousies and enmity of the different classes and parties did not die with the Plan of Iguala, nor did it cause them to abandon their respective principles and claims. The hostile parties united solely for the purpose of co-operating in favor of the independence of the country, and it made them withhold and constrain their private views and political designs until the common end was attained. We see, therefore, that as soon as independence was established, these antagonistic parties began to fight against each other; each attempting to carry out his plans and govern the nation according to his own ideas. The Royalists desired that the throne be given to the Bourbons of Spain; the natives were opposed to this policy, and insisted on establishing a republican government founded upon a federal system, while Iturbide had his eyes fixed on the imperial crown. Here again are the seeds of discord from which sprouted all the misfortunes that afflicted the country.

The plan of Iguala and the treaty of Córdoba required that a provisional government be organized and a constitution formed before the Royal family should take the throne. In accordance with this stipulation Iturbide appointed a legislative *Junta* composed of thirty-six members the same day that he entered the city; and his *Junta* named an executive regency of five persons and appointed Iturbide president. He also placed himself at the head of the naval armada and the army as admiral and Commander-in-Chief with a salary of \$120,000 a year. The following were the members of the regency: Barcena, Perez, Bishop of Puebla, Vasquez de Leon and Yañes. Iturbide, moreover,

later created a ministry composed of the following persons, to wit: Maldonado, Minister of Finance, Medina, Secretary of War, Dominguez, Minister of Justice, and Herrera, Minister of Foreign Affairs.

In this state of affairs it was the duty of the *Junta* to call the houses together to draw up a constitution, but having no law to effect this, it experienced a great deal of difficulty in establishing a basis for the organization of that body. Several plans were proposed, but the one which they finally adopted was that of electing by popular vote one member for every fifty thousand people, with the provision that the provinces which sent more than four members should elect an ecclesiastic, an officer of the army and a lawyer. After much intrigue and contention inside the city and extraordinary excitement outside, the elections took place in all of the provinces, and the Congress composed of the most heterogeneous elements assembled in the Capital on the 24th of February, 1822. Iturbide had enough power at that time to compel the members before they took their seats to swear that they would not violate any of the articles of the plan of Iguala. He issued these orders in the hope that he would be elected Emperor in case the royal family refused to accept the throne. Of this there was very little moral certainty.

This was excessively obnoxious to Victoria, Bravo, Guerrero and the rest of the old insurgents, and likewise to the Creoles generally who argued that, being an independent nation, Mexico had the power and ability to establish through its representatives any kind of government, and that Iturbide and his army did not have the right to rule Congress. Those who had fought for a long time against the tyranny of the Bourbons did not want them to occupy the throne of Mexico; for if the nation should render allegiance to them, it would not have gained anything by the revolution, if that family should place itself in command with the clergy and army to support it in its despotism. Nor were those patriots less opposed to the promotion of Iturbide, whose pretension to the throne had become known to all in spite of his attempt to hide it. Among the active defenders of this opinion were counted the celebrated Victoria, elected by Durango, who, always on the side of liberty, was accused of belonging to a conspiracy formed in the Scottish rite lodge for the purpose of curbing the usurpations of the regency and frustrating the ambitious designs of the Commander-in-Chief. Because of this he was imprisoned, together with other individuals; but not being able to prove anything, they were all set at liberty except Victoria, who, pursued by the liberator, escaped from prison, and fleeing to the mountains, hid in the unknown caves until he was later called to figure in new scenes.

Congress had scarcely begun its session when the three great parties which divided that body commenced to fight for the supremacy, the Bourbonists, the Republicans and the followers of Iturbide who were composed principally of those who wanted to make a fortune by promoting his cause. This boldness kindled noticeably in a short time, and Mr. Zavala, who witnessed them, expressed the opinion that if the Royal family of Spain had accepted the Crown according to the plan of Iguala, at that moment they would have met little or no opposition in ascending the throne, for the majority of Congress was evidently

in favor of a monarchy of any kind, and would perhaps have accepted that dynasty without any other motive than to disappoint Iturbide's ambition. The truth of this conjecture was afterwards confirmed, for as soon as news was received in the Capital that the Spanish *Cortes* had declared null, illegal and of no effect the treaty made with O Donojú in favor of the Royal family the Bourbonists in Congress, not being able to carry out their plans, immediately united with the Republicans for the purpose of preventing Iturbide from ascending the throne, preferring any kind of government to the dynasty of the traitor who had caused the Spanish Crown to lose that country. There was no natural affinity between these parties, and while they worked together against Iturbide, they were opposed to each other in nearly everything else. Until this union the Iturbidists occupied an independent position and voted for or against any measure and in favor of one or the other of the parties according as it suited their interests; in this way enforcing the action of Congress, but when the Bourbonists and the Republicans combined against them, this vacillation ceased, immediately and a violent fight for the supremacy began between Congress and the Commander-in-Chief.

In truth, there was at the very opening of Congress a disagreement between Iturbide and that body which was born of the presumption of the one and of the necessity on the part of the other to reprehend it. On the day of the inauguration of that body Iturbide entered the Hall at the head of the regency, and to the surprise of all occupied the President's chair. It is not known for sure whether it was an inadvertence or a premeditated appropriation of superiority. Be that as it may, the chair was claimed by the President, Don Hipolito Odoardo, who was one of Iturbide's most obdurate enemies, and the Commander-in-Chief was forced to yield it to the legitimate power. From this instant there was jealousy between the two departments which ended in complete hostility as soon as the union already referred to had taken place between the Bourbonists and the Republicans. Nevertheless, the war was one solely of words composed of mutual charges and recriminations. Each worked to make the other hated in the eyes of the nation, Iturbide charging that Congress did not facilitate means for defraying the expenses of the government and of maintaining the army, while Congress replied, accusing the Regency of using the public funds in a most extravagant manner without rendering any account of disbursements. In this fight the army was without pay, and Iturbide undertook to make it believe that such fault was due to the hostility of Congress toward its existence.

The Spanish Governor Dávila, who was still in possession of the fort of San Juan de Ulua at Veracruz, made a weak attempt to incite the Spanish troops at Toluca, to rebellion, hoping that he could produce a counter revolution by taking advantage of the dissensions and disagreements of the Government. This gave Iturbide an excuse for withdrawing the military force which sustained Congress from the City and concentrating a powerful army in Toluca for the purpose of controlling that body. He sent a proclamation to that place stating that the country was in imminent danger, and convened Congress early the following day, having, as he said, matters of great importance

to communicate. Thus Congress convened on the 3rd of April, and while it was busy discussing the propriety of admitting the Commander-in-Chief to their Councils the Commander-in-Chief knocked at the door. He was permitted to enter in company with other members of the Regency for the purpose of avoiding a scandalous break which would result should he be repulsed. To the surprise of all, Yañes, one of the members of the regency in whose name the summons had been sent, arose and exclaimed: "For what has the assembly been convened? The regency ignores it. Iturbide has done it upon his own responsibility to carry out his ambitious plans. I protest, therefore, against this usurpation and denounce its motives." This brings to our mind the bold accusation which was made of Robespierre in the national convention of France when he asked: "Who dares to accuse me?" "I accuse you," exclaimed the intrepid Tallien." At Yañes' energetic and unexpected attack the exasperated Commander-in-Chief answered: "You are a traitor to our country, and a personal enemy to me; and there are still others of the same character in this body. "Name them! Accuse them!" was heard to resound from various parts of the hall. "I will," answered Iturbide, "they are Fagoaga, Tagle, Odoardo, Carrasco and others." This produced a general commotion. The accused representatives immediately left the hall and shortly afterward the regency retired, leaving the assembly in great confusion. Iturbide did not gain anything by this fight. He did not state the important matters which he had to communicate, and he only played the part of an accuser without being able to prove his charges. These light and unfounded things having taken place the representatives took their seats in the assembly on the following day. As a result of this incident there was a change in the regency. A few days later new members were appointed, with the exception of Iturbide and Yañes, who remained in office, the former because of his influence in the army, and the latter, because he was not only friendly to the Commander-in-Chief, but also because it was known that he was a man of integrity and energy.

We will state no more particulars of this fight. It ended with the bayonet. There remains no doubt that from the beginning Iturbide was determined to ascend the throne. As soon as the royal family of Spain refused the crown of Mexico he considered himself the legitimate monarch of the nation and resolved to obtain the diadem at any cost. He disdained to acquire it by force, thinking that he could obtain it by the popularity which he had acquired in liberating the country. We believe that he deceived himself in this, although Mr. Zavala maintains the contrary. Conceding him all that we can in this particular we do not yet waver in our belief that it is very doubtful whether he could have attained his end by the popular vote of the nation. The Spaniards would have preferred the ruin of the country to his promotion, and the Creoles, although justly appreciative of his having realized their independence, would have preferred some one else than him to occupy the throne, in view of his past atrocities and crimes, which, though forgotten for the moment, were now being recalled to mind. We believe that Iturbide himself was convinced of this and also of the fact that his prestige was diminishing daily. Con-

sequently, he resolved to take possession by force and without further delay, of that which he no longer hoped to obtain by peaceful means.

Knowing that Iturbide depended upon the veteran soldiers to carry out his ambitious designs, Congress very wisely passed a law to reduce the army, and, at the same time, to take away the command from the executive power. There was a great deal of wisdom and prudence in these measures prescinding the immediate effect which they had in constraining the Commander-in-Chief in his usurpations. They left Iturbide no alternative but to speedily put his plans into execution. A moment's delay would have dealt a death blow to his hopes.

The soldiers were already prepared for the movement and only awaited the commander's signal to begin their work of disorder and violence. The signal was given on the night of the 18th of May, and the garrison in the City, commanded by a sergeant named Pio Marcha, left for Iturbide's house crying: "Long live Augustin I!" "Long live the Emperor of Mexico!" An immense crowd of lepers and people from the suburbs joined him almost in a moment and thronged the streets like savage beasts, denouncing Congress and singing hosannas to the Emperor. The noise of the fire-arms, the cries of the crowd, and the brightness of the torches which burned in the streets converted the city into a frightful pandemonium. All, therefore, who had opposed the pretensions of Iturbide trembled that night. Many persons fled for their lives, and others burned their homes to avoid being considered enemies. The disorder, shouting and disturbance continued until the next day, when Iturbide appeared wearing a hypocritical expression of sorrow and stated that he lamented the fact that such a scene should have taken place, and that he certainly had not wished them to make him Emperor and would not have accepted the office but for the fact that he had been informed that his life would be endangered should he refuse it. This so resembled exaggeration that we consider it our duty to free ourselves from such imputation by copying Iturbide's own words. In the memoirs written by himself he said: "My first desire was to appear and declare my determination not to yield to the votes of the people. If I abstained from doing this, it was only because it seemed wiser to defer to the advice of a friend who was with me at that time. He barely had time to tell me. 'Yours will be considered not a consent, but an insult, and the people do not know any limit when they are aroused.' The friend to whom he alludes was his minister, Don José Manuel de Herrera, who had been sent by Morelos as agent, to New Orleans, and who afterwards took part in the downfall of Iturbide and the destruction of Guerrero.

Iturbide affected to consider the cry of the soldiery and the clamour of the Lepers, (which was his work) as the voice of the nation, and in virtue of this fact he claimed to be as much an emperor as the autocrat of the Russians. The day after this disturbance Congress assembled as usual with the exception of Tagoaga, Tagle, Odoardo, Rejón, del Valle, Sanches, Castellanos and several other members who did not attend for the reason that they did not want to contribute to an act which they could not approve and which they would not have been permitted to oppose. While that body was discussing the validity of the pretensions, or better stated, the singular appointment of the budding Emperor, the soldiery and populace, armed, entered the gallery

and together with officials, clergymen and other people had forced their way into the hall, demanded the immediate election of Iturbide. Some of the members who were bolder than the rest began to speak, but were compelled to be silent by the repeated threats from the gallery, and were informed that if they did not appoint Iturbide Emperor before one o'clock every one of the members who opposed him would be put to death. This decided the question. Congress, having no army with which to defend itself and repel this aggression, was forced to yield to circumstances. It could do no less than surrender to brute force, and in this manner the audacious usurper mounted the throne.

Although Congress and Iturbide had continuously disagreed, Iturbide, nevertheless, has the impudence to state in his memoirs among his various excuses for accepting the throne that the members of Congress had unanimously conceded him the throne. But we should copy his own language: "The question of my appointment, it is said, was immediately discussed, and not a single representative opposed my ascension to the throne." If this be true, it can be easily explained. The reason was that he himself was present on that occasion with a great party of inhuman beings who had been engaged to assassinate anyone who should vote against him. It is not strange under such circumstance that Congress should have given its unanimous vote. But it is not true that he had all the votes of that body. There were fifteen members who voted against him, and, although they did it under the pretext that they had no authority to elect an emperor, that that was the business of the provinces, and that their business was to draw up a constitution, still, it was well known that this was merely an excuse for an act of opposition. Mr. Zavala makes some very pertinent remarks concerning the system of terror which influenced that election. Speaking of the representatives he said that "they had seen Iturbide cruel and inexorable when he made war on the insurgents, and they feared that now, armed with absolute power, he would revive his ancient cruelty and take a ruinous and bloody vengeance." The system of lenity which this commander had adopted and constantly followed during his new career did not give them sufficient guarantee for the future. In obedience to the truth we should say that he never concealed by any act of cruelty the promises which he had made with respect to the blood of his fellow-citizens. Moreover, a man who has made himself terrible by harsh acts is always considered capable of repeating those same acts.

The formal coronation of the usurper finally took place, and shortly afterwards the provinces recognized him as emperor. Here we will bid his Majesty farewell for the present. Perhaps it is thought that we have said too much about him, but we excuse ourselves, confessing with all frankness that we presume that the reader would be as interested in one villain as another, especially when their lives have been almost the same. Santa Anna's career differs very little from Iturbide's, and it is still possible that they will meet the same fate.²⁴

²⁴Santa Anna was not assassinated as was Iturbide, but both were exiled.

CHAPTER VI.

Santa Anna in Mexico. His dissipation and corrupt living. He falls in love with Doña Nicolasa, the Emperor's sister. His flattery of Iturbide. He becomes the Emperor's favorite. Is appointed Governor of Veracruz. He declares in opposition to the Emperor and in favor of the Republic. His motives. Iturbide's explanation of the rebel's conduct. The author's story explaining the circumstances omitted by Iturbide.

CHAPTER VI.

We left our hero, Don Farfulla, in the City of Mexico following his usual career of iniquity and foolishness. He had gone there after the surrender of Veracruz and very soon became noted for two things—his vile flattery of Iturbide and his licentious conduct. No one, perhaps, was ever given to the vice of gambling with as much devotion as Santa Anna. It could almost be said that he lived at the cock fights, in the gaming houses and in other places even more infamous. Having exhausted his resources and credit he determined to gain the hand of Doña Nicolasa, the sister of the Emperor, whose immense fortune he would condescend to accept as compensation for the disparity in their ages. He failed in his design. He could not win the lady's love, but he was successful in another object which served him almost as well. He gained the favor and friendship of her imperial brother. Mr. Zavala says that General Echavarri was an intimate friend of Iturbide's and possessed his entire confidence. Although not with the same intimacy, Santa Anna enjoyed the favor of the family. He attained this favoritism by the most humiliating servility and disgusting flattery.

Santa Anna was present at the scenes which we have described, and was one of Iturbide's most active partisans in his despised usurpation of the throne. Although he had no great prestige in the eyes of the world, it seems that the Emperor considered him a man of vast importance, for he not only heaped favors upon him, but also deferred to his opinions and influence as though they were of great weight and value. In the long catalog of excuses for having consented to ascend the throne, set forth by Iturbide in his memoirs, we find one which is very extraordinary; to wit, "that if the events of the 18th of May had not taken place, he would have been placed on the throne by Santa Anna who had already taken seasonable measures toward that end. As we owe the knowledge of this act to Iturbide himself, it would be better to copy his words. Alluding to Santa Anna, he says: "I also received congratulations from a man who commanded a regiment and exercised great influence over a considerable portion of the country. He told me that his satisfaction was so great that he could not conceal it; but that he had made preparations to proclaim me emperor in case it had not been accomplished in Mexico."

The presumption of Santa Anna! The weakness of Iturbide! Is it possible that the latter could believe that the former meditated such an undertaking, or that he had the power to accomplish it? In analyzing Farfulla's statement it is reduced to this: "My friend, I congratulate you upon your good fortune. I was going to place you upon the throne just at that time. I have a regiment under my command at Veracruz, and I could have done it very easily. I was determined

that you should have the crown in spite of the people, even tho you should not desire it." Iturbide accepted this gross and bold flattery as though it were true and presented it to the world in justification of his not refusing the throne. Thus we see that he had at least three reasons to support his conduct. First, that all of the representatives were in favor of his appointment which has been shown to be false; second, that Herrera told him that the country would kill him if he refused it; third, that Santa Anna would have crowned him anyway whether he desired it or not. It is not strange that our hero should attain success by praising a man of such weak and childish intelligence.

Assured of Iturbide's goodwill and friendship Santa Anna did not lose time in taking advantage of them, for very soon he asked and received of the Emperor, first, the command of Puebla, which he held only eight days, and, afterwards, his appointment as Governor of Veracruz. He went to the theater of his glorious deeds and resumed his natural vices of gambling, robbing and persecuting the Republicans whom he hated with all his heart. He was a most enthusiastic eulogist of Iturbide, whom he praised to the skies and praised the greatest and best of the human race; and even called himself "one of the strongest columns of the new Empire."

How quickly the scene changed! And what a commentary on human frailty! A few months pass and we see these two wise men, now such good friends, in mortal conflict with each other. He who had been so active in the rise of Iturbide was the first to turn his back upon him. The fact that he dragged in personal resentment is conceded by all; and it seems that there is the same unanimity of opinion with regard to the fact that he was provoked by Iturbide's harshness to adopt the party with which he alligned himself. This last is an error. Mr. Poinsett says that Iturbide treated him very harshly and took away his office of Governor of Veracruz; and other authors state the same thing. That he took away his command at Veracruz is certain, and that his removal was justified is no less true in consideration of his many crimes which were deserving of the most condign punishment, as we shall see later.

Santa Anna's declaration against Iturbide was born of the profound hatred which the former entertained for Echavarri, on account of the latter's superiority in rank, which was conferred, we believe, for the purpose of controlling Santa Anna's irregularities and insubordinate disposition. Be that as it may, Echavarri was the Commander-in-Chief of the province of Veracruz, and under his command Santa Anna ruled in the city. Santa Anna was not content with the position of subaltern and aspired to principal command. The controversy between him and Echavarri ended as a break with the Emperor. In order that we may do Iturbide justice we shall allow him to state the matter, after which we shall do so. In his memoirs will be found the following explanation of which we believe the greater part to be true, although there are important omissions which we shall attempt to bring to light in order to fill those spaces. "Brigadier Don Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, under the command of Echavarri who was Captain General, governed the city and province of Veracruz. Both had instructions relative to capturing Castillo and Ulua. This produced some misunderstanding between the two leaders on account of dis-

agreements about their authority. Their enmity reached such a point that Santa Anna attempted to have Echavarri assassinated in a sortie which the Spaniards made, and so well laid were his plans that Echavarri claimed to have owed his life to the courage of a dozen soldiers and to the fear which seized those who attacked him. As a result of this and of the repeated complaints which had been made to me against Santa Anna by the Captain General, the provincial deputation, the Consulate, a great number of inhabitants and the Lieutenant-Colonel, as well as several officers of his staff, all of whom opposed his arrogant conduct and arbitrary acts. I found myself forced to remove him from office. I had confided in him because he was brave, a quality which I had always admired in a military man, and had hoped, moreover, that the rank to which I had elevated him would help to correct his faults of which I was aware. I had also hoped that experience and a desire not to have him dislike me would make him more rational. I had promoted him to the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, which the last Viceroy had granted him by mistake, I had given him the cross of the Order of Guadalupe, I had conferred upon him the command of one of the best regiments of the army, the government of one of the most important places, and finally, I made him second in command of the province and general of brigade. I had always distinguished him and I did not want to dishonor him on this occasion. I commanded the Minister of War to write the order for his removal in honourable terms, enclosing another order for him to appear at the Court where I would give him an important commission; but none of this was sufficient to repress his volcanic passions. The first thing he did was to seriously offend the one who had heaped favors upon him and he managed to find means of revenge for the misfortune which he deserved. He hastened to Veracruz to provoke an outbreak, for the news of his dismissal had not yet reached that place. Veracruz was a city inhabited for the most part by Spaniards who exercised considerable influence on account of their wealth. They were mortal enemies of the nation's independence, because with it ended the exclusive commerce which had been the source of their wealth for so long and a detriment to the other nations and to the Mexicans themselves, to whom they sold their merchandise at prices which suited them. It was in this place that Santa Anna proclaimed the Republic. He bribed the officers by offering them promotion, he promised the garrison money, he surprised a respectable part of the inhabitants and intimidated the neighboring towns of Alvarado and La Antigua and the colored inhabitants in adjacent places. He intended to surprise the village of Jalapa, but he was defeated with an entire loss of artillery and infantry. His cavalry was pursued and he owed his life to the swiftness of his horses. While Santa Anna was attacking Jalapa the villages of Alvarado and La Antigua reduced the Government to submission."

Such is the Emperor's sketch regarding Don Farfulla. Now we shall give ours. Among the reasons presented in the preceding extract for taking away Santa Anna's command is found his intended assassination of Echavarri during a sortie of the Spaniards; but Iturbide omits the very notable circumstance that that sortie was the fruit of Santa Anna's intrigues promoted with the wicked design of taking the life of his superior. Various stories have been told of the hor-

rible act, more atrocious, if it were possible, than that by which he obtained the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, but the incident was such as we shall now relate.

In coming to an understanding with Lemaure, Governor of the fort of Uluá, Santa Anna laid before him his wish to return the place to the Spaniards and join the cause of the King, his master. This he was ready to do at any moment, provided that Lemaure would give him the necessary assistance to carry out his plan, and also that he would guarantee him the retention, under the Spanish Government, of the rank and command which he then possessed. The Governor joyfully accepted the proposition, and Santa Anna sent two of his agents, Castrillón and Serrano, to the fort to settle with Lemaure upon the best means of carrying out his suggestion. He confided the entire management of the affair to these two men, and between them and Lemaure it was agreed that this should be the plan of operations. The troops of the fort should disembark in the night and take possession of the strongest points, and when all should be ready for the great outbreak, the War cry should be raised at a given signal. This arrangement having been accepted for Santa Anna by his two agents they sent Serrano back to the fort to remain with the Governor as a hostage, and Castrillón to act as a guide for the Spaniards. In this way everything came out to the satisfaction of the traitor. No one entertained the slightest suspicion of what was happening. The moment that the Spanish troops were ready to disembark Santa Anna told Echavarri that he had just received reliable information that the place would be attacked that same night, and he advised Echavarri to take a certain position in which Santa Anna had secretly placed his assassins. Ignorant of the conspiracy against him Echavarri followed this suggestion. All this was done for the purpose of alarming the city in order that he might take advantage of the darkness of the night and the general confusion to assassinate his rival under circumstances which would give his death the appearance of an accident and free Santa Anna of all suspicion. The troops landed at the appointed hour, with Castrillón at the head acting as guide, not leading them, however, as they expected, to occupy the strong places, but into a position which he had prepared for their destruction. At the most unexpected moment he opened fire on them, and in a short time the entire city was filled with consternation. The scene was bloody, and very few Spaniards escaped to relate the story of their disaster. This was the moment that Santa Anna was so anxiously awaiting, and he greeted it with delight. The assassin in whose charge he had left the accomplishment of his design attempted it, but the moment that he shot at the intended victim Echavarri turned around to speak to one of his assistants and the bullet buried itself in the heart of an unfortunate sergeant who was at his side.

It has never been made certain what Santa Anna's real purpose was on this occasion, whether it was really to surrender the city to the Spaniards, or only to deceive them and by such means get Echavarri out of his way and obtain a new officer for himself. It is certain, however, that in the heat of the battle he boarded a ship and with two assistants went toward the fort, leaving Tirios and Troyanos involved in the struggle. Lemaure received him coldly, saying: "Mr. Santa

Anna, if this is not treason, there is nothing that looks more like it," and he compelled him to return to save the Spanish troops from the critical situation in which they found themselves. The following day Santa Anna sent the Emperor a pompous message in which he represented himself as the sole commander by whose well contrived and providential measures the city had been saved and who had severely punished the Spaniards. His instrument, Castrillón, who acted as messenger, did not lose the opportunity of exaggerating the victory and glorifying his employer. Inasmuch as the news was pleasing and encouraging Iturbide answered Farfulla in a very flattering and satisfactory manner and conferred the title of Brigadier-General on him as a reward for his deeds. A day later the Emperor received Echavarri's account of the same affair. The latter, somewhat informed of Santa Anna's villainous conduct and knowing that he had hidden from the Government the most important act; namely, that Santa Anna himself had been the author of the butchery and had caused it by his perfidy and treason, made a full and complete review of the whole affair in his report, not omitting Santa Anna's cowardly flight during the combat. It is thought that Don E. Mendez received the message; and its reception could do no less than cause a change of opinion; but Iturbide, suspending his judgment of the affair, left for Jalapa on the 10th of November for the purpose of negotiating with Dávila, and took with him some of his ministers, among them Pedrazo, Secretary of War. He ordered Santa Anna and Echavarri to appear before him in that city in order that the conduct of both might be investigated and that the proper measures might be taken.

In accordance with the order these officers went to Jalapa, and after investigating the conduct of both, the emperor reappointed Echavarri to his rank, and, depriving Santa Anna of his appointment, ordered him to Mexico City although without declaring his purpose; but Iturbide says in his memoirs that it was not to punish him as Santa Anna supposed, but to give him an important appointment; namely, the command of a corps of Imperial troops which the Emperor was about to create at that time. If this is true it seems extraordinary and inexcusable in Iturbide that he should have wanted to give such a responsible position to a man whose office he had just taken away because of his crimes. Be that as it may, Santa Anna's own criminal conscience advised him not to go to Mexico. He knew that his crimes merited punishment and he thought that Iturbide only wanted to lure him to the Capital to have him arrested. Under these circumstances, instead of obeying his orders he left Jalapa on the 2nd of December, 1822 and fled with lightning speed to Veracruz, where he again united the soldiers under his command before the news of his dismissal should reach the city and proclaimed the Republic, as related by Iturbide.

CHAPTER VII.

Santa Anna runs no danger in declaring against the Emperor because of the latter's lack of popularity. Motives. His ambition. Abuse of power. Firmness of Congress. The Emperor arrests fourteen members of that body. Garza's insurrection. His cowardly surrender. The Emperor dissolved Congress by means of force. He silences popular rumor by promising to call a new Congress. He forms a Constituent *Junta*. He does not call the promised Congress. The *Junta* assumes the legislative power and attempts to draw up a

constitution. General indignation against the Emperor because of his usurpation. Santa Anna rises up against him. Progress of Republicanism. The people do not support the declaration until Victoria appears. They place this veteran at the head of the revolution. Santa Anna's jealousy. Guerrero and Bravo enter the field. Their capture and flight. Battle of Jalmolonga. Guerrero wounded. Death of Sanchez. The war unites the Province of Veracruz. Santa Anna makes Manlacia a prisoner. He marches against Jalapa. He is repulsed. He abandons his troops. He reaches the national bridge. Victoria reprimands him. He goes to Veracruz where he arrives two days before his troops. He renews peaceful relations with Davilla. He makes an attack upon Cordova. He is repulsed. He retires to Veracruz. Echavarri, Lobato and Cortazar besiege him. These leaders betray the Emperor. They make a treaty with Victoria and Santa Anna and join the revolution. Santa Anna goes to Tampico and from there to San Luis Potosí.

CHAPTER VII.

Santa Anna's declaration against Iturbide will seem to many persons a bold and fearless act, but it was not done in the height of desperation, for Santa Anna had many reasons to believe that public opinion would support him. It would have been impossible for him to bring about a revolution by his own power and personal influence, because no one, not even Iturbide, had faith in his fidelity, stability or patriotism. Nevertheless, when a nation is prepared for a revolution a villain can start it the same as a good patriot. Many things had happened from Iturbide's rise to Santa Anna's declaration which had made him so hateful in the eyes of the nation that any movement against him would be popular. Therefore, the risk that Santa Anna ran in revolting was not as great nor as imminent as may be supposed. We will show some of the causes which contributed to his unpopularity.

Iturbide's ambition did not end with his ascension to the throne. On the contrary, his love of power made him each time more insatiable and immoderate. Only an absolute and unlimited despotism would have contented him. The provinces made no resistance to his elevation; moreover, they approved it, and if he had governed with moderation, reconciled Congress and manifested some respect for the rights of others and the will of the nation, he might have been able—who knows?—to perpetuate his dynasty; but instead of this, he did everything to the contrary. He renewed his disagreement with Congress, and demanded the power of vetoing the proceedings of that body, of appointing and renewing at pleasure the judges of the Supreme Court, and of establishing a military tribunal which in truth would have been nothing more than an instrument of personal vengeance. To grant these extraordinary powers would have been fatal to all the hopes of liberty, and because of this his pretensions met with strong opposition on the part of Congress, in spite of the troops which were daily stationed in the galleries to direct their deliberations. That body made him some concessions for the sake of peace, but on seeing that nothing would satisfy him but the total yielding of all power into his hands, it became inflexible and maintained its rights and those of the country. The Emperor, exasperated, arrested fourteen of the most influential representatives on the 16th of August, hoping, in this way, to alarm the rest. This only helped to widen

the gulf which separated them and to cause affairs to take on a worse appearance.

The Emperor's despotism and violence became more intolerable each day, until finally Don Felipe de la Garza, at the head of a considerable force, raised the cry of insurrection about the month of October at the Town of Soto de la Marina. But, lacking all the necessities which such an undertaking required, he was routed without difficulty by Ramos Arispe. Although the people flocked with great numbers to enlist under Garza's standard, they shamefully surrendered to the imperial forces almost without resistance and accepted the Emperor's pardon. We shall have occasion to speak more than once of this passage in the course of our story.

This event had no effect on the Emperor's policy, nor did it contribute in any way to control his ambition. The conflict between him and Congress continued with greater violence until it was impossible for both powers to exist together. Iturbide ended the struggle as he had acquired the throne, that is, by means of force. On the 31st of October, 1822 General Cortazar entered the assembly and read the Emperor's decree declaring the dissolution of Congress and ordering the dispersion of its members within thirty minutes. Cortazar became very arrogant on account of this commission and had troops ready to force compliance with the order, but he had no opportunity of doing so, for the reason that the representatives retired immediately, believing that if they acted otherwise they would be insulted by the rabble or thrown out by the Government.

This arbitrary and violent act did not cause alarm at the moment, because of the solemn promise made by the Emperor to organize a new Congress with all possible speed. In the meantime he formed a constituent *Junta* composed of forty five members selected by himself from the Congress which had just been dissolved, taking two representatives from the most populous provinces and one each from the rest, whose powers would be confined to the formation of the new Congress. They were to exercise no legislative powers except in cases of greatest necessity. These promises caused the people to repress the indignation which they felt toward his despotic conduct, but in a short time it became evident to everyone that the Emperor was determined that another Congress should not convene and that he was only trying to deceive the nation with false promises in order to retain the power which he had acquired. What he had accomplished by force he undertook to preserve by fraud. The *Junta* instead of calling Congress, began a system of general legislation and likewise the formation of a constitution under the direction and revision of the Emperor. This was more than the nation cared to suffer. They felt a general dislike and indignation which increased with the remembrance of his villainous violation of national integrity in appropriating more than a million dollars belonging to various merchants which had been entrusted to the Government at Perote to be sent to Veracruz under his custody. This occurred a few days before the dissolution of Congress.

Such was the state of affairs when Santa Anna, stimulated by personal vengeance against the Emperor, raised his standard of rebellion at Veracruz in the manner we have stated. The nation had progressed

considerably in republican ideas, and there was a general desire for the establishment of a federal republic like that of the United States. Despite the fact that there existed a powerful party composed of the aristocracy, the clergy and the army, who preferred a central despotism, although they had no affection whatever for Iturbide's dynasty, the popular will took another turn, Santa Anna, though a Royalist in principles, allowed himself to be swayed by events and declared in favor of a Republic. He immediately sent a letter to the Emperor stating that despite the fondness which he had shown for him in former days and the active part which he had taken in his coronation, he was now compelled to throw down the gauntlet to him, because the happiness and welfare of the country demanded it. He appeared to believe that adherence to principles should be preferred to adherence to men. It is necessary to have all of the coolness and audacity with which Santa Anna was endowed to invoke the holy name of the fatherland, religion and principles in that manner. The reader will remember that a few months previous he boasted of having contributed to Iturbide's usurpation, called himself one of the strongest columns of the Empire, and now he suddenly destroys his altars, accuses his idol and again dons the dissembler's cap. Yesterday a submissive slave and today a savage republican! And this is what he considers adherence to principles with preference to men.

Santa Anna's revolt would have had the same fate as his friend Garza's, if its result had depended upon his character and influence. It was far from showing signs of life, and was received with disapprobation until the sudden reappearance of the punctilious leader General Victoria. The friends of the revolution, seeing that it was waning for lack of an efficient commander, ordered a search to be made for that venerated patriot, who had remained hidden in the mountains where he had taken refuge after the misfortunes of the country and the persecutions which Iturbide had caused him to suffer in the Capital. He was found alone in his desert, but he quickly responded to the call of his country, left his hiding place, appeared in Veracruz at a moment when his presence was indispensable to the cause, and was greeted with general enthusiasm. His exalted character and eminent services popularized the movement, and by unanimous acclamation he was placed at its head. In the beginning Santa Anna decided to place the noble veteran in a subordinate position and to retain the principal command, but the people indignantly repulsed his arrogance and boldness, and in a short time a great many had joined the standard of the nation's idol.

When Victoria first joined the enterprise Santa Anna ordered him to occupy the King's bridge which he did with two hundred men, maintaining himself there with his accustomed firmness while Santa Anna remained in Veracruz at the head of the principal command. This state of affairs was the thing which angered the people, as we have previously stated. That was the time to smother the revolution, for the imperial forces were near and were five times as great as those of the republican forces, but such was the inexplicable delay of the movements of Echavarri to whom had been entrusted the operations

against the rebels that he did not do anything, while the enemy's forces increased daily, due to Victoria's popularity.

As soon as it was known in the Capital that Victoria had again unsheathed his sword, Guerrero and Bravo resolved to follow his example, but being under the suspicious gaze of the Government they could not escape from the city until the 5th of January, 1823. Their flight caused Iturbide great uneasiness. Until that moment his fears had not been awakened. Having entrusted the war to one who was personally interested in destroying the prime instigator of the insurrection, he had no doubt as to the successful outcome, but when these leaders entered the field, affairs took on a most formidable aspect, and the influence which they exercised together with Victoria was sufficient cause to actually frighten him. Iturbide immediately sent a detachment in pursuit of the fugitives, who were overtaken and arrested in a hovel where they were found resting. It seemed that there was no alternative but that these two champions of liberty should suffer the fate of those patriots who had perished for the cause of the country, but fortunately for them, the Commander of the party was not insensible to the voice of humanity and justice. Writing to this official Guerrero said to him: "Dear Sir—It depends upon your will whether we shall be arrested and taken to Mexico to be shot in recompense for the many services which we have rendered for liberty and which we now intend to render for it. The country groans under despotism, and whoever desires to sustain that oppression is unworthy of being called a Mexican." These remarks had the desired effect. Not wanting to assume the responsibility of liberating them, the officer accomplished that object by relaxing his vigilance and permitting them to escape. They fled to the mountains in the south, and Guerrero, quickly organizing a force of men, did not await mounted men, but presented battle to General Sanchez at Jalmolonga. In this engagement Sanchez was killed by Guerrero's lieutenant at the moment when that man was attempting to shoot and kill his master. Guerrero, however, did receive a wound in his lung which did not heal and which he sustained for the remainder of his life. It is supposed that his energy declined with his constant bad health and great suffering.

The death of Sanchez and the wounding of Guerrero suspended the war in the South. The struggle was afterwards limited to the province of Veracruz, and it can be said that the operations were more theatrical than real. Our hero's first attack was the defeat of Colonel Manlacia in which no blood was shed. He succeeded in surprising and taking this officer prisoner with all of his regiment, which he added to his own forces. He immediately began his march to Jalapa, knowing that the garrison there was very weak. Be that as it may, upon reaching the city he was prostrated with fear and dread by an intense artillery fire which greeted him. The garrison had been reinforced by Perote's troops; our protagonist did not know this and doubted whether he should fight or flee. The officers decided for him, and a fight began between the two forces. In the heat of the battle, Farfulla, as was his custom, abandoned the field, leaving his army to get out of the difficulty in the best way they could, and fled to Veracruz where

he arrived two days ahead of his troops who had succeeded in effecting a retirement without suffering much damage.

On escaping from Jalapa Santa Anna had to pass by the national bridge where Victoria still strongly maintained himself. The frightened fugitive suggested to that ever fearless veteran that both ought to embark for the United States, and if we may believe Iturbide's memoirs, he had previously prepared a boat for that purpose and had even gone so far as to place his baggage on board. Victoria refused the generous offer and answered the pusillanimous Santa Anna in the following words: "Comrade, go to Veracruz to hold your post, and when Victoria's head is presented to you set sail. But while I live it is your honor to remain at my side defending the cause of liberty." General Victoria related this event to Mr. Zavala, from whose creditable and well-written history²⁵ we take it. It has also been confirmed by the lamented General Mejía whose story²⁶ we have followed in part.

Defeated in Jalapa and reprimanded by Victoria, Santa Anna renewed and extended relations with his ancient friend the Spanish Governor of the fort of San Juan de Ulúa, who promised to assist him with some troops in case he should find himself closely pursued by Echavarri, Cortazar and Lobato who then commanded Iturbide's forces. This gave him a small amount of encouragement and strength; he decided to make an attack upon Córdoba, and in fact attempted it, but unfortunately with the same results as his attack on Jalapa. Lobato who defended that place, repulsed him without difficulty and forced him to retire to Veracruz where he very soon found himself besieged by this General, together with Echavarri and Cortazar.

This siege was maintained with such severity that in a short time several of Don Antonio's officers and soldiers, alarmed at the situation, deserted their ranks and joined the Imperialists. The desertion increased daily and it was greater after Santa Anna was refused the assistance which he asked of the fort and which had been promised him by Dávila. Lemaur wanted to grant his request and send him some forces, but his officers and soldiers in a body opposed such a measure and he found himself forced to abandon his plan. This discouraged Farfulla, and without doubt, if the seige had lasted a few days more, the fate of this unfortunate would have been very sad indeed, for the surrender of the city being inevitable, it would have fallen into the hands of his most implacable enemy whom he had attempted to assassinate in a manner which we have stated. But the good fortune which has always protected him did not desert him then. He was saved by the desertion of Echavarri, who at this critical moment changed colors, betrayed the Emperor, and made a treaty with Victoria and Santa Anna on the 1st of February, 1823, which was known by the name of the "*Acta de Casa Mata*." Thus we see two mortal enemies suddenly forgetting their hatred and running to embrace each other as brothers for the purpose of making war in common against the man from whom they had received all their honors.

²⁵Zavala, Lorenzo de, *Ensayo Historico de las revoluciones de Mexico, desde 1808 hasta 1830*. Mexico, Manuel N. de la Vega, 1832-1845.

²⁶Mexia, Maximilian, Emperor of Mexico, 1832-1845, Defendant.

This was a very happy event for Farfulla, for the loss of his head would have been the result of the situation, if Echavarri had remained faithful to the Emperor.

After this Santa Anna left for Tampico and from there for San Luis Potosí in which place we will now leave him while we pass on to occupy ourselves with other particulars.

CHAPTER VIII.

Echavarri's desertion is the signal for a general revolution. Iturbide occupies Ixtapaluca with two thousand men. He resolves to reconcile himself to his enemies. He sends Negrete to Puebla to treat with the liberating forces. Negrete joins the enemy. The Emperor returns to the Capital and calls together the constituent *Junta* [*Instituyente*]. The old Congress convenes. Fifty-eight members assemble. Iturbide appears before them. His humiliation. He renounces the crown. Congress denies his power to renounce that which did not belong to him. The liberating army enter the Capital. The revolutionaries assemble the old Congress. A decree is passed declaring Iturbide's coronation null and ordering his expulsion from the country. He reembarks for Liorna. Informed of his return Congress declares him outlawed. Iturbide disembarks at Soto de la Marina. He is arrested by Garza and executed. Remarks upon the principal leaders engaged in the revolution. A provisional government is formed after the fall of Iturbide, with Victoria, Bravo and Negrete at its head. The provinces are declared States. A new Congress is installed. New organization of the parties. Proceedings of Congress. Election of the President and Vice-President. The Constitution is drawn up and the new Government begins to function.

CHAPTER VIII.

The union of the two belligerent forces was a death blow to the hopes of the Emperor. We will not elaborate at length in tracing his down-fall. It was as rapid as was his ascension. The principal details lack importance and are not necessary to our present purpose. The desertion of Echavarri and his army was the signal for a general revolution. Nearly all of the provinces declared in favor of the Republic in rapid succession. After this the war was purely nominal. Iturbide, at the head of two thousand men who remained faithful, occupied the small town of Ixtapaluca twelve miles from the Capital, but with this insignificant force it was impossible to place a dam before the impetuous torrent which advanced against him, and his only hope of salvation consisted in reconciling himself to the enemy whom he could no longer oppose. When the liberating army—for that was what the revolutionary forces were called—reached Puebla, Iturbide's friends were filled with consternation and began to desert him. He sent Negrete to ask the insurgents what would satisfy them. Negrete joined the enemy.

The Emperor then saw that the sun of his power was sinking to its death. He returned to the Capital and called the constitutional *Junta* in special session. He decided that the new Congress which he had promised should be organized, but the concession was made rather late; his enemies were not pacified with it nor did circumstances permit of procrastination. Under such circumstances and as a last resource he adopted the convocation of the old Congress. The 58 members who were still in the city were installed on the 7th of March; and indeed, it must have been very shameful and humiliating for the Emperor to appear before those whom he had threatened, per-

secuted, imprisoned and dispersed by force, and who were now revested with power while he himself was begging at their feet. He tried to talk, but being confused and embarrassed he could only proffer a few words in confessing his errors, of which he considered the dissolving of that body the greatest. He had nothing else to do but to state that he was disposed to recognize their authority, to allow them to work without any restraint, and to renounce the throne in obedience to the will of the nation.

Iturbide's great fault was that he did not wish to govern in the name of the people; that he wished to be stronger than they and to make his will the supreme law—a despotism which reason and justice contradicted and which can only be acquired by tyranny. It is no wonder, then, that when the day of surrender arrived there were very few who sympathized with him in his loss of power. Calling the old Congress did no good. Deserted by his friends, attacked by his enemies, and hated by the nation, he was forced to tender his abdication to Congress which he did on the 19th of March, 1823. However, that body did not accept the resignation for the reason that it might be interpreted as the recognition of a right to the thing delivered.

These were the events which had taken place when the liberating army entered the Capital on the 27th of March. The triumphant party called together the old Congress without referring to Iturbide's call, and in the shadow of the army and with the approbation of the provinces continued working until the 8th of April, when that body put an end to the question by issuing a decree declaring the coronation of Iturbide null and void; commanding the expulsion of that man from the country; and assigning him an annual pension of twenty-five thousand pesos during life and his family eight thousand pesos annually after his decease. In accordance with this decree he was escorted by General Bravo to the coast where he embarked on the 11th of May, 1823 for Liorna in a ship prepared by the Government for that purpose.

The rest of Iturbide's history is melancholy and sad, and we will refer to it without devoting much time to it in writing. Stimulated by a natural desire to return to his native land, but more than all by the dreams of ambition and glory which traversed his imagination, on the 20th of April he embarked at Liorna for London, from where he returned to the coast of Mexico. Congress, informed of his movements, issued a decree of proscription on April 28, 1824, condemning him to death in the event that he should return to the country. Iturbide was already at sea when that decree was issued, and, consequently, did not know the fate which awaited him upon his arrival. His fatal star directed him to Soto de la Marina where he was imprisoned by General Garza, who was in command at that place. He was conducted to Padilla, and executed on July 10, 1824, ten days after his landing. Such is the life and death of this unfortunate commander whose early career was stained with the blood of his fellow countrymen and whose subsequent history was marked with a lawless ambition which greatly exceeded his talents. The gratitude which the people owed him as the liberator of the country he lost as a usurper. He secured the country's independence and then trampled upon its liberty with profane feet.

Now that the struggle is over, it would be well to learn the real

object of the revolution. Was it to establish a republic? Certainly not, since nearly all of the leaders engaged in it were royalists before the revolution, and anti-republicans afterwards. The motives which influenced Santa Anna to commence it are well understood, but it is not known to what extent personal considerations impelled Echavarri. That these two leaders took into account the well being of the country it is impossible to believe. If they had unsheathed the sword against the usurper and despot they would have done well, for Iturbide was both one and the other; but it was not for this reason that they made war upon him. They were his corrupt instruments when he seized the scepter, and afterwards flattered and supported him in all of his aspirations to obtain unlimited power. Iturbide deserved his fortune, but those traitorous friends who conspired against him had all of his wickedness, and, like him, cared little for the liberty and happiness of the people. What were their charges against him? One was that he had stolen a million dollars of the public funds at Perote. Did he not do the same thing in Iguala? And who thought anything of that? Another charge against him was the appropriation of the public funds to his own use. And what was the cause of this but the unnecessary and enormous army, which drained the resources of the nation and the reduction of which these innovators opposed despite the fact that it constantly depleted the public treasury. The third and gravest charge was the dissolution of Congress by his order, a measure in which the principal conspirators of the revolution were implicated. Speaking of Santa Anna, Mr. Zavala says in poor Spanish: "He had encouraged the dissolution of Congress and the proclamation for establishing the Empire." Cortazar was the instrument who read to that body the imperial decree dissolving its sessions and who afterwards boasted of having had the honor to be employed in that way. And Echavarri, as the confidential friend and adviser of the emperor and active defender of his usurpations, was necessarily an accomplice in all of Iturbide's hideous crimes. Such were the villains who unsheathed the sword, not for the good of the country, but for the purpose of destroying a friend from whom they had obtained all their honors and prestige. Was there ever a coalition of men more depraved and corrupt than these? How could a people governed by such monsters entertain any hope of gaining and preserving its liberty? And were all of the leaders of the same character? Were there none who were uncontaminated? Yes, there was one, the immortal Guadalupe Victoria, who was the Bayard of his country—a man without fear and without stain. Bravo, who was an anti-republican, had requested in the Council of State that the death penalty be imposed upon those who conspired against the throne; and even Guerrero, one of the most honorable leaders, flattered the usurper by personally assisting at his coronation, but Victoria was always faithful to his principles; he did not flatter any tyrant, he did not ask any favors, and he never betrayed his country.

Congress, having decided the matter concerning Iturbide, on the 8th of April proceeded to establish a provisional government, placing at its head Victoria, Bravo and Negrete, who were to exercise the executive power until a new government should be formed, the purpose of which should be to make a law calling a new Congress. While

the convocation law was being discussed, the provinces, one after another, declared themselves States. These acts ended the tasks of the old Congress, and the new Congress was installed in the month of October, 1823 exactly one year after the arbitrary dissolution of the first one. This had scarcely occurred, when a violent discussion took place in regard to the form of government to be adopted. The old parties dissolved and formed new ones. The Iturbidists and Bourbonists having been excluded from the election, there was no longer any monarchical party. The assembly was divided into Federal Republicans and Centralists. These were the names of the two great opposing parties in the nation, and the members of the old parties joined one or the other of these divisions. The Iturbidists joined with the Federalists, that is to say, the party that was in favor of a confederation of states similar to that of the American Union, while the Bourbonists identified themselves with the Anti-Federalists, or that party which desired to establish a central government. To the latter party belonged the aristocracy, the clergy, and the army, commanded by Bravo, Negrete, Alamán, Pedraza, Echavarri, Fagoaga, Tagle and others, while the other party was composed of the great mass of the people whose principal champions were Victoria, Guerrero, Zavala, Farias, Rejón and others. Bustamante and Barragán also declared for the federation. Santa Anna declared in favor of himself and embraced first one and then the other, according as he was able to obtain a following. Such were affairs in the beginning, but how will we find them in the end? Who knows? We consider these two great antagonistic organizations as the personifications of liberty and despotism, and we believe that the destinies of the country were no less involved in this struggle than in the one which assured independence.

The Federal party composed a majority, not only in Congress, but also in the nation. The demand of the provinces, or states, as they called themselves, was imperative for Congress to form a government founded upon the federal system, and with the purpose of calming the anxiety of the people upon this point, that body published what was called the Constitution Act, recognizing the independence of the States, religious intolerance, the forces of the clergy and the soldiery, and embracing other matters which were in accord with the known desires of the people. This act should be considered as a part of the Constitution which the Congress was busily making. It was published in January 1824, and was received with general enthusiasm as a guarantee that the Government would be such as the nation desired.

Congress progressed slowly in its deliberations on account of the obstacles which were continually presented to its progress by the Centralists who hoped to obtain an advantage through delay. They had not lost hope of producing a counter-revolution in favor of their principles, and they undertook to retard the business of Congress in order to gain time for their secret operations. The provinces, alarmed by this delay, clamored for a constitution. The confidence which the Constitutional Act had inspired disappeared, and the Republicans began to fear that the intrigues and machinations of the Centralists would finally triumph. Congress, not having sufficient time to complete the Constitution which was awaited with such eagerness, and being likewise desirous of appeasing the public, issued two decrees in August,

1824, as a part of the constitution which was to be formed, ordering the legislatures of the States to proceed to the election of the president, vice-president and other officials. The election took place on the 1st of September, 1824. General Victoria obtained the first nomination, and General Bravo, not receiving an absolute majority, was later elected vice-president by Congress. Not long afterwards, on the 4th of October, the Constitution was completed to the entire satisfaction of the majority of the nation. It was sworn to on the same day by the representatives of Congress and by Don Guadalupe Victoria, who took possession of the government as President of the Republic. These events having taken place, the Constituent Congress adjourned in November, and on the 1st of January, 1825 the first Congress under the Constitution was installed.

CHAPTER IX.

Santa Anna's movements after the celebration of the *Acta de Casa Mata*. He embarks for Tampico with part of the Liberating Army. He marches toward San Luis. Proclaims himself Emperor under the name of Antonio I. He afterwards declared himself protector of the federal system. Is made a prisoner and conducted to the Capital. His connection with the conspiracy of Lobato. Is sent as Military Commander to Yucatan. He is forced to return to the City of Mexico because of his mal-administration. Is appointed Director of Engineers. He ridicules and refuses the office. Marries Doña Ines García. Retires to Veracruz. Joins Barragán in a conspiracy against Victoria. Result of this conspiracy.

CHAPTER IX.

How do you do, most serene Mr. Farfulla, how do you do? Here we are again, and we only feel regret at not having enjoyed more of your Highness' company during the long journey which we have taken. Your most serene Highness will perhaps think that in devoting our attention to the others we lack consideration of the importance which your most serene Highness demands. If for this reason we have incurred the displeasure of Y. M. S. H. we will try to expiate the fault in the future, by promising that we will not lose sight of you for any length of time from this moment until we safely arrive at the end of our journey; and, if during that interval we do not succeed in revealing the character of Y. M. S. H. in its true light, it will not be because of any lack of good will on our part. We will undertake to do ample justice to Y. M. S. H. by presenting him before the judgment of the world just as he is, and if the picture does not appear as pleasing as H. M. S. H. could desire it, it should be remembered that the fault is in the original, and not in the copy, which will be so true to life that all who have the honor of knowing him will be able to testify to its truthfulness and accuracy. When we left H. M. S. H. he was in Veracruz, rejoicing in the happy outcome of his insurrection. Since that time several conspiracies have occurred in Jalisco, Oajaca, and other places, some in favor of Iturbide and others in favor of the republic, which we have not mentioned because H. M. S. H. did not figure in them; but will not occur again, perhaps, since there is great probability that the name of H. M. S. H. will be found in the remainder of them. With these friendly remarks we will resume the history of H. M. S. H.'s most important actions.

After the *Acta de Casa Mata* was issued, the Republican forces pre-

pared to advance toward the Capital, but before beginning their march Santa Anna, who never wished to subject himself to the command of any leader, requested that he be permitted to embark with part of the army for Tampico under the pretext of preventing the Emperor from taking refuge in the interior. This request was joyfully conceded, for none wanted to work with any one who was always and everywhere factious disorganizer and violator of the peace. He set sail for Tampico with six hundred men in March, 1823, and advanced from there with all speed to San Luis Potosí, where he established his headquarters and for the first time began to dream of occupying the throne from which Iturbide had just been ejected. With the object of testing his popularity and prestige he bribed some of his soldiers to proclaim him Emperor under the title of Antonio I.

He was led into this foolhardiness by the dissensions which took place among the revolutionary leaders after the fall of Iturbide. All animated by different motives and working with contrary designs, these leaders had combined to depose Iturbide. After their common purpose was effected, they began to quarrel among themselves. Some wanted to establish a pure monarchy, others a constitutional monarchy, some a central republic and the rest a federal republic. Santa Anna conceived an intermediate plan to reunite the various factions and place himself at their head. With this hope he made the experiment by which he was to be proclaimed Antonio I. This plan collapsed, however, as it not only failed to inspire the confidence of the Royalists and Centralists, but instead invited the contempt and ridicule of all parties. On abandoning his imperial pretensions, he turned a political somersault, became a radical democrat, and placed himself at the head of the Federalists. Seeing that the leaders of this party were scattered throughout the entire nation and were daily becoming more popular, in imitation of Cromwell, he declared himself 'Protector' of the federal system and at the same time without blushing permitted his soldiers to salute him with the imperial title. This happened two weeks after he had himself proclaimed Antonio I.

In order to put an end to Farfulla's extravagance, and to call him to his senses, a strong army under the command of Bravo was sent against him from the City of Mexico; but before these forces arrived at the theater of operations Generals Armijo and Fernandez had already marched against the new Emperor by order of the Governors of Guadalajara and San Luis Potosí, and by directing their movements with vigor and activity very soon forced him to surrender to the Government. His troops were dispersed, and the little Napoleon marched as prisoner to Mexico. Thus fell the Federal Protector and Antonio I.

His next appearance in public affairs was as a spy and traitor in the Lobato conspiracy. At this time there existed strong opposition to the Spaniards' holding office, and many individuals, stimulated by their hatred of this class, as well as by their desire to obtain office, formed a conspiracy for the purpose of compelling Congress to enact a law ejecting the Spaniards from all public offices and declaring them excluded from the elections and nominations for any civil or military office. Lobato was the ostensible leader of this conspiracy, but he declared afterwards that Don Mariano Michelena and Santa Anna were

its prime instigators. The public voice accused Michelena, who was temporarily exercising the executive power, of desiring to supplant the legal incumbent who was a Spaniard named Negrete. Be that as it may, as soon as the existence of the plot was made known to the Government, Santa Anna offered his services for the purpose of routing the rebels, but as the Government did not want to place any power in his hands, the minister, Lucas Alamán proposed to them in Council that Santa Anna be employed as a spy to watch their operations, an employment which was very suited to the principles and talents of the fallen Antonio I. He joyfully accepted the position and carried out its duties to the satisfaction of the ministers. He became involved in the conspiracy, associated intimately with the rebels, attended their meetings and became one of their most active members. While employed in this manner he saw how formidable was the conspiracy and how general and obstinate was the prejudice against the Spaniards. He decided to deceive Alamán and to identify his fortune with that of the conspiracy, thinking that he could gain more advantage by commanding this than by adhering to the Government. With this purpose in view he proposed to place himself at its head, but when he saw that the command had been given to Lobato, he suddenly severed the ties which bound him to his companions and revealed their proceedings to the Government.

The outbreak took place on the night of the 23rd of January, 1824. Lobato had two thousand men under his command and for some time he filled the Capital with tumult. However, Congress remained firm and conceded nothing. Lobato did not want to attack this body because of the prestige which it enjoyed in the nation. While he remained inactive Guerrero arrived in the Capital with his forces. The presence of this leader was sufficient to calm the popular commotion. All the rebels gave up their arms and received the Government's pardon except Staboli and a few accomplices, who, on remaining obstinate, were made prisoners and sentenced to capital punishment. However, their punishment was afterward changed to permanent exile. Thus terminated Lobato's conspiracy which lasted three days, and during this time, according to Mr. Zavala, "General Santa Anna, who ran from one place to another, offered Congress his person and his sword"; but it does not appear that either one or the other was accepted.

In consideration of the denunciation which Santa Anna made of Lobato's conspiracy, and due to the influence of Rejón, whom Congress had taken as its protector, the case against our hero was closed. As a reward for him, but even more for the purpose of ridding themselves of him, Congress sent him to a place where he could do the least possible damage, and appointed him Commanding General of Yucatán, to which place he went in 1825. We can say nothing positively in regard to his administration at that place, except that it was brief and corrupt. Among his arbitrary acts is numbered that of embarking his forces without the Government's knowledge for the purpose of invading the Island of Cuba, and because of this and other excesses, the Government was obliged to ask him to account for his conduct. For this purpose he was ordered to appear in the Capital. However, on his arrival there, instead of receiving the punishment which his arbitrary acts merited, he was appointed Director General of Engineers in that

State; another example of the extreme liberality of Victoria, who too frequently allowed his kind-heartedness to dominate his judgment. In the eyes of everyone, however, that appointment ridiculed the one who made it as much as the one who received it, because it was known that Santa Anna was as well qualified to be an engineer as a sailor would be to preach. This gave occasion for the most bitter sort of satire. In a short time Farfulla resigned the position and retired to private life in Veracruz where, for want of other occupation, he commenced to intrigue against the progress of liberal ideas and would have joined the conspiracy of Father Arenas had it not been for Guerrero who had always been his friend, and who on several occasions had saved him from the wrath of Pedraza and other enemies.

Not very long after his return from Yucatán Santa Anna formulated a plan to involve himself in the intrigues of Don N. García, a Spaniard who, although he was a short-sighted man, nevertheless, was very rich and had two daughters, Tomasa and Ines. Farfulla sent a messenger to ask for the hand of Tomasa, but the ambassador, through some mistake, asked for that of Ines. The parents granted the request, and shortly thereafter, the preparations for celebrating the wedding having been completed and the guests having assembled, the bride dressed in her wedding finery made her appearance, when to the astonishment of those present, the bridegroom exclaimed: "this is not the one that I wanted; I want the prettier one" and after a short pause, he continued: "it does not matter. Although there has been a mistake I will adjust myself to it" and he celebrated his wedding.

Santa Anna did not continue long in this state of inactivity. Despite all the favors he had received from Victoria we see him joining in a conspiracy with Barragán against Victoria. The object of this conspiracy was to demolish the administration of that veteran and patriot and to place Vice-President Bravo at the head of the Government. Santa Anna had three very powerful motives, or at least he thought he had, in enlisting in this enterprise, to wit: his lack of occupation, his implacable hatred of Pedraza, the Minister of War, and the hope of again entering public life; because, in the event that the revolution should be successful, he would receive the appointment of Minister of War.

This conspiracy was discovered under the following circumstances. In the State of Veracruz the influence of the Scottish rite or ancient Bourbonist party predominated. These flourished under the shadow of the Governor, Don Miguel Barragán, who held the office of military and political chief. He commenced as a Republican, but played turn-coat and became an aristocrat. There was a considerable number of Spaniards in that State who were monopolizing the wealth, nearly all of whom belonged to the *Escoceses* party. With these advantages it was not difficult for them to secure a majority in the legislature. The only supporter of liberal ideas was the paper entitled "Mercury" and two York lodges. In this State the first attacks upon the Constitution had begun, but as the party did not commit any criminal acts, the Government was not informed of its conduct. Nevertheless, it was well known that a spirit of rebellion existed in that portion and that the *Escoceses* were in secret communication with certain persons who, it was supposed, were forming a conspiracy in the Capital. All of this

turned out to be true, as was later proved upon the arrival at Veraacruz of the Minister, Don José Ignacio Esteva, to fill the office of Deputy General of the State. His arrival occasioned great alarm among the conspirators and accelerated their movements. It was at once determined that Esteva should not be permitted to occupy his position, and in order to carry this decision into effect the Legislature, which was composed principally of *Escoceses*, convened in extraordinary session and issued a decree of expulsion against Esteva, a document which was a disgrace to the nation and a stain on the character of its authors. To support this measure, Barragán, upon his own authority and responsibility, gave Santa Anna the command of the place. Riñon, who commanded the fortress of Ulua, satisfied with Barragán's crime, announced to the National Government his refusal to obey that man's orders. This state of affairs demanded the attention of the Government which appointed General Guerrero to march to the theater of the disturbance to smother the insurrection at once. His appointment for this purpose greatly troubled Santa Anna, who did not lose time in taking flight to Jalapa in order to be on friendly terms with his old friend, and to regain his confidence and protection. He held long conferences with him during which "he appeared to be frightened to death." He denied all connection with the conspiracy and denounced his companions in the crime, not so much as pardoning his own brother in whose favor he asked some slight consideration. In spite of all of Santa Anna's attempts to soften Guerrero's heart, the latter, who was very inflexible as a military officer, although compassionate as an individual, complied with his duty with due firmness. He deprived Barragán of his office, took away Santa Anna's command and gave it to Colonel Castro, instituted a suit against Manuel Santa Anna and the other subalterns of the conspiracy, and, in brief, took all the precautions necessary to frustrate and punish those implicated. Restrained by Guerrero's power and popularity, and not having military forces to support them, the rebels succumbed without complaining. Esteva commenced to perform his duties, and the conspiracy died as an attempt poorly conceived and more poorly executed. But disposed as Guerrero was to treat the rebels with clemency, after their defeat public opinion and personal animosity were so strong against some of them that Barragán, Manuel Santa Anna, and several other officers were compelled to seek refuge in the woods surrounding *Mango de Clava*, General Santa Anna's plantation, where they remained hidden until the battle of Tulancingo.

CHAPTER X.

Santa Anna appointed Vice-Governor of Veraacruz in place of Iberro. The latter occupies a seat in Congress. Conspiracy of the *Escoceses* or Aristocratic party known as Tulancingo or Montaña. Bravo in command. Santa Anna's connection with it. Headquarters of the rebels in Tulancingo. Guerrero marches against them. Santa Anna proposes to accompany him, but is not permitted to do so by Guerrero who suspects him of being one of the conspirators. Santa Anna leaves for the purpose of joining Bravo. He finds Tulancingo closely surrounded by Guerrero. He is made prisoner and taken before this General. Battle between the two forces. Defeat of the rebels. Santa Anna fights against those who were awaiting his aid. He goes to Mexico City. The authorities receive him coldly. He promises to work with the *Yorkinos* or Republican party. He goes to Jalapa as Governor in place of Barragán who found himself a fugitive. Guerrero is elected Governor of Veraacruz, but upon

his refusal of the position, Santa Anna continues to hold it. Contest between Guerrero and Pedraza for the Presidency. The latter is elected. Santa Anna rebels against his election. He takes possession of Perote.

CHAPTER X.

On account of the death of one of the Senators of that State it was necessary that the Legislature of Veracruz appoint another man to his place. General Guerrero wanted Santa Anna to receive the nomination for the purpose, as he said, of separating him from his corrupt companions. Santa Anna promptly agreed to this, although he secretly opposed the plan. There was no difficulty in obtaining the appointment, but during the night preceding the election Santa Anna conspired with the members to elect the Vice-Governor Iberri whose position Santa Anna wished to occupy. This was accomplished in accordance with his desires, and by this means he avoided going to the capital and at the same time obtained a position for which he was very anxious. From that time Guerrero began to distrust his promises.

The conspiracy of Santa Anna and Barragán was only the prelude and part of another more extensive one which progressed rapidly throughout various portions of the country. This took place in 1827 and is known in history as the Conspiracy of Montaña or Tulancingo.

The *Escoceses*, or aristocratic party, having been unsuccessful in their civil and constitutional efforts to defeat the *Yorkinos*, or Republican party, determined to obtain their end by illegal and violent means. "They finally made," says Mr. Zavala, "the hopeless resolution of taking up arms, of destroying institutions and of ousting the authorities in order to place themselves at the head of affairs and direct the republic." Santa Anna joined in this one as he did in all conspiracies. The theater of his first operations was Zacatlán de las Manzanas, in the vicinity of Apan, where our hero made his appearance under the pretense of attending the cock-fights at a fair which was held there, but in reality to assist in the plot. Mr. Zavala, who always favors Santa Anna as much as possible, in agreement with the historical truth expresses himself thus: "It is said that Generals Moran, Santa Anna, Terán and Hernandez were equally implicated. It is also admitted that Santa Anna was present at the aforesaid fair where the conspirators met." Very soon we shall see this traitor taking up arms against his companions.

The first discovery of this plan was made by Don Manuel Montaña who in December, 1827 brought to light a publication containing the four following proposals: first, the expulsion of the Spaniards, second, the departure of Mr. Poinsett, third, the abolition of secret societies, fourth, the removal of Don Manuel Gomez Pedraza as Minister of War. It was known by everyone that Montaña was incapable of being the instigator of so great an undertaking, and was only the instrument of other persons. The real authors of the plan were the Vice President Bravo, General Berdejo and others. This was discovered the following day when they left the Capital and established their headquarters at Tulancingo, a small town seventy-five miles from the Capital.

As soon as Santa Anna found out that Bravo had left Mexico he wrote to Guerrero, who had been ordered to march against the rebels, offering to serve in his ranks in order to personally prove his friend-

ship and adherence and to show his devotion to the Federation and good order. Guerrero, who well knew Santa Anna's motive for going to the cock-fights at Zacatlan, replied that the Government had unpleasant information regarding him, that he had been denounced as one of the leaders of the conspiracy, and that he should not move from the place where he was located until he, Guerrero, should write the Government about the matters and receive its answer. Not satisfied with this, Santa Anna decided to join the conspirators and left for Bravo's encampment.

Much is due the Minister Pedraza for the energy with which he worked, and for the sudden suppression of the insurrection, for scarcely fifteen days had passed after Bravo's exit and defeat before Guerrero, who was the idol of the nation at that time, marched against the rebels. The two parties met at Tulancingo almost simultaneously, and on the 6th of January, 1828 a battle took place which resulted in the complete dispersion of the conspirators. And what part did Farfulla take in this battle? Did he fight for or against the Government? Permit Mr. Zavala to speak. This historian says: "General Santa Anna, who had gone to General Guerrero's camp; actively served on this occasion against the rebels, although the latter evidently counted upon his co-operation." The truth is he fought against the same rebels with whom he had co-operated a short time before, nor is it less certain that they depended a great deal upon his assistance, but Mr. Zavala does not explain the circumstances which influenced Santa Anna to adopt the part he played. They were as follows.

In accordance with the resolution which he made after the communication with Guerrero mentioned above, Santa Anna departed to join Bravo, but on reaching Tulancingo at seven or eight o'clock at night accompanied by two officers, one from Veracruz and the other a Spaniard, who afterwards married his sister, he found the place strongly besieged. While he was looking for some means by which he could enter the town, a patrol of Guerrero's cavalry made him prisoner and brought him before the General. This leader was filled with wrath and indignation on seeing him, but Farfulla greeting him in a declamatory tone: "Comrade! I told you at Jalapa that my sword would always be at your side and my love for the illustrious General Guerrero is so great that on realizing that he had commenced his military operations I could not wait the permission of the Government to serve my country and my friend."

Although Guerrero knew the mockery of all this, and Santa Anna's dissimulation in his devotion for him or for anyone when he could get nothing from it; still, the discourse produced the desired effect. There was something of the dramatic in him. The ingenuity, the vehemence, the earnestness with which he spoke, and the man's unblushing audacity all conspired first, to surprise Guerrero, and then to make him break into a Homeric laugh. When an honest man laughs cheerfully, his anger has passed. Thus it was with Guerrero. He pardoned the two-faced traitor and despite the petitions, the strong and almost unanimous manifestations of opposition on the part of the officers and soldiers who were opposed to receiving him into the division, the kindness and charity of the commander triumphed over this opposition, and Santa Anna was permitted to remain and co-operate with them. Zavala

says that Santa Anna served with great activity. That was certainly a very appropriate theater for displaying the valor and fearlessness which Santa Anna possessed, there being three thousand men in Guerrero's division and only five hundred in Bravo's. It was evident that in such a contest as that victory would be certain and danger absent. It was a suitable battlefield for Farfulla's nature and he took advantage of the occasion to prove his despised, vehement and marvelous patriotism. There was no more ferocious warrior in the field, and he could scarcely refrain from devouring Bravo's entire forces at a single bite. However, Guerrero knew how to repress the superhuman bravery of this Chrononhotonthologos²⁷ of war and directed the battle in such a way as to reduce the enemy with an insignificant amount of bloodshed. Only six men fell in the action which took place on the 7th of January, 1828. Bravo and his associates fled, but were afterwards made prisoners and would have been executed had it not been for the kindness of Victoria and Guerrero through whose influence Congress commuted their sentence to temporary exile. On occupying the presidency Guerrero revoked this decree and permitted the return of the conspirators. To this act of liberality and clemency Bravo ignobly responded by becoming one of the most active agents in effecting the death of that unfortunate general.

Perhaps there are no events which present the distinctive character of Guerrero and Santa Anna more accurately and faithfully than the preceding ones. Guerrero appears as the courageous and efficient officer; the benevolent and trusted man. Santa Anna is seen as he really is, a depraved man without scruples, very bold and presumptuous, possessing agreeable manners, loquacious in conversation, and having great tact and astuteness combined with a subtle instinct to perceive danger and a marvelous ability to escape it.

Two days after the arrest of Bravo and his companions General Santa Anna, with letters of recommendation from General Guerrero went to the Capital for the purpose of receiving Government orders to go to Jalapa as Vice Governor and become the executive head of the State whenever Barragán should lose his position. Victoria and Pedraza, instead of receiving him cordially, or even civilly, treated him with the highest and most marked contempt, and would have proceeded against him but for the letters from Guerrero, whom these officers greatly esteemed. Farfulla remained for some days in the Capital working with the *Yorkinos*, although they had refused him permission to attend their meetings as a member. Finally, after promising in a most solemn manner to work in the future in accordance with the principles which had just triumphed, he left for Jalapa to take up his duties as Governor in place of Barragán.

As all turncoats and traitors who leave one party for another are accustomed to defend their new principles with great zeal for the purpose of winning the good will of their associates and to make their happiness certain, so it was with Santa Anna after he deserted the *Escoceses* and joined the *Yorkinos*. His devotion to the Republicans

²⁷Chrononhotonthologos is the name and principal character of a burlesque written by Henry Carey and first performed in 1734. This person, the king of Queerummania, was particularly bombastic in his speech, and pompous in his manner.

became very great and was carried to such an extreme that he cruelly persecuted the persons to whom he had formerly been a most intimate friend. In fact, it appears that he had made them the special object of his hatred and vengeance. While he was dominated by this spirit one of Santa Anna's first acts was to order the arrest of his friend Barragán who, abandoned by his followers and pursued by his enemy, still roved about in the woods close to *Mango de Clava*. On capturing Barragán and Manuel Santa Anna he delivered them to the national tribunal. Fortunately for them, although no thanks were due Farfulla, the party's fury had abated and Barragán's punishment, like that of Bravo, was temporary exile. We do not know Manuel Santa Anna's punishment.

As it then became necessary to elect another Governor in place of Barragán, Santa Anna desired the election to devolve upon Guerrero. In this he had a profoundly egotistical motive, for, as he was unable to obtain the position for himself, he wanted it to be given to someone who would not be able to hold it. He well knew that though Guerrero should be appointed that leader would not be able to leave his business in the Capital to take charge of the government in Jalapa and consequently he, Santa Anna, would continue as the political leader of the State. His plans worked out according to his desires. By great perseverance Guerrero was elected despite the fact that the large majority of the Legislature were *Escoceses* and his enemies, and as it was known beforehand, this leader refused to leave the Capital. By this means Santa Anna succeeded in maintaining himself at the head of affairs in the State of Veracruz.

The nation was compelled to fix its attention upon the election of Victoria's successor. The election of the President and Vice-President of the Republic was to take place on the 1st of September, 1828. For a long time Guerrero had been the idol of the people, but as Pedraza had acquired great reputation by destroying the conspiracies of Padre Arenas and Tulancingo, he became his rival in popularity and his opponent in the presidential election. In due time these two men were announced as candidates for that high office, Pedraza, being supported by the Aristocracy and the Royalists, and Guerrero, leader of the *Yorkinos*, by the democratic element in the country. Santa Anna was in favor of Guerrero and spared no strength to promote his election, animated as he was, not so much by loyalty to his friend as by his mortal hatred for Pedraza in whom he had always had a most bitter and implacable enemy. Santa Anna, having had enough influence to direct the action of the legislature in the appointment of Guerrero as Governor, flattered himself upon being able to do the same thing in the present case and to assure the vote of that body in favor of the said Guerrero for President and Esteva for Vice President. To this end he not only worked in secret with the *Yorkinos*, but also extended his relations with the *Escoceses*, by flattering some and threatening others. His hopes were favorable. The *Escoceses* were in disrepute and appeared humiliated, while the *Yorkinos* had increased their lodges and then formed a majority of the councils. Santa Anna, therefore, did not encounter any difficulty in obtaining emphatic documents from these authorities requesting the Legislature to give its

vote for Guerrero and Esteva. He was encouraged still more by many of the *Escoceses* members with promises which they had no intention of keeping. In order to more fully assure his success and to place it beyond doubt, he appeared in the midst of the Assembly at the time the election was to be held and in a high and arrogant voice said that, as the will of the people was indisputably in favor of Messrs. Guerrero and Esteva, he hoped that the Legislature of Veracruz would not produce discord in the country by opposing this will, emphatically adding that if that body forgot the obligations which it owed to the country, treated the petitions of the municipalities with disdain, and cast its vote against public sentiment, the people would certainly take up arms, and that without doubt he would place himself at their head. Having stated this, he left the hall with all the importance of Cromwell when he dissolved the *Rump* Parliament. He had scarcely left when, in contempt of his threat, the election was held, and the vote cast, not in favor of Guerrero, but of Pedraza.

The news of this result was like a thunderbolt to him. He was filled with anger and despair, and, burning with a desire for vengeance, he returned to his mansion, pretending illness, and remained hidden from everyone for some time in order to calm himself and to regain his energy. During the few hours of his retirement he occupied himself in considering the part which he should play under the circumstances, and concluded that he would foment an outbreak among the ignorant and inflammable classes. In accordance with this, eight thousand men ran through the streets that night with burning torches, accusing the Legislature of having been bribed by the Spaniards' gold, and shouting: "Long live Guerrero, the President of the Republic!" The town council also assembled and declared itself opposed to the election of Pedraza. The Legislature was able to sustain itself better than Farfulla had expected, because Pedraza, foreseeing such difficulties, had ordered the Commanding General Mora to Jalapa with a sufficient force to maintain order and repress any attempt toward an insurrection. The Legislature, supported by the military force and under the shadow of its protection, continued its deliberations and took vigorous and active measures against the rebels. The Vice-Governor was suspended from office and ordered to be punished as a traitor, the council was dissolved and lawsuits were instituted against many who were implicated.

Farfulla became extraordinarily alarmed on seeing the consequences of his foolhardiness. His enemies persecuted him with a severity which he had not expected. He was terrified at his indiscreetness. He had supposed that the *Escoceses* were completely humiliated and overwhelmed by recent events and would not dare to proceed against him, whatever might be the measures they took against his subalterns; but when he saw with what firmness they worked and their determination to catch up with him, he was suddenly filled with terrible fears for his personal safety, the only thing capable of causing him alarm, for little did he consider the consequences which were not going to cease at that point, but when his life was in danger no man was the victim of a greater fear than he. He was always bold but never courageous. His situation became more hopeless when he found himself abandoned by his old friends in the Legislature and realized the

impossibility of effecting any reconciliation with it. Desirous of attaining such a purpose Santa Anna appealed to his friend Castrillon, his associate in past crimes, who openly refused to see him or have any communication with him.

Besieged as he was by his implacable foes, it seemed that there was no door by which the poor Farfulla could escape. But who can catch an eel by the tail? We should like to grasp quicksilver, but we cannot hold it. In his despair he found a friend in Mariano Arispe, Commander of the 5th Regiment of Infantry, who was loyal to the *Yorkinos* and who published a manifesto against the election of Pedraza. With the consent of the officers and soldiers Santa Anna placed himself at the head of this force and left for Perote, thus evading the suit brought against him. Mr. Zavala says that he was received with a salute of artillery, which may be true, although another authority states that he succeeded in taking that place by the means to which he ordinarily had recourse in all emergencies; namely, by falsehood—by making the Commander of that stronghold believe that he was marching with those troops under Government orders. Be this as it may, he took possession of the fort, and in a short time published a proclamation declaring his intention of not recognizing Pedraza as President under any circumstances, although it was evident that he had been elected in accordance with the articles of the Constitution, and of not surrendering until Don Vicente Guerrero should be substituted for the former. With the intention of making his declaration more pleasing to the populace he demanded the total expulsion of the Spaniards, the same portion of the population with which he had worked until the battle of Tulancingo. Pedraza was elected on the 1st of September, 1828; Santa Anna's declaration was on the 11th. The news reached Mexico on the 14th, and on the 17th the General Congress issued a decree declaring Santa Anna and his accomplices outlaws.

We therefore see this restless and turbulent spirit again cast upon the revolutionary sea, not for the good of his country, but solely for the diabolic purpose of satisfying his mortal hatred of a single man. In order to satisfy his vengeance against Pedraza, he did not hesitate to destroy the Constitution, submerge his country in civil war, and drench his sword with the blood of his fellow-citizens.

CHAPTER XI.

Rincón besieges Perote. Skirmishes. Santa Anna marches toward Oajaca. He reaches Chalchicomula. His conduct at this place. He marches to Tehuacán. His dissolution. Pursued by Calderón and Rincon he hurries forward and encounters Colonel Pantoja, who, instead of fighting him, joins him and marches with him to Don Domingullo. He encounters Don Timoteo Reyes, who, enticed by promises, surrenders without resistance. Santa Anna's treachery and cruelty to him and his officers. He repels Miranda. Surrounded by Calderón he signs an armistice; he violates it, marches to Oajaca, appropriates the public funds and gives himself over to his favorite vices. Rincón marches toward Oajaca. He meets Santa Anna. Battle with and total defeat of the latter. Santa Anna takes refuge in the Santo Domingo convent. He is besieged by Rincón. Santa Anna enters and sacks the San Francisco convent. His adventures. Reduced to the direst necessity he makes proposals to the Government. These are declined. He attempts to escape to Guatemala and is prevented from doing so by Arista. He pleads for his life and offers to surrender. The Acordada revolution saves him.

CHAPTER XI.

The Government lost no time in taking measures to attack the rebel. General Manuel Rincón with a division of three thousand men marched on Perote and encamped his troops at the Molino hacienda, a distance of two cannon shots from the fortress; but instead of storming the fort, he adopted the opposite policy of besieging the enemy in the hope, it is said, that after due deliberation, Santa Anna would abandon his undertaking and return to assume his duties. It is possible that in all of this he may have acted under the secret instructions of Victoria, or under the inspiration of a soul which hated to shed the blood of his fellow-citizens unnecessarily. Regardless of what may have caused his slowness of movements and the bad order of his troops, those movements laid him open to the suspicion that he was either a coward or deceitful, and gave the enemy some advantage. Santa Anna, availing himself of his antagonist's mistake by taking the tortuous road that he had followed in order to avoid the fire from the fort, attacked part of the forces commanded by Colonel Unda, who, with five hundred men, occupied the Acuatepec hacienda twelve miles from Rincón's headquarters. The attack, which was made at night, proved successful. The troops of the cowardly Unda on being surprised and defeated were disarmed and scattered.

The happy outcome of this nocturnal sortie encouraged Santa Anna to a remarkable degree. He was, however, compelled to operate on the defensive, and to confine his activities to light skirmishes of no importance. His main object was to maintain himself in his position until the revolution should spread throughout the nation; but the decree which the General Congress had issued against him declaring him, as well as all who should take part in his movements, outlaws, together with the failure which followed the attempts made by Messrs. Vera-mendi, Zavala and others of less note to support him, had the effect of cooling the ardor of his followers for the time being and of preventing the revolution from extending beyond the walls of the fortress. Seeing that his undertaking made no progress, realizing the danger of his situation, and fearing that the lack of resources would compel him to surrender, he accepted the suggestion of his officers and soldiers to leave the fort and try their fortunes in another place. He escaped in the night and took the road to Oajaca for the purpose of taking refuge in Guatemala in case his adventure should prove disastrous. His departure was accomplished without being observed by Rincón, who was so inert that he did not pursue him until the fourth day when Santa Anna had already reached San Andres Chalchicomula where he remained for two days exacting arbitrary contributions from the inhabitants. He then continued on his way to Tehuacán.

At this place he gave himself over to all forms of dissipation, but principally to spending his time with a young woman who distinguished herself by the facility with which she lavished favors, dispensing them equally to great and small from General to his Lieutenant. Regardless of the danger of his situation, he continued his riotous living until Rincón and Calderón arrived within eight miles of Tehuacán. Awakening then from his sleep and seeing himself in danger, he placed himself at the head of one hundred and fifty cavalymen and departed in great haste for Oajaca, leaving the infantry in

command of other officers. In his flight he met Colonel Pantoja, who occupied the summit of Guicatlan for the purpose of preventing his passage, but instead of fighting Farfulla, Pantoja joined him and the two marched together to the town of Don Dominguillo. This event was followed by one of greater importance to him; namely, the surrender of Don Timoteo Reyes, who commanded the forces that had been sent from Oajaca to hold the mountain passes. The latter, although he had superior forces, surrendered with the plea that he did not wish to shed Mexican blood, but in reality because he was seduced by the promises of Santa Anna, who, in violation of his oath, immediately ordered the imprisonment of Reyes and his chief of staff, and at the same time united the troops to his own.

With his forces considerably increased Santa Anna abandoned the idea of marching to Guatemala, and sent part of his cavalry to occupy Oajaca while he remained in the town of San Juan del Estado to organize his troops and await his infantry. But on learning that General Miranda was occupying the Ruiz passes he ordered the cavalry which he had sent to Oajaca to return. After the remainder of his army had arrived he attacked Miranda, who was defeated without difficulty, because he had not stationed himself at that point for the purpose of blocking Santa Anna's way, but merely to divert his attention from the movements of Rincón whose purpose it was to capture the San Juan del Estado hill—a point highly advantageous to him, inasmuch as it would cost him many men to take it in the event that Santa Anna should occupy it. This stratagem was realized according to plans; for, while Santa Anna was leaving San Juan del Estado and was busy with Miranda, Rincón took advantage of the moment to cross the hill and thereby attain his purpose.

Santa Anna discovered his mistake too late, and tried to correct it by making an all night march to take the hill in question, but at dawn he saw that the forces of Rincón and Calderón had already taken possession of the most advantageous heights. Napoleon Farfulla arrayed his forces for the combat and advanced toward his adversaries, but on seeing himself surrounded on all sides by superior forces he could do no less than request a meeting. This was granted and when Calderón appeared Farfulla declared that he was anxious to terminate the civil war which divided the country and would surrender to the Government on condition that it would suspend the degree of proscription against him. As Rincón had no power to grant this request, the parties determined on a truce and on sending a special courier to Mexico to obtain the Government's decision. They further agreed with each other that neither party should occupy the City of Oajaca, but that each should keep his position and suspend all military or political movements until they should receive the Government's reply. Two days later Santa Anna called a *junta* of officers and stated that as he had made the aforesaid agreement from necessity and not from choice they were not compelled to comply with it, and on those grounds it was decided to take up the march to the Capital of the State that same afternoon. Several of the leaders opposed the gross violation of this pact, but the measure was carried into effect and Santa Anna entered Oajaca almost in triumph. With great difficulty he had succeeded in obtaining an interview with Calderón and in making the

agreement which he had made, because no one had faith in his word of honor; but after great perseverance, weeping, pleading, confessing his repentance and pledging his fidelity for the future he won over his adversaries and then laughed at their credulity. Thus he escaped from the difficult situation by means of his customary arts—deceit and treachery.

As soon as he entered Oajaca he appropriated the public funds, enforced a loan of \$5000 on the Town Council and another of a like sum on the Cathedral and then gave himself over to his three favorite passions, gambling, lottery and sensuality. As an example of his usual conduct it would not be amiss here to state that during his marches, as well as when he was in the city, it was his custom to take by force anything that pleased him and to permit his army to do likewise. Nor were the wives and daughters of the most respectable families whom he often insulted exempt from his insults and brutality, if they did not accede to his wishes. With money to sustain him in his wickedness, he became engulfed in endless dissipation, spending the time gaily in the midst of balls, banquets, and the adulation of incontinent women. Finally, on the 13th of November the anticipated answer came from the Government refusing to ratify the treaty made between General Farfulla and Rincón and ordering the latter to pursue the former until he should surrender unconditionally, which Farfulla considered equivalent to losing his head.

As soon as Rincón received orders from the Government not to accept any of Santa Anna's proposals, he marched to Oajaca to attack him. Santa Anna, knowing what was happening, also left the city for the purpose of giving battle. The two armies met each other at El Marquesado. Rincón had 2400 infantry and 800 cavalry and no cannon. Santa Anna had 1200 foot-soldiers, 250 cavalry, and 4 artillery pieces. Considering the inequality of the forces, Santa Anna as a skillful general should have occupied the most favorable position and awaited the attack, but instead of doing this, he arrayed his forces on the plateau and presented open battle. He was completely routed. His troops scattered, fleeing in all directions. On reaching the city Santa Anna saw that some of the fugitives were going toward the Santo Domingo convent. He followed them, entered with them and from there sent several officers and sergeants to assemble the dispersed troops and bring them to that place. He succeeded in collecting 500 men with which he guarded the convent. In the meantime, Rincón reached the city and took possession of it.

As there was an absolute lack of food and resources of all kinds in the convent, they had to obtain rations for the troops by robbing the neighboring farms. They made excursions every night, and not without success, for the parties were wont to return with spoils on all of their sorties. One day Santa Anna received a letter from one of his lovers who had taken refuge in the San Francisco convent informing him that there were very valuable goods hidden there, consisting of money, jewelry and provisions belonging to the citizens and merchants of the city. Desirous of obtaining these goods, and no less desirous of seeing his sweetheart, he decided to surprise the convent and appropriate all that he so greatly desired—the booty and the beauty. It

was a very bold undertaking, but stimulated by necessity and love, he attempted it and came out victorious.

In order to understand the location of San Francisco it will be sufficient to state that this convent and that of Santo Domingo were situated at opposite ends of the city, one on the east side and one on the west, so that Rincón, who was in possession of the city, could command both convents. In spite of the obstacles, and without considering the consequences, our hero left Santo Domingo with 250 men, skirted the city and reached the convent shortly after midnight without encountering any obstacle, and succeeded in entering it at the rear, taking with him a portion of his troops and leaving the remainder outside to forestall a surprise, as well as to prevent anyone on the inside from escaping. The first thing he did was to awaken the people in the convent and separate the men and women, placing the former in one cloister and the latter in another, but we do not know what object he had in doing this.

As the principal purpose of this visit was to take possession of the convent's treasures, it was to be supposed that after obtaining his end he would have returned with all possible speed to Santo Domingo, taking with him not only his spoils, but also his sweetheart; but instead of this, he remained in the convent during the remainder of the night, and passed the hours happily in the company of his darling. At dawn he made some of his soldiers dress as priests, placed them in conspicuous parts of the convent, and ordered the bells to ring before seven in the morning. The church was filled with people going to hear mass, among them many of Rincón's soldiers, and it is even said that Rincón himself was on the point of going. The doors were open in order that all might enter, but no one was permitted to leave. We cannot guess the motive of this foolhardiness unless it was to bring his adversary to the church and make him a prisoner. If this was not the reason, it was another of the peculiar and natural follies of Santa Anna.

Rincón did not know that Santa Anna was in possession of San Francisco until one o'clock, when he was informed of it by some boys who had noticed that none of those who had entered the church had come out. Nothing would have been easier than to capture Santa Anna at this moment, but Rincón, although he had three thousand men, instead of moving against him, was content to work on the defensive, making some trenches to assure himself against an attack from his adversary who did not have more than an insignificant force of 250 men with him. Santa Anna spent the day delightfully in the church among the women, but not without scandalizing some and offending many. At two o'clock in the morning he left the church, permitting the people to do likewise, and returned to Santo Domingo by a different road from the one by which he had come, taking with him as fruits of his glorious exploit 200 ounces of gold, 500 pesos in silver, together with agates, diamonds, pearls and precious stones amounting to a vast sum. He dedicated the silver to the use of his soldiers, but retained the gold and jewels which he afterwards used as his own; notwithstanding this fact, at the end of the campaign he ordered everything to be paid for out of the public treasury, pretending that those

sums had been spent in maintaining his troops and in the cost of the campaign.

Santa Anna continued his nocturnal excursions, and succeeded in capturing the mail courier from Mexico City with dispatches for Rincón. Through the letters he was informed that the country was about to be invaded by an expedition from Havana which was causing some excitement among the people and demanding the attention of the Government. This gave Farfulla a plausible pretext to attempt to make peace with the Government once more; and, availing himself of the occasion, he and his officers signed a document dated the 20th of November, 1828, requesting that they be granted an amnesty or general pardon on the condition that they place themselves at the Government's orders and cooperate against the common enemy who were expected to land on the coast. This message was sent direct to President Victoria and not to the Minister of War, as was customary, because it was thought that the latter was accustomed to hide public affairs from him and to work without his knowledge. This proposal did nothing for them, it experienced the same fate as the other—it was scorned, and Farfulla's condition became more hopeless than ever.

The situation became strained. Rincón doubled his vigilance, severing Santa Anna's communication with the city, so that provisions became very scarce, and in a short time, so thought Farfulla, there would be no alternative but to lose his head or flee. He chose the latter, and was busy making preparations to escape to Guatemala when his plans were frustrated by Arista, who demanded that his commander should run the same risk as the rest of them. In this miserable condition and frightened almost to death, he asked for an interview with Rincón and made known his decision to surrender to the Government, but seeing that this officer would not guarantee his life, he called the enemy generals, Anaya and Valdivieso, in the night to beg them on bended knees and weeping like a child to protect him from the vengeance of Victoria and Pedraza. There was no alternative but to surrender at discretion, and he promised that he would do so the following day, but happily for him, before he took this step, the balance of fortune inclined in his favor and he was saved by a terrible outbreak which took place in the Capital, called in history "the Revolution of the Acordada."²⁸

This revolution was principally the work of Mr. Lorenzo de Zavala who, by force of circumstance became involved in it against his convictions. At that time he was Governor of the State of Mexico, and finding himself persecuted by Pedraza who suspected him of having some connection with Santa Anna's uprising, he was reduced to the necessity of leaving the country or of joining the rebellion. He decided on the latter plan and brought about the revolution which we have just mentioned and which had for its object, according to its author, the rescue of Santa Anna and his troops from the terrible predicament in which they found themselves at Oajaca, and the elevation of Guerrero to the Presidency in the place of Pedraza who had been legally elected. The outcome was successful, for as soon as the news of the revolution and of Pedraza's flight reached Oajaca it produced a new state of affairs there. The Secretary of War ordered the

²⁸The Acordada, a large edifice at the entrance of the City of Mexico, used as artillery barracks. De Bow's Review, II, 37.

siege to be lifted and Santa Anna not only escaped his miserable plight, but was placed by the new Cabinet at the head of the same troops that had besieged him.

CHAPTER XII.

The people support the Acordada revolution. Congress assembles and proceeds to count the votes for the presidential election. Pedraza elected. Congress declares his election null. Congress proclaims Guerrero President and Bustamante Vice-President. Zavala Minister of Finance. Santa Anna Secretary of War. The latter marches to Jalapa after the Acordada revolution. His immorality. The public treasury indemnifies him for supposed damages and losses. He goes to Veracruz. Examples of his usual conduct in private life. Barradas' Expedition. Santa Anna is appointed Commander-in-Chief. Barradas lands at Cabo Rojo. Santa Anna sets sail for Tuspan. Barradas takes possession of Tampico. He marches against Terán. Cowardice and treachery of Garza. Santa Anna attacks Tampico. Opportune return of Barradas. Negotiations between him and Santa Anna. Terán joins the latter. Battle and defeat of the invaders. Surrender. Barradas sails for the United States.

CHAPTER XII.

The revolution of the Acordada had the general approbation of the country. It elevated Guerrero to the Presidency. Congress assembled January 1, 1828, and on counting the votes cast by the Legislatures for the appointment of President, it was found that Pedraza had two votes more than his opponent, and consequently was constitutionally elected; but Congress, heeding the voice of the public, declared Pedraza's election null and on the 6th of January proceeded to elect Guerrero and Bustamante President and Vice-President. They entered office on the 1st of April, 1829, at the end of Victoria's term. In order to preserve public peace Pedraza went into voluntary exile and left for the United States. Mr. Zavala was appointed Minister of Finance, and General Santa Anna Secretary of War, though we do not know whether the latter ever entered upon his duties.

From the revolution of the Acordada, which occurred in December, 1828,²⁹ until the invasion of Barradas in July, 1829, our hero led a very checkered career which we shall try to illustrate with a few deeds and anecdotes.

Having received money—the god of his idolatry—from the new Government, he departed for Jalapa, marking his way through the country by conduct even more atrocious than his past immorality. His depravity reached such a stage that several families were forced to leave in order to avoid his intolerable insolence and brutality. On his arrival at the capital of the State one of his first official acts was to force a payment from the public treasury of eleven thousand dollars as an indemnity for damages which his plantation had received during his absence, a plantation which he had bought for six thousand dollars and had not paid for to that time. The claim was unjust, not only because the property and its belongings were not worth that sum, but because he had not really suffered any damage.

He went to the city of Veracruz, his favorite place, and there assumed the air of those feudal barons who knew no law but their own wills and no reason but force. He maltreated as much as he was able the unfortunate tenants of his plantation, Mango de Clava, by imprint-

²⁹The night of Nov. 30, 1828, is the date given in De Bow's Review, II, 37.

ing his imperial will on the foreheads of the weak and domineering the district as though it were all his. He frequently rode over the grounds surrounding his plantation and took possession of all animals which did not have their owner's mark. He did the same thing with all the good breeds of roosters that he saw, boasting that he alone possessed that species of poultry, and he did not forget to increase his *hacienda*, Mango de Clava, by usurping the surrounding land. When he wished to buy any land, he always succeeded in obtaining it for less than its real value by threatening and persecuting the owner.

His lack of hospitality was proverbial. You may be assured that he was so economical and miserly in his domestic expenses that all those who go to see him at Mango de Clava have to take provisions with them, for instead of doing any service for his visitors and travellers he takes great pains to save what they throw away. We confess that we would not mention this example of human niggardliness here, but for the fact that we would tire of the tales which have been told us by truthful individuals.

Everyone knows Santa Anna's affection for the cock fight and *juego de monte*, but some do not know that he has the habit of quarreling and acting the part of a bully on such occasions in such a way that when fortune does not favor him he refuses to lose merely for that reason, and he does not satisfy his creditors, who do not make him pay for fear that he will punish them, and he even alleges that they did not play fairly.

As another example of his excessive cunning and depravity we will venture to refer to an anecdote, which, though not very delicate in its nature, is very characteristic of him. There was a young woman in Jalapa who, although she sold her charms for gold, was very particular in admitting only the better class people of social prestige. You may be assured that Santa Anna courted her favor, and she condescended to spend the night at his house. On the following day when our Mesalina was leaving, Santa Anna begged her to visit him again and told her, pointing to a table in the room, "there you will find money, take as much as you wish." The amount which was on the table did not exceed one dollar and a half. Such is Santa Anna as a neighbor and citizen—the same in private as in public life—a thief and a tyrant.

The expedition which left Havana under the command of General Isidro Barradas gave Santa Anna an opportunity to increase his laurels. For quite a while a landing had been expected on the coast, but no one was able to say with certainty where. Some believed that Barradas was going to Yucatán, and under this impression General Felipe Codallos and the authorities of the State had made ample preparations to receive the invader and repel his aggression. Neither was President Guerrero remiss in taking necessary measures to rout the enemy and encourage the mind of the nation. Reclothed with extraordinary powers, he made a small forced loan of two million dollars for the campaign. After much anxiety and speculation in regard to the expedition, he finally landed at Cabo Rojo twelve miles from old Tampico on July 27, 1829.

That was certainly a very foolish and stupid undertaking. The Spanish *Cortes* had been induced to believe that civil war was spread-

ing frightfully in Mexico and that its reconquest would be an easy task on account of the unfortunate divisions among the inhabitants of the country, and, accordingly, it prepared an expedition on the Island of Cuba with the flattering hope that on landing in Mexico all the disappointed aspirants and the disaffected of all parties would join them. With this hope Barradas landed at a point where he had been told he would encounter the least resistance and where he would quickly be supported by a strong party in favor of the King, his master. He had an army of more than three thousand men and a great supply of arms and munitions of war evidently intended for those who were to join him. His hopes were deceived.

Santa Anna was appointed Commander-in-Chief of the forces which were sent against Barradas, and without the knowledge of the Government he made forced loans, took possession of several ships at the port of Veracruz, and with two thousand men set sail for Tusan. Meanwhile, Barradas, who had landed at Cabo Rojo, marched to Pueblo Viejo after several skirmishes on the road, and crossing the river, he took Tampico. He published a proclamation announcing to the world that he had recovered that part of the district governed by the Viceroy of Texas, and offering protection and free commerce to all foreign nations. By this time Don Manuel Mier y Terán, had occupied several places north of Tampico, had forfeited some of them and had given the command of Altamira to General Don Felipe de la Garza. A short time after the occupation of Tampico by the Spaniards, Barradas marched with his forces toward Altamira; and Garza, who had been ordered by Terán to make a survey of the enemy's forces, instead of doing this placed himself without resistance in the hands of the invaders.

Such was the state of affairs when Santa Anna landed at Tusan. On being informed there that Barradas with the body of his army had left Tampico for Altamira, he determined to take advantage of the absence of this leader and of the weakness of the garrison to attack Tampico, where only the sick and wounded and some two or three hundred men under the command of Colonel Español Salomon remained to guard the place. With this in view he marched to Pueblo Viejo, and crossing the river Pánuco sent an advance guard of five hundred men who attacked the city and succeeded in defeating their opponents on the square where they stood their ground. Santa Anna marched with the reserves and arrived at the city where his lieutenants had occupied several strong positions from which they fought the enemy. It was after midnight and the advantage was on the side of the Mexican forces. The next morning a great body of troops was seen approaching at a distance, and without either of the combatants knowing whether they were Mexicans or Spaniards, Colonel Salomon, in this doubt, proposed a suspension of hostilities which was promptly accepted by Santa Anna. The forces which advanced belonged to Barradas, who, having received news of the fight, came to the aid of Salomon. He reached the theater of activities just when the belligerent parties were busy with their negotiations.

Mr. Zavala says that the result of this action between Santa Anna and Salomon was of the greatest importance to the Mexican arms. The enemy, he says, received a terrible lesson from that abrupt attack. This is certainly attaching great importance to a small matter. Santa

Anna marches against the City with a considerable force, sends five hundred men against a weak garrison and remains behind with the reserves ready to enter as soon as the attack insures safety. The garrison sustains the conflict despite their inferiority until assistance reaches them, and Santa Anna enters the City when the danger has passed. This Mr. Zavala dignifies with the epithet of a terrible lesson to the Spaniards, and considers it a great glory for the Mexican arms. We consider it a battle turned table rather than a victory. But aside from this, we confess that Farfulla's situation was not a very pleasant one when Barradas made his appearance with his entire force on the river bank, and had the battle been renewed at that time the consequences would have been very lamentable for Santa Anna. His defeat and destruction were inevitable. And how did he escape from the ruin which threatened him? Barradas appeared at the entrance to the city. One of Santa Anna's assistants notified him of this fact and had a bolt of lightning fallen at his feet it would not have frightened and confused him as much. But Colonel Landero, who accompanied him, encouraged him by exclaiming with all the presence of mind of a valiant officer: "There is no danger. If General Barradas has any honor, he cannot interrupt the surrender that we are making." Recovering somewhat Santa Anna sent Barradas the information that the laws of war compelled him to respect the treaty which was being made at that moment. Santa Anna requested an interview with Barradas which was granted, and the parties met without delay.

Farfulla's situation changed immediately. It had been only a moment since Salomon was asking quarter of Santa Anna, but now the latter was having to ask it of him. In the requested interview Barradas proposed that they enter into negotiations at once. They arranged the terms of surrender, taking it for granted that Santa Anna would surrender without renewing the fight. Farfulla declared that he was willing to yield to circumstances and make the surrender which he could not evade, but he said that that moment was not the most propitious for so grave and important a subject and asked that he be allowed to cross the river and go to his headquarters declaring that he would meet Barradas the following day in the middle of the river, each in his own boat, and that he would then confirm their negotiations. Not suspecting Santa Anna's treachery and deceit, Barradas accepted him at his word and agreed to his desires, permitting him to return to Pueblo Viejo. In truth, he did not oppose any of his requests, and the man of strategy, calling out his troops from the houses in which they had hidden, left with flying flags in sight of 3,000 Spaniards, who, indignant at the stupidity and imbecility of their commander, manifested the displeasure which they felt at his not having made prisoners of Santa Anna and his troops. Secure in his quarters the dissembler sent a messenger to Barradas on the following day informing him that he had received communications from the Government that same night prohibiting him from entering into negotiations of any description with the Spaniards, and at the same time commanding him to fight them until he destroyed them or made them surrender at discretion. It is difficult to state whether Barradas was more surprised at his own foolishness or at Santa Anna's threat.

This misplaced confidence and lack of experience on the part of the Spanish general were the cause of his defeat and misfortune.

Barradas's forces were sufficient to defeat Santa Anna without difficulty, but instead of following him immediately, he delayed his movements until Terán, who had troops with him from the interior and also forces, which, under the command of Garza, had taken flight before the invaders succeeded in joining Santa Anna. A bloody battle took place on September 9, 1829 between the combined forces of Santa Anna and Terán and those of Barradas which resulted in the total defeat of the Spaniards after two hours of fierce conflict. Barradas was compelled to surrender his forces, a surrender which was effected under reasonable and fair conditions. A short time afterwards he set sail for the United States, not caring to expose himself to the punishment of his Government for the poor management of his expedition.

Farfulla's conduct in regard to the funds for defraying the expenses of the campaign and the consequences resulting from it are worthy of record. The enthusiasm of the people was so great and so universal that provisions and aid of all kinds were sent from various parts of the country for the support of the troops, in addition to the provisions of the Government. However, these effects were not applied to the purposes for which they were intended, but to the personal use and benefit of the Commander-in-Chief. The things were sold by an agent especially appointed for this purpose, and the proceeds went into Farfulla's private coffers. The same thing happened to the money which he received. He never gave an account of it. In a word, he robbed the Government and the troops of all that he could. His corrupt conduct became so notorious that it incurred the hatred of the people and finally involved him in difficulties from which he could not extricate himself without a show of cowardice. The courageous Colonel Nicolas denounced him publicly as a thief and coward and then challenged him to a duel; but the prudent Farfulla, who had no taste for settling difficulties in such a manner, preferred to assassinate the man he feared and sought an occasion to attack Acosta when the latter had no arms with which to defend himself; and he would have succeeded in killing him had it not been for those present. A few days later Acosta lost his life in battle after receiving twenty-three wounds. Many persons believed that Santa Anna caused his death by placing him at a point from which it was impossible for him to escape alive; but that is not true, for those who saw him fall declare that his death was caused by his own temerity.

One word is necessary in regard to Garza, Farfulla's intimate friend. He is the same Garza who rose in revolt against Iturbide at Soto de la Marina, then turned coward and surrendered his arms and accepted the Emperor's pardon; the same Garza who afterwards became an active agent in the capture and execution of that unfortunate commander. That he was a traitor and a coward during Barradas's invasion is conceded by all. However, despite all of this, Santa Anna could not be induced to punish him. And why? We have already alluded to the reason—it was because of the service which Garza had done him in extracting from the public archives of his department the proofs of Santa Anna's forgery. Mr. Zavala, in speaking of Garza, says that

after his infamous conduct in the afore-mentioned expedition against Barradas he went to the camp of General Santa Anna and this commander, depriving him of all authority, instead of subjecting him to a court martial, as he ought to have done, sent him to Mexico with commissions relating to neither one nor the other." Mr. Zavala does not state what these commissions were, but we will make known their nature. Santa Anna, although Minister of War, was secretly a traitor to the President. He sent the President a letter by the said Garza, accompanied by a message which he did not wish to trust on paper, asking that he reorganize his cabinet and place in power three of the most implacable leaders of the Centralist Party and mortal enemies of Guerrero, namely, Alamán, Tagle and Terán. And what was the reason for this? What motive of honor or virtue could he have had in wanting to surround his benefactor with men for private councillors who had attempted and would continue attempting to bring about his ruin? The question has a simple answer—It was the first step in that conspiracy which shortly thereafter broke out against that unfortunate hero and patriot. Such were the dishonorable commissions alluded to by Mr. Zavala which that intelligent wise and truthful historian did not care to explain.

The news of Barradas's defeat reached the Capital the 20th of September, and caused general rejoicing there. All classes of society rushed to the President's home to offer him congratulations. There was general rejoicing throughout the nation, and Guerrero, in compensation for the great triumph, elevated Santa Anna and Terán from the rank of Brigadier-General to Generals of Division. Farfulla, vain on account of his new honors and his great self-importance, left for Veracruz, and on his arrival there was received with an enthusiasm so ardent and unbridled that he began to believe that the great Napoleon was only an insignificant person as compared to him.

CHAPTER XIII.

Ingratitude of Santa Anna toward Guerrero. He joins Bustamante in a conspiracy against him. The Aristocratic party persecutes Guerrero. The latter dismisses Zavala from his cabinet and requests the United States to recall Mr. Poinsett. Plan of Jalapa. Santa Anna's connection with it. He joins forces with Bustamante's army in Jalapa. He attacks Guerrero in his official report. Campaign against Barradas. Bustamante publishes his plan. Guerrero marches against him. Insurrection in the Capital in favor of Bustamante. Guerrero abandons his cause and flees to Acapulco. Surrender of Morca [Morea?] Bustamante enters the Capital and takes over the reins of government. Very sad fate of Guerrero. His capture and death. Santa Anna disdains to save the life of the unfortunate leader. General indignation at the death of Guerrero. Pension granted to his family. Santa Anna ridiculed, retires to his hacienda Mango de Clava. He sends a letter to Mr. Santangelo in New York. Brief information in regard to Santangelo.

CHAPTER XIII.

We now reach a period in the tortuous and perfidious career of Santa Anna in which we all see him launch into wickedness which far exceeds all his former crimes. His conduct toward Guerrero is the height of human depravity. As respects his black ingratitude, it has no parallel and will ever remain one of the most deplorable examples of infamy and detestable crime to which poor humanity is capable of sinking.

It shows what a monster man becomes when he yields to fierce passions, and, unrestrained, Santa Anna could excuse himself of the villainy of his past conduct by the ordinary weaknesses of unprincipled men—such as hatred, vengeance, envy and covetousness; but in joining a conspiracy against Guerrero he had none of these excuses—bad as they are—because there was no rivalry between him and Guerrero. He had never harmed him, nor was he in the way of his [Santa Anna's] ambitious desires. On the contrary, Guerrero was his chief protector; he had been his most faithful friend in adversity; he had always worked for his interest and had conferred honors upon him; and under these circumstances the conspiracy which he formed with Bustamante against his benefactor without the least political or personal provocation presents human nature in its most horrible aspect, and makes Santa Anna out the most depraved and accursed man in all the earth.

Although Guerrero took over the reins of power by unanimous approval he could not defend himself from the attacks of the Centralists and the Aristocrats, who continued to persecute him with unceasing severity. He was a military commander of the highest rank in battle, but he was without any experience in civil matters, and could not compete with his enemies in the war of intrigue, cunning and corruption which they constantly waged against him. Never, under any circumstances of life, did he desert his principles. He always defended them, even to the last. Mr. Zavala, in speaking of him, says that on grave questions on which he had fixed ideas and formed an opinion he was firmly perseverant and even obstinate. The cause of independence, the love of liberty, and the hatred of monarchy, the expulsion of the Spaniards, and the establishment of a Federal Government founded upon democratic and social equality formed his political code, and his obstinate adherence to these principles brought upon him the inveterate hatred of the aristocracy and made him a victim of its vengeance.

The dismissal of the Minister Zavala and his friend Mr. Poinsett was a serious mistake. The *Escoceses* vociferated against these two individuals because they were Guerrero's best friends. They particularly hated Mr. Zavala, not only on account of the Acordada revolution, which elevated Guerrero to the Presidency, but also on account of his well-known hostility toward the theocracy and his desire to remove the ancient abuses of government. He was the friend of wholesome reforms, and for that reason they desired his overthrow. Mr. Poinsett was also an object of persecution, because he had introduced the York lodge into the country, and it was supposed that he became involved in the affairs of the Republican party. We do not know if this be true, but the *Escoceses*, Royalists, Aristocrats or Centralists, for they are known by all of these names, instead of attacking Guerrero directly, concentrated their entire energy against these two individuals knowing that if they made him lose popularity and forced him to dismiss one of these men from the Capital and the other from the country, Guerrero would himself fall shortly thereafter. They were not mistaken in their calculations.

Guerrero was too blind to recognize a blow to his power in these attacks. Mr. Poinsett had been Guerrero's friend, and both had belonged to the *Yorkinos* which had elevated the latter to power, and

instead of sacrificing him to the malice of the *Escoceses*, Guerrero ought to have promptly repulsed all advice and threats with that end in view.

He yielded to the threats of his enemies, however, and with the hope of calming their resentment and restoring peace he wrote to President Jackson to demand the recall of his Minister.

Zavala, tired of so much persecution, rejoiced at the opportunity of withdrawing from an administration, which, it was clearly foreseen, was doomed to fall under the machinations of its enemies. He actually resigned his office in the Cabinet on the first of October, and on retiring informed Guerrero of the dangers that threatened him, of the snares that were being prepared for his destruction, and advised him to turn a deaf ear to the cowardly and egotistic advice of his new friends and call to his side the public men most noted for their virtues and talents, ending with these memorable words: "I retire wearied of suffering ingratitude and calumny. A storm threatens you within a short time."

The storm took place as Mr. Zavala had predicted. Shortly after he left office a conspiracy was formed against Guerrero which caused his sudden downfall and final ruin. This conspiracy is known in history as the Plan of Jalapa, and a brief account of it follows. In consequence of Barradas' invasion an army of 3,000 men called the Reserve Army had been organized, and at its head Guerrero had placed the Vice President Bustamante. The latter, seeing that popular sentiment was strongly against the administration and that many of its friends had abandoned it, therefore conceived the idea of placing himself at the head of the malcontents and of usurping the Presidency. Santa Anna joined him in the enterprise, but for what reason is not known, unless it was in the hope of obtaining a following in the general confusion. The first preparatory step of this movement was made by Santa Anna in Tamaulipas, when he joined the enemies of the administration and dispatched Garza to the City of Mexico with a commission requesting Guerrero to change his cabinet and call to his side the sanguinary Alamán and others of the *Escoceses* and Centralist parties. We shall hear what Mr. Zavala has to say in regard to this matter. He writes as follows. "At the beginning of the month of November it was announced in a positive and general manner that Bustamante, Santa Anna and Musquis were attempting a conspiracy against the Federal Government with a view to supplanting the existing system by the central form of government, and consequently to dissolving the State Legislature and Congress. A proclamation of the Veracruz Legislature, in which these suspicions were exposed, gave more validity to this rumor.

As soon as Santa Anna reached Veracruz he united his forces with the Reserve Army which was quartered in Jalapa without awaiting orders from the Government, and, as Mr. Zavala says, all believed that he had the intention of starting a new revolution. From there, or from Veracruz, (we do not recall from which), Santa Anna sent the Government an account of the battle against Barradas, a document which seemed to be purposely designed to bring odium upon Guerrero and to prepare the nation for the conspiracy which he was forming. The author undertook a great deal in blaming the administration for the real or imaginary ills which afflicted the nation, and also in making

palpable the necessity of some reform. This was equivalent to an open declaration of war against the President. Having no just reasons for attacking the man who had been his friend and benefactor, Santa Anna pretended that the Government had neglected him in the recent campaign—a poor and miserable pretext—not only an insufficient excuse for so despicable and audacious a step, but totally untrue, as was proved by the testimony of other commanders and officers, and also by the sums that he took from the military treasury and buried in that place of infamy—Mango de Clava.

On the 4th of December Bustamante published his Plan, and never has there been a bolder conspiracy, or one encountering such weak resistance. Guerrero, recovered somewhat from his consternation, placed himself, by means of the small amount of assistance which remained to him, at the head of the forces that he was able to unite, and on the 19th of December entered the field. Congress, meanwhile, appointed Bocanegra to occupy the Presidency during his absence. A proclamation in favor of the movements of Jalapa having been made, firing commenced in the City on the night of the 22nd. The Government officials immediately took refuge in the President's palace where a feeble resistance was made by forty of the militia, who were compelled to surrender to the triumphant faction which permitted the ministers to retire to their homes unmolested, and appointed an *ad interim* executive power composed of Don Luis Quintana, Don Pedro Veter and the cruel Don Lucas Alamán whom Santa Anna had recommended to the confidence of Guerrero not long before.

It is thought that if Guerrero, when he left Mexico with a force of 2,000 men, had advanced rapidly toward Puebla before the arrival of his enemy at that place, and when he was called there by 4,000 militia, he would have been able to raise an army in a short time sufficiently strong to destroy the opposing forces and maintain the Government. But to the astonishment of all, instead of doing this, he suddenly abandoned the cause in despair and left the command of the army to General Morea, who, embarrassed by so unexpected and extraordinary an event, surrendered to the rebels on the following day. Guerrero's friends do not know how to explain this strange conduct. Mr. Zavala attributes it to the wound which he received in the town of Jalmolonga from which he did not recover and from which he suffered during his entire life; but we have no doubt but that it was his repugnance at entering a bloody contest for the purpose of retaining an office from which he had gained only trouble and misfortune.

Bustamante entered the Capital on December thirty-first without encountering any difficulty and took over the reins of government. He was supported by the military forces and the populace of the city. He delivered an address to Congress on the 1st of January, 1830. The Capital was surrounded by the armies which remained under arms for the purpose of silencing the people. Affairs quieted down and it seemed that there was no other opposition to prevent Bustamante from occupying the presidential chair.

And what became of Guerrero? After leaving the army to the command of Morea he, with Colonel Francisco Victoria and a small escort, continued on his way to Acapulco where he flattered himself that he was beyond the reach of his enemies. There he renounced his preten-

sions to the Presidency, abandoned the struggle, and contented himself with living as a private citizen among his relatives and intimate friends. It was thought that this would end their persecution of him. However, their persecution did not change with this. The simple and confiding leader very slightly knew the wickedness of the human heart. He did not consider that the traitor who strikes at the liberty of his country from behind will not stop at any crime. In order to despoil this unfortunate champion of the rights of the people and to drink his blood the new government resorted to a stratagem which would put to shame Santa Anna's atrocities.

In a conversation between Bustamante and a friend in the Capital he said: "What will you bet that before this month is over Guerrero will be in my power?" He could very well say this for he had formed a conspiracy against him which he believed could not fail to succeed. Guerrero lived peaceably in Acapulco without joining in the operations of the Southern insurgents against the Bustamante Government, although he was obliged to live protected and supported by them in order not to fall into the hands of his personal enemies by whom he had been declared a criminal. But Bustamante and his ministers, Alamán and Fácio, assisted by General Bravo, who hated Guerrero, believing that only the death of this man could cause the destruction of the entire democratic party in the nation, made a secret agreement with one Francisco Pitaluga, captain of the Sardinian brigantine Colombo, which was anchored at Acapulco, and an agent of the house of Girolamo Rosi of Geneva. Pitaluga then left for Acapulco. On his arrival there he immediately commenced to establish most intimate relations with his victim. He gained the confidence and friendship of Guerrero very quickly and one day invited him, together with Primo Tapia Tavalita and two other persons, to dine on board the Colombo. They spent a happy day there. Night was approaching and coffee had just been served when Pitaluga suddenly went inside, closed the door of the cabin, cut the cables, and set sail. The darkness of the night prevented the garrison of the small fort from noticing the treacherous movements of the brigantine. The brigantine left the port safely and arrived with its victims at Huautilla, a small port in the adjacent State of Oajaca where everything was arranged for their reception. The captain told General Sesma, the same who later figured in the Texas invasion, that he had General Guerrero on board his brigantine and that he would set sail immediately, if the Government did not pay the 50,000 pesos stipulated for the capture and delivery of the prisoner. The traitor received the reward for his crime according to the contract, and the unfortunate victim was conducted to Cuilapa where he was executed on the 14th of February, 1831, for the crime of high treason by order of a court martial composed of captains. Thus perished the illustrious Guerrero, one of the best of men and the purest patriot which that accursed nation has produced.

There was one man who could have saved Guerrero's life by a single word, but he refused to utter it. That man was the perfidious, the base, the cowardly, the traitorous Santa Anna. Everyone knew that this malignant monster, this demon in human form had the power and influence to obtain the pardon of his friend and benefactor, but instead of doing this, and without even showing the slightest interest in his

fate, he stood aloof in silence, and with the indifference of a rock permitted the victim to be sacrificed by the infernal pack of hounds which he had helped to excite against him.

But they could not destroy the fame of their victim, which, like his soul, is immortal. Although assassinated, Guerrero, still lived in the hearts of his countrymen. The people still loved him, and the blow which his death caused the nation was so violent that the criminal authors of it, becoming alarmed at the consequences of their wicked deed, voted a pension for his family in order to allay public resentment and avoid the vengeance of an excited people.

They did not all escape. The ministers, Fácio and Alamán, after the fall of Bustamante were tried for and convicted of murder—the former as the chief culprit and the latter as an accomplice in the crime. Fácio fled to France and Alamán hid until the storm had passed. The infamous Pitaluga was outlawed by the Kingdom of Savoy, his native country, which prohibited him, under the penalty of death, from again landing in a country that he had so greatly dishonored.

This revolution was very short, not more than twenty days elapsing between the Jalapa insurrection and the usurper's triumphal entry into the City of Mexico. The few Federal leaders who continued the contest after the death of Guerrero were quickly defeated or destroyed. Álvarez, Juan Cruz, Castolo Remijio, the inflexible Cadallos, the heroic Colonel Victoria, all of these were reduced in turn, and the two latter, after being made prisoners, were inhumanly condemned to death. Many of the friends of the Constitution fell in this way. It does not appear that Farfulla took any active measures at this time, because, very soon after Bustamante's elevation to the Presidency, he retired to Mango de Clava, indignant that in the distribution of offices and honors he had not been treated with the confidence and consideration due one of the first promoters of the revolution.

Although separated from public affairs, Santa Anna did not remain idle in his retirement. His heart aspired to the next Presidency, his hopes overflowed with the success which his popularity had acquired in the expedition against Barradas, and he employed a large part of his time in writing letters on his candidacy, in reconciling his enemies, in praising his friends, and in gaining the favor of all those whom he believed could serve him in his future designs. As an example of his talent in this art, and also of his excessive modesty, we insert a letter which he sent to Mr. Santangelo of New York asking him to write for the newspapers of that City in favor of his election. And what did that gentleman want him to say? The letter tells. The forger, the assassin, the traitor and the ingrate begged his friend to compare him to a *modest maiden*. The letter follows:

“Mr. D. A. SANTANGELO, New York.

Veracruz, October 11, 1831.

MY DEAR FRIEND:

I have the pleasure of answering your very estimable letter of the 5th ultimo by which I learn that mine of April 5th had reached you. I received the prospectus of the foreign college which you plan to establish in that place, and it not only had my entire approbation, but I believe that your talents and remarkable intellect are employed in a manner as generally useful as they are personally creditable, and I at once extend you my congratulations in regard to it.

I wish to thank you for the news and notes which you have so kindly sent me; both of them make me long for a repetition of your gracious letters.

Isolated as I am in my hacienda with only those things that are within my small means for culture and improvement, I cannot reply to the information you send me as I should like to. Although I find myself apart from the public scene in this retreat, I could never consider indifferently the discredit of my country or anything that could in the least induce it. At present there is peace and tranquillity, and I do not know that any question of public interest is being agitated other than that of the next election for President and Vice President. If by that time I should deserve a majority of votes, *I will be quick to accept the honor* and to sacrifice as a gift to the nation my repose and whatever else in the nature of a private gentleman can make me creditable. It is my fixed intention to be called; comparing myself (and I would compare myself) in this respect to a modest maiden who prefers to be longed for rather than to show her longing. And I believe that my position justifies me in this matter.

Still, inasmuch as that which is written in a foreign country greatly influences affairs at home, especially among you, it is doubly important to promote the matter as much as possible; and in considering the true aspect in which such and such services of any of the candidates should be considered, it would without doubt help to reunite opinion here which at present is extremely varying and vacillating. Of course, it is properly only the friends of Mexico, and for this reason, as well as for the intellect and learning which you possess, none is more fitted for such a labor and undertaking than yourself; and as for the rest, you would know how far it would be proper to lend interest to that question in perhaps one or more newspapers of that country. I gladly leave this matter to your discretion.

Meanwhile, it only remains for me to wish you the utmost success in your new enterprise. I regret that I have no children to send to you, but do not doubt that I, on my part, will influence my friends in order that so useful and well planned an institution may not lack recommendation. I trust that you will inform me of its progress in your future letters which I will always receive with the pleasure with which I remain

Your true friend and servant Q. B. S. M.

ANTONIO LOPEZ DE SANTA ANNA."

Mr. O. A. de Santangelo was a Neapolitan, who, exiled from his own country on account of his liberal principles, came to Mexico at the end of 1825. Here again his writings exposed him to the persecution of the monarchical party, and, finally, through the influence of Ramos Arispe, the Government decreed his expulsion from the country, an order that was complied with in such a severe manner that he was not given time to arrange his private affairs and move his possessions. On leaving Veracruz his only son, a handsome youth of great promise, fell ill with yellow fever and died on the trip. Mr. Santangelo located in New York where he resided at the time Santa Anna wrote the preceding letter. He then returned to Mexico, placed himself at the head of a popular and lucrative seminary, and at the same time established and edited a liberal newspaper called "*El Correo Atlantico*" in which the subject of Texas' defense of her rights and opposition to the invasion which Santa Anna was preparing to make were boldly discussed. On the 24th of June, 1835, Santa Anna ordered him to leave the country. He was compelled to leave within three days. As may be surmised, Santa Anna robbed him of all he possessed. In this condition he reached New Orleans on the 11th of August and resumed the publication of "*El Correo Atlantico*" in that City and continued it for a year, during which time, we believe, he went to New York. In his old age he set sail for Naples to be buried, as he said, in the land of his first affections. We knew him well. He was a courageous,

honorable and enthusiastic man, the friend of liberty and a republican at heart. We pay this tribute to his memory because he was a friend to Texas and had suffered for her cause. In his necessity he asked the Congress of that country for a donation of land which, we believe, was not granted him.

CHAPTER XIV.

Despotic and cruel character of Bustamante's administration. The nation comes to hate him. The Veracruz garrison rises in insurrection against him. Santa Anna at the head of the rebellion. He orders the recall of Pedraza. Calderón is appointed to march against the rebels. Slowness of his movements. Santa Anna captures a convoy. Calderón retires to Jalapa. Santa Anna pursues him. Battle of Tolomé. Defeat of Santa Anna. He flees to Veracruz, appropriates the public funds and prepares to escape by sea. Calderón besieges Veracruz. He unsuccessfully attacks the city. He raises the siege and retires to Jalapa. Santa Anna pursues him. He suddenly finds himself surrounded by Rincón, Fácio and Calderón in the retreat. Armistice between the belligerent parties. Santa Anna violates it. He takes possession of the National bridge. Several states declare in favor of the rebels. Santa Anna goes to Oajaca. Fácio follows him. Battle of San Agustín del Palmar. Death of Azcarate. Santa Anna marches against Puebla. He takes the city. Treacherous conduct of Santa Anna toward Andrade. He marches upon the City of Mexico. Headquarters in Tacubaya. The troops take possession of several towns. He demands the surrender of the Capital.

CHAPTER XIV.

On the 7th of January Bustamante formed his cabinet. The two most famous ministers were Lucas Alamán, Secretary of Foreign Relations, and José Antonio Fácio, Minister of War. The well known character of these men, together with that of their chief, was sufficient reason to believe that the administration would be bloody and doomed to destruction. In a short time the bad effects of the elevation of this usurper began to be felt. Firm in the principles which placed Bustamante in power, his government was essentially and purely a military despotism. Violent and arbitrary attempts were made to abolish the state legislatures, and the National Congress was forced to work at the point of the bayonet. In a short time all vestige of public and personal liberty had disappeared. The reign of terror commenced. The insolence of officers, the punishment of private citizens, and the numerous executions which took place every day intimidated the weak and imposed silence even upon the strong. More than three hundred patriots were sacrificed solely because of their beliefs and without being accused of any crime or wrong-doing. But it is useless to enumerate the thousands of assassinations, exiles and punishments which deprived the nation of its best sons and stained its soil with the most noble blood of the country, all of which had its origin in an immoderate desire for power to rule and an ambition for aggrandizement. So general and profound was the wickedness of this epoch that not a year had passed before the nation became a thousand times more disgusted with Bustamante's administration than it had been with Guerrero's, for the worst that can be said of the latter is that it was weak and vacillating, whereas the former was tyrannical and brutal.

As an example of the atrocious character of the administration of this cruel triumvirate—Bustamante, Alamán and Fácio—we give the following anecdote in which treason equal to that which caused the

death of Guerrero was practiced. An officer named Trinidad Rio in the State of Morelia promised to effect the flight of nine prisoners for eight thousand dollars. These unfortunates collected the sum with great difficulty, and, according to the contract, at midnight the door of the corral was opened and they began their flight, but the treacherous Rio had contrived a plan beforehand with the military commander of the state, Don Pedro Otero, for the recapture of the fugitives by patrols appointed for that purpose. This was done, and the prisoners, at the moment in which they were realizing their freedom, returned as prisoners to the jail and that night were shot. As a reward for this act Otero was appointed Brigadier General and Trinidad Rio emerged with his eight thousand pesos. Otero fell on the 3rd of August in the Battle of Posos which was fought against Montezuma.

The usurper continued his career of extermination, exercising undisturbed and without opposition his unlimited prerogatives until the 10th of January, 1832 when the Veracruz garrison, incited by Colonels Ciriaco Vasquez, Pedro Landero and Andronequi, started an uprising against the ministers of the Vice President, petitioning their removal from office because they were enemies of the Federal Constitution.

Up to this moment Santa Anna had remained on his hacienda near Veracruz in the lap of repose, but he was not content. He did not reap the profit which he had expected from his conspiracy against Guerrero. Although he had contributed powerfully to the elevation of Bustamante, he was not made a member of his cabinet nor placed in the way of promotion. Things had taken a turn which he did not like, and seeing that he was not being considered for the next election of President, a thing to which he had aspired for a long time, he decided to join the rebels and try his fortune in another contest. Bustamante was not popular. His tyranny had become intolerable, and the nation was preparing to take up arms against him and in defense of the Constitution. In view of this state of affairs our hero believed that by overthrowing the Vice President he could gain more than he had gained by elevating him to power and with this hope he left his hacienda, Mango de Clava, dominated by the spirit of insurrection. Placing himself at the head of the insurrection in Veracruz, Santa Anna declared open war on Bustamante, denouncing him as a cruel usurper, and asking that the people recall General Pedraza as the lawful President of the Republic.

The nation was astonished at this news of gross inconsistency. Although the whole life of this shameless man had been nothing more than a net-work of contradictions, no one in the least expected such a daring contempt of public opinion from him. Santa Anna had been the principal agent in deposing Pedraza, because he was an Aristocrat and a Centralist, and in elevating Guerrero to the Presidency, because he was a Federal Republican, in assassinating him afterwards in order that Bustamante might establish a central despotism, and now in the face of the world he denounced the man whom he had helped to elevate to power and appealed to the nation to reinstate the man whom it had expelled from the country as a tyrant.

Bustamante hoped to smother the insurrection in the beginning by taking the Ulua castle which he succeeded in doing by bribing the commander Flores, to whom he sent a letter offering him 25,000 pesos

for the surrender of the fort; but the letter fell into Santa Anna's hands and Flores was deprived of his rank.

The Government was not pleased with the selection of the officers to fight Santa Anna. It appointed Calderón, Iberri and Rincón whom Santa Anna had defeated at other times and probably the most inefficient men there were. Calderón stationed himself five leagues from Veracruz and remained there a number of days in a state of perfect stupor, having neither the sense nor the energy to make a move of any sort. Santa Anna, taking advantage of this turpitude and stupidity, left Veracruz with a body of 500 men and by making detours to avoid Calderón's forces intercepted and captured a convoy of provisions, munitions and money on the Jalapa road intended for Calderón, which amounted to 20,000 pesos. Santa Anna succeeded in returning to Veracruz unmolested, taking with him 200 prisoners whom he incorporated in his own forces. He freed the officers because he did not need them. This was a bold and a well executed movement.

A few days later Calderón broke camp and retired to Jalapa on account of the continuous desertion of his troops who preferred entertaining themselves at Veracruz to living idly in the country. On the first of March at nine o'clock in the morning this General started on his way, but Santa Anna did not know of it until after six in the evening. He immediately set out in pursuit of him with 800 infantry, 500 cavalry and no cannon, and at dawn reached Santa Fé and camped a short distance from his opponent, who had occupied the hills and placed himself in a state of defense, not wanting to make an attack, although he had three thousand men under his command. The two officers remained thus throughout that day.

Farfulla believed that Calderón's retreat was inspired by fear, and under this false impression decided to place himself in Calderón's vanguard by forced marches and detours to halt at Tolomé and offer battle despite the superior numbers of the enemy. By marching all night he reached Tolomé at six o'clock in the morning. Scorning his opponents, as was his habit, he made very few arrangements for the battle and none to secure his retreat in case it should be necessary. This lack of prudence and wisdom was disapproved by some of his officers, but Santa Anna said, touching his forehead, "my plans are here." Calderón made his appearance a short time afterwards and firing on both sides began simultaneously. All were waiting for the plans to unfold which Farfulla said he had in his head, but this hope soon vanished when Calderón attacked him with three pieces of artillery and swept away his first line. Colonel Landero with his ninth battalion sustained the shock of the onslaught for some time, but Calderón ended the conflict with a vigorous bayonet charge. In a few minutes all was disorder and confusion. It became a complete *save himself who can*, which example was set by Santa Anna himself who ran and hid in a nearby canyon. Two individuals accompanied him in this hiding-place. Santa Anna, afraid of making any noise, threw down his sword and reprimanded one of his companions for having discovered him. Farfulla remained there until he could escape under cover of night and flee to Veracruz where he arrived before sunrise. The cou-

rageous Landero and Andronequi were killed in this action. Very few of his scattered troops returned to Veracruz.

Thus we see how a vain and presumptuous man lost an active and powerful force through the most culpable ignorance of all military operations. Audacious without courage, and ready to undertake without knowledge to guide him, he blindly throws himself in the way of danger leaving the consequences to fortune and relying on his physical activity to make the escape which he always succeeds in doing by fleeing at the first sign of danger with a speed which outdoes the wind.

After the defeat he said that his first intention was to take the national bridge where he could, as he believed, detain Calderón and force him to surrender. This was true, but after seeing that Calderón did not attack him at Santa Fé, he changed his plan and decided to meet at Tolomé, resting his hopes of victory not on his own strength, skill or position, but merely on the supposed fear and cowardice of his opponent. Such is the foolish calculation and blind confidence which ignorance inspires. Nor was his first plan any wiser, because if he had succeeded in taking possession of the national bridge, he would not have gained anything, for it is obvious that Calderón with superior forces would not have surrendered to him, there being no reason for him to do so, and in case of his being prevented from going to Jalapa he could have halted at the bridge and cut Farfulla's communication with Veracruz, thus separating him from his source of supplies. What would the *very* wise Farfulla have done in such a case? And what would have prevented Calderón from taking Veracruz, now abandoned and exposed? It is obvious that Santa Anna could not have made a move more favorable to the enemy and more fatal to himself. Such is the military genius of this general who is such only in name.

On arriving at Veracruz Santa Anna's first care was to take active measures for his personal safety. He bought a brigantine and loaded it with everything necessary in order that he might set sail at any moment, nor did he forget to place on board copious sums of money which he took from the treasury under the pretext of securing it for the aid of the partisans in the interior. While he thus occupied himself the principal authorities, seeing the city undefended, devoted themselves to organizing a force by enlisting private citizens and forming them into companies. Santa Anna joined in this work as soon as he had completed his preparations to escape in case of an emergency, and due to his activity they soon put up some breastworks to prevent Calderón and his forces from entering the city, but Calderón, who always moved with the stupid sluggishness of a tortoise only reached Veracruz sixteen days after the battle. If, after his victory of the 3rd, the imbecile general had sent two or three hundred mounted men in pursuit of the fugitives, as he should have done, he could have made prisoners of Santa Anna, Arágo, Mexía, Vasquez and all who escaped the action; but Calderón was crazed by his triumph and scarcely knew what he was doing or what he ought to do.

Finally, Calderón appeared before the city, and not being able to advance on account of the exterior works which prevented him, he laid siege in due form to the place which he sustained for a considerable length of time without much honor to himself or damage to the enemy. Several attempts were made to take the place by storm, but without

effect. The most vigorous noteworthy attack was made on the 12th of May when they threw three hundred bombs into the city killing one woman and wounding two men. The siege continued until the middle of June when Calderón was compelled to raise it as a result of the sickness from which his troops were suffering. He then left for Jalapa. Santa Anna with a small force left in pursuit of him, but with less impetuosity than on the former occasion, and allowed him to reach Jalapa without attacking him. Knowing that Rincón held the national bridge with 700 men he forded the Antigua River and travelled toward Jalapa; but on receiving news that his enemies had left that city in search of him he halted at the Encero enclosure where he suddenly found himself surrounded by the combined forces of Fácio, Calderón and Rincón. This is another of the infinite examples of his absolute lack of common sense in military matters, in forcing himself into dangerous situations without properly considering the means of escape from them. And how did he extricate himself from the present difficulty? We shall now see.

We scarcely believed it possible that Santa Anna could again deceive Calderón who had been a witness on so many occasions to the superlative power which that villain possessed in the art of lying. He should have known that Santa Anna had never respected and never would respect an agreement of honor; that he had destroyed all such agreements that he had ever made and would continue doing so as long as he could benefit himself by some advantage in that manner. To trust him again with this knowledge of his character shows a type of foolishness which almost approaches idiocy. Seeing himself surrounded by his enemies without any possibility of escape, Santa Anna reverted to his customary tactics, requesting an interview, making himself out the repentant, and promising to comply with all that should be demanded of him. He had an interview with Fácio and Calderón, and found no difficulty in obtaining from these two foolish men the following agreement; to wit: that Santa Anna be permitted to return to Veracruz with his forces, and that from there he should send commissioners who would interview Fácio and Calderón for the purpose of making a treaty to end the struggle and avoid the shedding of blood. These commissioners should meet at the national bridge, which, in the meantime, should be occupied by neither of the belligerent parties. According to this agreement Santa Anna returned to Veracruz, but without the least intention of keeping any of his promises.

The first thing he did on his return to Veracruz was to prepare a force sufficient to take possession of the national bridge and to send commissioners and money to Córdoba, Orizaba and others places for the purpose of getting them to assist him in occupying the bridge and to join him in a war against Fácio and Calderón, from whose claws he had just escaped by the means already known to the reader. For the purpose of obtaining possession of the bridge he sent his commissioners, according to agreement, taking the precaution, however, of going with them in order to interview those of the other side; but in the negotiation, which he attended in person, he made proposals so deprived of reason and order, that the meeting dissolved without accomplishing anything. This was what Santa Anna wanted to happen, and using

that as a pretext to carry out what he had already planned, he immediately occupied the fort with a respectable force, which he had brought for that purpose through a passage in the vicinity.

By this time the opposition to Bustamante had spread to a number of the states. Jalisco, Zacatecas, Tamaulipas, Tabasco, Córdoba and Orizaba had embraced the plan of Veracruz and entered the struggle. Santa Anna's forces increased considerably in a short time; wherefore, he had a sufficient force to go to Orizaba where he established his headquarters, but leaving the national bridge guarded by enough troops to defend it. Here he was occupied with organizing and disciplining the troops which daily joined his standard, and if rumor does not lie, he did not fail to spend part of the time in a way which was the cause of scandal in several families.

The time came to make a new move and Santa Anna left Orizaba; but on being informed that General Antonio Fácio with two thousand men blocked his way, he changed his route and escaped from his adversary. Fácio followed in pursuit of him as far as San Agustín del Palmar where both generals encamped not far from one another. There was a place in the road which was difficult to pass, and Santa Anna, anxious to occupy it before his adversary, commenced his march very early with part of his forces, but on reaching the place was surprised to see the enemy already in possession of it, for Fácio, knowing the advantage which it would give him, rose earlier than Santa Anna and occupied the place with the larger part of his troops, leaving 700 men in camp under the command of General Ascarate.

Santa Anna had with him not more than 800 cavalry, and, therefore, ought to have been content to reconnoiter the enemy, but instead of doing this, he committed another of his numerous military blunders by attacking a larger force which occupied a strong position and which had ten pieces of artillery. The result of this foolhardiness was the loss of many of his troops and the dispersion of the remainder, the valiant leader having taken flight before all of them.

If Fácio had sent orders to Ascarate at once to join him, the victory would have been complete, for besieged as he was at Palma by Fácio's entire force, Santa Anna would have been reduced to the necessity of surrendering, but in consequence of not having done so, Ascarate marched against Palma thinking, without doubt that the place had been abandoned. He was discovered by the enemy and was suddenly attacked by Mejía at the head of Santa Anna's entire forces. After a brief fight his small force was almost annihilated, and the leader, Ascarate, was himself numbered among the slain. This battle took place on the 1st of October, 1832.

Santa Anna reached Palma in the moment of victory, bringing with him the first news of his own misfortune. Such is the fortune of the Mexican Napoleon—what he loses by his ignorance and foolishness is more than compensated for by the valor of others. His laurels are those of a coward snatched from the brow of the valiant.

The day after the battle of Palma Santa Anna left for Puebla and on his arrival there halted in front of the city; but he showed no disposition to attack it and his officers were becoming indignant at his indecision when an occasion arose to assist him and he revived with an

excess of courage. He heard the cry of "Long live Santa Anna!" set up by some ragamuffins who were leaving the place, and mistaking this for an indication of the popular will he thought that the entire city was in favor of him. In this belief he made preparations for the attack by sending Alejia to one side of the city, and Arago and Jarero to another while he occupied a point from which he could work in an ambiguous way. He gave orders that all should make an attack simultaneously at a given signal. With things arranged thus the assault began. Everything turned out according to his wishes. They entered the city, but in order not to deprive the other leaders of the glory due them, he permitted them to enter first, he following them later after they had taken possession of the strongest points—a good example of Farfulla's great magnanimity.

The commander on the side of the Government was General Andrade. He and his officers, Calderón among them, surrendered on the condition that Andrade be allowed to retire with his troops to the Capital and that he agree not to take up arms during this campaign. Two days after taking the City of Puebla, Santa Anna sent General Mejía with the vanguard division to San Martín Tescmeluca on the road to the Capital. A short time afterward Andrade commenced his march to Mexico according to the terms of capitulation, but the treacherous Santa Anna sent a courier to Mejía commanding this officer to make Andrade and the other officers prisoners and disarm and discharge the troops under the pretext that Andrade had violated the treaty agreement and was going to join the enemy, all of which was entirely false. Mejía carried out the order, but instead of dissolving the troops, he annexed them to his own and promoted the sergeants to the rank of officers. When general Andrade demanded the reason for this action Santa Anna said that it was exclusively the work of Mejía against whom it was not convenient to take any measure at that time. This was all the satisfaction that he received in regard to his betrayal.

After making some arrangements respecting the civil and political government of Puebla Santa Anna advanced to the City of Mexico with his forces greatly increased by new recruits which he had collected in the State and also by the troops under the command of Colonel Valencia. He established his headquarters in Tacubaya, three miles from the Capital, the name of which he changed to La Aranjuez. While he was there his troops made several excursions and took possession of Toluca, Cuernavaca and other important points. It was at the capture of Toluca that our hero acquired a famous sword of which we will say more later on. During this time the Government had neither physical nor moral strength. The only protection in the City was two thousand soldiers under the command of General Quintanar. Santa Anna displayed his forces in sight of the Capital and demanded its surrender. We will leave him for a moment in this situation in order to give a few brief particulars which up to this time we have passed over in silence.

CHAPTER XV.

Various incidents omitted in the foregoing narration. Santa Anna suspends the siege of Mexico and leaves Querétaro to meet Bustamante. They meet twenty leagues from the Capital. Their respective forces. Santa Anna refuses to fight and allows Quintanar to reinforce Bustamante. The latter sends Durán

with a column of troops to capture a convoy intended for Santa Anna. Santa Anna sends Anaya in pursuit of Durán with one hundred men. The two forces encounter each other. Anaya's defeat. Santa Anna and Bustamante break camp and leave for Puebla. The inhabitants drive Bustamante back. He retires to San Juan hill. Santa Anna presents battle. The action is suspended on account of darkness and a heavy rain. Bustamante proposes an armistice. Terms of agreement. Plan of Zavaleta. He is expelled by Congress. The army supports him. Pedraza in the Presidency. Santa Anna announces himself candidate for the office. He retires to Mango de Clava. Is elected. Farias Vice-President. Anecdotes.

CHAPTER XV.

From the time of Santa Anna's occupation of the national bridge to his appearance before the City of Mexico, many events of great importance transpired which we did not consider necessary to weave into our story, since we are writing a biography and not a history. At that period the nation was experiencing a general convulsion. The people were everywhere under arms—sometimes victorious and sometimes vanquished. For lack of documents we can only refer to a few of those events, and then continue with the part which relates to our hero.

March 10. Tampico declares against Bustamante, and Terán, who had marched against the city, raises the siege at the same time that Calderón ends the siege which he had laid to Veracruz.

July 3. Defeated by Montezuma Terán commits suicide in imitation of the ancient Romans by running himself through with his own sword at the same place where Iturbide was shot.

July 5. Montezuma enters San Luis Potosí with a large division.

August 4. The citizens of Tampico capture the City of Victoria and take Mora prisoner.

August 11. General Álvarez declares against Bustamante.

" 12. Santa Anna writes to Pedraza and sends two commissioners with a letter requesting that he return to the country and assume the Presidency as a constitutional right.

August 16. Bustamante leaves Mexico for San Luis Potosí with 1500 men and issues a proclamation in which he states that he had not asked for the command and that he could only be accused of governing with too much indulgence and humanity.

November 6. Pedraza leaves the United States, lands at Veracruz, and reaches Puebla on the 4th of December, eight days before the battle which ended the revolution.

December 18 Bustamante and Montezuma meet in a place called El Gallinero in the State of Querétaro, and after a battle lasting eight hours Montezuma is defeated with heavy loss. This victory, however, did not help Bustamante very much, for immediately afterwards he has to abandon the fruits of victory and return by forced marches to the Capital where his forces were imperiously needed. Let us return to our hero whom we left besieging the City of Mexico. As soon as he received news of Montezuma's defeat and Bustamante's advance toward the Capital, he promptly raised the siege and advanced to meet him. Finally, these two commanders met twenty leagues from Mexico, Bustamante having 1500 infantry and 800 cavalry and Santa Anna 5000 infantry, 2000 cavalry and 7 cannons and howitzers. Despite the great advantage which Santa Anna had over his adversary, he did not

want to fight him, and in spite of everything that Mejía, Anaya, Arago and others could say or do, added to the intense desire of the soldiers, he allowed his adversary to retire to a small village and remain there peacefully until Quintanar came from Mexico to reinforce him with 2000 men. Certainly nothing could be less military than this. If Santa Anna had possessed the genius and strategy which have been attributed to him, he would have prevented the union of those two forces, for he well knew the movements of both and could very easily have intercepted Quintanar. The secret of all this was that Farfulla did not have confidence in himself. He found himself at the head of a larger force than he had ever commanded before, and he knew his own inability to command it on the battlefield against courageous and veteran officers like Bustamante, Arista and Durán, whom he knew to be more expert and valiant men than he.

Santa Anna remained in the town of Zumpango, operating on the defensive until he discovered that Bustamante had sent Durán with a strong detachment to intercept and capture a convoy of money and clothes that was being sent to Santa Anna from Puebla. The latter ordered General Anaya to proceed immediately with 1000 men against Durán. These two officers encountered each other at Otumba on the 30th of November, and after a short conflict Anaya was completely routed and his troops dispersed. This event obliged Santa Anna and Bustamante to break up their respective camps and proceed to Puebla where they arrived almost simultaneously. Due to some of Santa Anna's confused movements Bustamante would have entered the City had the inhabitants of Puebla not received him with a terrible fire which prevented his entering the streets, and forced him to retire to San Juan Hill where the two belligerent forces commenced a fierce and bloody battle that was not won by either one side or the other, though Bustamante's side should have triumphed that day, if we consider the false and anti-military movements of his adversary. The battle was interrupted by nightfall and a heavy rain. Bustamante took advantage of the darkness to retire to Huchuesetoca [?] and from there to Cuautitlan where he fortified himself and sent his wounded men. A great many of Bustamante's soldiers were wounded and killed by the explosion of their own bombs.

Such was Bustamante's last battle. It is known as the "Battle of the Posada Ranch" and it took place on the 12th of December 1832. On discovering that the people were everywhere against him, and seeing that his forces were daily diminishing while those of his adversary were increasing, Bustamante proposed an armistice which was promptly entered into, and commissioners were appointed by both sides to discuss and arrange the terms. Santa Anna's commissioners were Generals Juan Pablo Anaya and José María Jarero, and Bustamante's were Antonio Gaona and Mariano Arista. The terms agreed upon were satisfactory to all of the leaders, and shortly afterwards Santa Anna and Pedraza met at the Zavaleta hacienda and arranged a plan of permanent peace which embraced the following proposals. First, that the armies of the Republic should maintain in all its purity the Federal Republic according to the Constitution of 1824; and second, that Pedraza should be received as the Constitutional President in accord-

ance with the election of 1828. This plan was presented to Congress, and after a heated discussion lasting two hours was rejected by that body. This obliged the commanders and superior officers of both armies, as well as the soldiers, to declare in favor of the said plan in spite of Congress. Thus ended an obstinate conflict between liberty and despotism which lasted twelve months and cost the lives of six thousand men. Both armies marched to the Capital and Pedraza was duly installed in the Presidency on the 26th of December, 1832, and remained in office until the 1st of April, 1833. Angulo, Secretary of State, Pares, Secretary of War, Arispe of the Department of Justice and Gomez Farias of the Treasury composed his Cabinet.

We have stated that this was the triumph of liberty over despotism; but it was, however, only a momentary triumph; because as soon as Santa Anna entered the office of President as Pedraza's successor he betrayed the principles of the revolution, joined the Centralist party which he had conquered, and conspired against the Constitution and the Federal system. He was supported in this by the very army which had sworn to maintain them inviolate at Zavaleta so that in a short time after the elevation of this traitor to the high position to which he had aspired the friends of liberty had to work against him as they had worked against the usurper and tyrant Bustamante. But these matters will appear in their proper place. We shall now continue our story.

Our hero remained in the Capital after Pedraza's installation only a short time, delighting in the honors which he had recently acquired and devoting himself to promoting his election to the presidency for which he was one of the most prominent candidates. With this idea in mind he distributed without distinction more than six thousand military commissions within a few days. The truth is that his recent triumph had placed him ahead of all the other competitors for that high station. The nation extolled him and everyone considered him Pedraza's successor. Being certain of his election, and not caring to endanger his popularity by mixing in public affairs, he retired to his hacienda in Veracruz and remained there until after the election. This took place in due time and Santa Anna was almost unanimously elected President, and Valentin Gomez Farias, a man of integrity and a well-proven patriot, was elected Vice-President.

In this way we have traced this man's life from the delinquency of his youth to his elevation to the Presidency, the grand object of his ambition for which he had fought many years and which he had finally attained by crimes which can only consign his memory to eternal shame and make his name the reproach of his country and the godfather of all that is criminal and detestable in the human heart. We have seen him as the forger in Bexar and Monterrey, the assassin in Orisaba and Veracruz, the traitor in Jalapa, and everywhere and at all times the tyrant, the coward and the thief; but in spite of all of his crime and wickedness, his march has been onward and onward until we have seen him with the highest honors that a nation could confer heaped on him. We would attribute this to the depravity of the public morale, to a lack of knowledge and virtue among the people, did we not realize that the same thing happens continually in countries that boast of being supe-

rior in wisdom and civilization. Where is there an honest man in our favored Union who may not have reason to lament the triumphs of the demagogues over the patriots, of the corrupt over the virtuous and of the audacious over the talented? Men whose lives have been marked by deceit, vice and crime have very frequently been the favorites of a people and have received their confidence when they merited their indignation and should have been punished. It seems that every country has its Santa Annas for the mockery and contemptuous ridicule of all human virtue.

Santa Anna did not enter upon the duties of his office at once, but remained on his hacienda in Veracruz leaving Farias in the Presidency. We will fill in the period between the time of his triumphal entry into the Capital with Pedraza and the time he took possession of the presidency with a few anecdotes and a rapid glance at the plans which he had formulated during that time.

While passing through Puebla and Jalapa on his way from Mexico to Veracruz, he stated that the spoils of the victory belonged to the victors, and that if he should be elected president the *Escoceses* or Aristocrats should not hope for favor at his hands— language which was popular at that time and which made him more popular with the rabble. We do not blame him for this sentiment; for his recent victory having been a triumph of liberal principles—a decided manifestation of the spirit of the nation—it was his duty to maintain and defend these principles in the Cabinet as he had done on the battle field. We blame him only for not having fulfilled these promises when he came into power.

He had previously left in the care of a priest a young girl whom he had snatched from the home of her parents close to his hacienda. On reaching Veracruz he sent out to find the priest for the purpose of killing him, for like a good priest he had usurped the pleasures which the lascivious General was reserving for himself. He did not kill the priest, but forced him to return the money which he had received for the support of the girl, a sum of thirty dollars a month, and also pay for some percale dresses which he had bought her.

His diversions with the fair sex were always at their expense or at the expense of the public. They never cost him more than a few reales and several falsehoods. A girl in Orizaba with whom he was enamoured granted him the favors which he asked on condition that he would make her father a colonel in the army. The only notable thing that occurred in this affair was that instead of deceiving the girl, he immediately ordered the commission to be issued, the only case we know of in which he complied with his promise when he could avoid it, and this time it was at the public expense.

As an example of the literary taste of our hero be pleased to read the following. A gentleman from Veracruz who was visiting at his hacienda asked for a book with which to entertain himself for a while and received this reply: "As I have never wasted my time reading *nonsense*, I have never owned, nor ever will own a book. It is better that I should let you rest your body by taking a nap in the hammock."

In consideration for his services, which it was supposed he had rendered in the campaign against Barradas, the Legislature of the State

of Mexico presented him with a gold sword which was very magnificently made by an able Toluca artist named Coto and which cost 6,000 pesos. When Santa Anna's troops under the command of Valencia or Mejía took that city the sword was still in the possession of the artist. The State had not asked for it nor paid for it and consequently it was necessarily the property of the artizan. Santa Anna ordered it to be taken away from him, but as the owner refused to deliver it, he went to the Governor of the State, who was a prisoner, and this man was obliged to command its delivery. The silversmith did so and in this way the sword came into the hands of Santa Anna. The artist never received any compensation for it, either from the State or from Santa Anna.

Some time afterwards the sword required a second composition, but on being informed that the restoration of the lost stones would cost him five hundred dollars, the villain exclaimed: "It would have been better if the Legislature had given me the value of the sword in money or in cows for my hacienda (for in that way they would have done me a real service) instead of a sword which is far from useful and an expense to me."

But enough of personal history. We will continue with the public history. There can be no doubt whatever of the fact that Santa Anna came into power lodging a secret design to destroy the federation which he appeared to reestablish and to make himself dictator for life. This was not a thought born after his elevation to power. He had always cherished it. Trusting to the good fortune which had never forsaken him in his greatest crimes and most audacious undertakings, he flattered himself with the thought that he could manage things better than Bustamante and accomplish what that leader had failed to do by avoiding the shoals on which the latter had become wrecked. By means of fraud he hoped to gain what Bustamante had been unable to effect by force. The events which follow will confirm this assertion.

CHAPTER XVI.

Santa Anna's ambitions. He opposes the reforms of Congress. He defends the cause of the Church and the military despotism which he had just overthrown. He leaves Mango de Clava and takes over the reins of government. He commences by making Congress hated in the eyes of the nation. The beginning of the proposed revolution of Arista and Durán. Escalada declares in favor of Santa Anna as Dictator. Durán does likewise. Unda follows his example. Santa Anna demands and receives extraordinary powers of Congress to stifle the revolution. He sends Cortazar against Escalada and he himself leaves to fight Durán, taking Arista with him as second in command. Arista makes Santa Anna a prisoner and proclaims him Dictator for life. He joins Durán in Unda. Santa Anna a prisoner in Cuautla de Amilpas. Movements of Farias and Zavala against the rebels. They incite the people to action. Santa Anna's flight and entrance into Puebla. He gives an account of his escape and promises to stifle sedition. Incredulity of the inhabitants. He returns to Mexico, sentences outlaws and exiles fifty individuals who were in favor of the Dictatorship. He places himself at the head of a division and marches against Arista and Durán. The rebels defeat Lemus. Victoria defends Puebla. Arista and Durán besiege Santa Anna. Mejía and Arago join the latter. Retreat of the rebels. Santa Anna, Mejía and Arago pursue them. Arista and Durán publish a pamphlet in San Juan del Rio disclosing Santa Anna's connection with the conspiracy. They go to Guanajuato. They correct the publications against Santa Anna declaring him to be the author of their movements. Disagreement and separation of Arista and Durán. The latter

leaves Guanajuato. Montezuma captures him. Arista remains at that place. He surrenders. Entrance of Santa Anna at the head of seven thousand men. Exile of Arista and Durán. Return of Santa Anna to the Capital. Anecdotes that throw some light on his character.

CHAPTER XVI.

Although Santa Anna did not immediately take charge of his office, still, he wanted to direct the affairs of the nation in his retirement just as though he were in the Capital, and he became angered at Farias because he dared to discharge his duties without consulting him. He considered the Vice-President only as a subaltern who had no powers to work except under his orders. Nor was his conduct toward Congress less arrogant and presumptuous. He became extraordinarily offended because this body worked independently and did not ask his opinion in numerous and important measures which they considered. In a word, he began to show at that early date the secret hostility which a year later broke out in open warfare against the Vice-President and the National Congress. His sister, Francisca, communicated his discontent to the Aristocratic party which spared nothing in encouraging him in his arrogant pretensions and in firing the discord which was coming into existence between the new President and the National Congress. It is said that they offered him an immense fortune if he would betray his party. Be that as it may, in a short time we shall see him as the champion of the aristocracy and the Church, defending the principles and the party which he had just destroyed.

Such was the state of affairs when he left Mango de Clava for Mexico. On the way he had a long conference with Vasquez, the Bishop of Puebla, and it was noticed that from that time he commenced talking in very uncomplimentary terms of Congress and of those who supported Congress. On reaching the Capital and taking over the reins of government on the 15th of May, 1833, he threw off his disguise and openly opposed that body by slandering its character and denouncing its measures. The nation was soon aware of the disagreement between these two departments of the Government, but did not clearly comprehend its cause. The cause was none other than this; namely, that Congress was busy with important reforms which, should they be carried out, would be the death blow to all of Santa Anna's ambitious hopes.

The real patriots of the country began to realize the impossibility of establishing a government which should have as its foundation free and illustrious institutions while the power should remain in the hands of the clergy and the army, and they at once began to establish a system of reforms for the purpose of destroying this influence which had impeded the progress of civilization for a long time and had submerged the country in a state of darkness and perpetual war. Some of the states had already started these reforms, and congress was working on the same beneficent cause when Santa Anna reached the Capital. This was the only reason he had for opposing the decisions of that body.

It was evident that our hero would never be able to reach the eminence to which he aspired without the assistance of the clergy and the army, against which influence Congress directed its patriotic legislation. It was therefore absolutely necessary for the accomplishment

of his designs that the proposed reforms should be prevented and that that body should be destroyed at any cost. Not being able to attain this end by just and constitutional means he agreed with some of the officers of the army to start a revolution founded on the principles of the central party to be called a revolution for religion and the law. Perhaps there has never occurred a more stupid, despicable and shameful offence in all of its particulars from beginning to end. It was a perfect farce in which the burlesque heroic was displayed in the most ridiculous manner. The contest, which lasted six months, commenced in the following manner.

A few days after occupying the presidential chair some officers from Morelia with an unknown subaltern named Escalda went to Santa Anna imploring his protection against the Governor of the State, who had decreed their dismissal on account of their disorderly conduct. Seeing that he could take advantage of this occurrence Santa Anna espoused the cause of the dismissed men, commanded them to return to their posts, and severely admonished the Governor for what he had done. In this way he converted them into his instruments, so that as soon as Escalda reached Morelia he imprisoned Governor Salgado, placed a political chief in his office, and raised the cry of *religion, law and dictatorship* which was understood to mean that Santa Anna should become dictator in order to save the church and the army from the attacks of Congress.

As soon as the news of Escalda's insurrection reached the Capital Santa Anna ordered a search for Durán. The latter appeared, and after being in secret consultation with the President for three hours, immediately returned to his post which was the town of Chalco and on the same night of his arrival declared in favor of Escalda. His division undertook to support the clergy against the reforms of Congress and proclaimed the illustrious conqueror of the Spaniards, General Don Antonio Lopez de Santa Anna, Dictator of the nation. This movement was followed by a similar one on the part of Lieutenant Colonel Unda in Tlalpan where he and Durán joined forces a short time afterwards.

These movements, which occurred rapidly, caused the friends of the federation some alarm, but Santa Anna appeared to scorn them and said that it was only a temporary excitation against Congress whose imprudence had made them hated, and that he could extinguish it without difficulty. For this purpose Congress granted him extraordinary powers on the 3rd of June. He sent Cortazar against Escalda, and at the head of 1500 men he himself went in pursuit of Durán and Unda taking General Arista with him as second in command—a Centralist leader against whom he had fought under Bustamante's banner. The appointment of this man for so important and responsible a position caused the Federalists great surprise, and Mr. Zavala said to Santa Anna, "How can a virtuous cause be supported by such corrupt agents?" Nevertheless, Santa Anna and his friend Arista moved against the rebels, breathing destruction and death against them until they reached Ameca, where, to the surprise of everyone, Arista proclaimed Santa Anna Dictator of the nation for life, but Arista, fearing that Farfulla's modesty would not permit him to accept such an

honor, and lest he should have to compel him, made him prisoner and took him to the headquarters of the supposed enemies Durán and Unda with whom Arista united and worked. What corruption! And, moreover, what farce! This conduct on the part of Santa Anna saddened and sickened the heart of every patriot who saw that the glorious fruits of the last revolution against Bustamante were going to be destroyed and that the best hopes of the nation were fading under the treacherous ambition of a bold and wicked man.

Santa Anna was taken to Cuautla de Amilpas where he was left in the custody of some of Durán's officers. When these events were learned in Toluca, the picket soldiers of the 16th Regiment attempted to declare in favor of Arista's plan, but the citizens rose up against them and attacked them with rocks, sticks, and whatever missiles they had at hand. Zavala was Governor of the State of Mexico at that time and he co-operated actively with Vice President Farias, who, on this occasion, displayed a firmness, energy and patriotism which were worthy of general praise and which increased his already eminent reputation for virtue. These two men were bosom friends, consecrated to the federation, and most efficient supporters of the reforms which claimed the attention of Congress. They well knew that Santa Anna was at the bottom of these movements and that the pretended revolution was meant only to test public opinion, but without declaring their suspicions, they called on the people to fly to the defense of the Constitution and free the President from captivity believing that with their combined forces they would succeed in exciting such general indignation and organize such a formidable resistance against the rebels that it could do no less than convince the captive President that it would be best for him to return to the Capital with the least possible delay. And such was done. His pretended flight took place on the 12th of June. He first went to Puebla, as though he were fleeing for his life, and gave an eloquent account of the dexterity and cunning with which he had effected his escape, saying that he had escaped from the prison (there never was any such prison), in which he was surrounded by guards, by means of a story which he had made up, and publicly declared that instead of availing himself of the revolution, he was disposed to oppose it with force, failing to meet with any sympathy from the inhabitants of that city who did not believe a word of his account, he prepared to go to Mexico where he arrived to find no disturbance at all and was hyperbolically extolled by the ecclesiastical press for his disinterested patriotism in preferring the federation to his own aggrandizement. But not by this means was he able to deceive Farias and Congress, who well knew the motives and machinations of the impostor and traitor.

While the patriots were encouraged by the general, spontaneous and enthusiastic demonstrations against the rebels, Santa Anna became dismayed to a very great degree. He saw that his movement had been premature, that the nation was not ready for a change of government and that he would have to postpone his elevation to the dictatorship until a more propitious time. Although he did not abandon his plan, nor despair of accomplishing it, necessity absolutely compelled him to recede in the present attempt and to calm the tempest which it had

raised. But this was not easy work, for some of the most powerful men in the country had entered upon the enterprise in good faith, not so much to favor Santa Anna's ambition as to destroy the federal system and erect upon its ruins a government better suited, as they, (but not we) believed to the character and habits of the people, and he could not betray them in that critical moment without incurring their resentment and provoking their vengeance—consequences which he had reason to fear and avoid above all else. In this dilemma he decided to sacrifice those of his principal companions who would have been able to discover his infamy, and avenge themselves for his disloyalty to and betrayal of them.

Dominated by this idea he assembled all of the Senators and Deputies in his home and informed them that if Congress did not energetically aid him in that crisis he would resign his office for the purpose of preventing his enemies from sacrificing him. After having spoken in an endless number of dramatic expressions—which is his manner of discussing any subject—he said that it was necessary to fight great illnesses with strong remedies and he presented a list of seventy men who should be expelled from the country as a general safety measure. In this list he included many respectable persons, among them General Bravo, the Bishop of Puebla, and Bustamante, whom he had appointed Minister Plenipotentiary to Colombia the same day. The members of Congress reduced the list to 52 individuals and erased the names of General Bravo, Bishop Vasquez, Don José María Fagoaga and some others, though they could not except Don Francisco Fagoaga, whom Santa Anna would not pardon and who should have been Secretary of State during Bustamante's administration. Santa Anna said that that decree was the stone on which the Republic was to save itself. On the night of the 24th of June, 1833, Congress met in extraordinary session at the request of Santa Anna and passed the decree ordering the arrest of those whom it had *outlawed*, but before publishing it Santa Anna sent for Bustamante, conversed with him in regard to his trip to Colombia, and at the same time ordered him to be arrested as he left the palace. This was done and he was conducted to the Inquisition.

These exiles did not satisfy the public. The suspicion that Santa Anna had connived with the rebels and that he was the real instigator of the revolution still hung over them. For the purpose of removing this imputation and regaining the confidence of the Federal party he resolved to throw down the gauntlet once more to the rebels and convince the world of his innocence and patriotism. Accordingly he did so. In a short time he placed himself at the head of a division composed of civil militia of the district and entered the field.

Prior to Santa Anna's departure, Arista and Durán had met and defeated the gallant General Lemus at Tepeaca in the State of Puebla. In the heat of the battle the veteran soldiers, who are always on the side of despotism, abandoned Lemus and the militia, who fell victims to treason.

It was supposed that the conquerors would immediately start for Mexico, but instead of this they marched against Puebla, where the ancient and renowned hero of the independence and the first President of the Republic, Victoria, still faithful to the cause of liberty,

had organized the militia and with his well known skill and valor disputed the entrance of the invaders into the city until the invaders, weakened by their great losses, suspended the attack and left the patriots in possession of the city.

Arista and Durán had begun to distrust their Dictator, and, on being informed that such a letter had left Mexico in pursuit of them, they abandoned the siege of Puebla and went to meet him. Both armies descried each other in the vicinity of Texcoco, but Santa Anna, seeing that his enemy's troops were superior to his own in numbers and discipline, retired to a neighboring town where he fortified himself and operated on the defensive. At this place he was besieged by Arista and Durán, and doubtless would have been compelled to surrender, if General Mejía, who had just returned with his division from Querétaro, had not fortunately arrived in time to assist him.

The union of the two forces of Mejía and Santa Anna gave the latter a great preponderance over his adversaries and obliged them to take the road into the interior, Santa Anna, Mejía and Arago leaving in pursuit of them a short time afterwards.

A prefect who was related to Durán resided in the town of Toluca and when Santa Anna reached there, Durán made the prefect promise to arrange a meeting for him with the General. Durán, after waiting a long time for him at the appointed place, returned in anger to San Juan del Río where his troops were determined to reveal Santa Anna's connivance in that revolution to the world. This he did, for he had scarcely reached his headquarters before he published a pamphlet in which he accused and denounced Santa Anna as a traitor and declared that everything that had been done during the revolution had been done by his orders. Santa Anna did not deny this statement, but contented himself with declaring that the rebels lied in this way because they had failed to make him promise to join in their plans. And what were these plans? To establish a central government with Santa Anna at its head as Dictator.

While Santa Anna was approaching Querétaro with his forces, his opponents were making their way to Guanajuato by another route. Santa Anna remained in Querétaro three or four days, and, some troops having joined him there, he marched against Guanajuato, despite the opposition of the State authorities and of the generals and officers accompanying him who feared the destruction which would befall the troops on account of the cholera which was said to exist in the adjacent States. It therefore happened that he lost a great number of his soldiers from that disease during the march from Querétaro to the Burras hacienda. After taking possession of Burras, five leagues from where his enemy was stationed, in Guanajuato, he realized the impossibility of advancing, not only because his troops had considerably decreased, but also on account of the feeling of depression among the remainder. He therefore decided to return to Querétaro, leaving in the aforementioned hacienda more than 60 men with the cholera, and after a five days' march reached that place with only half of the troops he had started out with.

In the meantime Arista and Durán, who were still in possession of Guanajuato, established a kind of bulletin or loose sheet in which they

daily repeated the former accusation that Santa Anna was the real author of the revolution and that he had deserted them when he believed that victory was doubtful.

Santa Anna remained in Querétaro nearly a month replacing the loss which he had suffered. During this time Arista and Durán disagreed in Guanajuato and separated. The latter took 40 or 50 thousand dollars from the city, left for Oajaca at the head of 1200 cavalrymen, and on arriving there was forced to surrender to Montezuma. Santa Anna, reinforced by the division which General Mejía had organized in Michoacan, marched to Silao where his army was further increased by 1500 men whom Colonel Herevia had brought from Zacatecas and 200 whom General Montezuma had conducted from San Luis Potosí. With these forces amounting to 7000 men, Santa Anna marched on Guanajuato where Arista still remained at the head of eight or nine hundred men. There was no alternative left to him but to surrender, which he did on condition that his life should be spared. Durán was exiled to Colombia and Arista to the United States. In this way ended a revolution which, if it had not been for the active and energetic measures which Vice-President Farias and Governor Zavala took to counteract it in the beginning, would have ended in destroying the Federation and enthroning the despot upon the ruins of the people's liberty. Santa Anna returned to the Capital at the end of October or the beginning of November, 1833, more exalted than ever over his military genius and sublime virtue in opposing a conspiracy which his modesty and patriotism did not admit. He was more humble than he was in 1823 when he was proclaimed Antonio I in San Luis Potosí.

In this rapid sketch we have adhered strictly to Santa Anna's part in the revolution. There were other operations besides his which, though of no great importance, are worthy of mention. We will glance over them and conclude with a few anecdotes which the reader will recognize as very characteristic of our hero.

General Cortazar, who had been appointed to fight the forces of Escalda, took no steps in this direction. The events which took place did not present themselves to his imagination in a sufficiently clear light, and it was not known positively whether Santa Anna was in favor of the revolution or opposed to it. Santa Anna had sent him ostensibly to operate against the revolutionaries, but in reality with the secret hope that he would second the movement by uniting with them, and on being deceived in this particular, he could do no less than resent it in a manner which, in his belief, did not favor the revolution. In consequence, he commanded Generals Mejía and Valencia to deprive Cortazar of his command and send him prisoner to the Capital. Mejía did not carry out his orders but informed the Government of the command stating that it was not only unjust to proceed against an individual who had rendered important service in the affair at Querétaro, but that it was feared that such arbitrariness would awaken popular indignation. Santa Anna did not disapprove his decision, but when he was compelled to leave to fight Arista and Durán, who were besieging Puebla, he particularly advised Farias to have General Cortazar removed immediately from the command of the

Michoacan division, and blackened him with the epithets of thief, turn-coat and traitor. Santa Anna's object was none other than to satisfy his personal vengeance against Cortazar in that way, because he had not served as an instrument for his desires, and to malign Farias at the same time by causing the resentment which such injustice would arouse in the nation to fall on him.

Cortazar having been deposed, General Valencia was ordered to march against Escalda. After many manoeuvres, detours, marches and countermarches on both sides, the forces finally met on the 14th of July at Las Cruces, a place famous for the battle which took place there between Hidalgo and Trujillo in 1810. The forces were almost equal, each commander having between seven and eight hundred men. Escalda was defeated and fled to Mexico where General Victoria placed him in prison.

Colonel Moreno, the Centralist leader, defeated General Jarero at Chilpancingo.

In Querétaro Governor Canaliza declared in favor of Arista and Durán. General Mejía marched to that State with 900 men, obtained a victory by capturing Canaliza, who was sent to Mexico where Mejía soon afterwards made his triumphal entry and was greeted with general applause.

Santa Anna ordered Mejía, while the latter was marching to the aid of General Jarero after Jarero's defeat, to arrest General Bravo and send him to the Capital, alleging that Bravo had had some part in Jarero's defeat, but Bravo comprehended what was happening and took flight. Mejía communicated this news to Santa Anna who showed great surprise on receiving it, and openly denied having ordered Bravo's arrest. But the Secretary of State did not permit him to profit by this lie, for he had been the one who had written the letter to Mejía and had preserved a copy of it in his department.

In view of Arista's surrender Santa Anna took possession of Guanajuato, and during the few days that he spent there was domiciled in the Governor's house, and all of his following and servants lived at the expense of that citizen. On taking leave of the Governor he did not fail to take with him the Governor's best horses and such other things as he desired. This was the manner in which he was accustomed to acknowledge hospitality and return favors.

While there he learned that Don Lucas Alamán had operated a silver mine in company with the State ever since Bustamante's administration, and that there were from 6000 to 8000 pesos in metal in the mine at that time. Santa Anna at once fell in love with it and added it to his baggage with the aid of 7000 men who sustained him in the robbery.

He did still worse with some very valuable jewels which they brought for him to look at as a curiosity. He thanked the owner, pretending that he thought they were a gift from this man, and said with the coldest impudence: "Fulano, take those stones and put them carefully in my box." Ashamed and confused, the owner of the stones departed, repenting too late his desire to show the hero Farfulla the treasures of his mine.

We will conclude with the following anecdote which, according to the order of time, should have been placed first. Doña Francisca Santa

Anna, worthy sister of Don Antonio, taking advantage of the latter's position, held an auction of public offices in her house. Anyone wishing to obtain one either in the Treasury Department or in the Army had only to give the lady a few ounces of gold, or make love to her, if he was a handsome man, to be certain of obtaining what he desired. Once Don M. C. M. aspired to an office in the maritime custom-house for which he arranged with the lady for 75 ounces of gold, but Santa Anna had conferred this same appointment on Don D. S. upon the recommendation of the latter's sister, who, besides being very beautiful, was very much attached to him. Consequently, Doña Francisca could not comply with her promise and the interested party claimed his money, but the good Doña Pancha refused to return it to him, protesting that, as she had done everything possible in the matter, she was not responsible for his unhappy state of anxiety. One of the President's friends informed him of this scandalous act, and Santa Anna commanded his sister and Don M. C. M. to appear. He found out what had happened, demanded the money, which was turned over to him immediately, and told the solicitor—"My friend, offices are not sold here and it is an insult to have offered money; wherefore, you lose your ounces as a punishment, and you," turning to Pancha, "be careful how you become involved in these matters." He dismissed them and kept the 75 ounces.

CHAPTER XVII.

Santa Anna pretends to place himself at the head of the reforms. He agrees with Congress in all its measures. Retires to Mango de Clava. Conspires against the Federal system. Sends a letter to Mejía. The latter's reply. Favorable condition of the country for Santa Anna's plans. He returns to the Capital. Plan of Cuernavaca. Santa Anna dissolves Congress by means of force. He annuls their resolutions. His licentious and ungoverned conduct. The new Congress assembles. It shows itself to be central in its principles and serves as Santa Anna's instrument. Santa Anna again retires to Mango de Clava. Congress acts in accordance with Santa Anna's will. Vice-President Farias is deposed and replaced by Barragán. The arbitrary acts of the latter ratified. The two houses assemble in one body and form a National Convention. The Federal system annulled and a Central government declared. Decree issued to disarm the people. Santa Anna's supreme power. Zacatecas appeals to arms against his usurpations. Santa Anna marches against that State at the head of 4000 men. Battle between him and the Governor. Andrade turns traitor to Zacatecas. Horrible butchery. Santa Anna returns to Mexico. Retires once more to Mango de Clava.

CHAPTER XVII.

We proceed with our story. Having concluded the campaign against Arista and Durán the President again occupied his chair of State. And what was his procedure? Had he succeeded in convincing Farias, Zavala, Congress, and the other patriots of the country that he was the true friend of the Constitution and the Federation? Far from that. Though sufficiently exalted by the servile press, Santa Anna knew very well that his recent movements had not advanced his plan to reach the Dictatorship. It was not possible for them to dismiss the idea of his connection with Arista and Durán, and they viewed him with as much distrust as formerly. In order to deceive the incautious and ignorant ones and with more certainty of removing all doubt and suspicion

regarding his fidelity, he pretended to place himself at the head of the reforms immediately upon his return to the Capital. "Gentlemen," he said to the members of Congress, "now that we have triumphed over those Zurgates"—speaking of the Clergy—"we should avail ourselves of the occasion to put an end to them." All of the ecclesiastical reforms which were made or considered in that epoch were advised and approved by him. He was consulted about the law against the forced payment of the tithes, a thing which retarded the civil activities for the monastic votes, which took away the property of the dukes of Monte Leon and was to make the immense monarchical properties national—all of which received his approbation, although at the same moment he was secretly conspiring with Congress, and a short time afterward made these same measures the basis of a declaration against that body. This hypocrisy on the part of the traitor deceived many; but it never deceived Farias, because this honest man could always penetrate his designs and never failed to work against them.

Santa Anna had been in the Capital but a short time when he obtained permission to retire to Mango de Clava under the pretext of regaining his broken health, but in reality to establish another conspiracy against Congress more formidable than the first. Before asking permission he renounced the extraordinary powers which Congress had granted him in order that Farias might not be able to discharge them during his absence. On the evening of our hero's departure he stripped the presidential palace of its furniture and robbed the Executive's office of an inkwell. The circumstances were these. Before leaving Mango de Clava the first time for the purpose of taking possession of the presidency he wrote to Bocanegra, Minister of the Treasury, to obtain the apportionment of 10,000 pesos from Congress for furnishing the palace. That body voted the amount and Santa Anna used it to adorn the palace with the most expensive and luxurious furniture. Having obtained permission to be absent from the Capital, he ordered all of the household furniture to be sold at a private sale and pocketed the money without accounting to the Government. He also took with him a large silver inkwell belonging to the executive department, which had been there since the time of Victoria and which was considered a sacred relic by all of the administrations. Valuable things excited the rapacity of the Mexican Napoleon, and he could not resist the desire to remove them and take them to Mango de Clava from which place they never returned.

Meanwhile, Congress continued its salutary reforms by rooting out many of the ancient abuses of despotism, and was considering various important laws, not only those pertaining to the clergy, which we have mentioned, but also others of equal benefit, such as the reduction of the permanent army, the organization of a national militia, the colonization of unsettled lands, the abolition of the old system of education by replacing it with a better and more republican system, the destruction of the general offices which are incompatible with the sovereignty of the States, and others of a similar nature with a tendency toward the progress and betterment of the country and leading to the happiness of the people. The perfidious President of the Republic, in retirement at his hacienda, prepares the destruction not only of these reforms, but also of their authors.

In this retirement our demon of discord worked day and night, sending secret emissaries through all the nation, transmitting an infinite number of letters to the Clergy, to the officers of the Army, and to ambitious persons of all classes whom he supposed, with a hope of compensation, might be his partizans. He preached a crusade against Congress as the great enemy of the nation who was undermining the foundation of their religion and destroying all the distinctions in society by raising the small and humbling the great. In his correspondence he sent a long letter to General Mejía asking him to join him in his enterprise to establish a theocratic-military government in the country, but Mejía, faithful to the Federation, replied that he would never, under any circumstances, betray the principles of liberty which he had defended all his life. This unexpected reply greatly alarmed Santa Anna, who tried to destroy the effect of the aforesaid letter by stating in writing to Congress that he had news of its existence and that he desired that body to take some steps to discover its author. It is truly very strange that Congress should countenance such an impertinent and insulting communication. Congress, however, demanded the presentation of that letter and all recognized the letter and signature at once. Santa Anna persisted in denying its authenticity until his subsequent operations made it unnecessary.

The condition of the country favors Santa Anna's plans. Although the large masses of the people were republicans and friends of the federation, as they had manifested during the campaign against Durán and Arista, and also in the war against Bustamante, they were, nevertheless, ignorant in the extreme and easily misguided. They not only lacked competent leaders to organize and direct them, but they were also too blind to see the machinations of their enemies, and too superstitious to oppose the Church. Furthermore, they were tired of civil wars and longed for peace and repose. On the other hand, the Clergy, the officers and the aristocrats who composed the Centralist party were organized, active and bold, and worked without rest and in secret while the Federal leaders and the people slept in the arms of a false security as though no danger threatened them. It was not strange, then, that they should be the prisoners of an enemy who never slept.

Finally, the traitor, having sufficiently perfected his plans and organized his forces for the struggle, left for the Capital and commenced the war. As a writer of the *Correo Atlantico* states: The little Napoleon of the comic opera leaves Egypt in a rage, returns to his Paris (April 1844), puts the keys of the legislative halls in his pocket, casts away the public vote for the installation of the Council of Government prescribed by the Federal Constitution during the dissolution of Congress, usurps all powers, and gives the signal for a general insurrection."

Before leaving his hacienda a feeble cry of insurrection had been raised in Orizaba, which was followed by a much more clamorous one in Cuernavaca on the 25th of May in which Santa Anna was implored to save the country from the ruinous legislation of Congress, to annul all the laws and decrees which that body had passed in its career of moral reforms, and likewise, to remove from public office all who had supported Congress in its measures. Santa Anna called this uprising the voice of the nation and immediately (May 1844) dissolved Congress by military force, doing the same thing to the Council of

Government which was composed of half of the senators and which, according to the Constitution, should have been installed the day after the adjournment of Congress. This placed the supreme power of the nation in Santa Anna's hands, there being no law but his will and no authority but his bayonets. Some of the Legislatures protested these revolutionary movements, but the usurper scorned their complaints, and the nation was too submerged in a profound stupor to be able to make any organized resistance, with Santa Anna, supported, as he was, by the Clergy and the aristocracy who boldly and actively defended him.

Embarrassed by the little or no resistance which he encountered, the usurper became more overbearing, bold and licentious than ever. In conformity with the plan of Cuernavaca he annulled the liberal resolutions of Congress, increased the army, revived the ancient monarchical system of public instruction, suspended the judicial proceedings against his friends, gave offices to those against whom he had fought, and oppressed, prosecuted and punished all whom he suspected of being his enemies. At the same time he did not forget to give himself up to all kinds of vice, luxury and prostitution by attending cock fights, balls, theaters and public diversions of all sorts where he was conspicuous for his fantastic dress, his resplendent ostentation, noisy conversation and insulting familiarities with the ladies. All of this was not the sudden and instantaneous intoxication of triumph, but the impulse of a heart naturally depraved and always ready to throw itself into crime, wickedness and depravity.

In this way the usurper continued his despotic career from the violent dissolution of Congress in 1834 to the formation of another in 1835 whose members, elected at the suggestion of Santa Anna, were merely his instruments and slaves. General S. F. Austin, who was in Mexico during that time and witnessed the scenes which took place, in speaking of this Congress, said: "A new Congress, revolutionary and in no way constitutional, was installed the 1st of January, 1835. It was decidedly aristocratic, ecclesiastic and centralistic in its policies. A number of petitions were presented to it from several cities and towns requesting it to change the Federal form of government and establish a Central form. These petitions were all of a revolutionary character which Congress called declarations in favor of centralism. They had been compiled by revolutionary and partizan assemblies, directed by the Clergy and the military. Petitions in favor of the federal system and the Constitution were also sent and protests made against those revolutionary measures by the people and by some of the State Legislatures which still preserved enough firmness to express their opinions. These were disregarded and their authors prosecuted and placed in prison.

A congress organized in the manner we have seen could work under the mandates which had given it existence. Santa Anna's policy was to make Congress carry out his plans on their responsibility instead of on his own. He explained his proposals, gave Congress to understand what he desired, dictated its measures, and then left the members to work as though he had no connection with their proceedings. Dominated by this false idea, and hoping to deceive the nation by it, he remained in the Capital after the organization of the aforesaid

Congress a sufficient length of time to develop his plans and give his orders, and then went to Mango de Clava again with the touching pretext of restoring his poor health. He left the City on the 27th of January, and the same day Congress deprived Vice President Farias of his office without any accusation or reason, or even without any form of justice and placed Barragán in his stead. A month later [February 27] that body ratified and legalized the arbitrary acts of Santa Anna for the last two years. But the greatest boldness and usurpation on the part of that servile and corrupt Congress was the consolidation of the two chambers into one body and declaring them to be vested with the powers of a National Convention. After this it proceeded to issue a formal decree annulling the Constitution and the federal system and proclaiming the establishment of a central government. One more step was necessary to complete its work and that was the disarmament of the peoples. The lives of despots are in danger when the people have arms. Santa Anna knew this very well and, consequently, made his Congress or National Convention fill the measure of his desires by issuing a decree taking away the arms from the people and leaving only one gun to every 500 men. While this sealed the crime and infamy of that body, it calmed the traitor's fears of a counter revolution, and he abandoned himself to pleasant dreams for a while as though he had effected some grand and glorious end for his country and attained all that a virtuous man and real patriot could desire in this world.

Thus we see our modern Cataline triumph to the end. Although the great mass of the people were essentially democratic and federal, the influence of the Clergy and the power of the army were sufficient to restrain and subjugate them. Two years before Bustamante had been thrust from the power which he had usurped on account of his centralistic and aristocratic principles by that same man who had now reestablished them in the most odious and despotic form. His power was now almost absolute. With a Congress which was his own work and with no army to oppose him; with the authority of the states destroyed and the people humiliated and without arms, it seemed that there was no obstacle in the way of his becoming Dictator, Emperor or whatever else he should desire on a solid and permanent basis. The only obstacle to the complete establishment of his absolutism was that some states still hold out against his usurpations. These states were Zacatecas, and Coahuila and Texas. The former was rich and powerful, the latter weak and without resources. The usurper considered their subjugation an easy task and proceeded to the work without delay.

Zacatecas strongly opposed all usurpations from the beginning to end, and as a last recourse flew to arms in defense of her rights. The rest of the states had already succumbed without offering any resistance and only the latter maintained any hostile attitude of fighting for its liberty. In a brief time Santa Anna marched against that State in person at the head of an army of four thousand men.

It is worthy of note that a short time before undertaking the invasion of that State he compelled his Minister Estrada to write to the authorities for the purpose of deceiving them and preventing their being on guard, and warned to resist him. The treachery had the desired effect in part in helping to deceive the Governor, who still

believed in the solemn declarations of the traitor, though everyone but himself knew Santa Anna's crime. The same thing happened with regard to the Minister Estrada, who, at the time of writing the said despatch, did not doubt the good intentions of the Usurper, but afterwards, when he was convinced of his crime, energetically opposed this treacherous act, solemnly and publicly protested against it, and making a declaration to the nation to prove that he himself had been deceived, withdrew from the Cabinet and even left the country.

The Governor, like the Minister, however, was cured of his credulity as soon as the traitor commenced his march, and being a patriot of intrepid courage placed himself at the head of the Civic Militia and went out to meet him. A sanguinary battle took place between the two forces on the 10th of May, and although fortune and triumph did not incline to either one side or the other, some of their own officers, among them General Andrade, betrayed the cause of Zacatecas, bribed by the gold of the invader. The contest ended in favor of the tiger of Mango de Clava, who executed more than two thousand of the unfortunate citizens who had taken up arms. This decided the destiny of that State. Zacatecas was not only forced to surrender to the victors, but was treated as a conquered province, stripped of more than 2,000,000 pesos which became useful in the war which the tyrant commenced shortly afterwards against the only State that resisted his power. Thus fell the noble and republican State of Zacatecas, the victim of treachery and force, conquered by the gold of the Clergy and the arms of the Tyrant. His surrender was followed by the Plan of Toluca (June 1835) which ended the revolution, centralized the government, and secured the sanguinary despot in power.

After the surrender of Zacatecas Santa Anna returned to the City of Mexico making his shameful triumphal entrance into the capital hidden in a carriage preceded by three others filled with priests who looked as though they were conducting him in lugubrious silence to the gallows, which he had deserved so often. His stay in the City was brief, and for the third time he went to Mango de Clava where he planned all of his conspiracies, and busied himself with maturing cannibal projects against the obstinate State of Texas.

No. 2419. LAMAR TO _____²⁸

[Translation from the Spanish]

[About 184—?]

MY DEAR²⁹ COUSIN—

I have to offer you many congratulations and good wishes at the beginning of the New Year. If Heaven condescend to listen to my prayers, there is nothing that you ask that will not be granted you instantly. May all the desires of your heart be realized; nothing be lacking to you; but for the present the thing most appropriate and important is to express my eager desire that you continue enjoying good health until I have another occasion, like the present, of renewing my congratulations, and of telling you how much I love you. With respect to myself my greatest anxiety is that the friendship which for so long a time has existed between us may become as durable and firm

²⁸Appended to No. 2418.

²⁹Lamar uses *cara* here for *querida*.

on your part as on my own. It is said that little gifts usually invigorate and give new force to friendship; and with the hope of producing similar effect, I must beg that you do me the honor of accepting those which I send you. It is true that they have no intrinsic value; still it will give me the greatest pleasure if you accept them and take into consideration the donor. Notwithstanding the congratulations and the protestations which are usually lavished so freely on similar occasions, they do not always flow from the heart, but more or less are only the merest compliments of the season, I pray that you will believe me when I assure you that I am and always will be your faithful and devoted cousin.— Please accept in the right spirit the expression of my appreciation for the consideration which you have for me

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2423. THE "MEONGO COMPANY OF COUNTERFEITERS."
ANONYMOUS

[184—?]

Sometime in the year 34 or 35 the Meongo Company of Counterfeiters were apprehended in St Louis Missouri, Some of them had been committed to Jail, and others held to bail, and it seems that James Garland was the leader of the gang, and braking custody ran to the Bois D Arc creek, and carried with him Charles Smith; Charles Quillin; two of the Cooks and one Spencer all supposed to belong to the party sometime in the latter part of the year 35 Garland died on Bois D Arc, Spencer was compelld to move off and the 2 Cooks became alarmed and moved off Smith moved high up into the wilderness and Quillin only remaining at his settlement a few miles above Bois D Arc.

The widow of Garland married Carter T Clift in a short time after the death of her husband and at the sale of the property of Garlands estate Quillin murderd Clift so that the lady was a widow again in a short time. Quillin ran off, and carried with him Charles Smith, and neither of them ever returned Spencer hearing that his sister Garland had been left alone came back, and some of the Mr Doss's shot and killed him in his sisters house. the widow then married a man by the name of William Heath who it is said had killed his father, and sometime after the marriage in the Sale of some negroes exhibited some of the counterfet money and requested a gentleman to take it, and pay it over, but the Gentleman refused to take it from him, and requested him to hand it over to a third person which he did and in 2 days afterwards the deputy sheriff the Chief justice, and about fifteen of Citizens were at Heaths, and on his promising to get all the money he had and all the means of counterfiting he was promised to be set at liberty, upon which he produced a bottle out of which was taken 10000 dollars of counterfit money he also produced a square piece of Iron in which was a square mortice in which he said they struck their coins. We could not prove that he had ever passed any of the counterfit money and he was turned loose and left, and it is said he is now living in the County of Hempstead in Arkansas Since they left, we have not seen any of their currency—

No. 2424. NOTES ON SMITH, COTTON, BURNET. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

Daniel W. Smith; merchant at Natchitoches; afterwards Consul at Matamoras

John Cotton— an early adventurer among the Comanchees with Judge Burnet— In 1839 they met at my house in Houston after a separation of many years—

Judge Burnet came to Texas in 1818— spent 18 months in the upper region of the Colorado— Settled in the Country as an Emigrant in 1826— awhile at Sanfillippi; and in 1831 settled at his present residence near Lynchburg— The Sawmill at that place was built the same year by Burnet and Capt Norman Hurd—

[Endorsed:] Burnet— Smith the Consul at Matamoras &C John Cotton—

No. 2427. MEXICANS WHO FELL IN THE ALAMO. AGUSTIN BARRERA

[San Antonio, Texas, 184—?]

Carlos Despalier . . . [faded] Losoya [?]

Antonio Padillo . . . Andres Moras [?]

Gregorio Espinosa [?]

The foregoing were imprisoned and fell (during the storming of the Alamo) fighting for their liberty in the . . . [faded] whose names are not recorded on the monument erected to the memory of those who . . . [faded] perish with Travis and others when the Alamo fell
[AGUSTIN BARRERA?]

[Added in Lamar's hand:] Z. M. P. French former clerk of Lagrange Jas. B. Ravis lived on the Trinity murdered Flacco for his horses in the fall of 1842 after Summerfield's campaign. He and Flacco were taking a cavayard of horses to Sanantonio jointly, and to get the whole profits of the hole of the horses he shot Flacco while he was sleeping.

[Endorsed:] Names of some Mexicans who fell in the Alamo, St. Antonio Obtained from Mr. Barrera who saw them, when dead and knew them personally

No. 2430. "FEDERATION WAR." LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

Peredez was taken & shot by Urea.— Reyes was taken prisoner at chorubusco. Ampudia, boiled the head of a captered enemy in oil, in Ucatan viz *Santamanat*.

Vasquez was killed at Cerro Gordo

Trespelacios, whilst Governor at Bexar in 1822, he issued paper money, which was redeemed by the Govrmt— Whilst he was with Long at Galvezton he also issued paper there, which was never recognized by the Govt—

When he passed thro Laredo on his way to San Antonio as Governor, he had with him about 6 men commanded by *Ignacio Ronquillo*, a good indian fighter, Ronquillo remained at Bexar, but his men returned to Chiahuhua—

His bills at Bexar were engraved, & printed on red paper— they were redeemed at Saltillo—

Ygartacheer while at Sanantonio, sent for a piece of cannon at Gonzales which cannon had been sent to the people of that place by Alexander Traviña, whilst commandant of Bexar— when Ugartacheer was about sending for it he was told by the son of Travina (Mr Soto) that his father had given that cannon to the people of Gonzales, and that he ought not to take it from them. Ugartacher replied that it was not well for them to keep it any longer.— Ugartacher sent a small detachment for the Cannon; it was not given up, and a small skirmish ensued which was the first beginning of the Texan war.— This was the first skirmish.—

No. 2436. "SAN SABA." LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

This mission was destroyed by the Indians in 1758— or the latter part of 1757— The Marquis de 'las Amarillas, Vice-Roy of Mexico writes to Jacinto de Barrios y, Jauregui, Govr. of Texas in the following language—to wit— "Being informed by the Govr. of Coahuilia, of the assault made upon the new Presidio of San Saba, by the barbarians in which the Revd. Missionary Fathers' and the Troops station for their protection perished; and that of Bexar fearful of an assault, & the province of Coahula threatened by the Apacha Indians commanded by Foreigners, I order you, after leaving the points guarded in that province, that they may be defended against any attempts by hostile Indians or Foreigners, you give succor to said Precidio of Bexar; and in the same manner you are required to assist the Govr of Coahula, as also of that of San Saba and said Prvince."—

The Precidio of San Zavier, was ordered by the Marquis of Amarillos ViceRoy, to be transferred to San Saba; San Saba was held subject to his special jurisdiction. The question arose whether San Saba belonged to Texas, Coahula, or to New Mexico. The ViceRoy settled the question by making it independent of either or all, and subjecting it to his own exclusive jurisdiction until he could have an opportunity of examining its locality and deciding to which of the three claimants it properly belonged.

In a letter to the Govr. of Texas Don Jacinto de Barrio y Jauregui dated 29 May 1756 Mexico, he speaks thus— towit,

"In general Council held by my order it has been resolved, that the Precidio Xavier, which is situate in the jurisdiction of your governmt, be transferred to the place called San Saba, completing its garrison to the number of an hundred soldiers including officers, the command of which, with the rank of captain I have conferred upon the Colonel of Dragoons, Don Diego Ortiz Parrilla, on account of the death of Don Pedro Ravago Theran; and because it is not at present known to which of the three governments it should belong, that under your charge or those of Coahula & New Mexico, I have determined that it be held subject to my special jurisdiction, as will be seen by the ac-

comparing testimonial of the decree to that effect, until until [*sic*] intelligence be had, as to which governmt it will be most approximate; You will therefore make the necessary enquires upon this point and informe me of the same, that I may by comparing your views with those of the other governors, determine to which governmt its jurisdiction shall fall—”

San Saba fell before the decision was made—

[Endorsed:] San Saba 1796 1798

No. 2444. NOTES UPON BUACHE'S CHART OF THE GULF OF MEXICO. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

FRENCH

“Chart of the Gulf of Mexico and of the Antilles Islands, reduced from Popple’s great English chart, by P. H. Buache ls. Geographer of the King, corrected and augmented in 1780, by J. N. Buache—”

In the above chart it is laid down that the French made an establishment at the mouth of the little Cany, Bay of St. Louis or St Bernard—

On the same chart Natchitoches is represented as being established by the French in 1717—

On the east fork of the Trinity in the 32nd latitude a Mexicans established a mission “the Mission of Texas”— in 1716. French map, date unknown; published probably about the year 1780—

In this map it is laid down that La Salle established at the mouth of the Little Cany, emptying into the St Louis or St Bernard bay, in 1683 whilst seeking for the Mississippi— He is also represented as being on the Trinity in the 31st. Latitude, in the year 1687—

Ferdinand de Soto is represented as discovering the Mississippi in 1541— in the 34th Latitude

In another early French map (date unknown) it is stated that the Bay of San Bernard was changed by the french to that of St. Louis.

[Endorsed:] Old French Maps De Soto and La Salle—

No. 2445. HISTORICAL NOTES. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

1812

Joséf Antonio Castillo, having made his escape from the Towacany Indians and being examined at Bexar stated that he had seen Menchaca (José) at the Indian Village. (Towaccanay) (whilst he was on his way to the U S) when Menchaca invited Castillo to go with him to the U S, whence he was bound for the purpose of raising troops to take Bexar, stating that the people at Bexar were all ripe for revolution— Menchaca endeavored to enlist the Indians also in the servise, promising them many presents &C— Capapt [*sic*] Laconcha of the Towachanays refuse to war against the Spaniards; but the one Called Aricara, and Sambor’s village agreed to unite with Monchaca— Monchaca stayed there one day & a half & proceeded on to the US—

1812

Luis Grande & Ancelmo Vergardo were apprehended at Bexar bearing Proclamations &C from Guitarez—

Upon the prospect of the War between Spain & France, (I know not what year, perhaps about 1793 to 95) a spanish edict was issued to have all the French in the Spanish dominions apprehended on a certain day— This order was secretly circulated through out the Spanish America.—

From a letter written to . . . [blank] the Commander at Nacogdoches by the Governor of Bexar in 1795 it appears that Nolan was in Texas on some secret project in Connection with the Govr. of Bexar—

[Endorsed:] Monchaca 1812 Nolan, the French &C 1795

No. 2449. NOTES FROM JOSEPH BAKER. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

Mr. Baker came to Texas fall 1831. settled on the Brazos Born in Main—

Saltillo was the seat of Gov of Coahuila and Texas, esbablished at the first organization of the Govt

The decisive Battle in Zaccatecas which forced her to submit to the Central views of Santana, in the fall 1835— Santana commanded his own troops in person. Santana had sent Andrade to Zaccatecas, for the purpose of getting command of the army of that state, in which he easily succeed, Andrade having some military reputation and affecting to be a violent federalist & foe to Santana. At the head of the whole effective force of the State, he marched to meet Santana. They met in the City of Zaccatecas, and a battle ensued, in which the traitor Andrade contrived very easily to have his own men butchered up & put to flight.

Under the "*Organic Act*" passed 10th October 1835, giving to Santana all power, this tyrant, attempted to disarm the people of Zaccateccas. They refused to surrender their arms, or to acknowledge the Organic act, which had destroyed the State Authorities, and merged the States into one consolidated Govt. with Santana at its head— Santana determined to coerce Zaccateccas by the sword; he accordingly invaded her in & war ensued—

Texas & Zaccateccas were the only states that resisted the views of Santana—all the others gave in their adhesion to the Govt divided by the Organic Act of 10 Octr— After the fall of Zaccateccas, the subjugation of Texas was the only obstacle to the full accomplishmt of his purposes— He accordingly now directed his attention to chastising her.

Whilst busily engaged in preparing for an invasion of Texas, a circumstance arose, which gave him some colour of excuse for introducing a military force into the country without alarming the apprehensions of the Americans—The circumstance was the Conduct of Congress then in Session at Montclover.

[Endorsed:] Jos. Baker about the Organic act of 10 October 1835 Mexico

No. 2450. NOTES UPON THE MEXICAN WAR OF INDEPENDENCE. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 184—?]

Bajan—Hidalgo was captured there. Hidalgo was camped at a ranch called Bajan; and was captured as he was passing through a narrow Canyon thro' the mountains

450 Anglo Americans—all tried soldiers; accustomed to the fatigues of military life, & skilled in the use of arms. From Nacogdoches, he went to the Presidio on Trinity,

27 General Battles at Labihia, besides a great number of skirmishes; in all which he lost only 14 men & the Enemy five hundred—5 men killed 14 wounded at Salado— Enemy killed 400—

Alazan Alazan [*sic*] 22 killed 40 wounded— 400 Killed of Enemy—much silver plate, saddles, arms, amunition &c captured. Jose Alvares Toledo

After being deposed, Bernardo, went to N. O— & from there to Tamaulipas, the Legislature there honored him with the appointmt of Governor which was confirmed by the National Govt He refused for a while to accept it; believing that he was not qualified for *Civil* apptmts being mainly a Military; he how[ev]er by the persuasions of his friends he finally accepted, the place & entered on its duties. One of his acts was the capture & execution of Iturbede He acted as Govr. only 6 months—was generally applauded; so much so, that the Legislature of Tamaulipas addressed the following letter in his behalf, to the President of the Nation, dated 18 octr. 1824 at Padilla He was appointed by the Supreme Govt with the Commandancy Genl of the northern Division, which he held until he resigned it to Bustamante Martenez issues an order, dated Octr. 24, 1821—to the Priest of the Parroquia to celebrate to morrow by mass & tedeum, thanksgiving for the entereance of Iturbede, into Mexico; Gasper Lopez was Comt at least as early as 14th Novr. 1821

No. 2453. "DISSOLUTION OF THE CONGRESS IN 1834."
ANONYMOUS

[184—?]

Dissolution of the Congress in 1834 When Santa Anna returned to Mexico & took again upon himself the command (or direction) of the Republic, which (command) Farias who already knew that he (Santa Anna) was conspiring against the existing institutions. the Congress was occupied in the discussion &c of a multitude of laws & decrees of the highest im[portance] & benefit to the Country such as the . . . [mutilated] the appropriation to the nation of the immense capitals held in Mort Main (religious Communities of both sexes) estimated at Two Hundred Millions of Dollars: the reduction of the army to less than one-half of the . . . [illegible]; the abolition of the old system of public education &c &c &c; All these laws were hostile to the intentions of Santa Anna, who already joined by the Clergy (Friars) was actively employed in effecting a revolution (reaction) that should bring back things to the times of the Vice Royalty; a slight form of Etiquette gave to him a pretext & in the early part of June, he dissolved the chambers with a small force; some states declared against

this scandalous violation of the rights of the people, but Santa Anna had at his disposal the National force and dissipated all the coalitions which were formed in Michoacan Puebla ——— San Luis Potosi & Guadalajara, protesting at the same time that his only intention was to restrain the innovations of the reformers, but that he would not permit any attempt against the federal constitution, which he would sustain at any sacrifice.

With this fallacious promise he succeeded in deceiving the governors of some of the States, particularly the governor of Zacatecas; (Dn Francisco Garcia)

Mexia was the last who succumbed in Guadalajara, after General Montezuma had done the same thing in San Luis Potosi;

As soon as Santa Anna had dissolved the Congress he called to the management of affairs, men who having before declared themselves against Federal institutions were without Public Employment;

In consequence of his measures every thing was tending to place him in a situation which would enable him to . . . [mutilated] by which he might enjoy a greater pow[er than he] already [possessed] as the President of the United States

He had but one obstacle to overcome, & this was, the resistance that the State of Zacatecas would make against his power, so soon as the dissolution of the Federation should be proclaimed: In order to find a pretext in marching against Zacatecas he caused the new Congress to pass a law abolishing the national militia, & ordering the arms held by the States to be delivered to the general government; The State of Zacatecas opposed itself to this enormous usurpation of power, notwithstanding which Santa Anna assured them officially through the Secretary of State Guiterres Estrada that this measure "contained no malice in the future," & protested that in no event whatsoever should the Federal system be attacked.

The Zacatecans enlisted themselves through the country & took the field in order to sustain with arms the rights of the people, but were defeated on the 11th of May, and in this catastrophe the Mexican Federation found its grave as was proclaimed in all parts by Santa Anna, through his legionaries

The authorities of Coahuila & Texas were involved in the common misfortune (disgrace) of the country, Cos dissolved the legislature, arrested (imprisoned) the governor, deputies & other high Functionaries, and an unbridled soldiery, became from thenceforth the rulers of the nation; From this epoch is dated the separation of Texas from Mexico

N. B. The conduct of S A— was so mysterious & criminal, that before marching on Zacatecas he obliged . . . [mutilated] G. Estrada to write to the authorities to . . . [mutilated] after the Zacatecans . . . [mutilated] he began to cause Centralism to be proclaimed in all parts of the country if the ministry opposed . . . [illegible] energetically to this act of perfidy, protested solemnly and publicly against it; issued a manifesto in order to prove that he himself had been deceived, separated himself from the Cabinet and even left the Republic

No. 2454. BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF GUERRERO AND BUSTAMANTE. LAMAR³⁰

[Richmond? Texas, 184?]

GUERRERO

The generals Bravo and Guerrero compete in the election for the office of vice-president Congress decides for Bravo.

“The first of April the government of Victoria ended and the new president took the reins of government in the midst of anxieties, vexations and vicissitudes, necessary result of the discontent which was beginning to make itself felt. Never had circumstances more extravagant occurred nor more grievous for the supreme authority than those with which General Guerrero saw himself surrounded, on coming into power. On all sides were perceived the symptoms of a complete disorganization in which the errors and mistakes of the previous government had no small part, the sole inheritance which had come down to the modern officials.”

The country was in a state of almost total chaos, confusion and bankruptcy when Guerrero came into office— The treasury was exhausted—the revenues were already pledged for loans made—the army was unpaid, without clothes, without supplies, transportation and every thing necessary to its comfort and efficiency. The Yorkinos were clamorous for office and the Escoseses, attributing all the public [misfortunes] to the new administration, altho it had just commenced. The truth is that the latter part of Victoria’s administration, the president and cabinet folded their arms and lef[t] things to take their own course. Under such a state of things it would have been impossible even for Statesmen more experienced in public affairs to have sustained himself, and given satisfaction to the nation. In the midst of these troubles, assailed by his enemies, and not sustained by his own party, Guerrero was still more embarrassed by the expedition of Barradas. The arrival of this invader was daily expected, and yet it was almost impossible to *raise* funds for repelling him in time. Nevertheless the President did all that any one could have done. He made a forced loan, and at the same time stimulated the people [to] make voluntary contribution of provisions &C for the support of the army—

Santana was appointed to take Command of the expedition against Barradas— “He effected a loan of three thousand seven hundred and five pesos”

Barradas landed at Cabo-Rojo; and on the 31 of July the government received this ominous news at the very time when all was in confusion in the capital, and when an uprising was made against the personnel of the administration.”

In this situation of affairs it was the duty of every patriot to stand by the Executive in his efforts to “save the republic and strengthen the rule of law; it was a duty of all to rally around the executive for the purpose of cooperating in the national defense.”

“It had been eight days since the enemy had disembarked in Cabo-Rojo when our legislators were called in order to make laws and decrees conducive to aiding the government in the branches of the treasury and war.”

³⁰Partly in Spanish.

The 1st August the enemy (Barradas) began his movement. In the Corchos took place the first encounter with the invaders. The Mexicans were defeated.

Garza [*sic*] was to prevent the enemy from crossing the river and taking possession of Tampico; but instead of making any effort to do it, he did nothing but "entered into conversation with the enemy, and returned to his camp as if nothing had happened."— He abandoned the points, which he was occupying, falling back to Altamira"—

Immediately after the surrender of Garza, Barradas "with the greater part of his division was advancing upon Villerias and Altamira, leaving in Tampico a respectable garrison.

Barradas encountered Teran in Villerias; but Teran not being able to resist him, he was ordered by Garza, his superior, who occupied Altamira to retreat, which Teran did—this was on the 17—"Garza retreated also four leagues distant from the point which he was defending. Barradas occupied the place which he was wanting with very little loss.

While these movements were going on Santana arrived at Tuxpan 11—and tried to take advantage of the absence of the greater force of the enemy." He crossed the river on the 20, and attacked the city; "the attack was prolonged until two o'clock in the afternoon of the 21, the hour in which Genl Solomon raised the white flag seeking a parley in order to capitulate and surrender his arms."—

The conference had hardly commenced between the commissioners of both sides, when a whirl-wind of dust announced that Genl. Barradas was approaching with two thousand five hundred, men to the aid of his troops in Tampico."— If Genl. Garza had attacked the rearguard as he could have done, the violent march of the invader could have been retarded.—

After the union of Teran and Santana, Barradas, alarmed at his situation, his men daily dying with fever, proposed an interview with Santana, with the view of capitulating on condition of being allowed to sail for Havana with his troops. The proposition was rejected. It was renewed again and again when finally Santana said that he would not permit any more parleys in his camp, nor any other reply, that would delay his operations, unless it was to surrender at the discretion of the conquerer."

This decided the matter—a battle took place on the 10th of September. Barradas was defeated and the next day the terms of the capitulations were adjusted, "the afternoon of the 20 of September, Santana sailed in an "English packet" for Veracruz.

While the campaign was going on against Barradas, an apprehension prevailed that another Spanish force was about to land on the southern coast. This led to the organization of a military force called the *army of Reserve* at the head of which Guerra placed the vicepresident Bustamante. He little thought "that those same elements reunited by his hand with so great sacrifices would be so many other stones that, in the future would serve to build his sepulchre; but for him, the honor and glory of the country spoke louder than his personal interests, and there is no doubt that this meritorious Mexican proposed his remaining in power for the cause of the nation."

Altho' the Escoses had abused Guerrero for not making timely prep-

arations for repelling Barradas, and were the very ones who was most active in spreading the alarm about another, invasion, yet they were the first and most violent in denouncing him for creating the Army of reserve, alledging that the nation was not in a condition to bear such expenses.—

Things kept getting worse and worse. The heaviest denunciations against Zavala & Poinsett were daily uttered. Out of respect to the demands of the Escoses, Guerrero dismissed these men. This made things still worse, Manifestations of a conspiracy against the Govt. began to appear—in view of this, Guerrero ordered the disbandment of the Army of Reserve; but bustamte had already perfected his plans and proclaimed against the govt—4th Decr. to give more prestige to the revolution, Bustamente had given the troops of his command to understand in a proclamation, that the illustrious conqueror of Tampico (Santana) (they are his words) could not look with indifference on the evils of the country for whose liberty he had just given such distinguished services—his votes will be in agreement with yours. “Guerrero convoked the Congress which met 11 Decr— Bustamente was in movement—Guerrero asked permission to place himself at the head of a force to repel the rebel— After some opposition, it was finally granted him 16th Decr. The Congress proceeded to elect Bocanegra to act as President; and Guerrero accordingly took the field—

Bocanegra was left in the capital without any military protection, and Quintanar at the head of the only force, proclaimed for the plan of Jalapa. Anaya offered some resistance; but to little effect— The conspirators triumphed— Bocanegra was put down; and a Triumvirate formed composed of Quintanar, Alaman and Velez.

The news of the destruction of the government and of the occupation of the city of Mexico by the rebels, reached Jonacate, camp of President Guerrero, together with the news that executive power had been set up, and D. Lorenzo Zavala, D. Manuel Crescencio Rejon and D. Fernando del Valle had been committed to prison. Guerrero considered himself wholly lost, and his defeat completely consummated, abandoning his soldiers the night of the 25, leaving Genl. D. Ignacio Mora in charge of the command, and himself retiring with a small escort to the city of Tixtla, the place of his birth. As soon as Mora saw himself alone, he called a council of war in Ayacopixtla, and the 27 issued an act pronouncing himself for the plan of Jalapa.

The vice president Bustamante without effort took possession of the first magistracy on the 1st of January, 1830, and shortly afterwards presented himself in the legislative body in order to open the sessions of Congress, as if nothing had occurred, and as if the exercise of power had come into his hands by virtue of the laws.

Guerrero resigned the presidency protesting obedience to the resolutions of the houses. In an exposition addressed to Congress, he declared his good intentions and his ardent desire to put an end to these disgraceful scenes.

Harrassed and unsustained as Guerrero was it was impossible to carry out the reforms which the democratic party contemplated.—

BUSTAMENTE

The first pronunciamiento of Bustamte was for the restoration of the violated constitution and the administration of the laws. Very soon, however, it was seen that no such object was entertained by the triumphant party. The people believed that there was to be a regeneration of the government, and the establishment of a most happy order of things.— Such illusions were soon dissipated, by the appointment of Alaman and Fácio in the Cabinet. Alaman was well known as the friend of the Clergy, and enemy to the federation; while Fácio [who was] educated in Spain under the tutelage of D. Francisco Javier Elio, the man most unfriendly to reform and liberal principles, was designated as the supporter of the militia and the most obstinate patron of its privileges and preeminences.”

Congress was converted into the docile instrument of the conqueror. The houses declared good, meritorious and national the insurrection of Jalapa. They canonized the crimes of the usurper, legalized the plan of Jalapa and declared that General Guerrero was morally unfit to exercise the duties of the presidency.

The administration, feeling safe in power commenced its persecutions of all who were, or was even suspected of being, unfriendly to it— These persecutions became so general & ferocious, that Salgado, Governor of the State Michoacan, assembled a small force that did not amount to over 300 men and marched in the direction of the city of Zamora of the same state, where he had friends and partisans. Salgado was made prisoner— Alvarez, Codallos—

Bravo was chosen to persecute Guerrero; which he joyfully executed because in doing so he “would serve the government and be revenged on his political enemies.— The enemy of Guerrero since he was humiliated in Tulansingo, no one could like himself &C—

D. Francisco Victoria, brother of the president of the same name.

The last effort of Guerrero was the battle of Chilpansingo, which was fought the morning of the first day of January, 1831 in conjunction with Alvarez against Bravo. The latter was victor. Congress decreed him the gift of a Shield of honor in recompense for his brilliant behavior. Fácio did not go without his reward; “the vice-president with the unanimous agreement of the Senate elevated him to the office of general of Brigade.”

This Fácio “in his infancy, his family carried him to Spain where he was educated and embraced the career of arms until attaining [the rank of] colonel of Cavalry. In consequence of the invasion which the duke of Angouleme made in 1823 for destroying constitutional government in Spain, Fácio emigrated and came to Mexico in 1824. After his fall in 1832 he fled to Paris, where he published the 1st of April 1835, a memorial concerning the events of the period of his ministry.—

Altho' Bustamente had an immense majority in the Congress, still there were men in that body who did not fear nor cease to attack him; among [them] are counted Quintana Roo, Don Juan de Dios Cañedo, Pacheco Leal, Rejon, Francisco Garcia and Valentin Gomez Farias, deputies who enjoyed much influence in that legislature.—

Genl. Santa Anna had remained on his hacienda of Mango de Clava, retired from business since the fall of Guerrero— he took no part in

the movements [which had] happened as a consequence of the revolution begun in the South; and although the administration had sought to employ him, he refused to give his services for more than two years.

The cry of Vera Cruz of the 2 of January, 1832—Santana invited to head the revolution—accepts—Sends a copy of the pronunciamiento to Bustamente, in which the second article reads thus—“2nd The most Excellent Señor Vice-president asks the removal of the ministry whom public opinion accuses as protector of the Centralists and as tolerating the offences committed against civil liberty and personal rights.”—This document was read before the Congress, and that body “addressed a note to general Bustamente, in which he was exhorted not to consent to the dismissal of the secretaries of state, since it would be a step that could only be attributed to weakness or fear.”—Bustamente refused to remove the ministry, and the war began.

The cry of Vera Cruz was not at first well received by the nations. “No State of the federation gave signs of repeating it, and even those people who had chiefly suffered [from] the despotism, seemed indifferent to the unfortunate lot which threatened the individuals who began the movement.”

While the nation thus remained inactive and careless about the revolution, Genl. Fácio “exercised all the resources of his genius to stifle the insurrection quickly; it was understood that there would be something immoral in his plans.”

Attempt to bribe the commandant of the castle of San Juan de Ulúa—The commandant was Señor Don José Maria Flores. Fácio wrote to him from Jalapa 25 of 1832 a letter from which we take the following extract—“I offer to give you in the name of the government, if that fort of Ulúa which you command, is put at its disposal not only will you be honored with the effective office of Colonel, but moreover twenty-five thousand pesos will be given to you secretly.—

While this was taking place, the forces of the Government were marching slowly toward the suburbs of Veracruz to commence hostilities. The 31 of January the brigade of the vanguard left Jalapa and did not reach Santa Fé until the 21 of the following month. On less than 25 leagues of easy and level road, Calderon took twenty days! To palliate this fault the bulletins of the ministry applied to the general in chief the verse which Vergil puts in the mouth of Aeneas: “With his prudent delay he saved the republic.”

Genl. Santana encouraged by so many mistakes, arranged a sortie for engaging the rearguard of the forces of his rival. The night of the 24th at the head of two hundred cavalry, and two companies of rangers of the 2nd and 9th regulars, he marched out of Veracruz, passing within gunshot of the division of the government; he advanced to Manatíal, five leagues distant from the plaza where he awaited a convoy which was travelling from the Bridge to Santa Fé with provisions, munitions, and money, these effects being guarded by a respectable escort under the command of lieutenant colonel D. José Perez Palacios. Santana engaged said force, took possession of the convoy and returned to his quartermaster general, taking the greater part of the effects and five thousand pieces of metal. The troops of Perez Palacios were united to the ranks of the insurgents, without Calderon, who was found at a point midway between Veracruz and

Manatil, being able to avoid this calamity, owing to the activity and fearlessness that characterized all the military operations of General Santana

(N B) On the 6 of July, 1821, with five hundred men he assaulted the fortress of Veracruz personally scaling the first by the bastian of San José without employing artillery of any caliber."

The 1st of March Calderon began his countermarch, and as slowness and prudence were, always his characteristics, he did not venture to pass in the first days journey the point called Boqueron."

Calderon was entrenched in Loma-Alta with the baggage & C— Santana arrives— camps near him. "Thus he passed all the 2 days until in the night. Santana changed his positions marching to the point of Tolome. At ten in the morning of the 3 day the forces of Calderon in number three thousand seven hundred men, arrived at Tolome; Santana counted upon six hundred infantry and five hundred rough cavalry. The fight commenced immediately at the bridge, which an advance guard of the troops who occupied, the village was defending Colonel D. José Rincon at the head of the brigade of his command, with three pieces of artillery took possession of the pass quickly and compromised the battle; general Iberri and Colonel Gaona made an attempt to flank the position of Santana & C

Calderon remained master [?] of the field of battle; the fruits of victory were thirty-two officers and four hundred thirteen men prisoners; six caissons, and four hundred and thirty-eight rifle guns, the greater part without bayonets, because they did not have them. Among the victims were two distinguished chiefs who had taken part in the triumph in Tampico in 1829, and upon whose valor Genl. Santana counted, Generals D. Pedro Landero and D. Juan Andonaequi.—

Calderon moved slowly— 12 April he marched upon the City of Vera Cruz— 14 he commenced an attack bombarding the place—

Calderon raises the siege & retreats 13, having lost by fever more than 1000 men, and arrived in Jalapa in a miserable condition.

Santana marched to seek his enemies in Jalapa.

(Note N. B) "during the government of General Guerrero, having opposed himself to the disorder and to the misgovernment he urged and approved the removal of the Secretary of the treasury Zavala and the expulsion of the American plenipotentiary Mr Poinsett."

Santana arrived at Puebla after the battle of Palma 3 of October— battle next day.

On the first of August Bustamante commenced his march to San Luis, Zacatecas & other States—17 Sept or 18—Encountered Moctazuma— This battle took place before the battle of Palmar.

Mejia & Jarero marched from Puebla towards Mexico 19 octr. upon Cordova

Santana besieged Mexico from 22 Octr. until 1 Novr. when he intimated a surrender to Quintanar; Pedraza arrived in Vera Cruz 5 Novr.

No. 2457. HENRY B. HOLCOMBE TO LAMAR

MY DEAR GENL. In the course of our conversation in the Street on yesterday, I requested you to read at your leisure a communication recently published in the "Advertiser & State Gazette" published at Montgomery, over the signature of "Spirit of the South" which con-

tains my general views on the great issues now pending before the country.

I am sure you will not do me the injustice to imagine for a moment, that my request was prompted by a puerile vanity to "shew off" in a mere matter of composition— If I ever had my little vanities, the day has long since passed I trust for their exhibition, especially in news paper articles. It is true, that I have written much for the newspapers, and always with the view of doing good, which it has not unfrequently subjected me to fierce and angry contests which are wholly uncongenial to my Nature and my temperament. I had almost resolved never again to raise my voice, nor wield my pen on political affairs—but being compelled to witness the *daily Treason* of the disaffected Southern Press—the imminent peril to our institutions from this cause—and having a lively recollection of the Ancient foe against whose machinations we both combatted; and who has again reared his head, (I mean *Federalism*) I have been almost insensibly driven from my purpose, and without much thought, method, or order of arrangement, threw together the article now enclosed to you. My main object in wishing you to read the article is to shew you the continued coincidence of our views on public affairs— May we always work together for our Countrys honour and glory! Our destinies have been different—Yours on the active theatre of Political and Military life! in both of which your friend can take the liberty of asserting, your measure of honours and distinction is full, and enough to satisfy the proudest ambition, while my life has been one of obscurity—continued toil—and for the greater part of it, of poverty—at times verging on destitution. Yet, I have had the proud satisfaction, at all periods of my humble career, to have had associates and bosom friends, worthy of the proudest associations—among whom, yourself, and your ever to be lamented, pure and noble brother, held a place nearest my heart. Indeed, my dear Sir—there was a friend that to me seemed "closer than a brother"— I never *loved* a man but once—and that man was Lucius Lamar. In him I had so completely "garnered up my heart" that there was at his death a vacuum created in my hopes and aspirations which time has not filled— The world, to me, has not been the same, since that melancholly Event: and even now, the calling his name sends a thrill thro my affections which frequently can only be relieved by tears— a weakness of my nature—but only shed for him whom I had set up in my fancy as the beau ideal of all that was pure, noble and majestic in man. Excuse my reference to that page in our history which can now bring no solace to our bosoms: Yet I can not but remember and cherish the memory of him, whom above all others I loved and admired while in life. Let us dispel this sadness.

In our casual interview the other day I was not entirely satisfied with a determination you seemed to have formed, "Not to concern yourself with public affairs"—nor fret about matters that you could not control. I am sure you will believe me when I declare that I would not knowingly mar your happiness—but if you could so far change your views as to appear before a Mobile Audience in this hour of trial, I know the many friends you have here would welcome you to the City—and appreciate your views upon the great Southern Question. The subject has been agitated in the streets, and I should be

gratified to see you talk to the people, and tell them such home truths as would put to the blush, if possible, such *disaffection* to our cause as is Manifested in the Editorial of the Daily Advertiser of this morning on the Southern Convention Question. Such a press to denounce such Men as Cheves—Troup—Sharkey Floyd, and all the greatest & best men of the South, as plotters of Disunion, which he makes synonymous with Treason, is almost too much to be patiently borne. I could wish to “put in every honest hand a whip to lash such rascals naked thro’ the world”

If you will consent to speak to the people your thoughts in public, an occasion will be shortly presented. I think you can do good at this crises by a speech. The people are asleep.

Do return the paper to me as I have no other copy of the article.

Sincerely, Yr friend

HENRY. B. HOLCOMBE

[Mobile, Alabama,] 4 May 1850 at night

[Addressed:] Gen'l M. B. Lamar Mobile

No. 2458. JOSÉ SANCHEZ YYNAGA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Genl. LAMAR

VERY DEAR GENL.—

On our arriving here Genl. Lopez was imprisoned, and his examination follows with great determination on the part of the government, as you will see from the newspapers. This has occupied us, and we can communicate nothing new to you:— Nevertheless, always attentive to our desire, we shall take advantage of every opportunity, for carrying out our ardent and constant purpose. We beg then, of you that you always keep us posted of the place where you are going to stop, and the method of addressing you, for whatever may happen I would also like you to communicate to us the ideas which may occur to you concerning the matter, for the advantage of the enterprise.

You can direct your letter to us under the name of Mr. Sigur, 89 Custom House St.— Thus the genl. charges me.

With sentiments of the greatest appreciation I am dear genl. your attentive servant.

New Orleans June 15, 1850.

JOSÉ SANCHO Y YNAGA [Rubric]

No. 2459. HENRY B. HOLCOMBE TO LAMAR

Mobile Tuesday Morning 23rd July 1850

MY DEAR GEN'L. I enclose a Slip with the full cabinet of the new President of this splendid confederacy of *Once Sovereign States*.

To the mind of an *old fashioned* Southern States rights man, such an organization of the Executive department of our Federal Government, must bring a train of reflections calculated to test all his powers of endurance— I do not mean by this, that the cabinet is not *an able one*— So far from this, it is the ablest, with the Exception of three, that has ever been organized at Washington since the adoption of the

Constitution— but I mean that the open and undisguised fact flashes upon every mind that the South & South West are doomed! The Federal Government at last has passed *into the hands of our enemies— Enemies to our institutions*: You may rebuke this wholesale denunciation, and ask where is *Crittenden* of Kentucky & *Graham* of No Carolina— If *they* were *Known* to be *true to the South* would they be called to the Cabinet? And, if *they are true to the South*, it can scarcely comport with that “sound and open dealing which is the honor of mans nature” for them *To accept places* in the cabinet of Millard Fillmore. President of the U. States!

We now see where we stand, and can Survey our position without a cloud to intervene between the *inevitable* precedents and *the Event!* All the resources and powers of the Federal Government we now too plainly see will be employed to *patch* up some *lullaby* for the South, to enable *the party* devoted to its own contemptible and miserable ends of plundering the public Treasury— and bound together by the “cohesive power of public plunder” as Mr Calhoun once said of all parties: or perhaps of the Democratic party. No matter what becomes of the South & her institutions— no matter what the great and permanent interests of the Confederacy may demand at the hands of the Central Government, the Great Whig Party must rule hereafter— Let them have it and make the most of it, but in the name of Heaven not at the expense of all that is dear to the South— Our lives— our liberties— our property— our honour— our Self respect, In short all that makes life desirable and worthy a freemans Solicitude. Let us devise some definite plan of demanding our rights, and if refused let us like the honest, bold and brave Statesman of Athens resolve to have them or perish in the attempt.

On leaving you at “Hollywood Home” I promised to send you a copy of Chappells letter, and the articles recently published in the Tribune signed “George Mason” written by our able and patriotic fellow citizen Jno. A. Campbell— I am somewhat addicted to the performance of my promises and within this envelope you will find both. Now let me urge it upon you as a duty you owe to your country and your native South to employ some of your time in a review of Chappells well written, but transcendently delusive, mischievous & sophistical letter. I am surprised at Chappell at this crisis to have thrown his weight of character— his talents and his labours into the Scale of our enemies. I shall await with great solicitude your review of Chappells letter, and shall embrace every opportunity of Seeing you at “Hollywood” If I can serve you in any way let me know it by letter & you know it will be my pleasure to do any thing in my power.

Wishing you all the felicities of life, and a full restoration to health, I remain as ever, yr friend

HENRY B. HOLCOMBE

Allow me to commend you to the occasional society of my friend Judge Meek whose views are *nearly* pr accordance with our own—

[Newspaper clipping giving Fillmore’s cabinet enclosed.]

[Addressed:] Gen’l Mirabeau. B. Lamar Hollywood East Bay
[Mobile, Alabama]

No. 2464. VERSES. LAMAR

[Fragment]

[Richmond? Texas, about 1850?]

And leave upon the Soul a trace,
Which time and tears cannot efface.
Take any path that seems to lead,
To pleasure's fane, or glory's meed,
Still dark fatality attends,
To blight our hopes and blast our ends.

Yet Woman, loveliest and the best,
With every charm and virtue blest,
Entitled by her boundless worth,
To every joy in heaven and earth,
Is more obnoxious still than man,
To disappointment's bitter pang.
The ruling passion of her breast,
Must still in secret be repress,

No. 2466. J. A. JONES TO ANDREW JOHNSON [?]

[Georgia, 1850?]

SIR

I have recd under your frank as a M C what purports to be the life of Sam. Huson. I read "Sam Huson was born" & as I did not care to know when or where or how Sam Huson was born & read no farther. By way However of requiting your courtesy I will inform you my yard dog Salam was whelped on the 29th Feb 1840 I deem him much the honestest animal of the two & every way more worthy of a Biography than the Texas rowdy

If at any time you should hear of the death of Sam Huson I shall be pleased to receive the intelgence from you or any one else

[J. A. JONES]

[Added in Lamar's hand:] Written some years ago, by Col. J. A. Jones Georgia, to a member of Congress— And. Johnson of Tennessee, it is believed,—who franked to him a life of Sam Houston—

[Endorsed:] Copy

No. 2468. FEDERATION WAR IN MEXICO 1839. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, about 1850?]

Ugartacher came to Candala with 80 men, to attack the place, but was easily repulsed; and retired to Lampasas; thence to Mier to join Ampudia; Ampudia then sent 300 men against Candala; these entered the town unresisted; they were commanded by *Huichare*—Huichare demanded that Jesus Martinez, Ignacio Canalis, Ignacio Herrera, chief leaders of the federalists in Candala, should be delivered up to him. This demand was repelled—Huichare then dispatched his force away, and said that he wanted these men to accompany him in a friendly way to Ampudia and by a conference, establish peace & better relations.— They were thus duped—they went, on the way they met Ampudia, advancing on Candala, who made them all prisoners They were detained 5 or 6 weeks & then released.— They returned to their homes in Candala; and soon after Zapata & Canalis came with

about 4 to 6 hundred men, in search of Ampudia, who advanced upon Candala had become known to them; Zapata was told that Ampudia was at the Aldama with 11 hundred men; pursued Ampudia, fought him & conquered him at Aldama, taking his Artillery ammunition—&c— Ampudia force was scattered in every direction—& he himself with 10 followers took shelter in the Cane in the mountain of Carrisal; Zapata heard of his being there and drove him thence. Ampudia, reduced to the greatest straits joined Ariste on the Riogrande— These events happened in 1838—summer of 1838—

The first fight at Saltillo—at the beginning of the Federacion— Six hundred men from Candala Lampasas & Monclover, went under the Command Severo Ruis and Antonio Tijerina of Monclover, then governor of Coahula— The Federals were soon dispersed; at the first fire of the Enemy they fled, with the exception of 150 who stood their ground, and after fighting the whole day, were taken prisoners. The Governor headed the gallant band & fought to the last, & then made his escape— Don. Ugartacher commanded the Centrals—he offered life and liberty to the prisoners on the condition that they would become Centrals— the most of them saved their lives by giving in their adhesion; but a few gallant spirits refused the conditions, and preferred death—they were accordingly shot—some five or six.— Canalis after the dispersion of Ampudia at Aldama, marched to San Fernando in pursuit of Ariste.— who was there at this time and was joined by the fugative Ampudia— Zapatas head, after being exposed for few days at Guerrero, was taken to Saltillo & exhibited there.— He was killed in the spring of 1840— Ugartecheer was killed at Saltillo, by José Ma Garza, (Riogrande) he was shot in the mouth at the moment he was speaking to his men—it was the first gun fired in the fight.—

The Second fight at Saltillo, the federalists had 5 or 6 hundred men; 25 Americans with them under the command of Cameron— Ugartacher still in command of the Centrals—the federals were commanded by Pedro Lemus— The fight commenced in the morning; and the Commander Ugartacheer was killed by the first fire by José M. Garza; the command then fell to Aradondo— the fight continued till noon when the Centrals surrendered, in the plaza— The Feds— took 6 ps cannon, and the Centrals were all set free under the promise that they would no more war against the Federation.— The Federalists, left Saltillo, went to Monterey, and all the lower towns recruiting their force— In the mean time, Ariste arrived from the Interior with a small force & soon raised a strong force in Saltillo. The Federals, with a new force, marched again, against Saltillo. Battle was fought at Palos Parados, 9 miles from Lampasas— Federals commanded by Morales, 3 or 4 hundred men 3 ps cannon— 2 of *Esmeriles* The Centrals 800— hundred strong commanded by Parbone— this took place before his fight at Mier.—

He went to Mexico, & still lives there in 1848—

Federacion War

Canalis started the Revolucion in Camargo— The plan against the Army & Clergy—

The first battle was at Cruz verde, between Tampico & Matamoras—

Feds— Canalis 700 men Garai com[manded] the Centrals 400 men. The Centrals dispersed— 1838

2nd— Maguellitos between Matamoras & Renosa— Feds— 1200 Canalis Commandant. Canalis comd. Centrals 900— lost 3 ps. Cannon. Centrals whipped— 1838—

3rd at Matamoras— Canales & Zapata with 1300 strong— Felisola commande[d] Centrals Federals attacked the town but were forced to retire— lost nothing— retired

4th already given— Urea was Commander in Chief; Canalis was civilian, obtaining convicts &c—

Battle of Monterey— Ariste with 3000 men came out to Talallotes to meet Canalis & Zapata who were advancing with 12 or 13 hundred men— Ariste was driven back to the city— After some fighting Canalis, not being able to enter the City, went to San Fernando.— There they captured Zapata— 1841 or 2—

[Endorsed:] Federacion War in Mexico 1839

No. 2470. LAMAR TO AMBROSIO JOSÉ GONZALES

Macon [Georgia] April 1851.

General GONZALES

DEAR SIR,

I will explain to you in person, when we meet again, the imperious circumstances which place it entirely out of my power to cooperate with you in your noble endeavors for the good and glory of your deeply injured and oppressed country, and this inability on my part you will please communicate to the incorruptible old veteran and patriot Genl. Lopez, for whom I entertain the highest friendship and esteem, and whose cause, being that of God & Liberty, I sincerely hope may be as triumphant as his heart can desire.—

I hope to see you soon.

yours truly,

M. B. LAMAR

[Endorsed:] Copy to Genl. Gonzales 12 April 1851

No. 2471. LAMAR TO NARCISO LOPEZ

[Translation from the Spanish]³¹

Philadelphia. [April? 1851?]

MY DEAR SIR AND FRIEND:

Persecuted and outlawed [as you are] for your liberal principles and patriotic love, I cannot but feel some anxiety for your safety and happiness. In truth, I am much interested in your welfare. Perhaps you will think that it is unbecoming in me to interfere in the political affairs of Cuba, and even more improper to interpose in your private affairs. Nevertheless, I am resolved, at the risk of being considered impertinent, to venture some observations & reflections which have occurred to me on contemplating the revolution which, it is said, is bound to occur very soon in that turbulent Island. Pardon me if, in my

³¹Translated by Miss Katherine Elliott, archivist, Texas State Library, 1918-1925.

zeal, I express myself with too much boldness. Your situation, like that of your country, is extremely critical, and every consideration for the truth, for friendship and for humanity oblige me to speak candidly and without dissimulating anything. I trust that you will not take my frankness ill, and that my language, strong though it may seem to you, will merit some indulgence and find exculpation in consideration of my sincere desire to be of service to you and also to the noble cause to which you have consecrated yourself. I beg you, to remember that the good of others, and not my own interests, is the only motive which has induced me to write this letter.

The liberation of Cuba from the heavy yoke of Spain is an undertaking of great magnitude—one of the most noble that a patriot can undertake. What can be more sublime than breaking the chains of despotism and giving freedom and a good government to half a million people? But such a work is not exempt from great danger (for there are always dangers in revolutions) and it cannot be effected without means proportionate and equivalent to the greatness of the objective. In all attempts of this nature two things are indispensable to assure success: first, money to defray the expense of war, and second, virtue and example on the part of the inhabitants. Cuba does not lack money, because there is abundant wealth in that Island—her resources are unlimited—but as regards the other requisites—to wit—the moral and intellectual qualities so indispensable to success—I am not [certain] whether they exist there. On this point I have some doubts. Vain would be her wealth if the Cubans lacked the principles of evangelic morale and good sentiments of honor and patriotism. Without these good qualities nothing can be done.

The great Napoleon said, “the nation which wants to be free, is free,”—words full of meaning—laconic and clear, and very characteristic of the one who proffered them. However, I believe it better to say that the nation which determines to become free, succeeds, without doubt, because the mere desire to attain something and the fixed determination to obtain it at any cost are two distinct things. “Give me the ready hand rather than the ready tongue.” Consequently, I have adopted the unequalled maxim that no nation can become enslaved that is determined to be free. In order to be free, it suffices that the nation be resolved upon it. It is morally impossible by mere physical force to hold in slavery a people who are sufficiently enlightened to understand their rights, and who have the strength to vindicate them. With the will to be free there will never lack the means of obtaining freedom. Moral strength is always superior to brute strength. The bayonet is bound to succumb to virtue, because God is always on the side of the just and the downtrodden, and he never permits the tyrants of the world to oppress those whose virtues make them creditors to his goodness and protection. That which enslaves man is stupidity and vice—not the force of arms. It is easy to break the chains of political tyranny. Just give a single blow and the bars will fall. It is not so with the adamantine chains which ignorance, wickedness and superstition throw about the understanding and conscience of man. To shake these a nation requires the experience of many ages dedicated to the slow acquisition of knowledge until it reaches the stage of elucidation which is necessary for a free government.

There is no doubt but that the Cubans have a vehement desire to be free, happy and independent, because this is natural for all men, but the question is whether they are or are not prepared and ready for a revolution. I ask, "Do they in reality have the qualities, already indicated, of heart and knowledge— I wish to say—the understanding necessary for such a contest? Has the desire for a revolution become general among them? Are there no divisions or dissensions among them? Will they work with one accord, in good faith, and with courage and spirit?" It is very necessary that these questions be answered. Liberty is not cheap. It cannot be bought at a low price. Its price is human life and millions of the public treasury. The stones of the Temple of Liberty must be cemented with the blood of its friends. Who shall pay this price? Do the Cubans want to do it? Are they capable of sacrificing everything, even life, if necessary, for the fame and glory of their country? I believe not, and I shall soon tell you on what I base my belief.

The Cubans have very powerful motives for starting a revolution. There is no people on the face of the earth whose rights and liberties are as trampled upon as theirs. The government of Cuba is, without doubt, the most cruel and despotic in the world. The nature of man cannot invent a more infernal and diabolic system. It is the height of all that is wicked and atrocious. See the inhabitants groaning under enormous and onerous exactions. See the public officials, civic as well as military, lolling in vice, diversion and luxury at the expense of the public misery. See the poor converted into beasts of burden and driven at the will of the rulers. See the *grandees* and high personages violating the laws with impunity, lording it over the lower classes. See also a clergy, more ferocious than all the others, living off the credulity and ignorance of the people, deluding the populace, deceiving the unwary, and robbing all of the bread which they earn with such difficulty and by the sweat of their brows. In order to preserve their power more securely and practice their deceptions with impunity, behold them persecuting the virtuous and intelligent, suppressing all liberal investigations, and taking vengeance on those who do not wish to admit their fictitious stories and false theories and submit to their enormous atrocities. I am not surprised, then, that the people of Cuba, tired of that state of affairs, should wish to establish (if they knew how to do it) a government more liberal, just and humane, and less cruel, despotic and sanguinary. I am only surprised that they have dragged the chains of tyranny for so long a time without arising 'en masse' and humbling in the dust their haughty oppressors. Why have they not done it ere now? Why do they not leap now, like so many lions, on their enemies, and avenge themselves of their injuries and wrongs which their country has suffered for more than three centuries? I will tell you why. It is because the Cubans lack one thing—to wit—spirit. They do not have that noble disinterestedness, that loftiness of spirit and that manly courage which always characterizes real patriots and without which no people can acquire liberty nor be worthy of it either. Liberty is the gift of God to the valiant and the virtuous. No nation can receive it without first meriting it, and a timid and apathetic people can never hope to obtain it, if it believes war a worse evil than slavery, and prefers to live ignominiously to dying gloriously. The Cubans

have not yet manifested any inclination to unsheathe the sword, and until they make some demonstration of this nature it is futile to try to help them and to give freedom to them as we would give rewards to children.

I already know that you are persuaded to the contrary of all this. You believe that the people of Cuba are like a magazine, full of combustible elements, capable of being set on fire with the least little spark and of causing a great explosion.

You are certain that a revolution is developing everywhere, and that if you could land on the coast of Cuba at the head of five hundred American Volunteers, the natives, inspired and animated by such a demonstration in their favor, would gather about your standard instantly and proclaim the independence of the country. But as for me, I cannot see any reason for you to harbor such an opinion, for what I consider incomprehensible is that so few soldiers could produce such great results. It sometimes happens, that by [trying to] prove too much, nothing is proved. It seems to me that if the appearance and presence of five hundred men in arms (and even these five hundred can not be organized in all of that island) should be sufficient to start a revolution, what rational deduction could be made from such a state of affairs except that the fears of the people predominate over their courage & patriotism, and, as a consequence, they do not want to become involved in war. If this is not the case, if I am not right, why, then, did the Cubans permit your enemies to persecute you to the extent of forcing you to flee and seek safety in the United States? You have the honor of being the first patriot who has openly and publicly dared to defend the freedom of your country. And how has your patriotic zeal been recompensed? Your reward has been exile, the confiscation of your property, and a high price put on your head by the Government of Spain. If your compatriots actually possess the virtues which you concede to them, why is it that they did not support you when you took such a bold step in favor of their rights? That was a very opportune occasion to begin the war, but instead of doing it and rushing to your defense, they forsook you at the moment that you had great need of their assistance and protection and left you to escape in the best way you could. And now, Sir, permit me to ask you what motive or reason you have for believing that the same people who abandoned you then would want to support you now? Their weak conduct on that occasion should open your eyes to the true state of affairs in that Island.

Believe me, my dear friend, you deceive yourself in this particular. If it were possible for you to take a sufficient force to Cuba to liberate the country without compromising the safety of the inhabitants, or placing their lives and fortunes in any danger, they would in that case, doubtless cover you with eulogies and honors. They would greet you as a great champion of liberty and as the benefactor of their country, they would praise you to the skies and sing hosannas to you, but, on the contrary, if you should land there with a handful of foreign volunteers—they would be weak and insignificant to fight their opponents, [and even] counting upon the cooperation of the natives of the country, I am certain that your ruin and that of your valiant companions would be inevitable, because no one would come out to your assistance, nor

even lift a finger in defense of you or your cause. In the hour of danger the terrified inhabitants would seek their own safety, and deliver you and your courageous army over to the government, and you, forsaken and deceived by the perfidy of pusillanimous friends, would be hanged as a criminal, and with you would perish the best hopes of the country. Nor would you even perish with the honor of a martyr. Condemned and executed as a traitor, you would descend to the grave without a single friend to eulogize you or vindicate your fame, tormented in your last moments with the bitter reflection that you have sacrificed your life for an ungrateful people who are incapable of appreciating your virtues or of avenging your death. Such is the destiny of all patriots who have attempted to give liberty to a nation not prepared to receive it. He who serves an ignorant and weak people is rewarded with bitter sorrow and eternal shame.

Considering the matter under discussion in this light, I cannot advise my friends and compatriots to go with you to Cuba until the inhabitants have first proclaimed their independence. If the Cubans wish the Americans to assist them in a revolution, nothing is necessary except for the War to begin, and very soon the citizens of the United States will be seen forming in battle array and radiant with joy; but in my opinion, it would be indiscreet for them to go to Cuba for the purpose of commencing a revolution which the natives do not themselves want to commence. The people of Cuba should recall the fable of Hercules and the wagon driver who, finding himself mired in a bog from which it was difficult to escape, begged Hercules to help him, but that divinity smiled at the impertinent petition and told the driver that before asking assistance of someone else, he should first try the efficacy of his own strength. Accordingly, the driver put his shoulder to the wheel of the cart, and giving a strong push forward, he, with the assistance of his horses, pulled out the cart without further difficulty. If the Cubans would do likewise, the result would be similar.

I have not yet seen any indication of resistance on the part of the inhabitants of Cuba. There is no disturbance in the country. Show me any signs of an eruption. I can discover none. On the contrary, the country is as tranquil and serene as a sky without clouds. The bare mention of war—the slightest indication of a revolution—is enough to strike fear and horror into every heart in such a way that all flee from him who has the courage and fearlessness to speak on such dangerous subjects.

What hopes, then, can you place in such a people? And how can you expect the Americans to fight for them when they will not fight for themselves? As I have said before, once the fight is begun, the Cubans will find in the United States many loyal and valiant friends who will give them any aid that they might require. Raise the standard of independence in that island and thousands will flock there. The North-Americans, having been born free and independent, have no fear of tyrants, and, being very prosperous under their happy institutions, their generosity is equal to their valor. Their help has never been asked in vain, and notwithstanding the many vicissitudes which they have suffered—in spite of the numerous and heavy penalties and work they have experienced in vindicating the rights of others, until now they have never failed to assist all who have asked their aid, and

in nearly every case in which they have fought in defense of the oppressed, their toil and sufferings have been rewarded by ingratitude. They followed Miranda to Venezuela and were unfortunate; they accompanied Mina to Mexico and were destroyed; they sailed with Mexia to Tampico and were inhumanly shot. They fought with Canales, Melano and others in the war of the Federation beyond the Rio Grande, and in the end they were sold to the enemy; and now, Sir, in case they went with you to Cuba and should find, on their arrival there, that the natives do not want war, what could save them from other misfortunes similar to those which their unfortunate predecessors experienced? How could they hope to escape complete destruction? These misfortunes did not proceed from lack of any talent and virtue on the part of the aforesaid commanders, because, with few exceptions, all of them were wise, just and energetic men, but the only reason for the failure of their enterprises was the cowardice and contemptibleness of the people whom these brave adventurers went to liberate. The same, perhaps, might happen with you. Who knows? In truth, I am fully convinced that you will not find in Cuba the enthusiasm and cooperation which you have imagined, and that you will find yourself surrounded by obstacles which it will be impossible to overcome.

You should not infer from what I have said that I am disposed to underrate and defame the inhabitants of Cuba. Such a thought is far from me. I do not wish to say that there are no elements of liberty in that country. Cuba can with reason be proud of having many wise, valiant and patriotic sons who know how to appreciate liberty and who are quick to die for it, but these are few and they cannot start a revolution by themselves. I only wish to say that the greater part of the population does not possess the virtues necessary to obtain independence and establish a good government. I grant that they have all the virtue compatible with their political and social condition, but it is undeniable that a despotic cruel and corrupt government is not the most adequate to the perfect and vigorous production of the moral and intellectual qualities required for attaining and conserving social liberty. In truth, the character of a people is formed by the institutions of its country. There is no clearer and better founded truth. If the latter are liberal and intelligent, the former will be valiant and virtuous, and if, on the other hand, they are despotic, cruel and superstitious, the people will necessarily be that also. It cannot happen any other way, because the government and the people exercise a reciprocal influence over one another, and, consequently, they cannot fail to have the same character and nature. One cannot be good and the other bad. The nature of tyranny is to enervate and destroy all that is grand and sublime. The soul becomes debased, the mental faculties of man are dulled and he is reduced to a mere machine or automaton. The inhabitants of Cuba are not exempt from these mournful consequences. The influence of despotism on its character is clearly manifested in the fact that while they consider themselves the most oppressed people in the whole world, they nevertheless suffer their grievances more peacefully than any other people while cheerfully kissing the hand of their oppressor. The truth is that they have been burdened with heavy chains for such a long time that habit has become with them second nature. The custom of obeying, inherited from their

ancestors, has made a law so inexorable that no one dares to break it. Their religion also inculcates the principles of passive obedience without objection. It teaches them that they were born to be slaves, that they were destined by God to a state of servitude, and that to suffer the yoke is not only a political obligation but also a religious duty, and consequently, that any attempt on their part to destroy their chains and better their conditions would be as much a rebellion against God as against those who tyrannize them. What a beautiful condition for liberty! A similar state affects not only the Cubans but also the inhabitants of all nations in which the Church and government unite in their attempt to deceive and barbarize the people by dominating them and robbing them of their pleasures.

I do not blame the inhabitants of Cuba as much as I pity them. It is her fate. Superstition has blinded her reason, clouded her mind and deprived her of the faculty of seeing things in their true light and as they really are. Servile through custom and education, they do not know the first principles of liberty, nor have they the least idea of what constitutes a good and liberal government. They believe that the lawful and sole purpose of the government is to impose taxes, enrich the favorites, and punish the poor, and with respect to religion, they believe that it consists in obeying the priests, in maintaining them in leisure and luxury, and in kissing the ground they walk on. They esteem as the most precious of all privileges the giving of free rein to the physical pleasures common to brutes, and if they are allowed pleasures of this kind, they consider themselves contented and happy, without desiring anything more. Inured to their hard fortune, they scarcely know that a better one exists, and as the nightingale flits and sings in its cage without desiring freedom, so they dance to the sound of chains, without craving any change in their condition, or at least, without wishing to run any risk to better their fate. Such is not the character of the entire population. I have said before that Cuba does not lack illustrious men whose wisdom, integrity and valor do them honor, and I duly appraise them for their virtues; nevertheless, it is my opinion that if the Cubans en masse were asked the question whether there should be established in Cuba religious tolerance, granting to each person the right and faculty of worshiping his Creator as his conscience dictates, the majority of them would certainly reply in the negative. And why? Simply because the priests have made them believe that the religion which they profess is the only true religion, and that the toleration of any other would be a crime against the Pope and against the Godhead—a crime too enormous for their redemption. The political emancipation is longed for by many, but none wants to shake off the ecclesiastical yoke which is not only the most intolerable of all oppressions, but also in reality the soul and primal cause of nearly all the evils which afflict that unfortunate country. Without the help of the church, with its tendency to sell the people, [thus] leading them toward evil, the despots of Spain could never have oppressed and enslaved that beautiful Island. The clergy rob the people in the name of God, and the government with the sword and with chains. And which is worse? As much as the Cubans profess to hate their political tyrants, it is very evident that they adore their religious oppressors, and that they would be horrified at the mere idea of dis-

puting their authority and resisting them in anything. Those who lick the foot that tramples them cannot boast of having very high ideas of liberty.

And now, my friend, do you not see in these inconsistencies or in similar irrational conduct on the part of your fellow-citizens their total inaptitude for a free government, and the impossibility of inciting them to the vindication of their violated rights? The fact that they are too blind to see their real situation, tied [as they are] like tame oxen to the cart of the religious despot, "it is the best proof of their total incapacity to create a revolution and gain their liberty by means of arms."

Would you, perchance, compel them to be free, whether they want to be free or not? This is impossible also. Where light is lacking, force is vain. You cannot do good to those who do not want to receive it, nor is it possible for liberty to be conferred upon a nation whose population lacks the spirit and courage to strike the first blow for it. I repeat that I have not the slightest hope that the people of Cuba will support and sustain you in your undertaking and labor, to better their condition and promote their happiness, and it is to be feared that you will learn, when it is too late, that you have undertaken a task that cannot be accomplished except by time and intellectual development. It is to be hoped that finally truth will vanquish this cloud, and that the day is not distant in which the inhabitants of Cuba will come to reason and glimpse the truth.

I do not want you to believe that I am destitute of sympathy and friendship for the Cubans. *On the contrary.* There is no one more prompt and disposed than I to do anything that is lawful and within the limits of possibility to promote their well being, and when they wish to have their independence proclaimed and unsheath the sword in defense of their rights, I shall be ready at the first notice to draw mine also, and I hope to find myself among the first on the battlefield. Nevertheless, I believe, as I have indicated, that unless they do something for themselves by taking some measures for their own alleviation, all of your efforts in favor of them would be futile, if not worse than futile. Where ignorance thrives there can be no liberty, nor can it live for very long even where there is enlightenment without the help of virtue. The life of liberty is in wisdom, purity of habits, courage, and the union of the people. These are its soul and support. Does this beautiful state of affairs exist in that downtrodden Island? Without the least doubt I reply no. Well, Sir, on what foundation are your hopes for a happy outcome of your solicitude and your untiring labors based? I do not wish to blame you for them. My purpose is none other than to convince you that you are not taking the best route to accomplish your noble end.

In the majority of cases, and, according to the ordinary course of events, nations situated like Cuba will have to do many things beforehand and preparatory to the reception of liberty. Many reforms are requisite to its acquisition, and in all of them there is none as difficult to effect as that which concerns religion. This is still indispensably required. Before a people, debased by superstition and humbled by tyranny, can shake off the yoke of their oppressors and establish themselves as a free and independent nation, they will have to abjure all pre-

occupations, renounce all irrational pretensions, and follow the example of the most enlightened nations, studying their institutions, adopting those which are good and discarding those which are not. In a word, if they hope to obtain their freedom and support a form of government consistent with the enlightenment of the United States and civilized Europe, it is necessary that they acquire beforehand some of the virtues of those nations and place themselves on a level with their learning and customs. This cannot be done all at once, but gradually—it has to be the work of time. The eradication of any kind of error is always a difficult task, but it is doubly so when that error is stamped on the heart, considered a duty, and hallowed by time. The habits of a people, their customs, modes of thinking, their superstitions and all the ills of a pernicious education cannot be changed and corrected in an instant as though by magic. They have to be eradicated slowly and gradually, and sane and healthful reforms in all departments, in the government as well as in the church, have to be introduced almost imperceptibly. All who for that reason wish to liberate their enslaved country, should look first to the betterment of their social and moral condition, enlightening the mind of the people with new knowledge and instilling in their hearts the eternal principles of truth, justice and urbanity.

And should the Cubans continue in their present oppressed condition until the day that they arrive at that state of civilization and political instruction which so eminently fits the North Americans for a republican government? They will never attain that benefit while tyranny prevails in that country.

How can they undertake an illustrious career while the government and the clergy oppose everything that tends to this end and severely punish those who dare to undertake the thorny task of making the people recognize their rights? Is there no other means of obtaining liberty and independence than by this slow and even impossible system of advancement of learning? I reply that there is, and that means is the annexation of Cuba to the American Union. This measure would put a speedy termination to all her ills, and the Cubans can at once commence a career of glory and happiness.

I present these two propositions, which I consider true, without the least doubt. First, that the Cubans are not even prepared for a revolution; and, second, that, supposing that they could shake off the yoke of Spain, they do not yet have sufficient experience to support themselves as a free and independent nation. Every attempt that is conducive to this end would be futile. Her fate would be like that of Mexico, and perhaps worse because of her greater weakness. Let us turn our attention to that ruined republic. What a melancholy idea of poor nature—deplorable human condition of that nation! Mexico broke the bars of her ultramarine tyrants, but she could not strike a single death blow to the religious despotism which for so many centuries has held the human intellect bound by the chains of ignorance and superstition. She attained her political independence, but she did not insure her mental liberty, and for lack of this, she has not been able to make any perceptible advance in her condition. She has done no more than change one class of oppressors for another—she has exchanged the repose of despotism for the turbulence and murder of anarchy. For thirty years she has been a republic, and what has been

her history during that period? Rapine, desolation and blood. Instead of having been placed on a par with other civilized nations from the beginning, she is still in her cradle launching disturbances of civil tumult; and until now sanguinary conflicts of a most ferocious character are all that have been seen in the country, converting the most ferocious countries of the world into a horrible pandemonium. We see that unfortunate nation divided into sanguinary factions, fighting one against the other, not for the sacred rights of man, but for the corrupt exaltation of ambitious aspirants, seeking their glory and aggrandizement at any price, even at the cost of ruining their country. And what is the cause of so many evils? The lack of religious liberty. The country has not been able to emancipate itself from the adamant chains of a corrupt and tyrannical clergy whose device is "open and eternal warfare against the liberty of the people—entire protection of wrong-doing and ignorance." This has suspended and impeded the progress of understanding, has restrained free investigation, has increased and patronized the deprivation of the public morale, has kept the nation in a state of turpitude and superstition, and has made the inhabitants the horrible victims of their oppressors. What is there then that can prevent the Cubans from falling into the same error? What will they win by cutting the cable which ties them to the throne of Spain, if they are still joined to the triumphal Car of the King of Rome? Even if they could shake off the yoke of the political tyrants, they would still have fixed in their hearts their ancient superstition and intolerance, and they would continue being the miserable slaves of the clergy, who would not fail to keep them in the same degraded condition of the people of Mexico, for like causes should produce like results. The nature of things cannot be changed by decrees and constitutions; time and enlightenment is needed for that.

To these considerations naturally occurs the question of what shall become of the people of Cuba? Shall they remain eternally in such a miserable condition without making the least effort to destroy the chains of tyranny? It is to be hoped not. I have already indicated the only and true remedy of their ills—to wit—their annexation to the United States, a measure not only attainable, but one that can be effected without difficulty or delay, not in a filibustering way, because I have already said that the Cuban people are not prepared for that, but rather by the intervention of the United States government. You tell me that the present administration is opposed to the independence and annexation of Cuba? I do not deny it, but that does not matter. The people are more powerful and omnipotent than the cabinet at Washington. I should advise you, for that reason, to appeal to those same people, because I believe that there exists a general tendency on the part of the American people to take this matter into their own hands, and all that is necessary to stimulate them to immediate action is to present the question clearly to their sight. This can easily be done by means of the press and by public discussion. The days of the present administration are numbered, and I do not doubt that at the expiration of its term, the people, from one end of the union to the other, will make the clamor for the annexation of Cuba resound as they did for that of Texas. My advice, therefore, reduces itself to the establishment of newspapers in Washington and in various other parts of the

Union, especially in the South, for the purpose of presenting the question before the nation and stimulating the people to think and take action upon it. In that way I am of the opinion that it can identify itself with the coming presidential election, and the candidate who manifests tendencies toward the popular will will be elected with the same ease with which Mr. Polk was elected when the *question of Texas* was raised as an equivalent in his election. The annexation of Cuba is a measure of great importance and should be postponed for a longer time. As a measure of self defense, the United States should possess the Island, either by force or by treaty (R 288), it should *take possession of that island whether* by means of purchase or by force, and those who wish to facilitate the accomplishment of this measure, cannot do so in a more efficient way than by agitating the question through the public press, [thus] instigating the people to take part in the question. This would be the course which I should pursue, and the one which I should advise be carried out as the most convenient in the matter.

I wish it to be understood that I am not attempting, by this letter, to dishearten you in your noble enterprise of freeing your country from the claws of despotism. I would feel it deeply if what I have said should make you abandon the cause, or should have the effect of dampening your ardor or of decreasing your efforts. No great and good object can be effected without enthusiasm, strength, and perseverance, three virtues (no less rare than precious) which you possess in an eminent degree and which I have no desire to weaken or quench in your heart. It would be good for Cuba if the majority of her inhabitants possessed these virtues. I have no other motive in writing you this letter than to persuade you not to work precipitately and fall into errors from which you cannot escape. We should be careful not to take too rapid strides. The efforts of patriots, in order to assure happy results, should be guided and directed by prudence as well as by valor. Falstaff believed that discretion is the greater part of valor, but without going as far as this famous gentleman in my appreciation of this quality, I will yet forbear running to the other extreme and saying, as the courageous General Lee says, that all prudence is nothing more than abject virtue. The union of these two qualities (prudence and valor) make the real hero. A heroism that is gigantic and not guided by the times nor by circumstances, exposes him who possesses it to the imputation of Quixotism, and many times it is the reason that many reformers do not realize the good which has been proposed by them, and they have been condemned to see the failure of their projects. In truth, my friend, your plan to invade Cuba with a small party of Americans—a handful of men who do not know the language and who ignore the customs of the country, has much the appearance of running after a chimera, and I am almost certain that you cannot do anything worthy of your character, or which would contribute to the most noble end to which you have consecrated yourself.

In conclusion, I will repeat what I said in the beginning, that is, that you must pardon me for the frankness with which I have expressed myself, and also for having occupied so much of your time and attention with a letter of such great length. I have extended my observations beyond what I had planned in the beginning, and, doubtless the reading of this letter has caused you more trouble than the writing has

cost me, and that has been no little because of my limited knowledge of the Spanish language. If I have not attained the end which I proposed, I have done at least as much as I was able, and I hope sincerely that my good intentions will make me merit the indulgence of him for whom I feel sincere friendship and high esteem.

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2472. GENERAL LOPEZ'S SCHEMES FOR THE INVASION OF CUBA. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish] [Philadelphia? April? 1851?]

It is rumored that General Lopez is on the point of sailing for Cuba, carrying with him considerable forces with the object of beginning a Revolution in that Island. Such an undertaking, if practicable, is great and laudable, and my sympathies being always on the side of the oppressed, I can do no less than to desire the success of the dangerous experiment. For more than three centuries Cuba has been ruled with a scepter of iron; and today there is no people of the civilized world so insulted, outraged, and trampled upon as the Cubans.—

They are not treated as rational beings, but worse than dogs, being converted into beasts of burden, guided and directed by the will of the governments which have not ceased to cast upon them all that they were able to bear. The other enlightened nations should not tolerate tyranny so enormous and cruel. It is a shame and a scandal to the present age; and it is true that the friends of humanity should rise against it.— If, therefore, General Lopez should succeed in his daring enterprise I shall rejoice beyond measure, because the cause to which he is going to consecrate himself is noble and sacred; and ought to prosper. God grant that it may have a happy ending—

But, according to the opinion of many (and it is mine also) the views and hopes of General Lopez are incapable of realization. I suspect that he will find himself in an undertaking most difficult where he will need equally help and advice. Indeed, I regard as superior to all his forces the obstacles and difficulties in his path. The United States are hostile to the undertaking and will not hesitate to do all that is possible to frustrate and impede it. Moreover, the Spanish forces are numerous and well disciplined, while on the other hand the Cubans have no army; they are without arms and they cannot conspire together nor form their plans because of the vigilance of the government. The negroes, too, are quick to take up arms against the whites. The Spanish Government will emancipate them for that same reason and will incite and stir them up to vengeance. These reasons are sufficiently powerful to make me believe that it is almost impossible that General Lopez should succeed. His purpose, however noble it may be, is not attainable under the circumstances. In order to insure success, an army larger and more formidable than any that he can organize and carry with him is necessary. But still there is another reason more cogent than all the rest—to wit—that the people of Cuba do not have the moral and intellectual requisites for attaining liberty and establishing a good government. The life of liberty is in the union of wisdom, virtue, and valor; and the Cubans lack these qualities. At least, such is my opinion. They have borne their heavy chains such

a long time, that the habit of servitude has come to be second nature to them. Arbitrary and diabolical governments never fail to produce this effect or consequence. They keep on destroying the manly energies of the people, until they come to a stop and to such a great state of discouragement and degradation, that they lose all capacity for comprehending their rights and avenging their wrongs.— It may be that such is the actual condition of the Cubans.— In fact, they have not, nor have they ever had in all the course of their life the least idea of what liberty is; and evidently it is necessary that a people have some enlightenment and much virtue before they can start a Revolution, and lead it to a happy conclusion.

The desire for liberty and the capacity for attaining it and maintaining it are two things very distinct. A sad proof of this truth is found in the French Revolution. If Cuba wishes to be free, it must first give up many things which today it loves like life itself, and discard all its superstitions, and ancient and foolish prejudices, which have for a series of uninterrupted centuries impeded its progress and made it the object of scorn and ridicule in the eyes of their more enlightened neighbors. Indeed it will have to study the institutions of other nations and take advantage of the wits of the wise. Until it can accomplish this, it will never be able to get out of the deplorable situation in which it finds itself today.—

During the Revolutions of Mexico and South America these two nations manifested willingness to lend aid to Cuba in throwing off the yoke of Spain which was not carried into effect because of the opposition of the United States whose conduct on that occasion does not admit of any excuse. Although this government was the first in acknowledging the Independence of the above said nations, nevertheless, it hindered Cuba from attaining its own independence. And that government, although Cuba is ready to do the same thing again, is still opposed to the liberty of that unfortunate Island; having its eyes fixed on General Lopez; observing all his movements and watching and straining every point to catch him and cause him to be sacrificed to the vengeance of Spain. Conduct so repugnant to reason and so cruel to a down-trodden neighbor, deserves to be reproved by all virtuous souls. If it should be permitted to me to offer counsel concerning the hand that the United States ought to take with respect to Cuba, I would say that its best policy would be to acquire that Island without delay, either by purchase or by conquest. The security of its commerce depends on the possession of it. Without it, it cannot control the Gulf of Mexico, nor protect itself against rival nations in time of war. It would be likewise a fortunate thing for the Cubans. They would be free and could commence immediately a career of moral and intellectual advancement, and improve so that in a brief space they would place them on a level with the other States of the American Union. For these and other reasons no less cogent, I would advise the Government of the United States to obtain that Island without delay, buying it, if it may be possible; if not taking it by force. It should not take it without recompense. A just and reasonable equivalent should be given for it, provided that Spain wishes to sell it; but if the latter, because of obstinacy, will not dispose of it on any terms, then the former have the right of taking possession of it by any means whatsoever as a meas-

ure of supreme necessity and of legitimate defense in conformity with the law of nature which always permits us to conserve our own existence.— And I think that one or the other of these things will happen soon.—

In view of all these things taken together, I cannot resist the conviction that the expedition or invasion contemplated by General Lopez is inopportune and ill-timed, and that nothing can result to him or to those who accompany him, except total ruin. I know Genl. Lopez very well; and I esteem him highly.— He is an honest man, intelligent, generous, patriotic and valiant; and any misfortune that happens to him, would pain me greatly.

No. 2487. RESOLUTION. MAYOR AND ALDERMEN,
GALVESTON

Whereas a Convention of delegates from the South Western States, is announced to be held in the City of New Orleans on the 8th inst for the purpose of considering the commercial interests of the States represented.— and

Whereas delegates to said convention have been appointed from various portions of Texas, and . . . [mutilated] the premises by our citizens—

Be it Resolved by the Mayor and Aldermen of the City of Galveston in council convened That the rapid increase of the population and production of the State, and the great increase in the commerce and importance of this port as the principal commercial depot of the state, require that the wants of our harbor be brought to the attention of said convention . . . [mutilated]

Resolved That General Hugh McLeod, be & he is hereby appointed a delegate, to represent this city in said Convention—and that the sum of One hundred dollars be and the same is hereby appropriated to defray the expenses of said delegate in attending said Convention

Resolved That Lieut Wm. H. Stevens, from the nature of his official labors, is eminently qualified to give practical information on the subjects to be presented on our behalf to the convention, and that he be respectfully invited if in New Orleans during the sessions of said convention, to cooperate with the delegate hereby appointed—

Adopted January 2d. 1855

A True Copy Attest SOL SMITH [City] Clerk

[Endorsed:] Letter inviting Genl McLeod as delegate to New Orleans

No. 2488. J. S. THRASHER TO LAMAR

New Orleans 10. Jan'y. 1855

Gen. M. B. LAMAR.

DEAR SIR.

As my young man became somewhat confused in arranging the papers you handed him, I have taken the liberty of going through them myself; and now return them to you with the following remarks upon their contents.

Pages 1 to 7 contain an introductory notice which treats of the origin of the war of Mexican independence.

Pages 8 to 53 contain a connected narrative of the life of Santa Anna from his birth until his return to Veracruz as governor in the occasion of the revolution of the capital led by Gen. Lobato.

You will notice that on page 26 I have caused the first line to be rewritten, as I think it was erroneously overlined and that it is necessary in the consecutive relation.

At the conclusion of page 53. there is evidently a break in the narration, for page 54 begins with the closing words of a broken sentence "punto favorito Veracruz," and then relates some anecdotes of Santa Anna's uxuriousness, rapacity and passion for play.

It is probable that an examination of Mexican history will show that the thread of the relation of Santa Anna's life, broken off at page 53, is again taken up at the words "Desde el mes de Junio," commencing a paragraph about the middle of page 55 This point can be easily settled by a reference to the History of Mexico which I have not at hand.

The narrative continues connectedly from this point to page 61 where he prepares to attack Barradas. Here there is a break in the narrative, and page 62, I presume, from internal evidence, to be a relation of his return to Veracruz after the surrender of the Spanish forces.

Page 63. commences with an undoubted break in the narrative, for we here find Santa Anna in open rebellion against the recently elected President, Bustamante, and the M. S. S. commencing with strictures on the commanders of the forces sent against him. From page 63 to page 88 the narration is unbroken. Here there is a break.

Page 89 takes up the thread of history at a point a little later than where it is broken off on page 88 continuing steadily to page 108 where there is another sudden break.

Pages 109-10 and 11 contain an interesting narrative of an event that I believe comes properly in here in chronological order. This can be easily ascertained by a reference to Mexican history, and the error corrected if, I am mistaken, for the three pages are isolated in their matter and its narration.

In my opinion this, is the latest historical event treated of by the writer of the M. S. S. in question.

Pages lettered A to F contain the relation of an adventure that occurred during the occupation of the town of Oajaca related in pages 51 to 3 and can very properly come in at page 52, where this mark [+] has been made by the author, or some former annotator.

Pages lettered G to Q contain duplicate of matter commencing at the mark * in the eighth line from the bottom of page 49 and continuing to the end of page 53.

Pages lettered R and S contain a relation of a celebration of the anniversary of Mexican Independence, held, I presume, from internal evidence, at the Washington Hotel at Lake Ponchartrain near New Orleans.

Page lettered T is a letter not connected with the subject matter in the M. SS.

Hoping that you will find the arrangement of the M. S. S. and my remarks thereon sufficiently clear, I beg you to accept the assurances of my regard and consideration

Respectfully Your very obt. servt.

J S. THRASHER

No. 2489. ADDRESS TO THE SOUTHERN COMMERCIAL CONVENTION. LAMAR

[New Orleans, January? 1855?]

Being compelled to retire from the Presidency of the late Southern Commercial Convention, at New Orleans, before the close of its sessions, Gen. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR delivered the following brief but appropriate address.

Gentlemen of the Convention.

When I accepted the office of President of this Convention, the deep interest I took in its deliberations, apart from the high honor conferred upon me, determined me to remain with you until the close of your Session. A variety of circumstances now calls me away, and I am constrained to throw myself upon your indulgence, and ask leave to retire. My present indisposition precludes the possibility of my addressing you, on this occasion, in any manner that is congenial to my feelings. In parting from you I can only say I leave my heart behind—a heart whose highest aspiration is for the good of my country, and the happiness of her patriotic champions.

This hall you have consecrated as a temple, to the noblest of purposes—the promotion of the great industrial and social interests of your section of the Union. Those interests are intimately interwoven with all the fibres of national prosperity. Gifted by Providence with superior natural advantages to any other part of the world, and possessed of a population happily blending all the finest varieties of the human family, so organized as to combine in the best manner, civic peace, order and happiness, with industrial development, the States whose representatives are before me, have as yet failed, from the operation of improper legislative action, or from a culpable neglect of concerted action, to keep pace in the great progressive march of the age. We are not yet what we ought to be, either in thought or act, as members of our great confederacy—as heirs and depositories of the noblest legacy in the possession of man. We want our great highways and thoroughfares linking all parts of the country in one prosperous whole, expediting commerce and intercourse, with the velocity of Steam. We want our great lines of ocean steamers, channelling the Sea and making it a pathway for direct communion from our own now neglected ports to the emporiums of the older world. We want a full development and employment of the vast resources of commerce and commercial grandeur and opulence, that are concentrating from every zone and longitude—from the islands of the deeps—from Amazonian territories—and from the new found Pacific world, into the bosom of our own Gulf of Mexico, and making it the Mediterranean of the West—and this and our other maritime cities, the Venice, the Genoa, and the Liverpool of “the Subject Seas”— With all this we want free public schools, colleges, and other institutions of learning, in short an enlarged mental development in popular instruction and literary culture, adequate to our great physical grandeur, and adapted to our peculiar institutions and social tastes and Tendencies.

To bring about this consummation has been the object of the Southern Commercial Conventions hitherto held. What influence they have had, or what influence may result from the present assemblage con-

vened in the same spirit is as yet problematical. But I have faith in the promise, in all such movements, that if you cast your bread upon the waters, you shall find it after many days. This encourages me as to our present proceedings, and it is with pride and exultation that I have witnessed the offerings of patriotism eloquence and genius that have been laid upon the altars of this temple—

[Endorsed:] Gen. Lamar's to the Southern Convention New Orleans

No. 2504. WARREN D. C. HALL TO LAMAR

Be it known that Warren D C Hall entered the service of the Mexican Republic as a Volunteer, on the 20th day of August 1812 and continued in said service untill the defeat of the Republican Army near San Antonio de Bexar on the 20th day of August 1813 during which time he signalized himself in several battles and has been since promoted to the rank of Captain in the expedition fitted out under the auspices of the *Field Marshall Anaya*— Given under my hand at New Orleans this 12th day of June 1815—

HENRY PERRY late Commanding the Anglo
Americans in the service of Mexican Republic
in the internal Provinces

March 29th 1856

Genl M B LAMAR

DR SIR

Above you will please find Col Perry's qualifications I am endeavoring to write out a few incidences of my life agreeable to your request if I should succeed to my satisfaction I will forward them to you by the next Mail— the great difficulty is that of being my own *Trumpeter* In haste

Yours with every esteem

WARREN D. C. HALL

[Endorsed:] Historical Warren. D C. Hall 1813.

No. 2505. MESSAGE OF PRESIDENT MORA

[Translation from the Spanish. Printed]

THE PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF COSTA-RICA TO THE LEGISLATIVE
CONGRESS OF 1856.

HONORABLE REPRESENTATIVES:

Pleasing was the picture that Costa-rica presented in its modest infancy at the end of the year 1855.— Harmony and friendship with the neighboring and foreign countries:— Order, peace and prosperity within:— Security for all, the population doubling itself, education diffused, the laws wisely codified, commerce increasing, agriculture obtaining from day to day greater benefits, the cities becoming greater, the roads leveling, the public works and income augmenting, and all parts of the country advancing with measured but firm step toward progress and general well-being.

The industrious spirit of the Costa-ricans, their love of order, their

respect for property, and the loyal agreement of the people with the Government were producing such abundant fruits, when foreign events seemingly lamentable for Central America, perhaps in the incomprehensible mysteries of human evolution, come to interrupt that peaceful and happy progress.

Sufficiently known to us are the many scandalous happenings in Nicaragua which puts all the good sons of Central America on guard. Notwithstanding our sustained principle of neutrality, the many different grave circumstances, which were coming up, the dangers which were threatening, all made the public voice pronounce itself since the end of the last year in favor of undertaking a war against the army of adventurers which *was* increasing with rapidity in number and power in the center of our States scattering alarm everywhere, for redeeming Nicaragua enslaved on account of it; and sheltering the existence and tranquility of our beloved nationality from a treacherous blow. Convinced of the risks which were surrounding us, in agreement with the Governments of Guatemala, San Salvador, and Honduras, supported by the unanimous national opinion, I called you on the 25th of February in order to present to you our situation face to face with the filibusters who subjugated the neighboring State challenging us with audacity. Influenced by my own convictions you granted me full power for making war on them. Youth, valiant, and devoted, responded quickly to my call to enlist themselves under the flag of our Country.— Everything then was joyous, enthusiastic, happiness and patriotism.— It was the first time that in Central America a war was undertaken that reason and humanity did not condemn.— Thus within the country as well as without this decision was applauded with joy. Let us go on.— The enemy resolved for some time to combat us, blinded by their pride, and the incomprehensible scorn with which they viewed us, invaded our territory: in it was shed the first blood, and in Santa Rosa our arms won their first laurels putting the filibusters to disastrous flight.— Provoked, invaded and triumphant, it was not honorable nor possible to wait for auxiliaries or allies.— We continued our victorious march and on the 9th of April we were masters of the ports of San Juan del Sur and the Virgen, and the important city of Rivas.— The Key to communications between the Pacific and the Atlantic was in our possession a month after going out from this capital.— The royal road of the filibusters was cut short.— The 11th of April Walker with his army attacked us in Rivas. The victory placed in his hands by chance, instantaneously, it is reconquered by our brave troops with a valor insuperable, obliging him to flee at daybreak on the 12th with the rest of the mangled host, in the midst of the darkness, the mortality and the fright.

The need of caring for our wounded and of waiting the reinforcements sought, in order not to abandon the very important line of interocean transit obliged me to stop our victorious march, remaining in Rivas until the end of April, when suddenly the cholera appeared in the Costa-rican ranks, the contagion spreading death among them.— We knew nothing of the allied forces.— It would be imprudent to advance or to remain in that infested city, deprived of resources at the beginning of the plague and of the winter rains. It was necessary to retreat, postponing terminating the campaign, but leaving our

terrorized enemies well-warned and at a long distance, their barbarous pride humiliated, encouraged and gratified by the faithful Nicaraguans, and the national honor saved.

In this unfortunate retreat there were painful losses, illustrious victims which the cholera snatched from us on crossing the solitary road, so rough as well as lacking in all kind of aid.

Grave charges have been made against us by our adversaries, but to all we can answer triumphantly.— If skill, if foresight and military intelligence could be found in a volunteer and undisciplined army, never accustomed to the hardships and the difficult art of war,—only comprehensible in long drawn out campaigns and bloody battle fields— the boldness exceeded the suffering, the abnegation and valor even the heroism.— Where were the profound tactics, the eminent captains? In what warlike enterprises had our compatriots studied the science and the genius of war?— What more can be demanded of chiefs and of volunteer soldiers than the generous sacrifice of their tranquility, of their interests, of their domestic joys, and of their very existence?— Indeed, I who participated always in their calamities and their joys, in their privations and enthusiasm, swell with pride on speaking of that army before the National Representatives.— That army of laborers and artisans, that army of peaceful and honorable proprietors, has conquered in that holy war against the usurpers of Central-America, [and they have gained] imperishable glory. It has given an example and a lesson to our friends and our enemies, and without that example unanimously applauded, without those repeated triumphs, not a single shot would have been fired even in defense of the scorned Central-American rights,—Nicaragua would not be in arms as it is today already against its oppressors, the two factions which seemed irreconcilable, giving each other a fraternal embrace,—the forces of the States would remain still in their homes, and later, they and we, all, all, we would lament the unfortunate error of having fallen into a cowardly or stupid indolence.

Honorable Representatives, people of Costa-rica, eternal praise to that invincible army! gratitude and protection to their widows, orphans, and maimed!— Your chief and Country know they cannot forget that to them they owe today, the peace, the honored name, the integrity of the Republic, and the uprising of Central America against her bold enemies.

We returned then, to the bosom of our families, and you know from bitter experience the mournful scenes which these settlements have presented.— The cholera has swept the cities and the country; the people have fallen into mortal anguish, lifeless at the aspect of the deadly invasion; country estates, homes, and even small villages entirely abandoned,—the mother dying suddenly in the arms of her idolized son, the father seeking to give his life to the daughter of his soul who expires in the flower of her age,—the husband seeing his wife pass away in an instant,—the brother not being able to aid his dying brother,—youth and death, agony and hope, science and the contagion struggling terrifically,—weeping, desolation, horror and graves on all sides.— Such has been the insupportable prospect which the country has offered during six long weeks.

Worn out, sick, attacked by the deadly pest and oppressed by the

loss of my faithful companions, I took charge of the supreme command in the moment of greatest conflict and when almost all were abandoning we [were] attacked by the plague or overcome by the unfortunate situation of the country. The very worthy Vice-President Don Francisco Maria Oreamuno succumbed then to the violent illness. Surrounded by some faithful servants of the State I have labored with firmness in the internal and external affairs of the Republic, and still struggling with a thousand obstacles and scarcity of men and resources, I have endeavored to diminish the evils which were weighing upon the people and to alleviate their sufferings.— God has permitted such sad affliction. Let us submit ourselves to his judgment and let us make ourselves worthy of better fortune.

The cholera at last disappeared. Today society is reviving: the harsh grief caused by the misfortunes inherent to war, and even much more to the fatal epidemic, are diminishing: and although we must deplore the misconduct of some few citizens, who conspired against the legal order and the tranquillity of the Republic in such distressing days, we should give thanks to Providence that it has saved us at a time from the horrors of the pestilence and from the bitterness of anarchy.

Everything is again taking on a flattering aspect: confidence is reborn: the movement is generalized: our flowery fields appear as never before covered with beautiful growing crops and plantations which announce valuable harvests: the empresarios, countrymen, and artisans return to their labors and speculations: everything recovers action and life. With faith and perseverance, with union and industry, little, very little is lacking in order that, save for the irreparable individual losses which the cholera has caused us, the picture which our country presents may be as pleasing and prosperous as at the end of the year 1855.

Soon the valiant soldiers of the country will be paid in full. The diminished income is again increasing to its former amount; with it we shall meet the obligations contracted in consequence of the war and the epidemic, and the most urgent necessities of the Country. With economy, probity and patriotism, everything will again enter upon the beneficent march which we were following and even the horizon of Central-America, it seems, is clearing away, thanks to the determined and independent attitude taken by the fusionist Government of Nicaragua, and the movement of our brothers and allies against the filibusters.

A treaty of limits, commerce, navigation and friendship has been agreed upon in this city between Costa-rica and New Granada: it cuts off forever the vexatious question which the two Republics were sustaining and establishes the bases of an alliance which may be fruitful in great results, not only for both peoples, but for all the Spanish-Americans.

Our relations with the other states of Central America are more and more intimate: as they should be among kindred peoples. The policy of seclusion and indecision is not now sustainable among us. On the existence of one State depends that of the rest. We should all then interest ourselves and share our reverses and our prosperity.— The blow which sacrifices one will wound all.— Isolation would be a wild aberration: inaction a crime: disunion the inevitable suicide of our weak nationalities.— Indispensable it is that a family pact unite us

and harmonize in everything that exists in the sphere of justice and utility: that a Congress of Plenipotentiaries should represent, bind together and defend where it will the consolidated interests of this dismembered nationality. It is necessary that a torpid egotism, a hypnotic blindness should not make us calculate our individual fortunes on the misfortunes of the rest: let us persuade ourselves that forgetfulness and pardon for all past errors is inexcusable: and that neither the governments nor the peoples, yielding to the miserable jealousies, prejudices nor antagonisms, or ambitions, personal hatred or envy, may be ignorant of the fact that only on good faith, on liberty, on mutual progress and the regenerative union of the Central-Americans, can they base their political existence and the future of the race which today with just titles possesses the privileged territory which extends from Mexico to New Granada.

For this anxiously desired alliance I have worked and do work. I await your decrees and the sanction of my acts.

Cordial relations unite us with other countries of Europe and of America, and although it is certain that the recent events in Nicaragua have been misrepresented scandalously and perfidiously, have induced the most respected Cabinet at Washington to make some reclamations, soon [this Cabinet] better informed of the facts,— the events being cleared up on account of which it has pretended to be alarmed against us—will be the first to do justice to the rectitude of our acts. That is what, with good foundation, we expect from its enlightenment and equity.— Falsely informed, but making use of its right, the Government of the United States has thought proper to recognize the Government, which is intrusive, fantastic and irreconcilable, established by crime in Granada.— Using likewise our right, we protest against that recognition which involved a danger for Central-Americans, an encouragement and guarantee for filibusters.— The late events in Nicaragua, as well as all the precedents, have inclined the balance in favor of our principles and reclamations.— The sympathies of all good men are for us.— Only among hordes of slaves and savages would not be found the sympathies which a people merit who like the Costa-ricans, defend with the blood of their sons their rights, their independence, their homes, and the liberty and life of a kindred people tyrannized over by a band of adventurers.

The Ministers will give you in their respective reports a detailed and faithful account of my Government in all branches of administration, and all the documents you may think pertinent.— Examine them with inflexible judgment, worthy representatives of the people. Your assembly has never been more solemn. If it is true that we have done anything, it is still more true that there is left to us an infinite amount to do for the good of the Republic. In your hands rests its fate, you cannot fail in your sacred duties to her without being traitors to your consciences, and to those who, perhaps, expect everything from you.

Honorable Representatives, fix your whole thought on the very grave circumstances which surround Costa-rica, at the same time all Central-America. A new epoch dawns. An immense revolution has commenced. If up to the present time the blood and the strength of Central-America have been spent in fratricidal wars resulting only in weeping and desolation, today has begun a war of regeneration and in-

dependence. The reaction begins and can be fruitful, most noble and grand.— Face to face with countries a hundred times more advanced, it is not now practicable to remain like outlaws from the universal movement. The geographic position of Central-America puts it today in continual touch with all other peoples, and especially with the most active, enterprising and daring which the centuries have known. Costarica is between two Oceans, between two Isthmuses, the most important for the commerce of the globe, with a soil extensive and fertile,— can it, or should it live isolated from that impetuous current which amalgamates, transforms and carries everything along?— The powerful and youthful civilization of North America, assimilative, absorbent, expansive, and impetuous, clashed already tumultuously with the old colonial civilization in which still lie in lethargy the greater number of our impoverished and abandoned districts. If the spirit of enterprise in some, that of annexation in others, and that of rapine in many can involve an imminent danger for us, who can deny that the gravest and most terrible danger consists in disunion, in poverty, in the very focus of the most abundant natural riches, in the lack of communications, of settlements and in the lack of the political and social advancement of our precarious nationalities?— People who do not progress, succumb. Humanity marches individually to death, but soars united to liberty, harmony, universal civilization.— The nations which remain unmovable, will perish. Let those who desire to live and to be, go forward with faith, perseverance and intelligence.— If they stagnate in abjectness and in sterility, they will be worthy of their fate, however bitter it may be.

Let us not be afraid of the truth, let us recognize it, confess it, and break with all the vanities and prejudices of the past.

What of it? When the great and cultured nations, which yesterday were fighting as implacable enemies, give each other the kiss of peace and reconciliation, when they confederate and fraternize in order to maintain their powerful sovereignty and change the general face of the people, shall not we, unseen atoms, in the political sphere of nations, imitate their example, and [shall we] play false by giving the scandalous example of living separated when a single danger threatens us and the same cause calls us to union?

What of it? When the spirit of the century expresses the peaceful fusion of all society; when the frontiers, formerly so close, fall virtually under the battering-ram of civilization;—as time passes and distances disappear before the rapid rotation of steam;—when human thought, not satisfied with crossing the air as the ray of light, crosses the depths of the sea with wings of fire; when languages, customs, laws, arts, sciences and products of all peoples are exchanged and scattered without ceasing through all the known environments which exist, or are massed in a single temple as a center of light and universal concord, will it be consistent for countries to exist deprived of all this knowledge, of all this good, of all these prodigies, remaining exiled any longer from that immense aggregate of greatness, of happiness and confraternity?

No.— No let us not flatter ourselves. Let us deny our sterile peculiarities and abdicate our ephemeral titles and pomps. Let us identify ourselves as far as the disposition of our people permits. Let us

establish our society solidly.— Let us lay the foundation of union, order and liberty.—Let us unite ourselves in order to make impossible tyranny and license.— Union is force and independence.— Thus we will establish firmly peace, justice and progress in the interior; thus we shall obtain sympathy and gain respectability from the great nations which today look upon us with disdain, pity or scorn.— Let us overlook what is small, futile, and ominous: let us consecrate ourselves to what is honorable, useful and great.— If patriotism, faith, liberty, noble ambition for knowledge and glory have given rise to all illustrious people, to all heroes, and to all martyrs,— isolation, division, the miserly interest and unsocial egotism have not produced anything except barbarism, slavery and death.— Everything ought to tend to Central-American unity and harmony.— Not to recognize it is to condemn [ourselves] to perish— Think of it and work for your welfare, [that] of your constituents, and of your brothers.

When peoples and governments, closing their eyes to the rays of the true light, lose their way, when going around in a vicious circle they hold onto the worn out doctrines; when they do not succeed in emancipating themselves from their worn out and unsustainable traditions;— when they do not comprehend the changes which the marvellous work of the centuries has brought about; when they do not unite themselves to the generations which go forward, they throw themselves head-long and confound themselves, co-operating actively in the immortal work of humanity—the torrent of civilization carries them off like trifling pawns, a people stronger, happier and more intelligent places a disgraceful seal on their foreheads, and the conqueror makes the conquered people expiate their crimes with ignominy, slavery, and blood! Let us not deceive ourselves then, and reuniting all our physical and moral forces, let us save the nationality and the Central-American family from the ominous shipwreck which threatens it.— Let us trust in divine Providence, but let us never forget the precept— “God helps him who helps himself.”

Perhaps very soon it will be indispensable to make a new sacrifice strengthening the force which watches over our Western frontier; perhaps the time will not be long in coming when it will be indispensable to unite our well proved arms with those of our brothers who at present are fighting for the common cause.— If thus it happens, I hope, I trust fully that my summons will be attended immediately by you and by the good sons of Costa-rica. Then, as now and always, I shall not yield to anyone the most enviable of the glories, the consecrating myself entirely to my country in peace as well as in war, as citizen or first magistrate,—that of shedding my blood if it should be necessary, in defence of the laws, of the honor, and of the independence of my Country.

JUAN R. MORA

San José, Costa-rica, August 3, 1856.

[Endorsed:] President Moras Message to Congress 1856.

No. 2506. JOHN H. FRICK TO LAMAR

Philad. Oct 1, 1856

DEAR SIR,

On the 12th of February last, I mailed to you the claim of John Lamar for Bounty land for Services in the late Texan army in 1836, I have been anxiously looking to hear from you respecting said claim—

Will you also do me the favor to inform me the progress thereof, and what is the prospects of Jno Lamars obtaining the land? He has several times called upon me to ascertain if I had heard respecting his claims as he is anxious relative thereto—

Sometime after mailing Mr Lamars' claim to you, I prepared a similar claim for George P Kerns of this city, which he told me he had also forwarded to you.

Did the legislature at its recent session pass any general law in reference to claims for Bounty land, head rights &c. for services in the Texas revolution, if so, please inform me what was done

Your *early answer* hereto will oblige
very respectfully yours obdt

JOHN H. FRICK

Gen. Mirabeau B. Lamar [Richmond? Texas]

[Endorsed:] From John. H. Frisk

No. 2507. SAVAGE & McCREA TO LAMAR

New York, Jan'y 4, 1857

Gen M B LAMAR

DEAR SIR

We have the plates of "Verse Memorials" under our controul, they being now stored in the vaults of R Craighead printer, in Centre street. We have notified him, in accordance with your instructions that he must hold them subject to our or your written order, and allow no other party or parties to use or remove them He has accepted and acknowledged this order in a letter in our possession.

We will hold them in this form as your property and subject to your order on us, or Mr Craighead

Yours truly

SAVAGE & McCREA

[Endorsed:] Savage & Mahan, New yourk July 4, /58.

No. 2508. NOTES TAKEN FROM MENCHACA AND BARRERA

[Translation from the Spanish]³²

Austin [Texas, January 21, 1857]

Don Miguel Menchaca was 46 or 47 years of age.

Don José Menchaca was taken from San Antonio to Chihuahua where he was kept prisoner until he died in the year 1811.— They threw

³²The document is badly faded and the translation is very free.

him into prison because they found on him answers from Father Hidalgo, Allende and all the rest of the chiefs of the Mexican revolution. Menchaca was a Captain.

Don Juan Garcia Cazo was taken from San Antonio to Monclova and beheaded, his head having been brought to San Antonio and exposed to the public view— His crime was that his name appeared in one of the letters which had been addressed to Menchaca from Mexico. He was accused by Father Juan Manuel Zambrano who exacted all the proceedings of the case against the said Caso.— Juan Garcia Caso was captain of one of the auxiliary companies that came from Nuevo Leon under the command of Colonels Don Simon de Herrera and Don Geronimo Herrera.— He came in 1808. He was the chief commander of the forces in San Antonio when he was put in prison. Simon de Herrera, Geronimo Herrera and Salcedo were put in prison in San Antonio by Juan Manuel Zambrano.

General Toledo was of small stature, well formed and of beautiful countenance.

SANTA ANNA

Statement by Captain Antonio Menchaca

When Santa Anna came to San Antonio in the year 1813 he was a youth 16 or 17 years old. When he was a cadet in the army which was commanded by Don Joaquin de Arredondo y Mioño, he knew how to forge the signature of Arredondo so that the commissary general might pay him five hundred pesos from the national Treasury. The money was delivered to him and afterwards a Council of war was formed for said crime, he being condemned to imprisonment in the *Garete Nueva* about two miles from San Antonio.

Santa Anna was accustomed to stay with the mistress of Arredondo— Her name was Pio Quinta she was of regular stature and pretty— She came with Arredondo from Mexico.

In the year 1836 Santa Anna deceived Melchora Iniega Barrera, a young woman of 17 years and very beautiful— It happened as follows.—Santa Anna not being able to obtain the favors of the Señorita Melchora said that he would marry her. He arranged for one of his sergeants to disguise himself as a priest and in this manner the marriage was celebrated. When he returned to Mexico he made the said sergeant, who performed the ceremony, marry Melchora for which he gave him the rank of Colonel in the Army. The Señorita Melchora belonged to one of the best families of San Antonio— Santa Anna lodged in the house of her father and it was in that manner that he returned the hospitality

Arredondo was a man of middling size very fleshy and good looking. He had a cataract over one eye. He was 50 years old.

Elizondo was of tall stature and robust, good looking of a swarthy florid color. He was 46 years old.

Miguel Menchaca was tall and thin, somewhat bent, swarthy, pock-marked.— He was 46 years old.

José Menchaca was of medium stature, round headed and pock-marked.— He was 60 years old.

Bernardo Gutierrez de Lara was of medium stature, good looking and of amiable countenance, keen eyes, black hair. The fanatic who killed Elizondo was named Manual Serrano.

In the year 1813 when Arredondo arrived at San Antonio after the battle of Medina he ordered that all the women of the families opposed to the Spanish Government, as a punishment should go to a *Quinta* [cottage] where he ordered 100 *metates* to beat the corn to make the tortillas for the troops in his command, having warned them that they should make 10,000 tortillas daily and if they did not do it promptly, Sergeant Acosta, who was the overseer, would give them the lash during the day and during the night the officials of the Army went to the *Quinta* and ordered Acosta to bring some of the most decent of the women to them. [Note in English on margin:] The *Quinta* was in the street that was South from the South East Corner of Main Plaza and called to this day *la Calle de la Quinta*.

When Arredondo came to San Antonio he imprisoned more than six hundred men in two houses because the calaboose would not hold them: In one of the two houses there were four deaths caused from suffocation by the heat. The disaster occurred in the house of Don Francisco Arocha, one of the American patriots.— A little afterwards it was ordered that two prisoners be put in chains and go out to clean and work the streets, in charge of Francisco Rivas head officer of the Regiment of the *Fijo*, a man without kindness who cruelly punished the prisoners. Breakfast was given them in this manner: Rivas stood in the door of the Calaboose when the prisoners went out to work and asked those who came first whether they had had breakfast? they answer “No Señor,” and he gave them a sound beating in order that they might breakfast: when he asked those who came afterwards if they had had breakfast, they replied yes, fearful that he would give them a beating, and he said to them “well in order that the breakfast may agree [with you],” and he gave them another sound beating like the rest. This punishment he gave to those who had not committed any crime, and they endured that from August to October of the year 1813: and those who were considered as criminals or rebels and had been made prisoners in Bejar were shot in the Principal Plaza, one

was shot each third day within the space of four weeks. Among those shot were Ayamontes and Canales, and the head and the right arm of each was cut off and placed in the Plaza of Arms where they remained until Arredondo went away to Mexico.

Don Francisco Ruiz died at San Antonio in 1839

ANTONIO MENCHACA
AGUSTIN BARRERA

Menchaca was born on the 12th day of January 1800 Barrera was born in the year 1803.

No. 2509. DAVID G. BURNET TO LAMAR

[Lynchburg, Texas,] Home Feby 21st —57

Genl M. B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR

Your two notes of recent date are received— It was quite impossible for me to meet you at Galveston as you requested— We depend much on our garden for subsistence during the Summer and I am the principal gardener—with one negro girl to help—

Your paper, or rather my certificate for your use was transmitted to Mr Brewster some days ago— I could not certify to Specific *dates* as Mr B—furnished them to me, neither did I say any thing about acting Secretary of the Navy. I trust what I could conscientiously affirm will enable you to Settle your account with the government—

I trust you will be able to effect the publication of our joint *MS*— but I am apprehensive it is in too much confusion to be correctly set up— You should by all means append or prefix a note stating some reason for the appearance of the documents being So long deferred— perhaps the real fact, that we were all too poor to procure their publication would be as Satisfactory as any other and certainly as *true*— I am quite willing *my last answer to H—s reply*, should be *omitted*, but do as you think best— I understood some time ago that you wished to incorporate an old publication of yours in which you are very severe upon Dr A- Jones— Inasmuch as we have derived some testimonials from that person, I think it would be manifestly improper to insert such a document—pray do not do it— I should be gratified to hear from you and to know what your prospects are— Wishing you all success in your personal and *literary* undertakings, I am

Your old friend

DAVID G BURNET

[Endorsed:] Judg Burnett

No. 2510. HUGH McLEOD TO THOMAS J. GREEN

Galveston Feby 25th 1857—

MY DEAR SIR—

Yours of 31st Ulto, was duly recd, but it was sometime before I could find leisure to give her your message—I met her only the day before, & she asked if I had heard from you, & she seemed surprised

to hear that I had not. She has heard that the boy had his eye destroyed, & is anxious to hear the exact condition of it— you are right in keeping the children at the north, and when educated Mexico will open a field for them to rise in—³³

I wrote to Cazneau, about some appointments, that I feel an interest in— Henry B Andrews, wants to get Root's place as Postmaster—the Community are universally satisfied with Root, and have sent on a petition signed by every business man— Judge Branch of Liberty, who you recollect, as an old Texan, is an applicant, with strong backing for the Collectorship—& Stuart, of the Civilian, the present incumbent, has gone on to try & keep his place—You know that Stuart, is an out and out Houston man—& he has puffed Houston since he turned Know nothing & was on the eve of going over himself— Stuart has no claims on Rusk, and Branch *has*, as an old colleague in the Congress of the Republic— See to these two cases— Andrews & Stuart are the very men, that Houston would put in himself—and the Democratic party never had any faith in Stuart, & are now desirous to drop him—

With regard to Pacific stock, please give me more definite instructions— I held originally a certificate for 100,000\$, which I got through you at Austin, you may recollect cashing my draft on Genl Harney for the first payt of 100\$— That I sent on & you or Caz, had it consolidated into 5000\$ full paid stock in the new organization— I recd a certificate for 40,000\$ paid stock for services at Austin, during the sessions of the Legislature— I am glad to hear, the work is progressing— & hope Mr Walker may get the Treasury dept again—

Our Harrisburg road is getting along well—a company of Georgians have taken the contract, & will push it—

The weather has been warm for several weeks & everything is growing finely—

Tell Caz I have written him twice within ten days, to the St. Nicholas—N Y— Genl Lamar will be in Washington, & I think he is about as good a minister as you could send to Nicaragua

Look after Stuart & Andrews, & have them kicked sky high—

Present our regards to the Ladies & believe me

Yours ever McLEOD

To Genl T. J. Green, Washington City—

[Note on margin:] I write to Caz about the stock fully today—

No. 2513. THOMAS J. GREEN TO HOWELL COBB

Washington City, March 16/57,

Hon. HOWELL COBB,)
Secy of Treasury)

SIR:

I should be derelict in duty as a citizen of Texas and a democrat, if I failed to lay before you the within letter from Genl. Hugh McLeod, a distinguished citizen of that State in reference to the appointment of Collector of the Port of Galveston.

³³The first and third paragraphs are endorsed "*private*" on the face.

What Genl. McLeod, says of Stewart, the present incumbent is not only so, but he might have added with truth, that he is now, and has been for years the Editer of a dirty News paper which has slandered every gentleman in Texas who have had the manliness to oppose the corruptions of Sam Houston— I hear that within the last year Stewart, has published the most infamous falsehoods of Houston, against your predecessor the Hon. R. J. Walker, and I respectfully submit whether his reappointment is not an endorsement of said falsehoods.

You are at liberty to lay this note and the enclosed before the President, or make such other use of them as you please.

From a long acquaintance with Stewart, I have no hesitation in saying, that if the want of truth and honor are disqualifications for office he is wholly unfit— I have the honor to be very truly your
Obt. St.— THOS. J. GREEN.

[Endorsed:] Letter from Genl Green to Howel Cobb. Sect of Treasury

No. 2515. CAROLINE M. SAWYER TO LAMAR

234 East Broadway [New York] May 4th 1857—

MY DEAR GENERAL—

I was most agreeably surprized at the reception of your kind letter. It told me so much that I am very happy to know— that you are near and still remember us. My husband and myself often speak of you, recalling not only the pleasant hours we have spent in your society, but the unmerited kindness of an after day— We have wondered if we should ever meet you again— our country is so wide and we ourselves are so domestic in our habits.— and now we can scarcely realize that that pleasure is so near. I have often felt that I would like to write you but you have been a revolving planet that I knew not rightly how to find, and I did not fear that you would believe us unmindful, though silent.

I trust you will not wait long before visiting us, and perhaps you will be able to say to my husband, who will bring you this, when you can come.

I am much flattered by your desire to insert my little trifle, which I send with this, in your volume, and only wish it were more worthy of the honor. It has a plenty of faults as a poem, but I am older now and can not alter them to advantage, or perhaps without impairing the unity of their expression. I never feel the footsteps of time so sensibly as when I am looking over the effusions which I threw off at an earlier period of my life, when I had not learned restraint in expression.

I am much flattered also by the inscription to myself of the beautiful article you sent me, I feel honored by the compliment and shall highly prize a copy of that work which is to contain that and other expressions of yourself— your interior being—

Excuse the length of my note and believe me ever

Your obliged Friend

C. M. SAWYER

[Endorsed:] C M Sawyer Gnl Lamar May 4th 1857

No. 2523. ASA H. WILLIE TO LAMAR

Austin, July 27th, 1857,

Gen. M. B. LAMAR—

DEAR SIR:

I have just learned, with much pleasure that you have received the appointment of Minister resident at the court of the Argentine Republic, and presume that it will not be very long before you will take your departure to that country, I have been very anxious for some time to leave Texas, and settle in some other state of the Union, or in some foreign country, where the prospects for making money, if not of enjoying life are better than are here presented to me. More especially would I desire to bid farewell to the state should it be guilty of the disgraceful act of electing Sam Houston to the office of Governor—and from the signs of the times I should not be at all surprized if this were to come to pass. In the event of the old fellow's being placed in the gubernatorial chair I would leave without enquiring for a moment whether my situation would likely be bettered by the removal. It would suffice me to know that I was leaving a state which had endorsed treason and forgiven an assault upon the dearest interests of the south. However I wish to leave anyhow provided my situation can be made better; and in thinking upon this subject my reflections have often been turned towards South America, and I am disposed to look with favor upon a removal to that country and at least a temporary settlement in it. My object then in writing to you is to know what your opinion of that country is; what you think a young man could do in the way of making a support there; & whether upon the whole you would advise me to remove to it. If you are sufficiently well acquainted with the character of that portion of South American to which you are going as minister, to advise me to go to it. I would be glad you would, as soon as possible, notify me when, how, and from what place you will take your departure for Buenos Ayres, in order that I may make preparations to go with you. If, on the contrary you do not feel justified from your knowledge of that country in advising me to this course, you would confer a great favor upon me, if, after your arrival there, would write me, giving a full description of the general character of the Country, its climate, soil, productions, and adding something upon the chances that a young man, without extensive means, would have of acquiring a fortune in a very short space of time. I suppose that all the appointments which you have under you as minister have already been filled, or that you have many applications for them, enough at least to cause you a great deal of annoyance. It is not with the view of seeking an office that this letter is written—though I must say in all candor that the Salary of one would be exceedingly grateful to one who is as anxious as I am, to move to the very country where the duties of it are to be discharged—but it is information and advice that I am chiefly in search of, and I did not know who would be a more appropriate person to apply to than yourself an old friend of our family and as I well know, a *well wisher* to every member of it. The reason of my selecting a Spanish County is because I understand the language pretty well can read and write it with some facility and speak it a little.

I would be glad, General, that you would write to me at Austin, and give me candidly your notions upon this subject; and if favorable to a removal I would be glad to visit you at Richmond, and talk the matter over; provided you do not intend coming to Austin before you leave, and provided further that we shall have time for such an interview

My uncle's family were all well the last time I heard from Independence.

Very truly your friend

ASA H. WILLIE.

No. 2525. THOMAS J. PAGE TO LAMAR

Washington D. C. August 12. 1857

General MIRABO B. LAMAR
Macon Georgia

DEAR SIR

Unknown to you, as I am, I express the hope— that the subject of this note may be sufficient apology for the liberty I take, in addressing you.

I have seen, with pleasure, the announcement of your appointment— as Minister— to the “Argentine Confederation,” and I write to ask the favor of you to accept the services of my son Thos J. Page, as your “Secretary of Legation”; and also to ask your influence in obtaining; for him, the appointment. Your wishes, will doubtless be consulted; and will have a proper weight in determ[in]ing the decision of the Department. My Son's Education, Capacity, habits and disposition, I think you would find fully equal to the requirements of the office. His intelligence and studious habits would render his services a great relief to you, in the various duties of your legation; and so far as the true interests of this country are concerned— its Commercial advantages— Your legation, I consider the most important, at this time, in South America. It is true my son does not, at this time, speak the Spanish language; but as he reads it, simply from his knowledge of several others, he would, in the course of a few months, make himself master of it. During the last three and a half years, he has been at school in Europe: part of the time in Paris; but most of it in Florence; and all of it under the supervision of his mother. He speaks and writes French and Italian, as well as his own language; speaks and reads the German; and reads the Latin with great facility. His knowledge of these languages, would give him the facility of soon acquiring a perfect knowledge of the Spanish. His Education in English has been well attended to. From his knowledge of history, in which he is very thorough, he possesses a remarkable faculty of investigation. He writes a very pretty and legible hand, and writes rapidly.

I shall be much pleased to hear from you; at your leasure; and hope I may have the pleasure to meet with you, on your visit to Washington; and if you desire, will present to you my son; of whose capabilities you can, yourself, judge. It would also give me much pleasure to have some Conversation with you relative to the Country; to which you are appointed; from which you may gather some satisfactory information, previously to your departure. I spent three years, very recently—

(in /56 I returned) in the Exploration of "La Plata" and Tributaries; most of which time, I was within the Territory of the Confederation. I expect to return, to Continue the same work, this fall; and would be most happy if the Navy Department would so arrange—should it be agreeable to you—as to take you out in a man of War Steamer; which would land you at the Capital— Parana, with the honor due the position of Minister. You, sir, doubtless are aware of the effect produced in those Governments, by such evidences of respect.

I take the liberty of sending you a Copy of my synoptical report— on my late Exploration of La Plata and Tributaries; in which I hope you may find some thing of interest.

Very respectfully &c Your Obt: Servt:

TH: J. PAGE Commander Navy

[Endorsed:] T J Page US N General M B Lamar Aug 12 57

No. 2532. ASA H. WILLIE TO LAMAR

Independence [Texas] Sept 26, 1857,

Gen, M. B. LAMAR

MY DEAR SIR:

I write this hoping it may reach you by the time you arrive in Washington City. Since our last conversation on the matter of my going to South America with you, circumstances have arisen which I could not at that time foresee, and which will prevent me from accepting an appointment of the kind I have solicited though it should be tendered to me by the President. I trust that I have subjected you to no inconvenience on my account, and that some person more competent and deserving of the appointment may be selected. I regret exceedingly that my hopes of making the trip with you have been disappointed, as I was very anxious to visit South America and this would have afforded me a fine opportunity of so doing. I believe that it would have been impossible under any circumstances for me to have left the U. S. before January next, and the President will no doubt require the Secretary of Legation to take passage on the same vessel with the Minister, and I presume that you will leave at least by the 1st of November.

You will therefore please withdraw my application for the office, if you have made one for me, and if you have not, you need not hold yourself bound by any promise to recommending me which you have hitherto made. I return you my sincere thanks for the interest you have manifested in my behalf in this matter, and remain

very truly yours

A. H. WILLIE

[Endorsed:] A H. Willey Genl Lamar Sept 26 /57

No. 2536. LAMAR TO J. M. CAZNEAU

Mrs. General CAZNEAU.

MY DEAR FRIEND

Although I have taken the liberty of Dedicating my "Verse Memorials" to you, I cannot deny myself the pleasure of presenting you

with this Copy of the work, as additional evidence of my admiration of your talents as well as of my grateful appreciation of your long-continued and devoted friendship.— Please accept it—not as coming from me alone, but—as a joint offering from myself and my own bright “*Lily of the Dell*,” who fully unites with me in every kindly sentiment towards you, and also in all due estimation of your social virtues—lofty principles, and unselfish affections.

Yours most sincerely,

M. B. LAMAR

Washington City D. C. 4th October 1857.

[Endorsed:] Genl. Lamar Gnl Cazenoe Oct 4 /57—

No. 2537. SUE CAPERS TO LAMAR

Bayou Coq Divide, Oct 5th 1857.

DEAR FRIEND

Through the kindness of my brother Coke [?] of a few days since, I heard of *the beautiful compliment* so kindly bestowed on my *humble rhyme* by my Father's friend. An *honor so great* coming from a source *so justly distinguished*, has filled the heart of the *unpretending Sue*, with emotions of *gratitude* which her feeble language *can never express*, while it carried her thoughts far away over the current of years, and brought vividly to memory's eager view; the well remember'd features of her distinguished friend, whom she has never seen since quite a little girl. But think not that forgetfulness has marked the changing period of my life from the golden dreams of child hood to the present. Ah! no! Taught by my honor'd Father to *love and cherish your name*, the dews of feeling gather'd on my heart, and glistened in my eyes as I read thy *treasured words* so kindly spoken, while *God bless General Lamar forever!* welled up from the secret fountain of my soul. The silent companion of my lonely hours, will be the *treasured volume*, and hence forth we will be friends, while the beauties of unfading thought shall enkindle on the altar of my heart, the holy fires of feeling, love, and hope. The effusion inserted in your volume, was one amongst my first productions, and in having a place assigned it with such lessons of wisdom, and sublimity of conception, as are enshrined in all your productions, reminds me of some *petty artificial fireworks*, playing in the neighborhood of Vesuvius, but never until my sensitive heart shall cease to feel, and my hands forget to act, can Sue forget *the honor confer'd*, or *the chaste and beautiful compliment to her humble Muse*. And may she not hope to be still remembered. Can she not ask to be allowed some *humble place* on the list of Gen Lamar's correspondents? If so, she will esteem it quite a delightful privilege, and will strive to be (at least) entertaining. My Father & Mother, tender their grateful remembrance. May my God ever protect you, and among his richest blessings prolong your useful life, shall ever be the prayer of *your truly grateful friend*

SUE CAPERS

Address, Mobile, Ala. care, Major W. C. Capers.

[Endorsed:] Sue Capers Gnl Lamar Oct 5/57

No. 2539. J. L. ANDERSON TO LAMAR

Mobile Oct 12th 1857

DEAR SIR

I was much disappointed on my return to Mobile some days since, to find that you had passed through on your way to the Capital

I was not only desirous of seeing you and of congratulating you personally on your appointment, but it was also my wish to offer my services to visit South America with you.

I have long desired the opportunity of visiting those regions under favorable circumstances, and from my own knowledge and a lifetime familiarity with your character, and from the warm and intimate friendship between yourself and many of my dearest and best friends I do not imagine any opportunity which can ever present itself that will be more auspicious to me.

If therefore you have not made your selection of Secretary I shall be a thousand times obliged to you if you will give my application a favorable consideration.

From my Knowledge of the French and Spanish languages I think that I should be fully able to render you the requisite assistance in your duties.

With the greatest respect I am your obt Servt.

J. L. ANDERSON

Genl. M. B. Lamar Washington City D. C.

[Endorsed:] G. L. Anderson Gnl Lamar Oct 12/57

No. 2541. WILLIAM T. AUSTIN TO LAMAR

Galveston Oct. 19, 1857.

DEAR GEN'L;

According to our understanding on the day of your departure from Galveston I have ascertained from our old and mutual friend Judge Burnett that he is disinclined to accept the appointment of which we conversed on account of his family more particularly than from any other cause.

You will remember that I requested of you to mention my name to Mr. Cobb and say that any thing that could be given now in Texas will be acceptable.

Since the death of the lamented Gen'l Rusk I have no friend at Washington to whom I could make this request

Your kind offices in this behalf will be properly felt & appreciated With my best wishes for the health and happiness of yourself & family & that you may have a safe and pleasant voyage & find your new home a pleasant one

Very Truly & Fraternaly &c

WM T. AUSTIN

[Endorsed:] Wm. T. Austin Genl Lamar Oct 19 57

No. 2543. GEORGE H. GRAY & DANFORTH TO WILLIAM H. HUDSON

Copy

WM H. HUDSON Esq)
U S Consul Buenos Ayres)

per Bark Salacia
Boston Octo 24/58. [1857]

SIR, We have the honor to advise [?] you with a parcel sent by this vessel, containing several Books of Engravings, & Price Lists, (per annexed memo) of American manufactured Hardware Tools, Machinery & Agricultural Implements.

The prices stated are approximate, many goods are however sold at regular pricelists; the fluctuations of market values being made by change in the rate of disct from the established List Prices

For the past thirty years our house has devoted itself to to [*sic*] the sale of this class of Merchandize and for several years past we have exported large quantities to the west Coast of South America and Cuba and have also a good trade with Brazil; the West India Islands, Cape Town, the East Indies, China & the Pacific.

All our experience, confirms our opinion that these American products need only to be efficiently introduced in your Port to find ready sale in preference to any European goods now consumed and we have uniformly found a market has been *created* wherever the utility & excellence of our goods have been made generally known to the inhabitants of a country; though previously they had not been in the habit of using any thing similar.

To extend the exports of our Country and provide reciprocal trade with your Port, we beg you will, Sir, place us in relation with such Commercial houses there, as may be in your opinion, suitably connected for the introduction and sale of these and similar goods.

We would suggest that such houses should be requested to inspect the parcel now sent to you and invited to open a correspondence with us, asking any further information they may desire: we feel quite confident, it would prove decidedly valuable to their private interests, if they would engage in the trade and would also observe that we have now very large transactions with houses that a few years ago began by sending us orders for \$100 to \$300 value, to be shipped to them in samples of our goods chosen at our discretion, so as best to exhibit the largest possible variety of Merchandize for the sum specified to be sent, they have invariably sold such Sample Invoices without loss and by their inspection have been able to select from them a great number of articles that they could afterwards order in quantities & find profitable for sale.

If Sir, you will write to us by return opportunity naming such houses as are suitable, & state your views of the practicability of trade, you will Confer a personal favor that we hope that we may be able to suitably acknowledge & reciprocate while by such attention you will aid in the general prosperity of both Countries by increasing their interchange of commodities.

Very Respectfully Yr obt Sevts

GEO H. GRAY & DANFORTH
pr H A PAGE

List of Contents of Parcel

Geo H Gray & Co	Bound Volume of Engravings of Hardware &c
Geo H Gray & Danforth	Catalogue of Agricultural Implements
d	“ “ of Engravings of Brass Faucets
“	“ “ of Locks Latches &C
“	“ “ of Engravings of Lanthorns
Chase Bros	Engravings of Cast Iron Fence
“	“ of Wrought Iron “
Lowell Wire Fence Co	“ of Wrought Iron Wire Fence
Baldwin Tool Co	“ & price Premium Planes
Arrowmananet Co	“ “ of Good quality [planes]
Davis Bros	“ of India Rubber goods
Polk & Water Co	“ of Builders Hardware
Stanly Works	“ of Wrought Iron Hinges
Peck Smith Co	“ Tinners Tools & Machines
Plants Mang Co	“ Carriage Bolts
Douglass	“ Pumps &c

No. 2544. JOHN PENDLETON TO LAMAR

Redwood, [Virginia] October, 25th 1857

HON GENL LAMAR Minister of the U States
To the Argentine Confederation—

DEAR SIR—

I understand that provision has been made for a Secretary of Legation to the Argentine Confederation— and that young Mr Page, son of my friend, Capt Page, who goes out to explore the rivers of that Country is an applicant for the place.

From what I understand to be his qualifications, and what I know of his father and family generally, I could think you could hardly find a youth more likely to be useful and satisfactory to you— If he does not already possess a sufficient Knowledge of the Spanish language he does of the French, which is equally or more important— and at his age the acquirement of the Spanish is but a six months work . . . [mutilated]

For all official business at first, you will find the most competent American translators on the spot.

I could commend him with great confidence to your favor, as altogether superior to the young men usually sent out in such employment— The truth is a perfectly competent man of mature years, can rarely if ever be found to accept the place of Secretary of Legation—

I would infinitely prefer a smart well bred boy to such a sort of man as is sure to be . . . [mutilated] if you dont look out—

I am very respectfully Your most obt St

JNO PENDLETON

[Endorsed:] J Penaldon Gnl Lamar Oct 25/57

No. 2546. C. C. SAVAGE TO LAMAR

New York Oct 27, 1857

GEN LAMAR
SIR

Yours of the 24th was received yesterday, and I have waited until this noon's mail that I might get the copy you had sent. It has not

yet arrived Packages are generally slow in traveling and it may be a day or two before it reaches us. If it does not come by Thursday I will write you again.

I presume the corrections will not be heavy or cost much. We shall charge you only what they cost, and can do them at once.

If you wish a second edition printed should you not order the paper at once, to save time, as it may be difficult to get the size and quality you require without having it made for you. If you intend to use an inferior quality to that of the first edition then you can probably find it already made.

You had better send me word when you will be here, and how long you intend to remain.

Yours respectfully

C. C. SAVAGE
S & McC.

P. S. I have held back my letter until this morning, to see if the book should come and can now report its arrival. The correction I think can all be made for about three dollars.

[Endorsed:] Savage Genl Lamar Oct 27 57

No. 2548. HARRIETTE FANNING READ TO J. VILLAMIL

Washington City. Oct. 31 1857.

MY DEAR GENERAL,

Extend your courteous & friendly hand over the Andes to salute & welcome a patriotic soldier & statesman of your native land—the General Mirabeau B. Lamar, minister resident from the U. S. to the Argentine Republic. Might I *guess* from his patronymic, I should decide Gen. La Mar to be as Spanish in that respect as yourself—but without guessing, we all know that he possesses all the qualities which constitute the Hidalgo in Spain, the gentleman every where.

I venture to say that, as one of the “libertadores” of Texas, he knows also how to appreciate the heroes of the S. A. Republics, and that any information & any suggestions you may offer on the political state of your republics, he will receive in the spirit of liberty— & that his wish will be to encourage sympathy & fraternity between ourselves and Spanish Americans, who have struggled like ourselves, and successfully, against even more adverse circumstances.

I am sorry that Gen. Lamar & yourself cannot meet personally—but you will not the less affiliate in your views of all that makes life worth living out.

The steamer due at this date is a little *en retard*, so I cannot have the pleasure, just yet, of acknowledging your letter, which it doubtless brings me as usual.

Be very much obliged to me for the favor I now accord you, querido amigo mio, y adios, hasta el cinco—(Nov.)

HARRIETTE FANNING READ

General J. Villamil. Guayaquil— Ecuador.

[Endorsed:] Harriett F Read Genl Vilamil Oct 31st 1857

No. 2549. HARRIETTE FANNING READ TO LAMAR

Washington City Nov. 2d 1857.

In placing at your disposal, General, the accompanying letter to General Villamil, three years since minister from Ecuador to the U. S. permit me to trespass on your time by a few introductory words. The General is a native of N. O. of a Spanish Creole family of importance, and is a man of finished education of head & heart. At a very early age he threw himself, heart, hand, & fortune into the S. A. struggle for liberty, and has served his adopted country by sea and land and in the Cabinet.

As a statesman his watchful & zealous republicanism makes him keenly alive to the necessity that the S. A. republics should cultivate the closest bonds of friendship and commercial interests with the U. S. He sees with alarm the increase of European influences in S. A— France & England are not fond of republics— Gen. V—believes that they exercise influences in S. A— which *may* yet be fatal to freedom; and he thinks that the U. S. has a vital interest in doing all that constitutionally can be done to avert such a risk. He is therefore greatly desirous to see an *American* line of Steamers in the S. Pacific, connecting with our present northern lines— and it is his opinion that our govt should have a strong squadron—in that . . . [mutilated]

Himself one of the fathers and defenders of the republic, general, you will better appreciate and realize the anxieties of such a man for the immortality of a cause which has been his life-long hope and labor, than would almost any other who might have been appointed to a S. A. republic. For the same reason permit me to hope you will be able to excuse this intrusion of so insignificant a stranger on your attention, and accept my assurances of the high respect & consideration, with which I remain Yours,

HARRIETTE FANNING READ

Hon. Mirabeau B. Lamar U. S. Minister &c

[Endorsed:] H. F. Read Washington No 2/58

No. 2551. VIRGIL H. HEWES TO LAMAR

Cambridge Nov 23 1857

Gen LAMAR

DEAR SIR

In conversing with a gentleman the other day, I learned that you are in the city of Washington although I have occasionally heard of you, during the past thirty odd years, and been highly gratified to hear of your good fortune in various places of honorable distinction I have not known where you have been since I was informed of your Marriage with the daughter of an old personal friend Mr Moffitt I became acquainted with him and some of his family soon after my return from Alabama in the [year] 1823 and knew him well ever after until his death

And now a word as regards myself personally. My own life since I made your acquaintance in Alabama when we boarded together at old uncle Curtis' in Cahawba has been marked by no *National interest*

like your own, nevertheless, it has not been devoid of interesting vicissitude to myself—

I was married in 1823 My wife had five children, they are all grown to Marriageable age— The oldest son keeps a public house in California, and I have several grand-children— My wife died in 1836— I married again 1838—and I have a little boy now eight years old the fruit of this Marriage and the most intelligent and promising little rascal I ever saw

You will I doubt not recollect me when I resided in Alabama I was by the grace of God a Tailor— I resided some twenty years in Macon but the last fifteen in this vicinity— The last four in old Cambridge, in the immediate vicinity of the Classic shades of old Harvard My house is at present filled with young gentlemen connected with the Colledge

You will I think remember our having our portraits taken at the same time, by the brothers Negus; and surely I have vividly in remembrance a little bathing scene, the Sylph like form of Meusudora Just as she was stepping into the water beside the “hasle cop” not only this old uncle Wm B Allen and family once in awhile occur to my mind, and the old “Chahawba Press” and the exciting scenes of State elections— But the Actors in those scenes are nearly all gone— only a few are left Sargent I occasionally hear from, but not of late— within the past year I had a letter from Luther Blake—where he resides I know not—

Hearing of your being in Washington I was induced to write you, thinking it possible a few reminiscences of the past might possibly interest you— I should be extremely gratified to hear from you and Can assure you I have not been uninterested in your career through life thus far, and shall most heartily rejoice in your further success

Yours truly

VIRGIL H HEWES

[Endorsed:] Virgil H Hewes Lamar

No. 2553. THOMAS S. BELL TO LAMAR

Washington Dec 4 1857.

DR SIR:

Though not having the honour of a personal acquaintance, permit me to solicit your indulgent consideration for a few moments. This morning I understood that you had accepted the mission to Central America, and probably would require one or more assistants, the selection of whom was placed at your private discretion.

Having long entertained a desire to visit that country, now that the possibility of accomplishing that desire presents itself I grasp at the opportunity even though it be a *shadow*— May I without audacity present myself as a candidate? or rather will it not be considered more reasonable and discourteous in a stranger to obtrude his application under such circumstances? At least I hope that should Gen Lamar deem this communication worthy of a perusal he will attribute to . . . [mutilated] not a wilful neglect of proper deference.

I am a nephew of Gover Smith of Virginia & a connection of Sen Gwin of Cal and beg to suggest these names not as an argument but simply as an endorsement of my social position— I am also a nephew of

Gov Bell of Texas, and recalling the many expressions of admiration and esteem applied by my uncle to Genl Lamar, I throw myself, Sir, upon your generosity to justify the propriety of this step, & should gratefully appreciate the favour of an immediate reply to
 most respectfully yours

THOMAS S. BELL.

Genl Lamar Minister to C. A. (in Washington).

[Endorsed:] Thomas Bell Genl Lamar D. 4/57—

No. 2554. F. W. JONES TO LAMAR

Washn City D. C. Tuesday Dec. 8th. /57

Hon. M. M. LAMAR,

SIR.

The universal impression in political circles seems to be, that you will be appointed *chargé d'affaires* or *minister special*, to the government of Nicaragua. In advance, and expectancy of such appointment. I respectfully solicit a position near your person, as Private Secretary, Sec. of Legation, or a position of this character by whatever name designated.

A residence in that Country of 17 months, in connection with Gen. Wm. Walker,—a somewhat intimate acquaintance with its past history, for the last few years—a moderate familiarity with the language there spoken—a perfect acclimation to its temperature,—a well-governed, but intense enthusiasm felt in the progress of American institutions there, and a liberal education, are the qualifications I submit, as fitting me for the position I seek. I may say here, that when the disgraceful desertion of Gen. Walker's men, during his last occupancy of the town of Rivas, had reduced the number of his effective men to but Eighty-seven—which little band suffered and were content to suffer, pestilence, famine and the assaults of the 4000 demi-savages that surrounded them,—when nearly every one seemed to expect (and yet would not flinch) that Rivas would become a Second "*Alamo*,"—I was one of that number who remained faithful, until we were all released by and through the interference of Capt. Davis, of the United States Sloop of War St Mary's then in the harbor of San Juan del Sur.

I respectfully refer you to Col. M. Thompson formerly of S. Carolina, and now of this City,—to Col. Alex. Jones, now of Brazoria, Texas, recent paymaster of Walker's forces, as to my character & qualifications; and would highly esteem an interview with you at any time you may be pleased to appoint. My address is No 21, Four-and-a-half street, this City, or through the Post Office.

Allow me to remain Your most obt serv't

F. W. JONES.

Hon. M. B. Lamar, Brown's Hotel. [Washington, D. C.]

[Endorsed:] F W Jones Genl. Lamar D'. 8 1857—

No. 2555. OSCAR G. SAWYER TO LAMAR

New York. Dec. 9th, 1857.

Gen'l M. B. LAMAR
Washington, D. C.

DEAR SIR,

Is there any humble position in the Legation at Buenos Ayres which is yet unfilled & which I could have

I am well aware that the chances are about a thousand to one of such an attaché-ship being open, still, there may be a chance so I write. If you sail from this port you will not forget us. We should be most happy to see you at our house. Father & Mother desire to be remembered to you. Hoping to hear from you

I am Respectfully

234 East . . . [mutilated] N. Y.

OSCAR G. SAWYER

No. 2560. JAMES EDMONSTON TO LAMAR

365 E st Washington City Dec 24/57.

GENERAL:

As You may not immediately recollect my name, I will state, that I was introduced to you by your Nephew Dr. La Mar a few Years since in the City of New Orleans.

I have presented to the Sec'y of War my application for an appointment in the U. S. Army: I have learned the Sec'y has recommended the expediency of increasing the Army by the addition of five new Regiments: This measure seems to present a favorable opportunity to submit my application; and I therefore take the liberty to solicit your influence General in behalf of my purpose.

During the Mexican War, I was attached to the Staff of Major General Scott with the rank of Lieu't Co'l, since then I have been engaged in the duties of my profession as Civil Engineer, in Louisiana, Mexico, and Cuba.

Credentials are on file at the War Dep't from Gov'r R. C Wickliffe and other distinguished gentlemen of Louisiana, Mississippi, Georgia & N. York commending me as a suitable applicant for the appointment, Co'l James Gardner of Augusta Geo, who I believe is well known to you, wrote to the President, earnestly recommending me to his favorable notice. Senators Slidell & Benjamin La, & Wm M. Gwin of California have promised my application their support. If, therefore General, you would promote my views by the weight of your name, and put in a good word for me, with the President & Sec'y of War, I am sure that my prospects would be brightened, and I might then look with confidence for success.

If you could make it convenient to present me to the Hon. Howell Cobb, Sec'y of the Treasury, you would confer upon me a highly important favor: and if you could extend to me a further introduction to the Hon. Lucius La Mar of Missi I would be greatly indebted to you. In the event, "the Bill to increase the Army should be defer'd for future action, and no immediate prospect of its passage, it would afford me great pleasure, could you make it convenient to attach me to your Diplomatic Staff on your mission to Central America; as I possess a

thorough knowledge of the Spanish language, writing it and speaking it fluently, should you feel disposed to accept my services, as Sec'y, or an attaché of Legation, I would endeavour to make myself useful to you, and to merit your approval

If General, you will do me the honor to appoint an hour, convenient to you, when I may have the pleasure of waiting upon you, I will avail myself of the opportunity to present my respects in person, and to submit to your notice the credentials to which I have refer'd. I have the honor to be with high respect

Your Ob't. Sert.

JAMES, EDMONSTON

[Endorsed:] Jas Edmonson Lamar D.' 24 /57—

No. 2561. J. N. QUINTERO TO LAMAR

Austin, Texas Dec 25th 1857

Gen. M. B. LAMAR.

Washington City.

DEAR GENERAL.

Gen. McLeod informs me that you intend to spend the winter in that city and I hasten to forward a Biographical Sketch of Santa Anna which old Antonio Navarro sent for you a few days ago I feared it would not have reached you safely in Buenos Ayres or Central America. I also enclose an article on your family published a few weeks ago and your beautiful poem "Grieve not sweet flower &c." which I clip from the Charleston Courier. Doña Carmelita, My Gem of Delight and many of the poems contained in the Verse Memorials are going the round of the newspaper press almost every day.

The Texas Almanac for the ensuing year has already appeared. It brings a sketch and an awful engraving purporting to be your portrait. The former has been mutilated and—in regard to the latter I will only say that both the engraver and the printer ought to be hung or at least indicted for libel. I expect Mrs Lamar will coincide with me as soon as she takes a glance at such a picture. Poor Rusk looks like a Mexican peon and Gen Sherman as if he had just run off from the Lunatic Asylum

I will soon forward your Biographical Sketch and a poem dedicated to Mrs Lamar—both in Spanish—to be published in Central America. You will please attend to their publication in any of the newspapers of that country Do not forget to send me your address

I am at present Assistant Clerk of the House of Representatives. Fontaine has been elected Chaplain of the Senate.

Gibson continues to be one of the SHINING MARKS of the defunct K. N. party. He is still swindling some fair one out of her share of his "bed and board"

I have not done my duty to the State or obeyed the Bible (Gen. Chap. 1. v. 28) So, you will perceive that times are glorious with me. I have many dimes and no children

My kind regards to Mrs Lamar and Mrs. Budd, Pray ask Carrie, if she has received two letters I addressed her at Richmond They

were to be forwarded by the Post Master A Kiss to Loretto, & believe me, as ever Yrs &c

J N QUINTERO

P S One of the young ladies of this City—and a friend of yours I suspect—has stolen the Verse Memorials you gave me, from my wife's room. I by this mail write to Febridge & Co at New York to get another copy at any price; and my only regret is not to have your autograph

Once more Yrs Q.

My wife wishes to be kindly remembered to you—

[Endorsed:] Letter from Mr Quintero Austin Texas 25 Decr. 1857

No. 2562. JAMES EDMONSTON TO LAMAR

Washington City Dec 29 57.

GENERAL:

I can readily appreciate, and am aware of the motives, which impel you to decline recommending an applicant for appointment to the President.

I would therefore only desire to be presented by you to the Executive, or, a brief note to him, stating, that my appointment to the Army, would afford you pleasure.

Should you prefer to present me to the Secretary of War, perhaps that measure in my behalf, might be nearly as effective.

Pending the passage of the "Army Bill" I would also wish to apply for some temporary position: with this view, I have addressed to the Secretary of the Treasury the enclosed Application; which, if you would do me the honor to present, and then give me an introductory line to him & to Mr Clayton, I should appreciate as a highly important favor. I trust General you will impute the freedom with which I have ventured to address you, to the confidence which your character inspires even with those who have no other claim to your consideration.

I have the honor With high regard To be Your obt. Sert

JAMES EDMONSTON.

[Endorsed:] James Edmonston Genl Lamar D. '29 /57

No. 2565. REVIEW OF *VERSE MEMORIALS*. QUINTERO

[1857?]

VERSE MEMORIALS BY MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

Poetry has three great inspirations— love of God,— love to country— and love to woman. Kindled with these holy themes, it soars on golden wings to Heaven, gives laurels to the patriot and wreathes perennial garlands for Beauty. But when the sentiment of religion has no existence; patriotism has no value, and woman no appreciation, then Poetry loses its purity and utility— is no longer an ornament or a blessing; but stripped of its hallowed illuminations it becomes the hand maid of vice; and instead of bearing the fragrance of the rose, breathes only the baleful affluvia of the night shade. We however of

the South are not wanting in any of these essential elements of the art. Our religion is uncorrupted—our patriotism fervid and our love for the beautiful and good is excessive and romantic. And yet with all these high and exalted qualities and faculties for the enjoyment of the tuneful art, it is a matter of deep regret that Poetry has found so little favor amongst us.

Having made these remarks we frankly confess we are now rejoiced to see a new contribution to Southern literature, and hail it as the harbinger of that lustre which genius is destined to shed over our land of beauty, enterprise and valor. And we rejoice the more because he whose sword was the certainty of victory, whose counsels were our Egis in peace and whose patriotism and purity of character have ever been our boast and pride, should have been the first to twine with living bays the solid column of Liberty which he contributed so essentially to erect.

Gen Lamar who is universally known, not only as a statesman, orator and fine political writer, but as the brave soldier of San Jacinto and Monterey, is the author of the volume now before us. Having proved to be daring and valiant on the field, he like a Knight of old has laid aside his trenchant sword and comes now—after the smoke of battle has cleared away, to sing melodious songs of hope and love, and prove himself as worthy of the myrtle, as of the laurel crown. His poems are like the violets that bloom on the way side and regale the traveller with their delicate perfume. They display the soft and tender manner of Campbell and the absolute truth of Crabb. To delicate and beautiful thought they unite facility and elegance of expression. The poet has thrown the soul of harmony into his verses; and we shall nowhere find a sweeter tone of sentiment than in this collection of poems.

Gen. Lamar has evidently a good notion of what constitutes excellency in writing. There is no patchwork in his productions—no stepping aside for extraneous ornament and uncalled for comparisons and other figures of speech. His purpose is obvious and he marches directly to it. His stanzas are like a set of pearls—not at random strung—but wrought into a shining necklace for the adornment of Beauty. He is a poet of compliment, and writes the name of his lady love upon columns of porphyre, in capitals of agate. He sometimes weeps but his tears are the morning dews that brighten the rose and double its fragrance.

Jeffrey one of the first critics and the best reviewer of the age said, that “the poets who possess the greatest power of fascination are not those who present us with the greatest number of lively images or lofty sentiments, but who must successfully impart their own impulse to the current of our thoughts and feelings, and give the color of their brighter conceptions to those which they excite in their readers.” He thought it was more difficult to express natural feelings than to narrate battles or describe prodigies. And such is precisely the character of Lamar’s poetry. It is the melodious expression of natural feelings—a faithful transcript of the heart, in which the reader finds a perfect delineation of his own experience.

From the martial proclivities of Gen Lamar as well as from the fiery eloquence of his prose productions, one would naturally suppose that his poetry would partake very largely of these qualities. Not so, how-

ever; for the simple reason that the themes which he has chosen for his muse neither require nor would admit of the higher flights of the Pindaric and Epic muse. Had he cultivated poetry as an art, and made it the vehicle of his constitutional vehemence, his ardent love of liberty and devoted patriotism, without doubt his poetry would have been characterized by all that boldness of thought, vigor of expression and fierce ardor which so abound in his political writings. Then might his verse indeed have glowed with the scathing lightning of Churchhill or rang with the clarion tones of Korner. We have some indication of this indignant energy in the opening stanzas of Sally Riley; and also of martial spirit in the following stanza which the warrior Bard of Germany might not have blushed to write.—

“Speed, speed the day when to war I hie!
 The fame of the field is inviting;
 Before my sword shall the foemen fly;
 Or fall in the flash of its lightning.
 Away with song, and away with charms!—
 Insulted Freedom’s proud avenger,
 I bear no love but the love of arms,
 And the bride that I woo is Danger.

But Poetry has never been the study and pursuit of Gen Lamar. He has indulged in it, only in moments of leisure and relaxation, when the stormy passion of the heart had subsided into the tranquil affections of social and domestic life. Hence his themes are almost invariably of a peaceful and gentle nature, suggested by circumstances of the moment; and his sole inspiration, the friendship, love and beauty that surrounded him. As a poet, therefore, of accident, and not by profession—as one who has only tuned an unambitious harp for the momentary gratification of those he loved and respected—is he to be judged; and without hesitation we proclaim it, that he is not surpassed by any American poet within the walk which he has chosen for himself. For flowing language, harmony of verse, fidelity to nature and a deep out-pouring of the heart—a heart overflowing with love, gratitude and tenderness—he has but few superiors in any country. The truth of this will be felt by all, who, in perusing the volume shall give way to the instincts and impulses of nature, and judge of its merits—not by the arbitrary and hypocritical canons of the school, but, by the effects actually produced and the pleasurable impressions which it leaves behind. There is indeed a simplicity and earnestness and a deep, unaffected pathos in the poetry of Lamar which can scarcely fail to go to the heart of every reader that has a heart to be touched. In corroboration of this, we would instance all those pieces which relate to domestic afflictions, such as the latter part of Sally Riley, his *Elegiacs*, the lament for Loretto and above all the soul touching lines on the Death of his daughter. One of the most gifted sons of the South, in sending this poem to the Southern Literary Messenger for publication, pronounces it the best production of the kind since the celebrated lines of Mason on the death of his wife.—

Nothing could be more unjust in making a comparative estimate of Gen. Lamar’s poetry than to say, that it wants the wit of Halleck, the satire of Holmes, the sparkle of Willis and the scholastic elaboration of Longfellow. All this may in part be true; and yet none of them has

excelled him in that ease, grace, naturalness, warmth of feeling, pleasant thoughts and glowing eloquence, which are among the essentialities of poetry. There are different kinds of poetry; and we cannot Compare one class with another. For instance, who would compare the *Paradise Lost* with the *Irish Melodies*? All that can be said in justice is, that both are good in their respective ways, and that Moore is in *song*, what Milton is in *Epic*. All that we insist upon is, that in fixing the relative merit of Gen. Lamar as a poet, he should be brought in comparison with those poets only who have travelled in the same walk with himself. Let him be measured by his own class. Take for instance any of his productions and place in juxtaposition with them, the most successful pieces of similar nature which are to be found in Grizwolds collection of the poets, and our friend will suffer nothing by the comparison. Would you have a *Missionary Hymn*? Where will you find one breathing greater vigor and a higher tone of self-sacrificing devotion than the "Soldier of the Cross"? Would you woo your Lady love in song? Where can be found a higher strain of romance, lofty chivalry and poetic spirit than the *Gem of Delight*. It is truly a *Gem of Delight*; and would lose nothing of its lustre by placing it in Company with the *Lyrics of Moore*. Would you present a rose to the Lady that you love? Who has ever done it more gracefully than Lamar in his lines beginning—"Grieve not sweet flower to leave these shades." We do not give these as the best specimens of his poetry, but as illustrations of the fact that whatever he attempts, is usually done with a felicity and grace which leave but little room for improvement or rivalry.

We will not arrogate to ourselves the right of telling the reader what he is most to admire and the least to prize in this volume. Leaving him to be pleased with whatever is most congenial to his taste and feelings, we will only venture on this point so far as to direct his attention to one particular part, not that we would hold it up as the poet's "chef-d'oeuvre"—all beautiful as it is—but for the opportunity which it affords us of paying our respects to one who is entitled alike to our admiration and our gratitude. We allude to the Lady who is shadowed forth under the title of the "Lilly of the Dell"—the poet's own accomplished and devoted wife. An abidance of many months as a stranger guest, under the hospitable roof of one of the most happy and harmonious of families, enables the writer of this sketch to bear testimony to the fact, that the picture which the poet has drawn of his delightful home, in spite of its exceeding beauty, is not altogether equal to the theme—and especially that part of it which relates to the "Lilly of the Dell." Although his portrait of this fair flower of loveliness falls somewhat short of the brilliancy of the original, yet he can hardly be blamed for failing where the most favored sons of song might scarcely hope to succeed.

Such we think is a fair and just estimate of Gen Lamar as a poet, and we deeply regret that one who reflects so much honor on the South should have shared the same fate of all the Southern contributors to literature—that is—the culpable indifference and neglect of those who control the press, and who alone have the power of sustaining and popularizing the works of genius. And it is a matter of utter surprise as well as reproach that this remark should so truly apply to his native

State where we know his talents are duly appreciated by the people and his honor patriotism and chivalry have always been themes of their unmeasured eulogy. We have met with some of the Georgia papers and find in them no other notice of the Verse Memorials than that it is a beautifully printed volume, and a recommendation that Booksellers would do well to supply themselves with copies for the market. Not one word has been said with respect to the merit of the author, the character of his productions, or the rank which he is entitled to assume among the poets of his Country. Not even a solitary piece has been admitted into their papers, while the poet's corner is filled with the productions of foreign writers, not of the first rank, but bearing the endorsement of Harper's Magazine and other similar publications. Had the most indifferent piece of Lamar appeared in that Monthly, without doubt it would have been copied throughout the South; but wanting that stamp, no Georgia Editor, so far as we have noticed, has ventured to assume the responsibility of giving to the public any specimen of the contents of the Book or opinion of its value. That which his native State has neither the pride nor magnanimity to do, we have attempted in our feeble way, and while we would not offend the author by an over estimate of his achievements we have endeavored to do him justice by assigning to him the merit of being one of the most natural, melodious and genial poets of America—a verdict which we have no doubt time will sanction and confirm.—

In conclusion we think fit to do an act of justice to South Carolina, the noblest of all the Southern States—the very noblest so far as regards the chivalry of her character—the jealousy of her rights—the nobility of her statesmen and her fostering care of talents, virtue genius and literature. We find in that little State less demagogism and a higher appreciation of the pure and lofty sentiments of patriotism among her public men than is to be found in any of her sister confederates of the South. She is the Bulwark and protector of the American Constitution—the bold, consistent and uncorrupted defender of its original and unperverted principles; and at the same time she is almost the only State of the South which has manifested any disposition to protect her own literature—to emancipate herself from the dogmatism of the North, and to build up a character of her own. Virginia has seconded her efforts in this respect so far as regards the publication of the Southern Literary Messenger—a noble endeavor to redeem the South from its degrading dependence upon antagonistic sisters for its mental aliment and the luxuries of genius, taste and fancy. But even this publication, in spite of all the talents with which [it] has been conducted, has long languished for the want of proper pride and patriotism in the South to sustain it, and is still struggling for existence with comparatively and insignificant patronage while its more presumptuous and arrogant, yet less meritorious rival, "Harper's Magazine boasts of its two or three hundred thousand circulation and is to be found in almost every dwelling in the South. It is time that those who pretend to be Southern patriots should look to this matter and consider whether it is not a part of their duty to foster the genius and literature of its own section as well as to be everlastingly brawling about whigery, Democracy, Know-Nothingism and all the demagogical struggle of office. Without a literature of our own, we can have neither

dignity, self-respect or any security of rights. So long as we acknowledge the superiority of our enemies in intellectual pursuits and do not blush at our dependence upon them for whatever refines our tastes, develops genius and elevates the soul, so long shall we be their social inferiors and political dependents. To be second rate in the arts, sciences and literature is to be second in Civilization and second in everything else. If we would maintain political equality in this Union it is indispensable to establish social and mental equality. Without the arts, sciences and literature, there can be neither permanent prosperity nor security for liberty.

Austin, Texas

J. A. QUINTERO

No. 2569. N. TACONES TO THE INHABITANTS OF THE TOWN

[Translation from the Spanish]

Military Post Villa de la Virgen

Jan. 1, 1858.

All the inhabitants of this town, be they foreigners or natives, are commanded to loan the Supreme Government all the auxiliaries needed at once, with all the punctuality and promptness becoming all Nicaraguans, and should they fail to do so, they will be given military punishment. Moreover, those who do not wish to be bound by this compromise must leave the port, presenting themselves at this office to have their passports made out to whatever place each one may designate, since I am authorized for this by the Military Commander of this Department, and in order that the aforesaid inhabitants may not allege ignorance, I publish this in the most public places in this town.

N. TACONES, Commander of the Place

No. 2575. FERMIN FERRER TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

New York Jany. 18, 1858.

ESTEEMED GENERAL—

I send you that correspondence in order that you may be pleased to forward it to its destination—

I hope that of your kindness you may take an active part in making the Govt. of Nicaragua return my property and send me my safe conduct to return. I am certain that I can attain this by means of the fact that you can make the assurance that far from having taken part here against my country, I have worked in favor of its rights—

Be pleased to send me by the next mail a copy of the answer to the Hon. Molina, in order that it may be published in the papers, as well as the answer of Gen. Jerés. Hoping that you will write me and inform me concerning the matter—

With all respect I am your humble servant

F. FERRER [Rubric]

No. 2579. ANN S. STEPHENS TO LAMAR

New York Jan 20th 1858

MY DEAR GENERAL

I made an effort to bid you good bye on board the boat but all the avenues were so blocked up that it was impossible for a lady to

reach you. I was greatly disappointed in not seeing you again but console myself by writing this letter Where will it find you I wonder? in full chase of the government or swinging in your Mexican hammock thinking of the "Lily of the dell" with a few outverging thoughts for your old friends? I am sure you will not be many hours at a time without thinking of her and I hope not many days without some memory of us Now I pray you if you can possibly arrange it help Don Fermin Ferrer to go home and take care of his interests in Nicaragua It is what he most desires now and there seems no reason why he may not return in safety

Though he came here accredited minister from Walker he never went to Washington never presented his letters or in any way communicated with our government In short he has not taken any part in public matters except to defend the general interests of his country as in the pamphlet you will receive from Gen Cazneau Though I have no pecuniary interest in his affairs and only wish to see him settled

I shall feel greatly obliged if in your intercourse with the present Nicaraguan government you will do your best to obtain a free permission for him to return to his country you can safely say that he has taken no part in Walkers late expedition or in any way done an act that should keep him in exile by any party He has simply occupied himself in learning English and minding his own business

Our friend Mrs Cazneau was for a time a little dissatisfied with him for what she deemed a want of confidence in them regarding some contract about his mines but her last letter expresses confidence in him again and I am very sure that no misunderstanding could long exist between parties so disposed to be right and kind as they both are Will you use all the influence you have to persuade the Nicaraguan government to let him return to his home I pledge you my word he has done nothing against that government or been connected with any movement calculated to injure it You can say this with perfect safety I enclose you a letter directed to Gen Jerez which you will please have delivered in safety I have read it and it is simply a friendly letter in which Don Fermin inquires after his family from whom he can receive no direct information and asking friendly advise how to act with regard to his property As a father you will know how to feel for his anxiety to hear from his children and I am sure you will not hesitate to help him In short I consign Don Fermin interest to your own noble heart praying god to aid you in restoring a good man to his country and the bosom of his family Please write me a few lines tell me how you like the tropics and if the country promises well for us yankee's tell me of your health and all that relates to you for I am half a mind to follow after you one of these days with all the household I have no idea how this will reach you but like a bold marksman shoot flying hoping to wing you somewhere as you soar upwards

God bless you as I do

ANN S STEPHENS

I wish to write more but the steamer sails at noon

I simply copy this letter The original my sister sent by the last steamer but she feared it would not reach you as she did not have time to send it to Washinton to be forwarded with the dispatches from government

MARTHA E WINTERBOTHAM

No. 2580. FRANCIS W. RICE TO LAMAR

Panama Jan. 23. 1858

HON MIRABEAU B LAMAR
U. S. Minister Resident, etc

MY DEAR SIR

I have found Gen Walker's letter to Mr. Jenkins, which I enclose but have been unable to find Mr. J's response, I believe however that Gen. Walker's letter embodies the gist of the correspondence. If I recollect rightly, Mr. Jenkins did not undertake to combat, in detail the position of Walker, but simply put in a general protest against them, and against Walker's undertaking to connect him with them by publishing his own letter to Mr J after the latter had expressed his . . . [faded] any sympathy with the doctrines enunciated.

I enclose you all of one or two other papers, which may be useful to you.

Wishing you health, and success in your negotiations

I remain truly yours

FRANCIS W. RICE

P. S. I should be glad to hear from you at any time you may desire to write, as . . . [faded] correspondence here within the N. O. Piccayune, the New York Times and the San Francisco Bulletin.

[Endorsed:] Letter from Francis Rice Panama inclosing Walker's letter to Jenkins, of Geo in relation to Slavery in Nicaragua Janry 23— 1858

No. 2583. C. C. SAVAGE TO LAMAR

New York Feb 4, 1858

Gen LAMAR.

DEAR SIR—

I have only been able to ascertain to day the fact in regard to the Copy of "Poems" that I supposed had a Copy of "Evadne" in it. It seems that they were bound up, but by your direction the poem was afterward torn out.

One of copies which originally had this poem in Mr. Alexander kept back, for you, but finally took it home to the country As your object to get a Book with this poem in print, cannot be accomplished, I have not considered it necessary to pursue the subject farther.

I find that Fetridge & Co's place was passed into the hands of the sheriff, on execution, while we were in it, selecting your books, as I suspected at the time. If you had delayed another day, you would have received nothing, in fact I suppose in strict legal right they could not have delivered what you did get. The store is shut up, and I have not been able to get a bill of the books.

I have made no progress in the publication of another edition of the "poems." There is a little movement in the book trade, and it may be that by the time the Sketch is ready, I shall find a publisher.

I suppose in strict business sense, I ought to have a letter from you, stating just what arrangement I am authorized to make with a publisher in your name, so that there can be no misunderstanding.

You will be undoubtedly posted by other in regard to the political world, so that need add nothing on that point yours respectfully
C. C. SAVAGE 13 Chambers st.

[Endorsed:] C C Savage Lamar Feby. 14 58—

No. 2590. MARIANO MONTEALONE TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish] Chinandega Feb. 19. 1858

To the Most Excellent, Minister Plenipotentiary of the Supreme Govt. of the United States of America.

The undersigned congratulates himself on knowing that Your Excellency, worthy representative of the Supreme Govt. of the illustrious James Buchanan, is approaching the Government of Nicaragua to make an agreement concerning the means most convenient, although difficult, for saving it in the crisis in which it now finds itself. Just now, the powerful Govt. which Your Excellency represents, has heroically displayed its sentiments of greatness, justice, and philanthropy for the salvation of unfortunate Nicaragua; and it is to be hoped from its legislators who hearing attentively the voice of a representative of a powerful nation, example of munificence and magnanimity, may agree to the salvation of my country.

The undersigned has the honor of representing the descendants of the Incas, and Your Excellency represents the immortal Washington, example of true patriotism, which would make a people independent. Most excellent Sir, my representatives are alarmed and saddened by the painful situation of the country, and the Supreme Govt. of Your Excellency in its memorable message to the Senate at Washington, sustains principles of eternal justice. The sentiments of the Govt. of Your Excellency are in accord with the devotion of all Christianity and the most appealing sentiments of human charity.

The undersigned repeats then, most Excellent Sir, that he congratulates the United States of America in the day of greatest glory and hope for all the peoples of the South, and principally for the Republic of Perú.

It will give me the greatest satisfaction Most Excellent Sir, to transcribe this note to my Govt., subscribing myself Your Excellency's
Very obedient serv.

MARNO. MONTEALONE [Rubric]

[Endorsed:] Letter from D. Mariano Montealeone—the Peruvian Consul at Chinandega— He congratulates Mr. Buchanan for his principles of Justice he hopes that the presence of the U. S. Minister at Nicaragua will be a benefit for this Country and that the generous principles of the American Government will help the Republic of Perú in her happiness etc etc etc— dated: Chinandega— February 19th 1858.

No. 2591. EDWARD FONTAINE TO LAMAR

Cima Verde. Feb. 22d. 1858.

Genl. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

DEAR GENERAL:

Your letter of Jan 14th written at Aspinwall, gave me much pleasure, I have just sent, directed to the care of the Secy. of State, to be forwarded with official Documents, two copies of Richardson's "Texas Almanac for 1858." The fool has curtailed the Biographical sketch to one half of it's original length; left out the most important facts, & rearranged & confused all that was written in the defence of your administration; abridged the sentences, destroyed the force & beauty, and spoiled the grammar of all the rest; & added some silly flourishes of his own. It very properly appears without my name; & I very gladly disown the paternity of the production. Like the Ass who prefers the thistle to the clover, & carefully crops the most unsightly weeds from the most fragrant flowers, this critic has selected the only sentences from my manuscript which were homely or pointless, & which could neither hurt nor help any body's reputation, & which might have been deservedly rejected. I find a few of these retained to link together the chain of his *patent-biography* all the rest he has omitted to save space, & of course, to save the dimes.

The Legislature adjourned on the 16th Feb. after acquitting itself quite creditably in the service of the State. The Bill establishing one University, with an appropriation of \$100,000 & every tenth Section of reserved Vacant lands passed the Senate by an unanimous vote, & the House by a very large majority. A decided majority were in favor of locating it in Austin; but the timid dodged the responsibility of acting; & they adjourned without making the location. My election as Chaplain of the Senate gave me a very comfortable support for the winter, & mortified my foes exceedingly. They were also very much chagrined at my success in getting the University Bill through both Houses. Among the most important acts is one providing for a Geological Survey of the State. The appropriation I think is \$30,000. The Salary of the Geologist is \$3,000. Raymond & Co, & Pease with them, are all "laid up in or'nary." A Bill authorizing & *requiring* the Treasurer to issue U. S. Bonds & Coupons to persons for gold & silver at par, has injured considerably Swenson & Swisher's Exchange business.

Having now played the parson among the politicians, helped the Caucus, written bills, briefs of Speeches and promoted the public good in various ways, and at the same time "licked" my enemies handsomely, I can retire from my parish with credit, & leave Austin with flying colors when I choose. And I am really tired of hard work and poor pay. I wish to leave the State, until the University goes into operation, without selling my home, & "fillibuster," ecclesiastically, in a new field, or retire & rest in an old, rich, & well-paying parish. My inclination is to plant the true banner of the Cross, on the Rocky Mountains, the Andes, the Himmalaya or the Isthmus. Peru, Ecuador, Venzuela, Bolivia, New-Mexico the Isthmus & Thibet, are all accessible at this time. If I could get a Congregation any where on the "Transit Route" I would soon fix it where it's folds would flash in the tropical Sunlight banned by the breezes of the two Oceans, & fix it so firmly

that no Central American Revolution, Earthquake or blast from Hell could ever remove it. I want no *material* protection & aid but money to operate with. We are well at present, & my boys send their love to you.

Your Sincere friend

EWD. FONTAINE.

No. 2601. H. L. KINNEY TO LAMAR

Aspinwall [Panama] March 16/58

MY DEAR GENERAL

I improve the safe opportunity of sending you a line by Col Slesinger who goes up on the *Collumbus*. I shall leave here for San Juan del Norte within 10 days & after arranging my matters then proceed to see you, I take up a venture of about 6 or 7 thousand dolls. to start an establishment at Greytown

Have you written to Washington about the consul Ship at Greytown that appointmt— would facilitate the carrying out of a good project.

In your Negotiations with the N. Govt. bear in mind the Confirmation of the Shepherd & Haily Grant to me, as an American Citizen, That provision will be uncalculable Service to a devoted friend of yours. I have written Col Moony to have this House fixed up for the reception of Mrs Lamar. So you can be easy in your mind that she will have a comfortable place to go to when she reaches San Juan

I think prospects are better now than they have been for years. Zacharia is here & wants assistance about the Schatzgeld will can I hope he will have Justice done him. I dreamed there was a d—d set of Rascals that tried to Steal a dead mans Gold, I woke & met the honest applicant for the property of Zacharia is here.

Write me to the care of B. Moony Greytown, tell me how you like Nicaragua Say what I shall send you In haste your sincere & devoted friend

H. L. KINNEY

To Hon M. B. Lamar Minister Plenoy. Nicaragua

[Endorsed:] Kinney Mch 16 /58 Lamar

No. 2602. THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER TO LAMAR

Punta Arenas, Costa Rica, March 20th /58.

MY DEAR GENERAL LAMAR,

The accompanying letter and package were handed me the 1st of last month— It having been my intention to sail for Central America on the 5th— I was obliged, however, to defer the trip until the present month— Leaving the "Columbus" here, it is my intention to stop a few weeks in San José. and the neighbouring country— I shall return to New York about the end of June— Previous to my doing so, I sincerely hope to have the pleasure of paying you a visit, and shall feel truly happy and honoured in being entrusted, on my departure, with any letters you may have for the "States"—

I was in Washington the last week of January, and left our mutual

friends, General and Mrs Cazeneuve, quite well— They were, of course, extremely anxious to hear of your safe arrival— Upon which agreeable event I have very cordially to congratulate you—

With the truest regard I beg you to believe me, My dear General,
very faithfully Your friend

THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER

To General M. B. Lamar U. S. Minister Nicaragua.

[Endorsed:] Thomas F Meagher Genl Lamar March 20/58

No. 2604. FRANCISCO D. ZAPATA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Managua March 25, 1858.

Honorable Minister Plenipotentiary of the
Govt. of the United States in Nicaragua.

SIR,

On returning to Leon, the place of my residence, I carry in my heart the joy of having manifested to Your Excellency my respect, my high appreciation, and profound gratitude toward the Govt. of the United States and to the person of Your Excellency, because of the kindness which they have exercised in favor of Nicaragua and of the other Republics of Central America, occupying yourself in thinking and doing many just and benevolent things for their good, and especially for my native land. My kind feelings in homage to the virtue of the Govt. of the United States and of Your Excellency will last as long as my life. Would that my native country could equal or exceed me in this.

I desire that Your Excellency may be happy and contented and that the fine purposes which brought you to this poor country may succeed; and I hope in God, that one day I will have the pleasure of seeing you again, and of confirming to you the truth of my words.

I am Your Excellency with all respect, your humble and obedt
Servant

FRANCISCO D. ZAPATA

[Endorsed:] Letter from Don Francisco D. Zapata— Commissioner of the Nicaraguan Church near the Supreme Powers of the Republic— dated Managua March 25, 1858— In leaving Managua for Leon— his place of residence—he assures Genl. Lamar of his feelings of strong sympathy towards the Government, and People of the United States— etc. etc. etc.—

No. 2605. LEWIS CASS TO LAMAR

[Washington, D. C., March 27, 1858]

Extract from the instructions to Genl Lamar of 27 March, 1858.³⁴

“Altho’ the salary to which you are entitled as Minister Resident is less than that of an Envoy Extraordinary, I trust that the super-added commission of Minister Resident to Costa Rica, herewith also trans-

³⁴This extract is all that has been found from Cass to Lamar on this subject. The calendar gives the date as March 25, 1858. See Vol. IV, pt. 2, 127.

mitted, will prevent you from experiencing any pecuniary inconvenience in consequence of the change. Your present salary will cease on the day of your receipt of this despatch, of which you will advise the Department, and from that date you will draw at the rate of seven thousand five hundred dollars, as Minister Resident in Nicaragua, and at the rate of three thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars per annum as compensation for the superadded office to begin on the day of your departure from your residence in Nicaragua for the Capital of Costa Rica for the purpose of presenting your credentials to that Government."

No. 2606. THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER TO LAMAR

San Jose, Costa Rica,
Hotel de Costa Rica; March 28th /58.

MY DEAR GENERAL LAMAR,

Having learned you were on the eve of visiting Costa Rica, and might, possibly, arrive by the Steamer on the 3rd of next month, I have availed myself of the kindness of a gentleman, whose acquaintance I made on our trip up from Pannama, to apprise you that I am staying here, at this house, the Hotel de Costa Rica, and would advise you, in case you have no better already secured, to make it your quarters— If I mistake not, you will find it comfortable and pleasant, and it will delight me truly to find myself under the same roof with you—

With sincere esteem believe me

Most faithfully to remain your friend

THOMAS FRANCIS MEAGHER

To General M. B. Lamar U. S. Minister

[Endorsed:] Mr. Meagher to Genl Lamar Private— unimportant—
San Jose— 26, March.

No. 2612. LAMAR TO THE MUNICIPALITY OF GRANADA

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Granada, Nicaragua,] April [4,] 1858

To the Honorable Municipality of the City of Granada

Mirabeau B. Lamar, citizen of the United States of America, and now resident in the City of Managua—respectfully sets forth to this Honorable Body that he desires to buy the plot of land situated between the road of Pochotes and that of San Francisco; and that extends from Guadalupe to the shores of the lake, for which land the petitioner is disposed to pay the price which is considered just and reasonable.

The petitioner begs that you will permit him to assure you that in making this request he has not in view any pecuniary speculations; and that he desires this land with the sole object of procuring a residence in Granada agreeable to his family— Such transfer he believes will be quite profitable for the City, as well as agreeable for him;—since it will not only be the means of preventing the said land from being occupied by worthless people who will in no way contribute to the beauty, re-

spectability, and prosperity of the place, but also [the means of] clearing it, cultivating it, and improving it, fulfilling thus the design of nature which has destined this place to be an imposing highway for commerce, at the same time a delightful promenade for the inhabitants of Granada— This will be infinitely better than to have that maritime suburb, which extends from the beach to this City, full of miserable custom houses, and of houses of vice and of prostitution.

The Honorable Municipality must not attribute to lack of delicacy on the part of the petitioner, if he insists upon a reply as soon as possible; because the interest which he takes is born of the desire which he has for furnishing a home for his family with the least delay;— and preferring Granada as the place most convenient for their residence, he would regret in the highest degree to see himself in the necessity of searching for a home in some other part of the Country— But whatever may be your decision, the petitioner will not in any case cease to be always the friend of Granada, and a just appreciator of the hospitalities of its inhabitants

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

[Endorsed:] Spanish Translation of Genl. Lamars petition to the Municipality to purchase certain lands— April 1858

No. 2613. JOSÉ M. NOGUERA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Office of the Municipal Secretary
Grana., April 6, 1858.

HON MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

Minister of the U. S. resident in this Republic—

The Municipal Corporation having been called in extraordinary session with the interesting object of informing themselves and resolving upon your exposition relative to soliciting the purchase of a plot of land contiguous to the margin of this lake, states, in conformity with a provision contained in its laws, that it will be referred to a Committee in order that it may render an opinion, after which it will advise what is proper. Remember me as your attentive and obedient servant

J. MA NOGUERA [Rubric]

[Endorsed:] Noguera, April 6, 58 to Genl M. B. Lamar

No. 2617. CURIOSITIES. SOME COSTA RICANS

[Translation from the Spanish. Printed]

Among the many which distinguish the good faith, the honor etc. of the present petty officials of the unhappy Republic of Costa Rica we note the following.

In number 48 (the 30th of last December) of the "newspaper" "Star and Herald" of Panama an article by Señor D. F. Schlesinger appears in which the gentleman acknowledges the receipt of a letter which was addressed to him from this city, which he deposited in the offices of the "Star of Panama." By said article we were informed that one of the most Excellent or most insolent brothers of the President of the

Republic had the effrontery to write him the letter to which we refer, urging him to steal from the printing offices of the "Star" the original copies of the articles addressed to him for printing, offering him in exchange for this crime, public office and money. It did not seem at all strange to us who know them; and we are persuaded that on doing so, our high functionaries did not consider such deed reprehensible and to be rejected. Such is the effect which custom has produced in them! Neither are we surprised at their offers, because we are well informed of their generosity in such circumstances; since we know that they are accustomed to recompense such services with public offices, or with sums of money from the national treasury, considering this their patrimony, as is always the case when they need a Judas to pledge their word of honor (which they have not) and then violate it without shame or remorse: [when they need] judges whose not over scrupulous consciences are always disposed to give judgment for the pleasure of their masters, to forge public documents and declarations of witnesses, as for example in the criminal case which the Mora brothers ordered to be carried on by their ex-associates in mining enterprises, *Señores* Vicente Lathond and Aristides Elzeberg, with the purpose of appropriating them, in which case there figure no less than thirty statements dealing with the court proceedings, falsified by the President and his worthy brother the tobacco dealer.

This is a fact among many which we will point out on other occasions and which gave reason for the immense reclamations which weigh heavily upon the Republic. How many useless offices in Costa-Rica, created by the present administration, only as a recompense for crime!

Returning to the article of *Señor* Schlesinger, we do not doubt who is the author of the letter from the very fact that public offices and money were offered him if he took charge of the matter of stealing the articles sent: we believe without fear of equivocation, that we are able to point out in the sad figure of Rodin, incapable legislator, brother of the president of the Republic, ex-president of the so called National Congress, permanent deputy, retailer of powder, of salt petre, of sealed paper, permits for the exportation of coffee, etc., etc., in a word of all that is lucrative; because, as it has already been said, there is nothing which he may give; which they cannot take for themselves, the invincible brothers Mora. Apropos of monopolies, it has occurred to us to submit a question to His Excellency begging him to excuse our curiosity. Would it not be more reasonable (we will not say right) to divide the multitude of little tobacco shops which yield an income of more than ten thousand pesos annually, among thirty or more of the widows of those unfortunates who died unavailingly in the surprise of the 14th of April 1856, or on the anniversary of the most brutal assault of Rivas of 1857? . . . We hope you will answer us, and while you are deciding, we advise that the *Señores* Mora read and meditate upon the fragment of the message of *Señor* Campos, in resigning the presidency of the Republic of Salvador: he says as follows: . . . "Convinced that that which by its nature is vicious can never be good in its results. Violations of the law are always acts of arbitrariness or despotism; and what is despotic or arbitrary is always unjustifiable. Formulas or rules are the divinities of society; and only despots make their power consist in not recognizing any; I had sworn

to guard the constitution and the laws; infringing this and breaking those I would have committed a perjury; perjury is a crime; and the cause most holy becomes unholy when crime is laid hold of to sustain it . . .

Praise the man who in the seat of power can express himself thus! How pleasing to his conscience to be able to say: "I have ruled over the destinies of the people who honored me with their confidence, in conformity with their will! A free man, I was elected to the first magistracy, I swore to maintain their liberties and to care for their welfare, I have fulfilled my mission: today I lay down the power without having failed in my oath, and I offer prayers for the one who takes my place in order that he may fulfil his duties as I have fulfilled mine." Venerable man! . . . How distinct will be his voice from that of the Moras. What, perhaps the hyena has a conscience? They will fall under the execration of a whole people, whom they will leave in mourning: they will always see before them poverty, widows, orphans: their dreams will be scenes of pillage, of blood and of dead bodies: their ears will hear only curses: their only comfort will be to say to themselves *mea culpa, mea culpa*. Such is the fate which awaits the despot. Would to Heaven that this may be his only punishment! Poor Costa Rica, poor and honored people worthy of a better lot! Look at your tyrants, their ambition is satisfied with nothing: they have appropriated your Public treasury, and even this does not satisfy them. Today a nephew of theirs, a minor in age, is Judge of the first instance in this capital, and follows the footsteps of his uncles: supported by them, he goes to court, in order that, like them, he may enrich himself at your expense: not being able to count on the Public Treasury, that has nothing in it, except a debt of more than a million pesos, he tries a new system, and what! that of taking the property of another. For this he counts on the wicked tribunals: he tries suits on the right hand and on the left imagining that he can get hold of real estate which his father never had, from whose will it was evident that he only left debts of more than five times the value of his small property; this very President Mora was his attorney: at his instance he called a meeting of all the creditors and renounced the inheritance. The property was legally sold at auction to prorate the proceeds among the creditors. Now what was done with the will? it was stolen by the self-same President together with many other files of papers from which it appeared that he was debtor to various pious funds, and in particular to that of public instruction: fragments of the will appear to be in his possession, and with these fragments, they attempt violent spoliations. We do not doubt that the present tribunals will close their eyes to facts known to them: Why? because *Señor Mora* protects his own and orders the courts to do his will, and they will obey, some on account of wickedness, others on account of weakness, and others on account of fear.— People of Costa Rica! the properties which thus they attempt to appropriate are some in the hands of the native sons of the country, others in the hands of foreigners, if the former can do nothing, the latter will demand justice outside of the country, and the country is responsible; the people are the ones interested and the ones who should respond to these acts of power, and have the right to oppose them. Heaven grant that thus it may happen! . . .

We can hardly endure seeing the discussions about water-mains: Some want clay, others iron; it will be our turn to defend the product of the ranch of "Pabas"; since we see this tract of ground, property of the people of San José, is going to be turned over to the coffers of the *Señores Mora*, who although they have most interest in having the discussion, laugh at the speakers, they agree with each one in particular, and they urge them to hold their opinion, of iron or clay, and in the meanwhile they decree the sale of the tract of "Pabas" for cash as a *sine qua non* of its sale— Be careful! for it is necessary for us to remind our fellow countrymen. The elections for new president, etc., are drawing near; Awake! Some believe and not without foundation that when that day arrives the comedy will be repeated which was given us in August 1856, when President Mora gave the first representation of "his renunciation of the presidency." That is, reenforcing the garrisons, and leaning on some few wicked officials, to give a new *coup d'etat*, in order to reelect himself or any of his men. Awake, we repeat; the union is strong; the people alone are sovereign: and this we will show to the tyrants, and warn them that if we have been patient and long suffering, more than we ought to have been, we will not be so longer. A new man ought to be called to the presidency and this man the people already signify.— Let him be welcome.

San José, April 11, 1858.— Second anniversary of sad lessons.

SOME COSTARICANS.

[Endorsed:] To Monsieur Pre Soule New Orleans

No. 2620. PETITION TO THE CONSTITUENT ASSEMBLY OF NICARAGUA. JAMES THOMAS

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Granada, Nicaragua, April 17? 1858]

Honorable Constituent Assembly of the Republic.

I, James Thomas, citizen of the United States of America, and resident in the City of Granada, before you, with the greatest submission and respect which is due your elevated character, come to make the following request.

The important branch of the leather industry is not known in the country, except in its most primitive and crudest form; and its establishment in the country would produce results of great public utility that cannot escape your illustrious penetration.

The great variety of hides of the Republic, which, notwithstanding the superiority of their quality to those of all the world, are sold in a foreign country at such a low price, would certainly find quick consumption in the country at a price double that which they now bring: and the Nicaraguans would be able to obtain select hides for shoes and other uses at the same prices at which they are sold in Europe, saving the profit which the merchant makes who introduces some of not very superior quality into the country.

An establishment of this kind would also lead to the consumption and would make valuable various materials and plants of the country which up to the present time remain without any valuation; and likewise would give employment to many workmen of the country, who would

work side by side with artisans, who would naturally come for this purpose, and would necessarily be instructed in a very important branch of industry as that of leather, which may be at the same time an abundant article of exportation in the Republic for all the rest of Central America.

Apart from all this, that to which most attention should be called in this business is the progress of civilization, which always in all free countries, like Nicaragua, is encouraged by the establishment of the industrial arts. Costa Rica twenty years ago did not amount to anything in its civilization and resources; and today, by means of the reception and protection which it has given to industry, is the Genoa of Central America. I desire therefore to place in the country an establishment for the manufacture of sole leather and calf skin of all qualities and equal to the best made in Europe, and I count on the capital necessary for it which I can bring from the United States; but this being a new and dangerous enterprize, I do not dare to undertake it unless it is under your protection, and that you concede me the exclusive privilege of making it for a term of five years, which is what I solicit of you.

Of course this privilege is without prejudice to the introductions [of goods] which are made and continue to be made, and without prejudice also to the natives of the country who may continue the manufacture to which they have been accustomed up until the present time.

For the rest, I subject myself in this to all those conditions which you justly wish to impose, and which can not be prejudicial to me

J. THOMAS—

No. 2622. J. F. WADDELL TO LAMAR

Galveston, April 23rd 1858.

HON MIRABEAU B LAMAR.

DEAR SIR.

In the month of October last (1857) Col A E Thornton, my Father in Law and the friend of your wifes Father left or intended leaving New York on the Steamer Northern Light for Aspinwall, bound to San Salvador *City* on a trading expedition, since which time his family have heard nothing of Him. I have made inquiry in vain in New York & presuming that there was an American Consul at San Salvador have addressed him, but with no better success. Presuming that you have it in your power to communicate with any Agent of the Government that may be in that place, I have written to request that you will institute the necessary enquiry in regard to Col Thornton & advise me of the result. By so doing Sir, you will confer a favor upon his anxious & distressed family.

Respectfully yr friend and obt Servant,

J F. WADDELL

No. 2625. JOSÉ DEBRIN TO B. SQUIRE COTRELL

[Translation from the Spanish]

Managua 4th. May 1858.

B. SQUIRE COTRELL U. S. Comm. Agt.
San Juan del Norte

MY DEAR SIR.

General Lamar requests me to inform you that all your letters and dispatches have been duly received by him. He has been quite satisfied with all of them and he desires that you continue keeping himself, as well as the Government at Washington, posted up of all the important events at San Juan

If he has not written to you more frequently it is not, he says, because he is not sensible of your kind letters or does not appreciate your zeal in carefully transmitting to him all valuable information, but only for want of time; and besides this, because we scarcely know here when there is any good opportunity to write to San Juan.

He intends to go to Costa-Rica within a few weeks—probably not before he has received the mail from Washington which shall be due at Managua at the end of this month.

There is nothing new of importance in this place. This Government has not received by this mail dispatches from Mr. Irisarri. They expect that said gentleman will tell them that he has obtained of President Buchanan some modifications in the Cass-Irisarri Treaty. I think this very doubtful; and then I am almost certain that the Treaty will be finally rejected.

General Lamar begs you to present his respects to Mrs Cotrell and sends you his best and most friendly wishes.

I hope, my dear Sir, that you will not forget me, and will let me know of you from time to time, even in the absence of General Lamar in Costa Rica, where I will not probably accompany him. I will remain at Managua ready to obey your commands.

I am sincerely Your most obedient

J. DEBRIN.

No. 2627. H. L. KINNEY TO LAMAR

Aspinwall N. G. May 17th. 1858

MY DEAR GENERAL

As I have written you fully [from] San Juan del Norte I need not go into full particulars of what transpired at that place, again, I left here with the view of paying you a Visit in company with Col Glidon who you will recollect I introduced you to at Panama & recommend as one suited for yr Secretary We were unable to get Passports to go up the River & consequently had to return here, He is a Gentleman well qualified for the position & a Brave native American—

You will gather News of the Ratification of the Nicaraguan Treaty by the U S Senate by the next mail, I shall pay my respects to you in company— with Col Gliddon as soon as we can get up the River had you not better send us passports to San Juan, to go to Nicaragua, Cotrell the C Agent there is a villian. dont send any thing to me through him Capt Kenedy is one of Gods maker of Noblemen— so send to his care, I expect to leave in the English steamer, for San Juan on

the 22d. inst. I sent you some things by a Negro by the name of Walk who goes to Nicaragua, He had not taken them when I left but I suppose is at Granada ere this 1 Box Brandy i Gin Claret tin Crackers 1 Bl ale— Hoping to visit you soon I am as
 most truly your friend H. L. KINNEY

did you write to Washington about the Greytown appointmt. I want that Rascal away from there

No. 2628. COMMENT UPON THE PRESIDENTIAL PROCLAMATION OF MAY 15. SOME COSTA RICANS

[Translation from the Spanish. Printed]

THE INHABITANTS OF COSTA RICA

To explain the proclamation which our President saw fit to issue on the 15th of this month, we unanimously state: that after having carefully considered the insolent proclamation of him who even imagines himself our sovereign, on having taken account of the threats and impostures which it contains, and being satisfied that it has had no other tendency than that of deceiving those who may read it in a foreign country, we have determined to correct the errors which it contains, not only to make them known outside the country but also to dissuade our tyrant from persisting in perpetuating this satanic administration in our Republic.

Señor Mora, in his proclamation pretends that for his dearly beloved country of Costarica, he determined to make a trip to Nicaragua, for the purpose of seeing how he could settle the boundary question, a question which arose between the two sister republics some time back. Without at present investigating how our President understands the sisterhood, we will only point out that this is a false imputation, since his trip (according to his message to Congress) had no other object than that of exhibiting his execrable person in the other republics of Central America, whither he went, shielded as he was by his conceit and believing perhaps, that he would stand for something in them, and that it would be easy for him to deceive their inhabitants, in imitation of Soulouque to proclaim himself Emperor of Central America, just as the latter is of Haiti.

With such hopes he left this city on the 17th of last April with a large retinue, the complement, no doubt, of the great caravan which arrived on the 22d of the same month at San Juan del Sur (in Nicaragua). Going from there to Rivas, where our President made the exchange of treaties already celebrated with Nicaragua which had put an end to the conflict sought by himself, attempting to appropriate for himself the line of transit which he had so often dreamed of realizing on his own account in order to guard it better, in case other filibusters should want to usurp it for Nicaragua— All of which proves the falsity of the pretext of his trip. Now our President says in his proclamation that a few discontented people taking advantage of an anonymity divulge a thousand pretexts to take away the virtue of his noble acts. He likewise pretends that he does not wish any of our gratitude, satisfying himself with finding it in the depths of his own conscience, by his own praises and with reserving to himself, as he says,

the doing of justice to our general discontent. A great imposture: the discontented ones are not few, but we are the majority of the Costarican people, for, excepting the relatives and accomplices of *Señor* Mora, all the remainder, all, despite his administration. The following acts will show the reason.

We now see for what we have to thank the administration of Mora & Company, and the good which we have received from it in the period of nine years during which its absolutism has weighed upon our unsuccessful Republic. These we find in part in a series of charges which were published in its honor, at the beginning of this year, in a South-American paper, from which we extract the following,

"He has trampled the Constitution under foot, leaving it without life."

"He has been a perjurer, violating the oath which he had taken before God and man to support the constitution."

"He has usurped the legislative power, power which resides solely in the sovereign people, for it has created, by force of corruption, intrigues or infamy, an assembly of deputies (the approvers of his acts), taken partly from the bosom of his family and partly without ability, ousting the legitimate representatives of the people because they did not obey him.

"He has usurped the judicial power, appointing judges without the ability to judge, or who are molded to give judgment to win the approbation of Mora. He has elevated himself personally to an absolute tribunal. He has pronounced sentence in many cases in which he himself was plaintiff and defendant; he has annulled judgments without appeal, thus destroying every form of individual guarantee; he has compromised his country with foreign countries by his wicked acts.

He has disposed of private property, he himself capriciously legislating for his own benefit or that of his relatives.

He has disposed of the public money, misapplying part of it; and appropriating the larger part to himself; disposing of it without ever rendering account of its investment. He has created a multitude of unnecessary offices in which to place his relatives, associates and accomplices.

He has divided his dictatorship with his brother who exercises military authority; he has raised an army from the flower of the country to have it wage war on a newspaper, because it disclosed part of his wicked deeds; he (together with his brother) has cowardly abandoned that same army, allowing it to perish from hunger, pestilence and poverty by fleeing from Rivas in April 1856.

For these and many other analogous acts, *Señor* Mora complains that we are not grateful to him. What will the near future, say when we state that: In March 1856 you took to Nicaragua the flower of our youth to make war on a little newspaper, taking them under the pretext of liberating our brothers, the Nicaraguans, from the tyranny of Walker! Vain pretext! Who is to blame for the sufferings of Nicaragua, of our own people, and, finally, of those of all Central America? To solve this question we need only remind *Señor* Mora that he is the one who fomented the revolution in Nicaragua, that he supplied sums of money and a large amount of arms and ammunition to the democratic party to carry on the war against the legitimists, that

these sums of money were paid out of the public treasury of Costarica by his order; that, in consequence of this revolution, Walker was called to Nicaragua; that consequently we can say, quoting the principle of right which says: "he who is the cause of the causes, is responsible for the result." The administration of Mora is not only the cause of our misfortunes, but those of all Central America in these latter years.

Señor Mora tells us in his proclamation, that Providence has wished to prove our resignation and our valor, war, the plague and the locust have struck us successively. We can say to him that he has wished to try our patience with these plagues, granted that what he attributes to Providence, is in the greater part his own work.— The war because it is he more than anyone who has brought it about, as we have said before; and the plague broke out in Rivas in consequence of the war, of the inability of the Mora brothers, and above all owing to their cowardly flight. But, enough speculation over these two calamities: proof of them, the immense sums extracted from the Public Treasury, whose investment is not yet known to anyone with the exception of *Señor Mora* who, we hope, at no distant day will render an account of them.

The locust, this plague for which we cannot account and which is caused by *Señor Mora*, none the less served as a great speculation; a proof, no doubt, of his love for his very dear people of Costarica. It has been about 3 years since Costarica was invaded by the locust. His Excellency saw fit to declare war upon it. To that end he issued a decree, in the form of martial law by which every citizen was obliged to serve his turn [working] eight days in the country against the insect, and those who do not wish to go in person, should pay ten dollars each time his turn came. This was agreed to by all, but, what was our surprise when we learned that in place of making war on the locust, more than 100 men were being employed daily for many months in destroying the weeds in the canals of the "*Ojos de Agua*," on the *hacienda* of President Mora, and that the sum of the quota of 10 pesos paid by those who did not work in person was used to buy beef at double the current price, from *Señor Mora* to maintain the peons who thus cleaned his *hacienda* gratis.

These are acts of the paternal administration— *Mora's* acts which we all recognize and for which, no doubt, we should thank him, according to his ideas.

We could cite much more in detail to you, but we will omit it for the present and only hope that he whom he calls his director or the maker of his proclamations, may cite as virtue only one of these charges, in order to publish a collection of the deeds and the documents which support them.

We believe this is enough, that *Señor Mora* will not insist on remaining, as he shows his desire to, with the very flattering task of preserving that which he calls to himself the interior order, and in order that as soon as possible (would that it might have been sooner) he may fulfill his threat of departing far, very far, from power, for which we will be more obliged to him than if he had compelled us to use the right which all people have against the tyrants.— Amen

San José, May 20, 1858

SOME COSTARICANS

[Endorsed:] Los Habitantes of Costa Rica

No. 2632. LAMAR TO SEBASTAIN MARENCO

[Translation from the Spanish]

Managua May 30 1858.

Copy

MY FRIEND.

Because you will leave very early tomorrow and I may not see you, permit me to tell you that I shall remain in Managua until you return here; and then I shall be much pleased to accompany you to Leon; and from there to Granada. When I go to Costa Rica, I want your son to be my companion.

I am your most attentive Servant

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

Señor D. Sebastian Marengo

Note. Marengo lives in Granada

[Endorsed:] Copy of a Spanish note to Mr Marengo of Granada
30 May 1858

No. 2635. LAMAR TO GREGORIO JUAREZ

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Managua, Nicaragua, June 23, 1858]

To Señor JUAREZ,

MY DEAR FRIEND,

Col. Bermudez has loaned me the first number of your newspaper "*El Nacional*"; and it pleases me very much to know that, resigning your office as Minister of Foreign affairs, you have not forgotten your country, and that you have only exchanged the manner of serving it, exchanging the work of the Cabinet for the more laborious and not less responsible work of the press.— Believe me, my esteemed friend, that I desire that you succeed in your new enterprise, and attain the reward which is always due, but is not always paid to the incorruptible patriot. I have had some experience in editing a paper and I can sympathize with you in the troubles and vexations to which all who mix in political affairs are destined.— The best counsel that I can give you is to use *the strongest arguments and the blindest words*; which was my device when I played the role of editor. Moderation in all things is a virtue; but it is more necessary in public discussions than in others; because, without it all that is written cannot fail to produce more harm than good, inflaming the passions without convincing the understanding.

I remember, my friend, our past official relations with much satisfaction, because of the cordial spirit and the confidence with which they were conducted, on your part, as well as mine. Nor will it be easy for me to forget the agreeable hours passed in pleasant and social intercourse with your amiable family. Please say to your wife that I can scarcely pardon her— almost the only person with whom I maintained very friendly relations— for leaving Managua so suddenly. I can only take into consideration that you are still serving your country in Leon as I am in Managua.— I hope that some favorable occasion will present itself for us again to have some of our old talks. For the present, adios.—

Your dear friend and Servant—

M. B. L.[AMAR]

No. 2644. JOSÉ DEBRIN TO LAMAR

General MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR AND RESPECTED GOD-FATHER

I did not know that you were leaving so early in the morning. I am sorry not to have seen you before you left.

You may write to me whatever you wish me to do for you I will do it very *very* willingly.

I would like that you would pay a visit in my name to the Vicar Reverend Rafael Jerez. He is a very intelligent, amiable, and respectable person. You will be greatly pleased with him.

I suppose you are living at the house of Mrs. Juarez. I have no doubt she and Mr Juarez will make agreeable to you your staying at Leon.

Please tell Mr Juarez that I have written to him a letter through Mr Dolores Bermudez enclosing another for Vicar Jerez with a medal for the said Reverend—

Dont forget to send me your orders. I will write and do for you whatever you may order me.

Try to be gay—and happy in Leon

Mrs. Debrin wishes you to come here very Soon and is ready to talk with you in Spanish and to *pet you* as a god-daughter.

Good bye my dear general I am always with true affection and profound respect

Your devoted Servant

[Managua,] 17. July. [1858]

J. DEBRIN

My respects to Schlesinger and Fitzgerald

No. 2650. GREGORIO JUAREZ TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Leon, July 26, 1858.

General MIRABEAU B. LAMAR,

SIR:

I think that you must have seen in the New York Herald a diplomatic document signed by Presidents Mora and Martinez in the City of Rivas, addressed to the Governments of France and England, and in which document they refer to statements relative to Your Excellency which are very alarming for Central America. I can and should assure Your Excellency that *Señores* Martinez and Mora were informed of the truth of those statements; that they were opposed to giving them credit, and that they only considered them of importance after they were commanded to secure facts and to prove them; but in spite of this the official conduct of Your Excellency with regard to the laws of neutrality of the United States and the Independence of Nicaragua gives the lie to those reports.

Although this explanation is not directed to your Excellency in any official character, I feel obliged to prove it in my character of citizen of Nicaragua and because I was serving the Government in the office of Foreign Affairs at that time.

To illustrate: the wisdom and experience of Your Excellency can-

not fail to comprehend the delicate position in which Nicaragua and all the other countries of Central America find themselves. If they seek their safety in the identity of principles with those of the United States, they bring upon themselves the antipathies of the other world: If they appeal to the European governments, they excite the hatred of the great Republic to which Your Excellency belongs; and if they aspire to an agreement with both, those powers are at once put into conflict with one another and these States are left without the protection of anyone. Fortunately, the day is not far distant when we can understand each other better, since the ratification of the Treaty in question opens the way to an amicable termination to all that has passed.

In the document to which I refer, and which the Herald copies, I notice that the place in which it was made (the City of Rivas) has been confused with the name of Don Patricio Rivas, perhaps in the belief that he, as provisional ex-President, had concurred in it. This mistake could give birth to dangerous caviling of the legal administration of the Republic with which the provisional Administration has no connection, except in the act approved by the Constituent Assembly.

I hope that Your Excellency will be satisfied with this explanation given you, although I give it as a private citizen.

Your friend and servant

G. JUAREZ. [Rubric]

No. 2651. GREGORIO JUAREZ TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Leon, July 26, 1858.

General MIRABEAU B. LAMAR,
Resident Minister of the United States in Nicaragua.

DEAR SIR:

Since this morning when I saw in the New York Herald that your Excellency addresses me in your very courteous note of this same date, I have written the letter which I have the honor to enclose in this for your Excellency. The cause of its delay has been due to the fact that the copyist made errors in two copies, one of which is the enclosed, and, although it bears corrections, [I am sending it] because I do not want to delay longer.

Your Excellency, I believe, will be convinced that Messrs. Mora and Martinez have not thought of offending your good name, but only of protecting the rights of their respective Republics, without harboring any kind of personal prejudice toward you or your compatriots.

The conduct of your Excellency with respect to the Cass-Yrisarri treaty has been as pleasing as could be expected in your Excellency's judgment. The character of our discussions was that of frankness and good faith, according as it appears from the memorial which I made to the government and which, signed by your Excellency, I laid before the Constituent Assembly; and in none of the conversations which we had has your Excellency ever made any threat or given any reason to believe that this country might again be invaded by filibusters in case the Cass-Yrisarri treaty should fail to be ratified, but on the contrary, your Excellency has always given the strongest assurances that Mr. Buchanan would not permit the filibusters to return here, whether the treaty

should be ratified or not. But as your Excellency has frequently expressed fears that the act of rejecting the treaty might produce a bad effect in the United States and prevent that harmony which your Excellency wished to promote, this has doubtless been what some have interpreted as the ultimatum mentioned in the document to which your Excellency has referred.

With the sincerest hopes that Your Excellency may be satisfied regarding *Señores* Martinez and Mora of whose integrity I would have the great honor of being a guarantor, were not my personal condition so humble, I beg you again to accept the esteem and respect which has always been paid your Excellency by your friend and affectionate servant.

G. JUAREZ [Rubric]

No. 2652. GREGORIO JUAREZ TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[León? Nicaragua, July 27? 1858]

[In Lamar's hand:] *This note is from Juarez.*

FRIEND:

I think it would be proper for you to write me confidentially a letter similar to the one which you thought of writing to the government; and if there is no objection, it would be better if it were the same one. I am very much moved by the eloquent and sublime manner in which you express your ideas, and I should like my friends to know you through your writings, since we do not have the good fortune to understand your words in a different language.

[JUAREZ]

No. 2653. PATRICIO RIVAS TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Leon, Nicaragua, July 31./1858.

SIR

The London Times, the New York Herald, the Panama Star & Herald and other newspapers which have come up today have published the manifesto which under date of the 1st of last May were signed in the City of Rivas by the Presidents of Nicaragua and Costa Rica, D. Tomas Martinez and D. Juan Rafael Mora; and, as on translating said document into English, the error was committed of putting my signature to it, confusing my Name *Rivas* with the name of the City *Rivas*, I find myself obliged to correct such mistake, declaring to you that I had not signed it, nor did I have any intention to sign such a document which contains considerations so grave.

In acknowledgment of the honor and respect which the Government of the United States and its worthy Minister in Nicaragua have shown to me I think it proper to address the present communication to you, taking advantage of the opportunity to offer to you the assurances of my special esteem and to subscribe myself

Your very obedient Servant

PATRICIO RÍVAS [Rubric]

Ex-President of Nicaragua

[Endorsed:] Letter From Patricio Rivas Ex. President of Nicaragua

Leon de Nicaragua July 31st 1858. respecting the Declaration signed in Rivas 1st May.

No. 2654. "NATIONALITY" IN *EL NACIONAL*, VOL. I,
NO. VIII

Leon, Nicaragua July 31, 1858

[Translation from the Spanish.]

It is proper likewise that the representatives should at least be residents of the Department to which the district or division which appoints them may belong and that the senators be residents of the State which they are to represent for two years before their election in order to avoid the people appointing them without knowing them, with the mistaken idea of freedom of choice in electing them from the republic at large, and in order to avoid the parties seeking their followers in the farthest corners in order to appoint them. Thus, we will have representatives actuated by the opinions of their people, who may know their sufferings and their necessities, and who on their return may inform them of how they have been remedied, and of all the rest that may have been done in the matter of legislation, government, and national justice. With respect to the senators securing the same relative advantages for their respective States, they may likewise guard against the inconveniences which must result to the State that appoints them from the outside; in the same proportion that the one is lacking in its representation, the other of those [deputies and senators] who had been appointed from residence would double its representation and perhaps triple it with equal blunders that the other State would commit, because men are always affected by their surroundings and what touches nearest to their comfort. (The Constitution of 24 did not require residence for a Deputy nor for a Senator, leaving the liberty of appointing them from the Republic at large. Over and above all the defects, which already have been related in the foregoing notes, let us consider what this poorly conceived liberty would produce; the deputies would not know the people who appointed them, neither would the senators, nor would they need for their small functions to know the authorities of the State which they represented, nor have any relations with them: the parties on directing the elections, would seek their followers and if they did not find any within the electoral district, they would stretch their vision over all the Republic, and discovering him they would have him appointed and they would call him even though he were in the farthest corner. What good could such an election produce? when those who sought to choose would not know the one chosen? This very enormous defect of the Constitution of 24, was also chosen by the reform of 35, because it was not possible to bring it about, that many interested in being appointed in this vicious and prejudicial manner, which existed in the Congress, would not wish to renounce the right which that gave them of being able to be elected deputies or senators from the whole republic. In all the States of the North residence is demanded for these offices as has been said of the National Constitution of those same States, and the State which demanded least, demands the residence of the appointee in the place at the time of the election.)

It is necessary that the employees appointed by the National Government should not be deputies or senators, in order that he who already has the power of vetoing the laws which do not seem good to him, may not appoint deputies and senators, who for other considerations than those of the public good, may refuse to ratify the laws. And since both bodies are his judges in the mistakes that he commits, this also may prevent the monstrosity of having his own agents as such.

(The Constitution of 24 only prohibited deputies to be nominated from the employees of the Government, in the place in which they were exercising the duties of office, and permitted any other to be a deputy, thus verifying the monstrosity that those appointed by the President may reelect him, and his subalterns, who receive their appointment from his hand, should be his judges. Consider the immorality which such opposite functions would have involved in themselves and the lamentable result in the opinion of all, whether well or badly executed, they would produce on the nation.)

It is equally expedient that the deputies and senators may always be reelected, but should not be obliged to serve except after a period of intermission. Who will be so imprudent as to take away his power from anyone who has discharged his duties well and entirely to his satisfaction, in order to experiment with another at the expense of his interest? but since the will of the representatives whom the people or States may nominate is not consulted save for the fact that on being appointed they are obliged to serve because they have been elected, if the continuity of this service does prejudice their interests, it is not right that they be forced to serve to their injury all their life, and for this reason that limitation is placed which does not exempt them from being obliged to serve in the course of their life.

(The Constitution of 24 committed this inconceivable error prohibiting the people from continuing in their powers those who have known how to discharge them, although these might wish to hold their offices. The reform of 35 took away this limitation but without distinguishing the different durations of the terms, it obliged them to serve with only the interval of one year which is not just respecting the senators who hold office six years, respecting the President and Vice-president who hold office four, as it will be respecting the deputies who serve only two.)

We have the legislative power organized said the North Americans, it remains for us to establish the Executive and Judicial. With regard to the first we should consider that if, in order to give force to the laws we have thought it suitable to have recourse to the nation for appointing the deputies to Congress or the house of representatives, more care should be put on the executive, we ought to try to give it to him in order that he may deserve it or, better said, he may have the national vote. It is then proper that all the nation elect him by a majority of the votes, and if it does not come out that he is designated by a majority of the votes let the Congress choose him from among those having the majority. On account of this body having the same origin, and the character of being representative of the nation, and in order that the States may be satisfied concerning the examination of the votes, in a business so important it has been practiced with due exactness and integrity, the Senate will agree to the opening of the

ballots and to the counting of the votes, retiring after they have published it, if a popular vote resulted, or if not, in order that Congress may verify it from among those who have had a majority which likewise it will make known.

(The Constitution of 24 did not give this guarantee leaving it only to Congress when there was to be an election of President.)

The President must not be less than thirty years of age and he must be a land owner in order that he join prudence to action and guarantee the national property his term should be four years, he being eligible to reelection only once. If his services are useful the nation will avail itself of them for all this time; but it is proper that it should not go beyond that in order that his relations may not be perpetuated in spite of the nation itself, and that others may try, to rule it well in case of his absence (See note eight)

In order that he may fill temporarily the absence of the President we need a Vice-President. Who shall elect him? As in such cases his functions are the same as those of the President, we should choose him in the same manner; but likewise at the same time it is proper that this functionary preside over the Senate, and that in these functions he is identified with this body, we recommend to it the regulation of the veto of his appointment, and election in case of their being no popular vote.

(The Constitution of 24 gave to Congress the election of this official, introducing him thus in the organization of the Senate, who by other arrangements was already dependent on it.)

No. 2658. LAMAR TO GREGORIO JUAREZ

City of Leon 3rd August 1858.

Al Sr. Lic. Don GREGORIO JUAREZ

DEAR SIR,

Being suddenly called to Managua, without having time to take personal leave of my friends, I must beg of you the favor of allowing me to return, through the columns of the National, my grateful acknowledgements for the kind and flattering attentions which I have received from the good people of Leon during my brief sojourn in the place. With my best wishes for the happiness of all; as well as an ardent desire for the preservation of peace, and good will between our respective countries— a sentiment which I have every reason to believe is fully reciprocated by the citizens of Leon— I beg leave to subscribe myself, very respectfully, Your Obt. Servt.—

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

No. 2659. C. G. BAYLOR TO LAMAR

U. S. Consulate Manchester 6th Aug /58

MY DEAR SIR:

Allow me to introduce my friend Mr Synge, who goes to Central America in the diplomatic service of England. You will find him a nice fellow and any attention shown him I will appreciate.

My last letters from Texas represent Judge Baylor (my uncle) as

in good health & spirits. I hope some day to have him over here with me.

With best wishes for your health & commending my friend to you
Believe me Yours faithfully

C. G. BAYLOR.

No. 2665. JOHN DESHON TO LAMAR

Leon Augt 22d 1858 .

Hon Gen M B LAMAR
Managua

MY DEAR GENERAL

By the bearer Mariano Chavis I send you the package of correspondence recd yesterday pr Steamer. I have agreed you should pay the bearer five Dollars for his trip & that he shall stay in Managua five days in order to bring back your correspondence. should you detain him longer than the five days you will pay him two rials pr day, & you will also have to furnish him with his food while detained in Managua

On receipt of your letter the other day I made enquiries for your Seal, but it could not be found Mercede thinks it could not have been left in her house

I think I heard you say you never read the Herald, but I would call your attention to the declaration made by Mr Augustin Bernard, & published in the N Y Herald of the 5th of July

I am yours truly

JOHN J. DESHON

[Addressed:] Hon General M B Lamar Minister Residente de los
E Un in Nicaragua Managua

No. 2667. JOSÉ DEBRIN'S DRAFT OF LAMAR'S LETTER TO
STATE DEPARTMENT

[Managua, August 26? 1858]

The following letter has been principally intended to persuade the advantages which Nacaragua would necessarily draw from the Cass Irri-sarri Treaty. None of the statements brings with it any menace or threat, although very often it presents the evil results which in my opinion would be an inevitable consequence of the rejection of the friendship of the United States and of their protection of the transit route.

The letter was written in moments of great excitement in the minds of the leaders of this country; excitement, which I had no doubt was principally caused by the insidious influence of foreign intermedlers: a great part of the arguments Although I could not get positive evidence of the details and individual proceedings of Such an interference yet I knew it existed—and hence the greatest part of the letter is directed to destroy the action of those wrong influences: Feeling, however, after having written it that it was not a suitable document for official correspondence I read such portions of it to Minister Gregorio Juarez, as I thought might produce a good effect on his mind: and at his request the same were read to some of the members of the Legislature chosen and assembled by said Senor Juarez, who proposed the

meeting and the reading because he said, it would aid him in the passage of the Treaty by the Assembly, and all who were there present did vote for the ratification which took place three days afterwards. I now send the document as originally written merely for the purpose of letting my government know the views that I had on this Subject, and also to prevent its being hereafter misrepresented and how well I had read their thoughts and intentions of this government in the midst of the darkness in which they wished—and thought—to have involved me : . . . [unfinished]

I requested Mr. Debrin, my Secretary, to write an explanatory Note in relation to my Letter to Juarez on the subject of the Cass-Irizarri Treaty—he penned the above hasty lines, but never finished them—

M. B. LAMAR—

It will be seen that he wrote in my person

[Endorsed:] Letter By Mr Debrin relating to my Letter to Juarez on the Cass Irizarri Treaty Managua

No. 2677. AUG F' KINT DE ROODENBECK TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish] Puntarenas September 18, 1858.

ESTEEMED SIR AND FRIEND,

I have regretted much that we did not see each other before I left San José. You had made me hope that I should see you the morning of the 16th. Likewise, you had made me hope for a few words of recommendation for the Captain of the Columbus.— Doubtless you know that you have in me a true friend and that you can hold this idea in Guatemala as well as in any other part of the world. But I think that friendship is like love in that it should be mutual in order to produce happy results. Take this idea simply as the manifestation of my desire that our friendship may not be only for a day, but for life.

I hope that you will have made satisfactory arrangements with the President of Costa-Rica. Since entering freely into the discussion of a difficulty, one can do no less than to settle it to the interest of both parties. I have had a real joy in hearing in our conference with the President and the Secretary of Foreign Affairs the expression of your sentiments, worthy of the representative of a powerful nation which knows that it can neither be nor remain great except by being just.

It shall please me very much to receive news of you in Guatemala. Tell me if you arrange definitely with the Government of Costa-Rica, as it has been understood, during the mediation which you undertook with so much pleasure.

I remain as always your most affectionate friend and attentive Servant

AUG. F' KINT DE ROODENBECK

To His Excellency Mirabeau B. Lamar, Minister Resident, etc, etc, at San José, Costa Rica.

No. 2680. CLAUDIO CURBELO TO LAMAR

San Juan— Sept 1858

Genl LAMAR

DEAR SIR

I regret very much not being able to see you when you took the trouble to pay San Juan a visit.— But I find by the note Mr Priest gave me,

that I am not forgotten by you, and the satisfaction it affords more than pays me for not being able to see you,

The assurance I now have that you are doing all in your power by pressing the claims of Americans gives me new courage Immediately on the reception of your note, I set about preparing my papers:

I have made two protests, one against Costa-rica and one against Nicaragua I hope they will meet your approval A great difficulty arose at first how to get a safe conduct for them as no mail matter is very safe in this country at the present time but we have settled it at last by sending one whome we can trust with evry wish for your health and happiness,— I remain

Yours very respectfully

CLAUDIO CURBELO [Rubric]

No. 2682. D. C. WALSH TO LAMAR

Phila Oct 4th 1858

M B LAMAR

Minister at Nicaragua

DR. SIR

At the advice of the Hon Jno R Thomson U S Senator from New Jersey I take the liberty of addressing you to ascertain if through your business relations you could obtain for me any information of a young man of the name of James B Walsh for Several years in Nicaragua

He was at one time employed as a pilot on one of the lake Steamers afterwards with Walker for a few months— The last heard from him was in the Summer of 1856 by letter in which he stated that he was in the coasting trade at either Nicaragua or Costa Rica I am unable to say which

Any information you could obtain would releive the mind of an anxious parent

Enclosed I remit an American dollar with which to pay postage

Your obt Servt

D. C. WALSH

Cam & Amboy R. R. Office Phila
Penna U. S. A

No. 2683. JAMES THOMAS TO LAMAR

New York Oct. 5th 1858

Genl MIRABEAU B LAMAR

U. S. Minister to Nicaragua

DEAR SIR,

I take pleasure in informing you that my prolonged visit to New York has been attended with more success than I could have hoped before I left Nicaragua. I have succeeded in obtaining credit for one of the best assorted cargoes of merchandise ever purchased for our market. I have also associated myself with Mr John E Russell a young merchant of this city who will accompany me to Granada—his wife will form one of our party— Mrs Russell is young accomplished and agreeable and will form a great addition to our society I can promise you great pleasure in her acquaintance— I am sorry to say that the notorious W. R. C.

Webster knowing of our adventure endeavoured to connect himself with us and even went so far as to as to [*sic*] write by the last mail, that he was going in our company—all of which I need not say was false— He is now threatening us with vengeance unless we purchase his silence. He intends denouncing us as *filibusters*, persons of no character &c addressing his letters to Pres. Mora—& Martinez and as he expresses it “crushing us at the start”

We hope that your influence and protection hitherto extended to honest and industrious Americans will be fully exerted to counteract any influence Mr. Webster may bring against us. We intend sailing with our cargo for Greytown about the 8th inst:— and by the time we arrive we hope to greet you successfully returned from Costa Rica

Respectfully Yours

JAMES THOMAS.

No. 2684. M. F. GOVAN TO LAMAR

Montgomery Alabama Oct 11th 1858

Gen MARRIBEAU LAMAR)
San Jose Costa Rica)

DEAR SIR

I had a brother who joined Genl Walkers army in Nicaragua in April 1856, We were informed that when Genl W surrendered the 1st time in 1857 that he went to Costa Rica, he enlisted at New Orleans, but was originally from Virginia. Thinking you might probably hear from him in San Jose I have written to request you to use your endeavors to do so, None of his family have heard from him since April or May 1857, he was then alive & in Genl W's army, We of course feel very much not knowing whether he is dead or alive, he is 28 years of age weighs from 160 to 165, dark hair little or no beard, he may probably be in to Costa Rican army if alive. Any thing that you can do, for us in finding out his whereabouts if alive & where he died if dead, will be duly appreciated

Yours very truly

M. F. GOVAN

P S. I have seen Genl Walker and he did not recollect him We have the information from some of the Officers that he remained in the country, & then went to Costa Rica

No. 2687. GEORGE GWIER TO LAMAR

Cartago [Costa Rica] Oct 27 /58—

Gen M. B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR

It is with feelings of the greatest pleasure, that I've read the late papers from our Country, in which I see that at last, our Govt has aroused itself from its late “Masterly inactivity & feels disposed not to allow itself to be kicked & insulted any more by countries, who shield themselves under the petticoats of their weakness, & I also feel gratified that my country sent to these shores M. B. Lamar to see

things as they exist to study them & thereby properly inform his govt so that they may protect their interests for the future

General allow me as a private individual to extend to you my most sincere thanks & to assure you that I breathe more freely to day than I have for the last 3 years & that henceforward I shall feel secure & be able to thank God that my mother bro't me forth under the canopy of the American flag.

General I've suffered much, but I now hope that my past sufferings will appear slight, in comparison to the security for the future

My dear General you must be wearied by so long a struggle; dont you think it would be well to relay somewhat? Could you not make it convenient to spend some little time with me in Cartago. I think the bracing north breese would revive you, & as I know you are fond of nature (as all poets are), you would, be pleased with the scenery around about here, where nature has done so much, & man so little, do come, you can bring your writing & your Secretary,— Hoping you will excuse the liberty of addressing you, & expecting to see you here in Cartago in a few days

I am your ardent admirer

GEORGE GWIER

[Addressed:] Honble M. B. Lamar— Minister Resid de los E. U. San José C. R in hotel de San Jose

No. 2688. JOSÉ DEBRIN TO LAMAR

Confidential.

Leon. Octbr. 27th 1858

MY VERY DEAR GENERAL, AND *Godfather*:

The letter you had the kindness to forward to me, through Mr. Claudio Curbelo, has reached me at Leon on the 25th instant.

It was from Mrs. Cazneau, and contained within it, the enclosed note for you.

Mrs. Cazneau writes to me very kindly wishing [*sic*] me to remain at your side; and she seems desirous to have me appointed by the Government Secretary of Legation.

She adds that "at your request the appointment will be easily obtained."

Now, General, I do not know whether you would prefer to have me appointed for your Secretary, rather than to have any other. If really you think that I may be useful as Secretary of Legation, as a matter of course no situation in the world would fit better my desires than your Secretar[y]ship. I request you, therefore, in case you do not dislike my services, to write in the way that you consider most efficacious to the State Department, in order to favor my appointment.

I have tried here, at Leon, the professorship of mother and foreign languages; but the Country is so extremely poor, that I am now fully convinced that I will never be able to get in Leon, out of my lessons, even *the half* of my necessary expenses: although we are not, either I, or my wife, for the least extravagant.

Could you believe it? I have been for seven weeks teaching every day *six hours* at the University and in private houses and I have not yet been able to collect *a single dime* from my lessons!

The product of a months teachings has been as a total sum, not yet collected—of *twenty two* dollars! What do you think of that?

I was expecting by this Steamer one hundred dollars from Philadelphia—and no letters, not even newspapers, are come for me, nor for the merchant, through whose house the money must come.

Patience! . . . but, as you see, a Secretar[y]ship of Legation, under such circumstances, is not to be spurn. I recommend me—and your God-daughter, Mrs. Debrin,—to your kindness, and if you think I am fitted for the Legation's service, please, urge efficiently my appointment—you will do thus an act of charity.

Mrs. Debrin has been touched at your kind remembrance of her, and wishes me to tell you that she is ready to take Care of you, with all good attention, as soon as you come back to this country—or if at any time I am called, with her, to Costa-Rica. She is well in health and there are not yet signs of any future god-grand-daughter for you. I am, it seems, a good-for-nothing fellow,—if *she* is good for something. But, never despair!

There is in this city (and to morrow he leaves for Costa Rica on board of the Columbus) a very sensible young merchant and agricultor, Don Pedro Alvarado—costarican by birth— He has proved to be a very sincere friend to me. He has pushed me th[r]ough the *teachable* world and I am much indebted to him for many little services. Amongst these, one has been to abstain from claiming from me *ten dollars* I borrowed from him—and which I have not been able to give him back before his departure— the Columbus having failed to bring me \$100— I expected from the States.

I have told him that "*perhaps* you would give him some money for me," and asked him to take it with him in order to settle my accounts with him. If you are, then, in *very good way* to deprive you of the sum of *ten dollars*, you will oblige me by giving it to Mr. Alvarado: and the first time there is any good occasion, I will not fail to settle with you this small account.

If you are short of money—there is no harm in it—because I have not told Mr. Alvarado that you *had* to give me any money—only that *perhaps* you would have some few dollars to forward to me.

General: I do not speak politics to you because nothing—absolutely nothing—has transpired in this city of what the Columbus has brought—*Nobody* has received here any letter from the States—not even the wife and family of Genl. Jerez. It seems that this time there has been a general confiscation and secuestration of foreign correspondence. Perhaps when the letters shall have been examined at Managua—where probably they have been sent to—they will be brought back to Leon to their owners. What a mortal System of post-office communication—! What strange sanctity of family— secrecy! Well— let them open now all foreign letters— Perhaps one day will come when they shall not open any more belonging to american citizens I wish this time would have come.

Take care of you, General, and tell me whether your health is improving at San Jose.

Do not fail to write and send your commands to your sincere friend
and

Most obedient Servant

J. DEBRIN.

Honble M. B. Lamar U. S. Minister Resident at S. José de Costa Rica.

[Endorsed:] Letter from J. Debrin October 27th 1858

No. 2690. JOSÉ M. CAÑAS TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

San José [Costa Rica] October 30, 1858.

SIR,

His Excellency, the Honorable President of this Republic desiring to give to the Honorable General Lamar a testimony of the appreciation with which he regards him and to see him assembled with some of the native sons and principal residents of this City, has, with such object, arranged to give to His Excellency the Honorable Minister of the United States a Banquet which will take place at the "Hotel de San José" on the first of the next month, November, at four in the afternoon, and he has charged me to join him in requesting of Your Excellency that you deign to accept this slight demonstration.

I have the honor of signing myself for the first time the Hon. Gen. Lamar's

Very Attentive Servant

JOSÉ M. CANAS [Rubric]

To His Excellency General Mirabeau B. Lamar Minister of the U. S. &c.&c.&c.

No. 2691. LAMAR TO JOSÉ MARIA CAÑAS

Legation of the United-States in Costa Rica.

San Jose 30th. October 1858.

SIR.

I have received your Excellency's note of this date, inviting me to partake of a Banquet which his Excellency the worthy President of the Republic has ordered in honor of the Minister Resident of the United States near this Government. Your Excellency will please inform the President that I shall be most happy to unite with him and his friends on that occasion at the hour and place designated.—

I accept the compliment in the name of my nation; and in its behalf, I beg leave to assure His Excellency the President that so distinguished an honor to its humble representative cannot fail to be hailed by it as the harbinger of concord & confidence between two countries which have so many reasons to be friends and none to be otherwise. In tendering my official appreciation and personal regards to the worthy President, your Excellency will please accept the same for yourself.

I have the honor to be very respectfully your most obedient servant.

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

To His Excellency Señor Dn. José Ma. Cañas Minister of War and Treasury of the Republic of Costa-Rica.

[Endorsed:] Letter to General Cañas accepting President Mora's Invitation to—a banquet— dated San Jose 30th. Oct. 1858

No. 2693. EARL FLINT TO LAMAR

San Juan del Sur Nov 7 /1858

Gen. M. B. LAMAR U. S. Minister of Legation
San José Costa Rica

DEAR SIR

In molesting you, it is to request the alteration of a date in the Copy of my "Protest" against Nica"

The error occurs at the commencement— this "in the year A. D. one thousand and fifty FOUR" it *should* read fifty FIVE &c please do me the favor to correct the error.

The agents of Stebbins & White have arrived, they were detained at "Castillo," consequently the passengers had to go by the way of Panama One Steamer the "Laura Frances" they have brought into the lake.

The "Decatur" is in Realejo—

Yours with Respect

EARL FLINT

No. 2694. "THE BELLE OF NINDIRI." LAMAR

Adieu ye Belles of colder climes,
With all your Snowy whiteness;
Your beauty is a Northern-light,
That chills amidst its brightness;
But welcome to the gay Brunett,
With soul of fire and eye of jet,
Light dancing to the castinet—
The Belle of Nindiri.—

How sweet to hear at Summer eve,
Her song among the Mangoes,
And see her glance like fire-flies
Along the gay fandangoes.—
Her form is light— her spirit bright,
To all a sunbeam of delight,
A Rose by day, and Star by night—
The Belle of Nindiri.—

O, lend to me Sweet Nightingale
Your music by the fountains;
And lend to me your cadences,
O, rivers of the mountains.
I fain in song would eter[n]ize,
A brighter light than Hellen's eyes
A jewel drop'd us from the skies—
The Belle of Nindiri.—

Behold the rosey dawn of day,
Whose light the lark is hailing;
And mark the universal smile
Of joy, o'er all prevailing.—

Such is the day-break of her face
 Diffusing joy in every place—
 The *bright aurora* of her race—
 The Belle of Nindiri.—

O, lovely maid of Nindiri,
 Bewildering and beguiling;
 The lute is in thy silver tones,
 The rainbow in thy smiling;
 And thine is too, o'er hill and dell,
 The bounding of the young gazelle—
 The swallow's flight, and ocean's swell—
 The Belle of Nindiri.—

What though we part to meet no more,
 O, Spirit pure and tender,
 The bard will bear in distant lands
 The memory of thy splendor;
 He'll ne'er forget, his gay Brunett,
 The diamond spark in coral set—
 Gem for a prince's coronet—
 The Belle of Nindiri.—

San José 7th Novr 1858

No. 2697. LAMAR TO JUAN RAFAEL MORA

Legation of the U. S. of America
 San José, November 12th 1858

MOST EXCELLENT SIR—

Circumstances require my immediate presence in Nicaragua. I regret the necessity of a temporary absence from this Republic, and this the more particularly as my observation and the intercourse which I have had with Your Excellency during my stay here have established the conviction in my my [*sic*] mind that the welfare and happiness of the people of this country is the great object sought to be attained by the present Government, and in the accomplishment of this patriotic purpose, my coöperation with Your Excellency would at once fulfill the wishes of my Government and my own ardent desires. In my opinion our countries have been placed in a false position toward each other, by events beyond the controll of either. I have seen that the purposes and policy of the United States toward Costa Rica and the other States of Central America, have been greatly misconstrued and misunderstood. I have found Your Excellency prompt to admit past errors and misconceptions and open to conviction as to the real sentiments and the friendly feeling of my Government toward your country.

I have met a desire, frankly and warmly experienced on the part of Your Excellency to promote the most cordial relations with the United States, and Sir, knowing as I do, that my Government desires only the continued happiness and prosperity of this country, I should exceedingly regret to leave it, without taking some step which may once effect the establishment of such relations with the United States, as, I am convinced will operate, more than any thing else, to promote and secure the present and future good of this country.

Actuated by these motives and the urgency of the occasion, I desire

to communicate directly with Your Excellency upon these important subjects, and in thus departing from the ordinary course of official communications, I am confident that the emergency, and the object sought to be attained, will sufficiently recommend my procedure to Your Excellency's indulgence. I think a golden opportunity is now offered to place the political relations of our countries permanently upon such a footing as a correct understanding of the true interests of both clearly indicates, and I consider that I should fail greatly in my duty to my own country, to this, and to the great cause of universal advancement in permitting this most desirable object to fail of being consummated in consequence of any lack of effort for its accomplishment, on my part.

As tending directly, and in a most effectual manner, to promote this end, I should be gratified to receive an avowal of Your Excellency's opinion and views with regard to the policy and principles which have been adopted by the United States and are stated in the Hon. Secretary of State's letter of the 25th of July last, which I had the honor of communicating to this Government.

Your Excellency is perfectly aware of the circumstances and object which called forth the first declaration of these principles by Mr Monroe in 1823, and the influence it has exerted upon the independence and present condition of the Spanish American Republics. What would have been the result of the contest then raging and the political position of these States now, if the United States had not opportunely made that declaration of her sympathy toward them and her determination to protect them against the oppressive measures contemplated by the Monarchs of Europe?

The stand then taken by the United States was hailed with enthusiasm by the struggling people of Spanish America and was received with heartfelt rejoicing by all the friends of liberty throughout the world.— It put a terminus to European domination on this portion of continent and confirmed the inhabitants in the right of self-government.— The principles then promulgated have been strangely misconstrued and perverted by artful men, enemies of the United States and of human liberty and progress, but Sir, the policy is still the same. The feeling of the United States toward these countries has suffered no change. No spirit of annexation, or absorption, or aggression has been engrafted upon the "Monroe Doctrine." It still pretends to nothing further than that the destinies of these countries should be left in their own hands. It is simply a doctrine of non-intervention by the Monarchical Powers of Europe in the political affairs of this Hemisphere, and as such the peace and safety of the United States require that it shall be maintained at all hazards. As such, it has now been presented to this Government for its consideration. It is not required of it either to adopt or disregard this *[sic]* policy. The Government of Costa Rica is at full liberty to dispose of this subject in the manner that may appear best calculated to promote her interests, but, at the same time, I have no hesitation in assuring Your Excellency that an open and manly adoption of these principles and this policy, would place the relations of our countries upon such a basis, as, in my

opinion, would effectually assure the well-being, security, prosperity, and independence of this country.

Most Excellent Sir Your Obedient Servant

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

To His Excellency Juan Rafael Mora President of the Republic of Costa Rica. San José.

No. 2699. LAMAR TO JUAN RAFAEL MORA

Punta Arenas 21st Nov. 1858.

MY DEAR SIR,

I have just received Your Excellency's note of the 17th. inst. expressing your good desires for my safe arrival at Managua and speedy return to San José; and I hasten to respond to it, while the heart is yet warm and before the cordial sentiments which it awakens shall have time to subside into diplomatic formalities. There is always something pleasing and agreeable, even in the merely external empty civilities of life; but your Excellency's note seems to be something more than this; it has all the air and aspect of sincere cordiality; and as such, it cannot fail to form a new link in the chain Friendship. has already twined around my heart for Your Excellency. I only regret that the stern realities of business should obtrude themselves upon me at a moment when the mind is so engrossed with more congenial matters.— Yet the duties of my position as well as a sincere regard for Your Excellency, will hardly permit me leave the country without offering a few observations upon a subject which has just been brought to my consideration; and if in the performance of the unpleasant task, I should speak with too much freedom and frankness, your Excellency must remember that you are in part to blame for having encouraged me to such a course by your own example. In all our official intercourse, Your Excellency has spoken with so much simplicity of manner, directness of purpose and manifest sincerity, that you can scarcely take it a miss if I should do the same.—

A short time before I left San José, it was rumored that an Extra Session of Congress was about to be called to take into consideration the ratification of what is termed the Belly contract. On enquiry I was given to understand by various individuals that no such intention existed on the part of the Government; and of consequence I departed without discussing the policy of such a measure, being satisfied in my own mind that none such was in contemplation. I have just received intelligence, however, that the Congress is actually about to be convoked; and for the purpose, as supposed, of ratifying said contract. If this be really true; and that body should indeed confirm that contract, I should regard it as almost fatal to all hopes of establishing between our countries the good relations which I consider so essential to the great cause of peace, progress and prosperity. Not that the United States have any objection to Nicaragua intersecting the country with as many canals and railroads as her interests may demand. My government is perfectly willing that Mr Belly, or any other foreigner should employ his capital in works of internal improvement in that or any of the Central American States—provided their enterprises do not conflict with the vested rights of American Citizens; but it cannot fail to be obvious to all, that if Costa Rica,

at this particular juncture of affairs should make the ratification of that Contract a special object of attention, the enquiry would naturally arise with respect to the possible motives which could have influenced her to such a sudden and apparently uncalled for action in a matter which rather belongs to Nicaragua than to Costarica.

And when such enquiry shall be made—what will be Your Excellency's explanation?— Will Your Excellency Say that you consider yourself *morally bound* to submit that Contract to your Congress for its consideration merely because your Excellency's name is attached to it, and for no other reason? Then there is no alternative; for a well-regulated sense of moral duty is never to be violated. But I can perceive no reason why Your Excellency should regard yourself as in that predicament. Your Excellency may have signed that Contract in good faith, and with a fixed purpose of laying it before your Congress for its approval; but before the arrival of the time for presenting it, many circumstances may have occurred which would render the measure very undesirable—perhaps seriously injurious to your country; in which case the moral obligation would rather require of Your Excellency to drop the proceeding than to carry it out at the expense of your Country's welfare. That Contract is now in an inchoate condition, and Your Excellency is free to proceed with it to its consummation, or to leave it where it is, according to Your Excellency's conception of its merits; but to contend that—in defiance of all the evils which may flow from it—Your Excellency is in honor bound to consummate it, for the sole reason that your Excellency had commenced it, is quite a misconception of the moral principle which ought to govern in the case. According to this mode of reasoning every initiatory step in a public contract or treaty would constitute a moral obligation to complete it, although the motives which inspired its commencement may have entirely changed or ceased to exist. President Martinez declares Officially that no Contract exists between Nicaragua and Mr Belly—that he himself as a private individual, and upon his own responsibility, had taken some initiatory steps with Mr Belly in a contract of the kind alluded to; but that his acts were not obligatory on his nation, and of course possessed no virtue, force or validity until adopted by the rightful authorities of the country. And yet President Martinez has not experienced the same conscientious scruples on this subject. Doubtless he avoids precipitate action in consideration of the present unsettled state of public affairs. There is wisdom in this; and wisdom is the true Aegis of Republics. I do not know whether His Excellency still views that Convention as President of the Republic in the same light that he did as a private individual at Rivas, or not. I only mean to say that if honor does not prick him on, who is mostly interested in the matter, to the ratification of the Convention, he will hardly regard the taking of this course by his co-adjutor on the plea of honor, as any compliment to him. Indeed, it will look very much as if one party was acting under a keener appreciation of that delicate sense than the other.—

It must be noted that these remarks are predicated exclusively upon the supposition that Your Excellency in presenting that Contract to Congress is actuated solely by a sense of *moral obligation*, without any reference to the policy of the measure. Indeed, the only reason I have ever heard assigned for the convocation of Congress was to enable Your

Excellency to acquit yourself of this obligation; and some have gone so far as to intimate that Your Excellency's intention is not to submit the Contract for *ratification*, but merely for the *consideration* of that body. But this I utterly reject as inconsistent with my experience of Your Excellency's candor and firmness. If Your Excellency is fully persuaded that the ratification of said Contract is a matter of too vast importance to admit of postponement until the meeting of next regular Congress, then the call of an Extra Session for the purpose of its ratification becomes an imperious duty. But I cannot and will not entertain the idea, that Your Excellency would convoke the Congress with the hope of its rejecting a Convention which Your Excellency would have to submit ostensibly for its ratification. Such a course might, indeed, screen your Excellency from responsibility of its rejection; but it would be at the expense of candor; and if contrary to Your Excellency's expectation the Congress should think proper to ratify the Contract, Your Excellency would be equally implicated with that body in all the Evils which might flow from the measure; because Your Excellency, had full power in your own hands to prevent the mischief, and yet you did not.— This may sound a little like a lesson in moral or political ethics; yet it is not altogether irrelevant to the present discussion; and it may be well perhaps not to treat the reflection with a too contemptuous disregard. It was inattention to the very principle which I am now endeavoring to explain, that involved a certain Executive Chief in a dilemma, from which I believe he has not yet sallied. After a careful and protracted consideration of a Treaty which his agents had celebrated, he determined finally to submit it to the National Assembly for its ratification.—To his utter astonishment the Treaty was ratified sure enough. This was more than his Excellency had expected, and a little more than he was willing to bear; and of consequence he made short work of the matter by vetoing the proceedings of that body. The legality and validity of that veto, I believe is still an unsettled question.— After all, however, it may be, that this *moral obligation* of which I speak, is not the real motive for seeking the ratification of that Contract. Your Excellency may have other and more powerful reasons for desiring its ratification. Very urgent and imperative I suppose they must be to justify the convocation of Congress for that special purpose. Whatever they may be, they are unknown to me; nor can I possibly conjecture them; but I think I shall be able to demonstrate in a few remaining observations, that such a sudden ratification of that Contract under existing circumstances is unwise and defenseless in every [*sic*] possible contemplation of the subject; and as Costa Rica is more to be effected by its consequences than any other party, I must solicit your Excellency's patient consideration of what I have to offer;—if indeed it is possible to remain patient under the infliction of a communication so very hurried and discursive.—

I contend in the first place that there was no necessity for Costa-Rica uniting with Nicaragua in that Contract. It was an act purely supererogatory. Costa-Rica possessed no rights privileges or possessions in that Republic. The route belonged exclusively to Nicaragua; she had the exclusive control and jurisdiction of it; it was all within her own limits; and the Concessions necessary for the opening it, had to come from her alone. Costa-Rica had nothing to concede—nothing to grant—and of consequence her connection with the Contract was a mere, useless

superfluity which could impart no additional validity to the transaction, nor greater security to Mr Belly in the e[n]joyment of his rights.—It was the same as if Your Excellency, in contracting for the sale of your magnificent Hacienda, were to invite some Salvadorian, who had no shadow of right, title or interest in said estate, to unite with your Excellency in the transfer of it. A transaction so out of the ordinary mode of doing business—so unnecessary—and so inconsistent with the dignity of the soul and bona-fide owner of the property, would certainly be liable to various constructions, and would unquestionably expose the actors to unfavorable suspicions. It would be impossible to consider it as a mere act of folly; and in the absence of all reasonable motives for it, bad ones would necessarily be imputed.—

And so with respect to the Belly Contract. The joining of Costa Rica in that contract was an act so obviously superfluous—so utterly void of utility as connected with the enterprise—that it could not fail to invite speculation with respect to the real and secret motives which could have influenced the parties to an union so unprecedented. Nicaragua was fully competent within herself—and was indeed the only competent power—to grant said Route; and of consequence could not require the intervention of another power to legalize her acts. When she granted transit-privileges to the Old Ship Canal Company, she did not call upon Costa Rica, to unite with her in making the necessary concessions, which could in reality be made only by herself; nor did that Company deem such association at all necessary to the Security of their rights. Mr Belly, however, seems to have required both Republics to sign his Contract. Why did he not also require Guatemala and the other States to do the same. In my opinion Nicaragua woefully forgot on that occasion what was due to her own dignity and self-respect as a Sovereign and Independent power—provided that transaction was what it ostensibly professed to be,—nothing more than a simple, civil contract.— There was, however, in all this transaction something so uncalled for, and out of the ordinary way of conducting such affairs, as to impress a strong conviction on the minds of many that something more was meant than met the public eye. The magnitude of the enterprise, so disproportionate to any necessity for it, combined with its apparent impracticability, excited the suspicion that the execution of the work was really never contemplated, and caused the Contract to be regarded rather as a disguised alliance for some hostile purpose, than as a mere business operation. Now, if there were any just foundation for such suspicions—if indeed, that Contract was associated with any unkind sentiments towards another nation—if it was intended to serve as a mere pretext or apology for a hostile interference of other powers in the affairs of this Continent, then I hardly need remind Your Excellency of the great impolicy of calling into life again those unsocial sentiments which I had hoped were buried in a Saducean grave—never to resurrect. Let no one roll away the stone of the Supulcher unless he wishes the Lion of Judea to to [*sic*] arise instead of the Lamb of Peace.—

If these suspicious, however, were unjust; and the Contract with Mr Belly was entered into on the part of those Republics for the sole purpose of promoting peaceful improvement in Nicaragua—if no hostile intention was contemplated; and if it is still the desire and pur-

pose of Mr Belly to carry the enterprise into successful execution—then we will have to consider the measure in other points of view.—

I have already manifested, as I hope to the satisfaction of Your Excellency that there is no *moral obligation* on the part of Your Excellency to present that Contract for ratification against Your Excellency's conviction of its policy. Should Your Excellency, therefore, persist in this course, it must be with some view of practical good—it must be with the hope of contributing in some way to the furtherance of the great work; for if its ratification does not tend to this end, then it is but an idle act, so far as the enterprise is concerned. Allow me then to enquire—What are the good results proposed to be gained? And what are the exigencies that demand this unexpected and precipitate action?—Your Excellency will have to satisfy the public mind upon these points or expose the government to the suspicion of some hidden motives;—for many will perceive the impolicy of the measure; and none perhaps the necessity of it; in which case, discontent will be engendered at home, and disconfidence abroad. Permit me then to repeat the question—What reasonable motive can Costa Rica have for desiring to ratify that contract in the present inauspicious moment—and in what possible manner can her interests be promoted by it?—

I hold that, as the Signature or union of Costa Rica was not necessary in the first instance to the validity of said Contract; so neither is her ratification of it necessary to its validity now. As between Nicaragua—when she ratifies it—and Mr Belly it is as perfect without, as with the intervention of Costa-Rica; and of consequence all action on her part is unimportant, supererogatory, and without any practical utility. Her ratification does not place Mr Belly in possession of the route. He cannot go to work. The route belongs to Nicaragua—it lies within her territory—it is under her sole control and jurisdiction; and not the first step can be taken towards opening it until the contract shall be presented to the Constitutional Authorities of the nation and be duly ratified by them. Then why not leave it where it properly belongs, in the hands of that Government. Does Costa-Rica hope by ratifying the Contract to impose upon Nicaragua the necessity of doing the same? This she cannot do. She has neither the power to veto or to enforce said Contract so far as that Republic is concerned. And even if she possessed such power—where is the necessity of her assuming a guardianship over her welfare. Nicaragua is competent to take care of herself. The route—as I have just observed—belongs to her; and as her rights and interests are alone involved in the enterprise—why not leave her to take her own, free and unbiassed course with respect to it. If she thinks it best for herself to ratify that Contract, she will certainly do it; and if otherwise, what right or interest can Costa Rica have in forcing her into the measure? Surely it would be more decorous and respectful, if Costa Rica should wait the action of that Republic before taking any herself. When that State shall have actually ratified said Contract, and shall call on Costa Rica to do the the [*sic*] same, then it will be time enough for this Republic to take the matter into consideration. Until then, all action in the matter on the part of this, will only expose her to the imputation of improper motives, without producing any possible good, either to herself, to Nicaragua, or to any human being—unless perchance it might lend a little,

temporary aid to Mr Belly in speculating upon the credulity of his own countrymen.—

I feel pretty confident that there is scarcely an individual of ordinary intelligence in such matters in Costa-Rica or in Nicaragua who believes that Mr Belly has any intention, or capacity of executing the work contemplated in his Contract. It is a work utterly impracticable in the present day; It is useless to enter into statistics. The Contract was a peice of folly from the beginning; and if the parties to it were temporarily persuaded of its practacability and of the bona-fide intention of Mr Belly to carry it into execution, they must certainly now be undeceived upon these points; and any attempt on the part of Costa Rica to renew the Humbug, could only be construed into a revival of the political feelings and policy which prevailed at the time of its original formation.

Not only this. She runs great risk of compromising herself with Mr Belly. As the Contract now stands it possesses no validity. It binds neither Republic. Nicaragua has not adopted it; and in all probability, on due consideration she never will. I have no Copy of the Contract before me, and have to write from very imperfect recollections of it; but according to my memory, it is a joint contract on the part of the two Republics, granting certain rights, and priviledges to Mr Belly under certain conditions. Suppose Mr Belly should say that he was ready to comply with his conditions; and that he only waited the ratification of the Contract by Costa Rica to begin the work. Costa Rica ratifies the Contract accordingly; and thus binds herself to place Mr Belly in possession of the route and in the full exercise of all the rights and priviledges ceded to him. This she is not able to do without the consent of Nicaragua; which is not yet obtained. Thus she assumes responsibilities which she is not able to redeem. She need not expect to escape from these responsibilities on the plea, that the Contract is void until it shall be ratified by *both* Republics. Not so. By ratifying it herself, independent of Nicaragua, she makes the contracts her own—a special one as between her and Mr Belly—and if she chooses thus to assume voluntarily obligations which she finds she cannot execute, she necessarily exposes herself to the penalties of their non-performance.—

Now in view of all these considerations, is it not infinitely better for Costa Rica to pause a while before precipitating herself in a measure so out of time—so uncalled for—and so liable to misconstruction—a measure which promises no possible good of any kind; and is yet to all appearances, pregnant with the gravest evils. Does Your Excellency really believe that the opening of said route is practicable; and that Mr Belly will actually accomplish it? Then why not refer him to Nicaragua, to whom the route belongs, and who is alone interested in the enterprise. Why does he apply to Your Excellency? If Nicaragua ratifies the Contract Mr Belly has all he desires; if Costa Rica ratifies it alone, upon her own responsibility, without the consent of Nicaragua, Mr Belly gains nothing by it; for your excellency—as I have already said—cannot place him in possession of the route. You cannot oblige Nicaragua to follow your Example and ratify the contract. Thus it will be perceived, that even if the contemplated enterprise were practicable, and that Your Excellency has full faith in its being executed—

which I cannot believe— still the ratification of the Contract by this Republic does not in the least promote or facilitate the end. Nothing can be done without the action of Nicaragua. Then why not wait her action? Her breath is essential to the vitality of that contract; without it—it is dead matter. The Congress of your Country may possibly so galvanize it, as to enable Mr Belly to pass it off in Europe as a living thing; but this is all that can be done here; and in doing this, the government necessarily exposes itself to the reclamations of that gentleman for guarantees and pledges unredeemed.—

It will be impossible for Costa Rica to convince the world of the *necessity, or utility*, of a measure which stands so unsustained by any rational considerations, and is so obviously opposed by all the dictates of prudence and propriety. Then why is it gone into? The answer is at hand. It is to all appearances gone into at the suggestion of Mr Belly. It seems to be done only to gratify him. There may be great kindness in this; but certainly there is neither wisdom or safety in it. I am aware that letters have been written from Paris to citizens in the capital magnifying the importance and brilliancy of this enterprise, and stating that the capital has been raised—that the engineers are engaged—and that all things are in readiness to begin the glorious work. Nothing is wanting but the ratification of the Contract by Costa-Rica. I hear nothing of its ratification by Nicaragua, the party mostly, if not solely interested in the matter, and without whose approval Mr Belly's contract is but waste paper. Out of this waste paper, however, Mr Belly hopes to construct a balloon which shall bear him aloft, inflated by the rarified breath of Costa Rica. Until the reception of those letters, I had never heard a syllable about the ratification of the Contract; but immediately after their contents became publicly known it was rumored through the City that Congress was about to be convened for that purpose; and the Government paper has ever since been teeming with speculations on the subject—

I do not know that Mr Belly has written anything directly to this Government himself upon the subject of his Contract; but I think there can be no doubt that the letters and publications which have been received here in relation to the matter, and which are now supposed to be influencing the policy of the Government were written at his instigation and forwarded by his order. If his object is no other than to entrap Costa-Rica into an endorsement of his *Humbug*, in order that he may be enabled thereby to practise fraud upon the ignorant and unwary of his own countrymen, then it is a matter in which I can have no concern beyond a natural regret that the Government to which I have the honor of being accredited, and cannot avoid liking, should become the unconscious instrument of his imposition. But if his purpose is still—as it has heretofore been—to sow the seeds of his disconfidence and discord between the United States and Costa Rica, I am constrained to say that no circumstance in relation to this country could afflict me more than to see it controlled and misguided by the machinations of a man so superficial and little worthy of respectful consideration.—

And who is Mr Felix Belly? I know nothing of his antecedents. I only know that he came to this country for purposes undefined, and left it in a worse condition than he found it— involved in error and

delusion. Whatever his purposes were he seems not to have been disappointed in them. If they were to speculate upon the credulity of this people, he fully succeeded. If they were to inspire them with fear and hatred of my nation, he gained his end.— I understand that he disclaimed all public pretensions to plenipotentiary powers; and yet he was more than a plenipotentiary—he was dictator. I have not the least doubt in my own mind that he persuaded many of the good people of this country to believe that, although he bore no official credentials from Louis Napoleon, there was still a secret understanding between him and the Grand Emperor of the French, who was not only willing to level the mountains of Costa Rica and send the fiery engines of commerce through the lakes and vallies of Nicaragua but was ready, at the snap of his finger, to reduce the United States to a perfect non-entity if she dared to open her mouth upon the subject.— I cannot for my life conceive how he could have exerted such dominion in this country, and have so effectually captivated the hearts and the understanding of the people, except by some stupendous falsehoods of this kind. Surely he could not have done it, in the simple capacity of a bankrupt Agent of a bankrupt House. Vain and silly as I am told he is, he has the merit of having involved Costa-Rica in an useless expenditure of ten thousand dollars; and of having obtained from two Republics their sanction of a Humbug which Folly herself would blush to own. And this is the brilliant genius—the great divinity that was to preside over the destinies of this country—the luminous Star that was to light it on to glory—the beautiful Apollo that was to lead the Costa-Rican maidens in the mazy dance—the wonderful Plutus that was to lavish fifty millions in Nicaragua—and the thundering Jupiter who was to Order his subaltern Mars—Louis Napoleon—to launch the thunderbolts of destruction against the United States. Mighty man of wealth and war! To what complexion has he come at last?— I am told that he is now threatening this Republic with heavy reclamations if she refuses to ratify his Contract. In this he is something like the *Veiled Mokanna*. He drops the mask and says—“ye would be dupes and so ye are.”— The beautiful Costa-Rica—child of his adoption—the gentle Paloma of his love, that he was to shield from the gory talons of the Northern Eagle, is now to be plucked of its downy plumage and swallowed like a frog, if his necessities are not immediately responded to. He did the dancing in Costa-Rica, and it is only just and fair, that she should pay the fiddler. This is his idea of what Economists term an equitable division of labor. If I were a Costa-rican, I would resent the mention of his name in my presence. He has betrayed this country into error once; and he should never do it again. Even as a foreigner I feel the shame of his connection with this continent; for in spite of all the unfounded prejudices of this Republic, as well as of Central American in general against my nation and my people, I cannot but retain a strong desire for the preservation of its honor and the promotion of its interests—if for no other reason than that of its name.— I cannot forget that—however the two Continents may differ in many particulars—they have at least, a common name; and that is enough for me. It is all America; and the people are all Americans; and it ought to be the pride of every one who bears

the name—whether Central, South or North—to shield and protect the word from dishonor.—

Let me recapitulate. We have seen that the Ratification of the Contract alluded to, by Costa-Rica can in no wise promote the execution of the contemplated enterprise, even if the work were practicable, because the Route lies in Nicaragua—belongs to her exclusively and cannot be opened without her consent. The Contract as it now stands is an unfinished negociation, and not binding on either of the States until it shall be ratified by them. If Nicaragua abstains from its ratification, she avoids its obligations; while on the other hand, if Costarica shall ratify it by herself, she voluntarily assumes its responsibilities; and if unable to place Mr Belly in possession of the ceded rights, she exposes herself to reclamations for pledges unfulfilled. We have also seen, that as the connection of Costa Rica with the Contract in the first instance imparted no additional validity to the concessions of Nicaragua, so neither can her ratification of the Contract be necessary now to the validity of those concessions. Their validity depends entirely upon the action of Nicaragua. If that Republic accepts the Contract, Mr Belly obtains all he asks; but no independent action on the part of Costarica, can in any manner compromit Nicaragua, or place Mr Belly in possession of the Route; and of consequence all such action is not only unnecessary, idle and void of utility as connected with the enterprise, but it is hazardous to this Republic, disrespectful to Nicaragua, who is the party mostly interested in the matter, and can be useful to Mr Belly only for purposes of fraud.—

Now if Costarica, in the face of all these considerations, should actually ratify that Contract independent of Nicaragua—and do it too, so immediately and precipitately upon the reception of the intelligences alluded to, from Paris—She necessarily forces upon the public mind the irresistible conviction, that it is done for other purposes than the mere advancement of the enterprise—that the policy of this Government is still under the direction and control of foreign influences, and that Mr Belly is no less omnipotent in its counsels now, than he was at Rivas. No disclaimer on the part of this Government can weigh against such powerful circumstances—except with those who may chance to have the pleasure of a personal acquaintance with Your Excellency;—and even in despite of this, I fear that any attempt on my part to allay the suspicions of my government and to inspire confidence against such an accumulated array of fact and argument, would be attributed rather to the influence of private predelictions than to the operations of an unbiassed Judgement.

Will Your Excellency tell me that the ratification of that Contract is a mere *domestic matter*—a business transaction—in which the United States can have no concern.— This, indeed, might be true if it were certain that said contract did not conflict with others of similar character now pending between the Citizens of the United States and the Government of Nicaragua; and provided also that it was certain that it was a necessary measure to the security of Mr Belly in the rights and privileges granted him by Nicaragua, and without which it was impossible for him to proceed in his enterprise. But this, we have seen, is not the case. Far to the contrary. It is a matter too obvious to be doubted or contested, that if it is truly the intention of Mr Belly

to open said route, and that he is impatient—as his letter writers say he is—to begin the work, why does he not first obtain from Nicaragua the ratification of his Contract? She is the only power that can confirm him in his rights, and place him in possession of the Route. No;—instead of this, he applies to Costa Rica, whose action or whose inaction can neither facilitate or retard him in his legitimate operations. The ratification of that Contract by Costa Rica under these circumstances must unavoidably excite the suspicion that she has been influenced to the step by other considerations than those of merely promoting the execution of an enterprise which is now generally conceded to be impracticable in the present day. Those motives—What are they?—If they have no practical reference to the opening of said route—if they are independent of and disconnected with that enterprise—the mind is at once cast upon a wide ocean of speculation, and may conjecture a thousand things. The natural supposition would be that the motives were political. Who knows? There are too many unsettled affairs between the United States and those two Republics; and too many unpleasant associations connected with the Belly contract to allow the United States to look with indifference upon any measure connected with it—and especially a measure like the present, which seems to be demanded by no exigencies; productive of no utility, and yet so hurriedly gone into without any one knowing why or wherefore. Such a transaction cannot be viewed as a mere *domestic matter*, in which the United States can have no concern. If it is a measure of such vast importance as to form the special object of an extra Congress, it is very reasonable that the United States should feel some interest in knowing what are the circumstances which have imparted to this merely *domestic affair* such uncommon importance. It must be remembered that this Contract was originally gone into at the suggestion of Mr Belly—that it was founded upon his hostility to my Country—that he is still the enemy of the United States; and that beyond all question is at the bottom of the present movement of the Government on this subject. But for his influence—if not directly exerted, at least exerted indirectly through his agents in Paris—no call would have been made for an Extra Congress; nor would any one have thought of ratifying his Contract in the present inauspicious moment, when there are questions of conflicting rights between this Contract and others still unsettled in Nicaragua. Your Excellency, I am sure, on mature reflection, will perceive in all these considerations, just grounds for the United States to look upon this measure with some distrust and apprehension. No matter how exempt Your Excellency may be from all unfriendly feelings in the matter, still the circumstances of the case are of a nature which cannot fail to impart to the ratification of that Contract, the appearance of a revival of the unkind spirit that gave it birth. The enemy who dictated its original formation, still dictates its ratification.

I do not pretend to know the designs of Mr Belly. If his low ambition is merely to swindle the European public; or to extort blackmail from Costa-Rica by threatening her with heavy reclamations—be it so; it is an affair that does not concern my government. But if he aspires to the higher aim of envolving the United States in difficulties with any portion of Central America, then will it be incumbent upon

the United States to vigilate his operations in this section, and to see how far his pernicious counsells may prevail with these misguided States. There is little doubt that he induced the Republics of Nicaragua and Costa Rica to believe that the United States were seeking to enslave them—or otherwise to wrong them—and that the Emperor Louis Napoleon, was ready to interpose the shield of his omnipotence for their protection. It was in this manner that he obtained from these States the joint Contract, whose ratification by Costa Rica he is now seeking, partly by courting, and partly by threatening her. If he is still endeavoring to persuade these Republics that the Lilies of France will yet wave over this beautiful region; and that the Stars of *Independence* now flaming on the brows of Yraziv and Ometepe, will soon give way to the brighter effulgence of Colonial glory, it is to be hoped that these States have not only seen enough to awaken them from the delusion of those promises, but have become too wise to desire to barter their own cherished Banners, even for the Imperial Standard that the Great Napoleon unfurled upon the Tyrollese. Be his purposes and his machinations what may, they have not heretofore availed anything to the honor or profit of this country; nor is it probable that they ever will.— He has once embittered the hearts of this people against their natural friend and protector; and although we are now in the dawn of a better state of feelings, my own opinion is that there never can be any sincere cordiality and undoubting confidence between our Countries so long as it is known that this man is still influential in the counsels of this.—

I am weary of the theme, and will here close. Your Excellency will perceive that I have not headed this communication "*Legation of the United States of America.*" I have abstained from this for two reasons—first because other departments are the proper channels for Official correspondence with this Government; and secondly because I have written with more freedom and carelessness than befits an Official Document, both as to manner and matter. Time would not allow me to prepare a paper of gravity and circumspection; and I was not willing to leave the Republic without letting Your Excellency know how I thought and felt on the question involved; and, so I scribbled off, without form or formality, this hurried exposition, which I now beg leave to close by tendering to Your Excellency the assurances of my respect, confidence and friendship.

I have the honor to be

Your Excellency's most obt Servt.

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

To His Excellency Juan Rl Mora President of the Republic of Costa Rica San Jose.—

No. 2701. BLAS CERDA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Realejo [Nicaragua] Nov. 28, 1858.—

MY DEAR SIR

Your chests are not going in this load because the carter found only

two oxen which could not bear all the load and I advise you in order that you may send a wagon from that place.

I am your most attentive servant.

BLAS CERDA [Rubric]

[Addressed:] Hon. General Lamar Chinandega

No. 2709. EDWARD F. CONWAY TO ——— WELLS

[Punta Arenas, Costa Rica, 1858]

DEAR WELLS—

I was caught this morning as I suppose you have heard before this— You will please say to Gen Lamar that I am taken and was arrested in an American Boat, and according to the Laws of the U. S. I am liable for Piracy having taken a Boat out of a place where the tide Ebbs— & Flows and as such the American Government can make a Demand for me

Yr Friend CONWAY

[Endorsed:] A Note from Mr Conway of Ponta Arenas

No. 2710. AFFAIR AT VIRGIN BAY. LAMAR

[Fragment]

[Managua? Nicaragua? 1858?]

The undersigned, however, would remark, that the affair at Virgin Bay can scarcely be considered as Your Excellency, styles it—a Battle;— in as much as the suffering party were unarmed and peaceful people en route through the Istmust without any expectation of being molested. A battle is a conflict between two hostile and opposing armies or parties; and the term cannot therefore be applied with propriety to a sudden onslaught[t] of armed men upon unoffending and defenseless passengers.— Such is the light in which that transaction has been generally viewed.

Nevertheless as it is necessary to a just conclusion, that both sides of the question should be heard, the undersigned will waive the discussion of the matter until the developments of this govent shall be received.—

No. 2711. DESCRIPTION OF MINES. ANONYMOUS

[1858]

Discription of 3 Mines, belonging to Dn Dolores Garcia of Managua.

Three rich veins in the mining district of Libertad, jurisdiction of Juigalpa all situated on the high lands, 2 are on the margin of the river Mico, and the other is a mile distant for the river one mine a tract of Land of 3 miles another has two miles, and the other 1½ miles Libertad is situated about 10 leagues from Lake Nicaragua, the Port is San Abaldo, about 5 days travel in a bungo from San Juan del Norte, and two days carting from San Abaldo to Libertad good road. The Mines are two leagues from Libertad.

Libertad has about 800 inhabitants, and there are some twenty foreigners residing there Loamy soil can grow in the low lands sugar, cotton, rice & coffee.

He has two other mines in view, which he has not yet denounced, about 3 miles from those already mentioned, no river near.

No. 2713. MOSQUITO COUNTRY. LAMAR

[1858]

Upon the subject of abandoning the mosquito, see Mr Marcy page 43 & 44

See page 44, sinister motive in holding on to the Balize & Ruatan— important— read it.

If the U S is restricted from settli[n]g in C A, great Britain must be also— 46—

See Marcy's letter page 45—

Buchanan's letter 49—”

On the word occupy & withdraw 54

Page 32, & 47 bottom of the page in reference to the restrictions placed on the protectorate; that it shall not be used to the detriment[?] of the U. S.— Restrictions on the protectorate 50.— 60 “No part of the Balize, when restricted to its proper limits, is within the boundaries of C. A.” Appendix 439 Marcy See appendix 303.

“If the object was to exclude G B from Central America entirely why was it not expressly stated? It may be that for some reason or other it was supposed that it would be less offensive to British pride not to put that arrangmt in so many words”

Thus the very one omission which was made in delicacy to British pride, and doubtless at her request, is now plead by her as a confirmation of her pretensions.

“If it did not refer to what she then has in possession, why did she attempt make any exception afterwards? “Appen. 303

[Endorsed:] Loose Notes relating to the Mosquito Country.

No. 2714. BELLY CONTRACT

[1858?]

Ancelmo Rivas
Figueroa

Chamber of Deputies

Juaquin Elisondo.)	Antonio Falla,)	
Pedro Chamorro,)	Jose Antonio Mejia)	
) For Belly)	opposition.
Pablo Chamorro.)	Bentura Selva)	
Dolores Cuadra,)	Nunci,)	

Senators

Juan Sacara	Manuel Revels
Pedro Cardenas	Miguel Cardenas
Ferndo Chamorro.	Jose Guerrero
Merejildo Sepida	Ramon Machines

[On margin in Lamar's hand:] In favor.

Joaquin Elisondo

Pedro Chamorro

Pedro Cardenal—
Doctor Figueroa

Pablo Chamorro
Anselmo Rivas—

[Endorsed:] The Names of those Who Voted for an Agnist [*sic*] the Belly Contract

No. 2715. NOTES UPON NICARAGUAN HISTORY. LAMAR
[Fragment] [1858?]

The Revolution.

Fruto Chomoro, was elected President for two years under the Constitution then existing, and was installed in 1850.

In passing from Managua and Granada to Leon, I feel on arriving at at [*sic*] this latter place, like a traveller who, after having long been embogged and benighted, in almost bottomless cuagmire with not other lights than ignus fatuous to guide him, has just ascended to an elevated plain where he can inhale a healthy atmosphere, and behold in the broad light of day the surrounding objects as they really exist.—

No. 2718. NOTES ON INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS. LAMAR
[Fragment] [Managua? Nicaragua, 1858?]

It would not only manifest a disrespect and want of friendship towards the interested nations, but such a decided contempt of their necessities and welfare, as to engender, a reciprocal spirit in them; and Recrimination and retaliation would as a matter of course would be [the] consequence.—

It would not only manifest a disrespect and want of friendship towards the nations interested, but such a decided contempt of their necessities and Welfare, as to engender in them a similar spirit; and recrimination and retaliation, as a matter of course would be the consequence.— There can be no peace there is no reciprocal confidence and friendship. Mutual desire for mutual good is the only basis of harmonious relations, and solid foundation of prosperity.— Let Nicaragua ponder this; and she will comprehend at once the social responsibilities which civilization imposes, and the danger of disregarding them. The Servant in the parable was deprived of his talents because he burried them, when he should have used them.

No. 2721. LAMAR TO JOSEFA ANA MENDOZA

[San José, Costa Rica? 1858?]

[Translation from the Spanish]³⁵

To Señorita JOSEFA ANA MENDOZA.

MY DEAR FRIEND,

Be pleased to accept the following lines in compliance with the promise which I made of writing you a poem.³⁶ They are not worthy

³⁵Translated by Miss Katherine Elliott, archivist, Texas State Library, 1918-1925.

³⁶"The Daughter of Mendoza"?

of the pleasing subject which has inspired them; but I am not able to make them any better in so short a time. I regret that I was not able to write them in your language; but the task of translating them can serve as an exercise for one of your admirers; and if he who aspires to this favor should not be wholly successful in the performance of his undertaking— even as I have not been successful in mine— so that in his translation he would not improve on my original, I will not then be the one to recommend him for his literary ability, notwithstanding the many accomplishments which he may have in other ways.

Your friend.

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2722. LAMAR TO JUAN RAFAEL MORA

Confidential

[Translation from the Spanish]

[About 1858]

HONORABLE PRESIDENT

I am sorry that I cannot have a conference with Your Excellency without the aid of an interpreter; not only because I have many things to say to you, that I do not wish that anyone, with the exception of yourself should know or hear; but likewise for the reason that I experience great difficulty in communicating through an interpreter, my ideas, opinions and sentiments with the clearness and exactitude that are always desirable and should be observed in the discussion of important affairs. Similar difficulties, and even greater ones, offer themselves to the use of the pen, whether I write in English, or in Spanish; because if in the former, what I write has to be translated; and if in the latter, I can scarcely express myself in an intelligent manner, on account of my knowledge of that language being very limited.— Nevertheless, despite all obstacles I am resolved to take the pen and write the best that I can. Doubtless the attempt will be bad enough; yet it is better to do it than to be silent.—

Before stating the matters of which I propose to treat, I must hope that Your Excellency will not bear any ill will if I shall express myself with too much liberty and frankness, and shall speak to Your Excellency as to a private individual and friend rather than to a high public official. In acting thus I have no intention of offering to Your Excellency the least disrespect. My limited vocabulary will not permit me to write in any other manner; nor can I suppose that the truth will be displeasing to Your Excellency because it is expressed in simple terms. Truth like Beauty, does not need any adornment to make itself beloved.— It is lovely in itself. Nor should the diamond be regarded as less valuable, because it has not passed through the hands of the lapidary.—

The first thing to which I would call the attention of Your Excellency is an observation that cannot fail to be evident to all the world— namely—that all Central America is destined, sooner or later to experience vast and important changes, not only in the habits, manners, usages, and customs of the people, but likewise in their political and commercial relations with other nations.— The truth of their rapid progress cannot be hidden from the world—the extent of commerce

and the diffusion of knowledge will not permit that this beautiful country should remain forever in its present condition. In time it will necessarily be compelled to accommodate itself to the spirit of the age and march in accord with the other nations in their vast undertakings and progress. It is not possible that any nation can exist in the same state, fixed and permanent in the midst of an almost universal progress; it has to go forward or backward; it has to unite itself in the great designs and objects of the world, or fall into decadence, and finally into total ruin. I hope that Your Excellency will not interpret this as a threat. I only offer the observation as a general truth. I do not wish to say that if this country does not advance on a level or side by side with other nations in civilization, it will be exposed to conquest by any power that takes a notion to it. On the contrary, I only say that a nation that excludes the best of the times, and does not wish to avail itself of the moral and intellectual enlightenment with which it is surrounded, runs the danger of experiencing the same fate as Mexico. Alas, this unfortunate nation! What a great power it could have been; and now! how miserable is its condition! Is it not the victim of foreign arms. It is destroying itself, and very soon will lose its nationality if it does not change its policy. If on gaining its independence from old Spain, it had liberated itself, not only from the tyranny of that nation, but likewise from its own most fanatical prejudices and intolerance toward the rest of the world, and had begun at once, the work of improvement, adopting the enlightened institutions of other countries, and following their examples in the diffusion of knowledge among the people and in the practice of liberal principles, then would it be found today second to the United States in power, wealth, and greatness. On account of having deviated from this course, behold the lamentable consequences. Such is the law of nature. Nations must progress or retrogress to their final extinction.—

Until a few years ago this country was scarcely known, and little considered in the world. Now it is different. Situated between two great oceans; and having the commerce of the world to pass across it, it has come to be better known, and naturally to assume some importance with reference to other nations. Forced—as it will be by its geographic position, and other considerations, to become intimate with them in their social and commercial relations it will become necessary to change its character in many ways, discarding many of their antiquated ideas, adopting others more modern, and conforming itself generally to the usages and needs of the century—

The destiny of this country, being then so obvious and inevitable, I consider that it is the most sacred duty of the patriot to inquire, what is the best part to take under these circumstances. According to my judgment, the country should begin without delay, to prepare itself for the new order of things that, doubtless, will take place, within good time, making the necessary and suitable changes beforehand, to the end that the nation may not be shocked by sudden and violent changes. All transitions from one state to another require much care, and should be gradual and imperceptible, so that the people can scarcely perceive the changes, except by the evident improvements which they bring.— Is this attainable in the present condition of the country? Without doubt. Never was an epoch more favorable; but how to com-

mence the good work and continue it until its successful termination is the problem.—

It is concerning these points that I desire to know the views, sentiments and opinions of Your Excellency for the purpose of cooperating with Your Excellency in carrying into effect whatever policy Your Excellency may adopt; provided that it may seem to me conducive to the great ends of progress and welfare.—

There are two truths very simple, and yet very important, which these States will have to learn and appreciate before they can realize their hopes for securing prosperity within and respectability without.

First—that there can be no prosperity, or real progress in this country until the people become more enlightened than they are today. There can not be any liberty, dignity, nor respectability without enlightenment. Ignorance is not only a misfortune, but a disgrace; because always it is the foundation of despotic governments;—and it is a truth well-known that despotism never fails to debase the people, and destroy the energies of a nation. Intellectual enlightenment is for a nation the same thing that the great luminary of day is to the globe—the vitality of its existence; and the lack of it, is the death of all.—

Second— The sword should be converted into the pruning-hook—the gun abandoned for the plow—and the money so badly spent in supporting a useless army, dedicated to the establishment of schools. The idea that the peace and security of Central-America depend on its military forces is the greatest of errors. If arms are necessary in order to uphold the laws, and in order to keep order among the people, then can it be said that the country is in a lamentable condition, demanding for its regeneration the most vigorous efforts of the patriot. On the contrary, if an army is maintained with increasing expenses in time of peace, when there is no probability of war, then the nation is charged with heavy imposts and tributes for the maintenance of an institution demoralized in its nature, and without any other object than ostentation. No powerful nation will fight with this country, except in case there should be a just and strong provocation, and when it sees itself compelled by offenses and intolerable insults, then this country will know too late that it has not the forces nor the necessary resources for a furious and prolonged war. For this reason I would say that the true policy of Central-America is, abstain from giving any causes for war—cultivate good relations with its neighbors—and do not aspire to play the role of a martial and belligerent nation; but dedicate itself with assiduity to the betterment of the people and to the development of the natural resources of the country. This policy, and this alone will give it security, and lead it to greatness and glory.—

If these maxims are well established—if they are in reality truths—then there would be no vacillation in putting them into execution. Why should the good work of reformation be delayed? Why should it not be begun today? Always it is better to do immediately what must be done later. I do not on this account say that everything should be done in a single day. Reforms must be the work of time; it is necessary that they progress little by little in order that they may be firm and may not produce any evils. This I have said before. Nevertheless, reforms must have a beginning. What are the reasons for further delay?— Does this proceed from lack of will on the part of the intelli-

gent portion of the nation?— Is it because of the excessive attachment to their own projects and ambitious designs?— I cannot believe it; but if it be true,—if such in reality is the reason, then there is for the country a sad and gloomy future.—

There are three classes of public men who should know what is best and for the greatest advantage for their country and yet all travel by diverse routes, animated with sentiments very different, and reaching different ends. The first class seeks solely its own interests and aggrandizement, without any consideration for the good of the rest. This class will be called egoistic. The second, is that which, feeling due sympathy for the people, still does not have courage to stand up for their rights. Those who belong to this class are cowards. The third is composed of true patriots—men who, not fearing to fulfil their duties and obligations toward their country, march forward at any risk to the vindication and defence of its welfare;—and this class is the only one to which the world owes the little liberty that exists. Although it is small numerically, it is strong in moral power; and seldom fails to come out triumphant whenever it unites itself for the good of the country and works in concert and harmony.—

Now it is that I place Your Excellency in this last class; and hope that Your Excellency will not be offended if I say that I consider that the destiny of this country, whether for good or ill, depends in an eminent degree on the part that Your Excellency takes in the present crisis. Besides the personal influence that Your Excellency possesses with the authorities of the other States of Central-America, there are reasons for believing that the Republic of Costa-Rica—in virtue of its superior enlightenment and moral force—will be able in a great measure to dictate a policy for the other States; so that whatever course this Republic takes, in the present state of affairs, I dare say, that the other Republics will follow the same. Doubtless they will adopt whatever policy Your Excellency considers as the best. Firm in this belief, I beg that Your Excellency pardon me if I am somewhat importunate, and perhaps annoying to Your Excellency in wishing to force my private views with too much zeal. My apology must be the importance of the particular points of which they are going to treat. I am so fully convinced that the reestablishment of true confidence among our countries, will secure the future happiness of this Republic, as well as for all Central-America, that it would be for me to fail in my duty, if I left a stone unturned, to attain so great an end, especially when it must be obvious to all, that without good relations they will be exposed for all time to great difficulties.—

I am not ignorant that there is at all times danger in undertaking great enterprises however indispensable they may be for the good of the country; and the patriot who may have the necessary courage for introducing new principles in the government, and establishing a new policy, substituting for the old, a new order of things, should beforehand, consider well that opposition would be met on the part of the ignorant who cannot foresee or understand the advantages of the means proposed, and also on the part of the egoists and despicable persons who never lose an opportunity for fomenting, and taking advantage of the popular discontent. Behold the reason, because there are so few true patriots, and so many traffickers in patriotism. Nevertheless,

there are found in all countries, some noble and daring spirits who do not cherish in their hearts any fears when duty and the good of their fatherland seek their strength. If it were not for them—what would become of the world? There would not be any progress, any liberty, any enlightenment, nothing in a word, but excessive evil.—

Does Your Excellency desire to know what is the first and great step, which according to my judgment ought to be made for uniting the two countries with chains of perpetual friendship, and for opening to all Central-America prosperity and a brilliant future?— Without the slightest hesitation I reply that never will this country be able to realize its hopes of progress, power and aggrandizement until it adopts what is called the Monroe Doctrine—that is to say—dedicate this beautiful region to liberty and independence, and never permit any part of it to be conquered or dominated by foreign powers. This is a wise policy, founded on due consideration for the welfare of this country, and whose maintenance at any risk, is the firm resolve of my government.— Until Central-America can understand the wisdom of this policy, appreciate the good intentions of the United States in proclaiming it, and in trying to co-operate with them in sustaining it and carrying it to a happy conclusion, it can never reach the high destiny which otherwise awaits it.—

Before proceeding further, Your Excellency will deign to permit me to read some passages from a letter which I wrote and read to Señor Juarez in the month of March last; but which was not delivered to him; from which it will be seen how these States—and especially Nicaragua—have complained without any reason against the United States; and still with much less reason they have held suspicions of aggression toward them. The policy of my nation, since the time of Mr. Monroe, until the capture of Walker by Commodore Paulding can be put concretely in a few words—the vindication of the nationality of Central-America, until they can defend themselves;—and what more can this country ask of mine? Here read the extracts.

Such being the policy of the United States with regard to Central-America—that is to abstain from all aggressions, and not permit any other nation to make them. I cannot help, consequently, but be surprised that an enlightened people like those of Costa-Rica, knowing all this, should have refused the friendship and protection of my nation in order to throw themselves into the arms of a Power whose policy has been the incarnation of egoism toward all the nations which have had the misfortune of being under its dominion. Yonder are the Indies! What sufferings have they not experienced, and are experiencing yet under the iron despotism of their conquerors?— And what better fate would have awaited the people of this country, if they had fallen into the clutches of that same oppressive nation?— Fortunately, this affair has already terminated; and according to my understanding, to the satisfaction of all parties;—and it cannot be considered now, except as one, among the numerous examples of the fact that all nations are apt at times to be misled under an erroneous belief or under a false idea of the true state of things. It is pleasant to know that there is not any equivocation that the honorable man does not wish to correct; and it pleases me greatly that Your Excellency has taken the right stand so spontaneously with regard to this affair. By so acting

you did complete justice to my government, and you honored yourself and Costa-Rica.— It only remains now with those who sincerely desire the good of both countries, to resolve, and adopt the methods most judicious and efficacious for strengthening the good relations between them, and unite them forever with bonds of true friendship.—

And how can this noble end be effected?— I have already indicated my opinion concerning the matter; and I repeat now my firm conviction that nothing can contribute so essentially to the good of this country as an open answer, frank and manly, to the letter of Mr. Cass, recognizing fully the doctrine, set forth in that document, of non-intervention in the affairs of Central America, neither by the United States, nor by any nation of the world— This policy will assure once and forever, the great object, which my nation longs for equally with this—the nationality, independence and prosperity of Central-America.—

What does Costa-Rica want? Does it wish protection against the Filibusters? This is promised to her in the most solemn manner by my government; and to doubt its word is to doubt that the Sun gives light.— Do you wish guarantees for the conservations of your nationality and independence? Concerning this point, for many years my government has declared its policy. The protection of this country against the aggression of any nations whatsoever has always been the firm resolution of the United States— It was declared first by Mr. Monroe, formed afterwards the basis of the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty; and is today manifested more fully and forcibly in the recent letter of Mr. Cass. And what better demonstration can my Government offer of its just intentions toward this country?— And is it possible that it can ask more of us? Permit me, Your Excellency to say to you that now a great and generous nation offers to this Republic the hand of friendship; and my advice to Costa-Rica is that it take it immediately with reciprocal cordiality.— But, if in opposition to all the manifestation of good intentions, Costa-Rica will continue cherishing in its bosom a dissembling jealousy and suspicion toward my nation, then, in my opinion, many years will pass in this country before there is realized any noticeable progress or friendship and protection of the United States, it cannot acquire any credit or character abroad; and, having these advantages, it will be able to secure all. For this reason it is my opinion that the true policy of this Republic is to raise at once and without any vacillation the standard of Monroe—with the device of eternal nationality, independence and prosperity for Costa-Rica.—

Your Excellency is placed in a situation most favorable for taking great measures that should be for the glory of your country and the good of humanity. It is truly an enviable position! Endowed with brilliant talent and of good disposition, you have been able to serve for many years as Supreme Chief of this nation with wisdom moderation, and success; so that your administration not only has assured to Your Excellency the confidence and gratitude of your fellow-citizens; but it has gained for Your Excellency great influence and consideration among all the States of Central America. These advantages place Your Excellency in a position to do great good; and your obligation for doing it, can only be in proportion to your means and

facilities. In truth, I do not know any person with the exception of yourself who may be capable of leading these States out of their difficulties, and putting them on the road to prosperity and happiness. To whom but Your Excellency have they to turn for salutary advice?

Pardon me, Your Excellency if I say that Your Excellency is the person on whom I count principally for whatever good that may result from the proposed Congress of the Presidents of Central America, I only fear that Your Excellency cannot attend said convention; and if it should so happen, I would consider your absence as a misfortune for the country.— If that Congress will try to establish good relations with the United States and to found some general principles of government among themselves, then all will be well; but on the contrary, if according to the proclamation of 10 April past, promulgated by *Señor* President Martines,—and under which said Congress is called—its principal object is only to unite these States in a great military Confederation, and provide for the organization and maintenance of a strong permanent army, indeed all will be bad;—not only because these States are not in a condition for bearing the expenses of such an establishment; but also because it cannot fail to be a source of political oppression and of discord among themselves.— This last motive seems to be indicated in one of the Articles of the Decree of the last Congress of this Republic concerning this matter. Perhaps I have been mistaken in the interpretation of it.—

In view of all these considerations presented I cannot but arrive at the opinion already expressed, that the true policy of this Government is to accept, immediately, the doctrine expressed in the letter of Mr. Cass, of non-intervention in the affairs and business of Central-America; and afterwards—when Your Excellency may have more time—to address an energetic, eloquent and patriotic Declaration to all the States of Central-America, marking the course that they should take in the present crisis. A document of such nature, would lead the people to think seriously on their present and future destiny and prepare the States for the wise and judicious methods that should be adopted in the proposed Congress. In this manner Your Excellency will be the benefactor of all Central-America, your name passing to posterity as a light pointing to the heights of glory.—

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

P. S. There is a point in this affair which I have not introduced in this discussion, notwithstanding the fact that it is one of the most important—it is this—the fear that the people have that if they should have facilities for American immigration to this country, very soon they would arrive in such numbers that they would be able to overturn the existing order of things and finally convert the nation into an American Republic. I have not discussed this point because it would open a field of arguments and investigations too extensive to initiate now; but I am sure that the people of Costa-Rica and Nicaragua have never misunderstood so completely as now this matter; because never can occur such an influx of Americans so alarming to these countries. Such a thing is impeded by permanent and insuperable obstacles. It is prevented in Nicaragua by the burning climate; and in Costa-Rica by the lack of laborers and the great and exorbitant expenses for opening estates in this country. The United States possess today fertile

regions without limit, embracing all the varieties of climate, in which their sons can obtain all the possessions of land that they wish, and almost without any price;—and hardly is it credible that they should wish to abandon these advantages in order to settle themselves in foreign countries where they will have to encounter and contend with a thousand difficulties. In my opinion it is more to be feared *that* in place of too many arriving, the necessary number will not come, bringing with them capital for developing the natural resources of the country and impelling the nation to progress and great enterprises. I dare to make another observation— that the Americans are a quiet and peaceful people, who always obey the laws of their own free will and without coercion.— All the nations have military forces for maintaining order among the people and for enforcing the laws, with the exception of the United States, whose people are ready, at all times to surrender themselves to the force of reason; and never to any other. Thus is it, that they have been known as good citizens in all countries where order, law, and justice prevail.—

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2727. SPEECH UPON THE CLAYTON-BULWER TREATY
AND THE CENTRAL AMERICAN QUESTION.
STEPHEN A. DOUGLAS

[Translation from the Spanish] New York, January 1, [1859,]

TRANSLATION OF THE SPEECH OF SENATOR DOUGLASS OF ILLINOIS IN
NEW YORK THE 1ST OF JANUARY—

*Douglas "says"*²⁷

In a conversation that I had with Sir Henry Bulwer concerning the Clayton-Bulwer Treaty, he wished to know what was my reason for voting against said treaty— I answered him in the following manner— "I said to Sir Henry that I would like to test his principles by an amendment of two words in such manner that the clause should read that neither England nor the United States should ever occupy or colonize Central America *or Asia*."— "O, he said, you do not have colonies in Asia." "No, I said neither have you in Central America." O but he said you will never extend the dominion of your Government there. No, I responded neither have we the intention of permitting you to extend your power in Central America—

My policy is that the question concerning Central America, Mexico or any other part of the American Continent is purely an American question, upon which no power of Europe has the right to be consulted— When all Europe was united in a Council of War against Russia a few years ago, the United States had no representative in that Council— Their voice was not heard, nor their counsel sought,— for the reason that America was too far removed to have sufficient interest in the affairs of Europe.

I trust, therefore, that when the questions touching Mexico, Central America, or Cuba, arise Europe will be regarded as too far removed to demand the right to be consulted in the matter.

The weak powers of America are our allies, and naturally depend

²⁷Lamar uses the Latin *loquitur* here.

upon the U. S. for protection. We have greater interests there than any foreign Power. It is to our interest that their Governments be strong, stable, and permanent.

[Endorsed:] Extract from the Speech of Judge Douglass at Phila—

No. 2734. JAMES THOMAS TO LAMAR

Granada [Nicaragua] Feby 25th 1859

MY DEAR GENERAL

Mr Field has written me stating that you desire to purchase a place in Granada with a view to making this hot bed of servites [?] your permanent residence. I applaud your judgement and am delighted at the prospect of our coming to be near neighbors, There are many reasons for your preferring this locality to that of Managua. First & foremost you are removed from daily contact with the detestable creatures that compose the so called "Government of Nicaragua" whose daily walk of stupidity & treachery is enough to cause one to become disgusted with all human nature in General; secondly you change the dust and heat of the interior for the cool air and fresh breeze of Lake Nicaragua; 3dly You are near the Transit & in close communication with the U. S. and with hosts of americans that will be repeatedly visiting & passing through the country. Nothing could give me greater delight than the certainty that you would make this country your permanent abode. How many of your old friends in Texas & Georgia would throng hither if they knew you were regularly established here— what an impulse would be given to the cause of Americanism in this quarter of the world if the pioneer of Georgia & Texas could be induced to put down his stakes here. We few americans here want a *head*, & those who will shortly come here will as badly need one, and who is better fitted by years and experience and capacity than yourself. Who knows but that the pioneer and patriot of Texas might shortly be called upon to enact in Nicargua the deeds of earlier years—deeds which should cover his name with glory & honor for future generations. The patriots of Texas are needed in Nicaragua. "How long, oh Lord!" will it be before we shall see them! You may think I am desirous of seducing you to "fillibusterism" (as the doctrine of americanizing & civilizing Nicaragua is termed by Liberals in various parts of the world) but nothing of the kind. I merely look forward to the no very distant days when this Isthmus will be filled with Americans and when men of firmness judgement and prudence will be needed at the head of affairs, for I cannot but believe that the base and faithless men who are now hampering the progress of Nicaragua, will at an early day be swept away, like the mists of the morning.

I have spoken with Fernando Lacayo, about the *hacienda* of Sandoval. He thinks it can be bought. If it cannot, one nearly as well adapted for you, can be had low (that of Barharini [?]) If you would make a trip down here I think in a week's time you get yourself fitted out to your heart's content— I shall be very glad to see you, as well as many other of your friends here— It may be unnecessary for me

to state by way of bribe that there will be left a few bottles of "Old Monongahela" awaiting your arrival

Faithfully Yours

Genl M B Lamar Leon.

JAMES THOMAS.

[Endorsed:] Grenada Feb 25 letter From James Thomas

No. 2741. LAMAR TO THE CONGRESS OF NICARAGUA

[Translation from the Spanish]

Managua 21 March 1859.

To The Honorable

Senate and House of Representatives of the Republic of Nicaragua

Understanding that there is a Bill before Congress providing for the establishment of a Public Library, I beg leave to place at the disposition of Your Honorable body a Small collection of Books about two hundred volumes— embracing, ancient and modern literature as well as works on art, science, government, and international law— The Books are at Leon & Realejo where they can be delivered to any person appointed to receive them— I have the honor to be

Your obedient Servant

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

No. 2742. J. MIGUEL CARDENAS AND ANTONIO FALLA TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]³⁸

Office of the Secretary of the National Congress

SIR:

We have informed the Congress of your Excellency's courteous communication in which you express your distinguished regard for the Republic by offering it a collection of select books for the public instruction.

In accepting this donation, this eminent body has directed us to express to you the special gratitude which it feels for the generosity which among other qualities, commends your Excellency's exalted character, at the same time informing you that Don Anselmo Rivas is appointed to receive the books.

We take pleasure in informing you of this, and cordially greet you as your attentive and obedient servants.

Managua, March 22, 1859.

J. MIGUEL CARDENAS [Rubric]

ANTO. FALLA [Rubric]

General Mirabeau B. Lamar, Minister Plenipotentiary &c &c &c

[Endorsed:] A. Letter from the Congress of Nicaragua accepting a donation of Books given By Genl Lamar.

No. 2743. RICHARD ROMAN TO LAMAR

San Francisco Cal. March 23rd. 1859

DEAR GENL.

This will probably be handed you, by my young friend Mr. Britten DeShields, the nephew of Judge Waller of Texas.

³⁸Translated by Miss Katherine Elliott, archivist, Texas State Library, 1918-1925.

He makes a voyage for his health, and may visit Central America, before he returns to Cal. In the event of his doing so, I know you will be pleased to extend all convenient civilities to the relative of our old Texas friend. Doctor DeShields, the father of the bearer, is a resident of this State, and is highly esteemed by all his friends.

Very truly yr. friend & Obt. Svt.

RICHD ROMAN.

Genl. M. B. Lamar. U S Minister Central America.

No. 2745. TOMÁS MARTINEZ TO LAMAR

Translation of a Letter from President Martinez in reply to one recd. from Genl. Lamar

Managua March 25th. 1859.

To His Excellency General MIRABEAU B. LAMAR
Minister Resident of the United States.

SIR/

I have had the honor of receiving the appriceable letter of Your Excellency dated yesterday, in which you announce to me your departure for Costa Rica and express your simpathies for the people of Nicaragua as well as your good desires towards me personally

I render to Your Excellency my most sincere thanks for your generous sentiments. They are not wasted upon the people, nór unappreciated by myself. I cordially unite in the sentiments expressed by your Excellency that nothing may be remembered of the past, except the agreeable. Nicaragua has had her moments of difficulties; but it has been the fortune of Your Excellency to act as a pacificator; and I doubt not that the Treaty recently adjusted with Your Excellency forms the basis of a lasting friendship between the Government and citizens of both Republics.

We still flatter ourselves with the hope that Nicaragua may yet count you among her citizens; and if Your Excellency at any time should choose to make this country home, you may be shure that you will receive at all times the most cordial welcome; and among the numerous friends of your Excellency I have the honor and pleasure of counting myself.

Your very obt. Servt.

[TOMÁS MARTINEZ]

[Endorsed:] Original Letter from Tomas Martinez President of Nicaragua To Genl. Lamar on the General's leaving the country

No. 2746. ANONYMOUS TO LAMAR

[Managua, Nicaragua, March 25, 1859?]

[Translation from the Spanish]

SIR

I have had the honor of receiving your appreciated letter of ——— in which is expressed your simpathies for the people of Nicaragua; your generous affection towards me personally and your devotion for our president . . . [mutilated]

On answering Your Excellency's letter I offer my most sincere thanks for your generous sentiments towards my fellow-citizens and towards me, and I assure Your Excellency that during the entire period of your separation . . . [mutilated] that we have before us such beautiful plans for the relations between our countries, and that our sympathies are rapidly cementing themselves into a durable friendship. Your Excellency's farewell causes me profound sorrow. If the qualities which adorn Your Excellency have contributed so greatly to the happy solution which we expected of questions that exist between our countries, who better than Your Excellency will be able to cultivate the friendship and good feeling with which we should expect our efforts to be crowned.

Since Your Excellency must leave us, permit me to assure you that I bring with me the sympathies of the people and government of my country as well as my own and other wishes for your happiness; and at whatever time or in whatever place Your Excellency may be found, you can count on the fact that you have a home at my house where there will be friendship and you will be received with open arms, among those whom you have the pleasure and honor of counting are . . . [illegible]

No. 2747. HILARIO OLIVAS TO LAMAR

Translation Letter from Genl Hilario Olivas to Genl. Lamar D. V. L—

Leon March 28th. 1859

Mr Minister LAMAR.

The Military Governor of this Department offers to Your Excellency his respects, and in the name of the inhabitants of this City recognizes the good intentions of Your Excellency, and and [sic] effectionate sentiments towards Nicaragua.

Upon absenting yourself I wish Your Excellency a happy voyage; and hope that your Excellency may return to the Country and be a Nicaraguense among the many that esteem you.

I am Sir your Obt Servt

HILARIO OLIVAS.

No. 2748. GREGORIO JUAREZ TO LAMAR .

Copied [Translation from the Spanish]

Leon March 28, 1859.

HON. GENERAL MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

MY DEAR SIR:

I regret much that Your Excellency intends leaving this Republic. I regret it personally because I shall lose the society of a person with whom I have passed many agreeable moments; and I regret it likewise for the sake of my country because it also loses in Your Excellency a true friend, whose wisdom, moderation and love of justice, have contributed greatly to healing the wounded sensibilities of our people caused by sorrowful events of the past.

When I had the honor of occupying myself with the business of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs, although we had to discuss some disagreeable questions, our relations were conducted in a spirit of frank-

ness, cordiality and friendship. The Nation is well satisfied with Your Excellency not only in your official character, but with your private character; and I can assure Your Excellency that your amiable manners and virtues and the happy conclusion of your mission will be always regarded with satisfaction on the part of the Nicaraguans.

With my best wishes for your happiness and welfare I am Your Excellency's very attentive servant.

JUAREZ [Rubric]

No. 2749. ANONYMOUS TO LAMAR

[Managua? Nicaragua? March? 1859]

SIR—

Being grateful to your kind desires for the prosperity of Nicaragua and for my personal happiness, I wish you a very happy voyage.

The troublesome circumstances in which the country has been during Y. E.'s residence here, might have obscure your good feelings towards Nicaragua so well manifested by your constancy and moderation— The Republic is very well pleased with them; and she hopes that through your medium she will have obtained the confidence of and good understanding with the U. S., which she has constantly desired; such is the result which must be expected from the treaty just concluded with Y. E.—

It is very satisfactory to me to see that you have made many connections and simpathies among us, and to sincerely count myself among your most affectionate friends—

I have the honor to be Y. E.'s friend and servant

No. 2750. LAMAR TO PEDRO ZELEDON [?]

[Translation from the Spanish]

[About March, 1859]

I have the honor of acknowledging the receipt of Your Excellency's letter dated February 25, 1859 transmitting to me a copy of the Treaty celebrated between Your Excellency on the part of this Government, and the Hon. Wm. Gore Ouseley on the part of Great Britain. In the said letter Your Excellency has expressed the hope that I may have the power in order to negotiate, with this Government, a Treaty similar to that which was made with Great Britain. I must say in reply that I do not possess any powers for making any such convention.— Agreeably to the verbal permission of Your Excellency, I have sent to my government both of these documents.

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR].

No. 2752. GEORGE H. GRAY & DANFORTH TO LAMAR

Hon M. B. LAMAR

) pr Bark Hahuaman

United States Minister Buenos Ayres) Boston Jan'y 11 /58

SIR, With the desire to extend the commercial reations of our country, we have forwarded by this vessel a paper parcel to your address containing Several Books of Engravings, Price currents &c of *American manufactured Hardware, Edge Tools, Machinery & Agricultural Implements*

The prices are approximative, many goods are however sold at regular list prices; the fluctuations of market values being made by change in the rate of Discts from Lists.

In the month of Octo /57 per Bark Salacia we sent a similar parcel to the address of W H Hudson Esq U S Consul at Buenos Ayres, with a letter referring to it, at this date we have no intelligence of its reception by that Gentn & we improve this occasion to bring the subject also to your attention; believing it to be of importance to open a trade whenever possible that Shall enable our Ships to Carry *outward Cargoes* of *American Merchandise* to exchange for our *importations* thus Saving expense of *premium* of Bills of Exchange & yielding *freight* to our vessels outward & therefore reducing expense of the round voyage & place the foreign products here Cheaper, than if chargeable with total expenses outward & inward. While it affords employment for our artisans here & contributes to the general prosperity of our citizens, it gives them the ability to afford the consumption of articles of foreign growth.

A little reflection will shew that the general introduction to our entire nation of even a single new article will be in the agregate of great importance & produce trade to a great amount annually—

Suppose 2.000,000 population, the universal use of any single articles, say an axe, a Machete, a Hoe &c might lead to a consumption of 1.000.000 Each of those articles per *an.* & thus of such articles at \$1.00 each average value yield a trade of as many millions of dollars as the Country could be supplied with in variety— Time & patient effort will certainly produce in the Argentine Republic, similar results to those we have already attained in Peru & Chili Cuba &c &c where we have already opened a very large & rapidly increasing consumption of such articles as we now submit to your notice and we have no doubt they may be successfully introduced at Buenos Ayres & in so far as European manufactures now are supplied we are sure by an experience elsewhere we can very successfully obtain a preference for the American articles—

We enclose copy of letter addressed to Mr. Hudson to give our idea of the mode of introducing the trade & shall be pleased to receive your suggestions.

Very Respy Yr obt Servt

GEO: H GRAY & DANFORTH
pr H. A. PAGE

[Endorsed:] H. Page Boston Jan 11/58

No. 2754. GERALD RAOUL PERRY TO LAMAR

Private

Managua April 13th. 1859.

MY DEAR GENERAL LAMAR.

Col Cooper a gentleman connected with M. Belly has thought proper to address me several very angry and insulting letters, on the plea that I expressed (before several individuals) my doubts as to his being a Col in H. M's Service.

I should be deeply gratified if you would (in reply to this) state what I said in connection with that gentlemans rank in the British

Service, when everybody here doubted his being the person he represented himself to be.

I remain My dear General

Your's Sincerely.

GERALD RAOUL PERRY

To, Genl. Lamar U. S. Minister, Managua.

No. 2755. LAMAR TO GERALD RAOUL PERRY

[Managua, Nicaragua, April 13, 1859]

MY DEAR MR. PERRY,

I have just recd your note of this date requesting me to state what remarks you made in connection with a gentleman calling himself Col Cooper of H M's Service.

To the best of my—recollection it was to this effect. "That you believed him to be a full Col in the B. service although it was rather odd he should come out to Nicgua as M. Belly Envoy.

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2758. HENRY GREER TO LAMAR

New Segovia [Nicaragua] April 26th /59

Hon Gnl M. B. LAMAR

DEAR SIR

In Feb last, I received a line from Mr Geo Collier, in which he informed me that you wished me to write you a full account of the affair upon which Minister Borland based a claim in my favor against this State; which I immediately did.

It has been suggested to me here that the letter, (which was intrusted to the goverment conveyance) has never reached you, but as this is only a matter of surmise I do not wish to trouble you with another long letter, unless I knew that you had not received my former one, and that a statement of the case is desirable or necessary to enable you to present the claim

I send this by private conveyance and hope you will find time write me by return of same person

Yours truly

HENRY GREER

[Addressed:] Hon Genl. M. B. Lamar U S Minister Managua

No. 2762. FRANCIS SEYDEL TO LAMAR

Chinandega [Nicaragua] May 3 of 1859.

To the U S. Legation

Min. Plenipot. General MR. LAMAR

DEAR GENERAL

Being absent on a professional avocation, when you left here the last time, I had not the oportunity to mention the desired Certificate again, but I take the liberty of doing it herewith, enclosing at the same time the very document on which I wish you to be so kind as to certify officially, under Your hand and Seal, that the last, (the foregoing) signature is that of the Minister of Foreign Relation, in the Republic

of Nica.— With Your Signature and seal, the said document will have all the Desideratum.

You would oblige me very much, if you could despatch the bearer of this at an early hour, and I expect to see you personally before long in order to tender You my best thanks for Your kind Services—Here is nothing new.

Respectfully Your obdt Svt

Dr. FRANCIS SEYDEL

No. 2763. JAMES THOMAS TO LAMAR

Granada May 26 1859.

MY DEAR GENERAL,

I[f] you should have received any letters for me to your care by the last mail please to give them to the bearer of this, who I have sent as a special courier to Realejo—

If you should not be too much occupied with your official duties I should be very glad to get a line from you in reply to this letting me know what you are about & what the political prospects ahead are.

I send you the *Central American* which contains an article abusing you and your government, the which if you think it worth your while you can get some one to translate

Truly your Friend

Genl M. B. Lamar Realejo—

JAMES THOMAS

No. 2764. LAMAR TO THE GOVERNOR OF PUNTA ARENAS

[Puntas Arenas? Costa Rica? June 7? 1859]

To His Excellency The Governor of Punta-Arenas

SIR

I have been informed that Your Excellency has forbid all communication between the prisoner Mr Edwd. F. Conway and his friends; and that Your Excellency has also refused the prisoner an Interpreter, although Your Excellency well knows that he is not able to consult with his Lawyer without one. By these measures the accused is deprived of the natural as well as legal right of procuring testimony in his own behalf and preparing for his defense. To interdict his consulting with any one, except with, an individual whose language he cannot speak looks like the mockery of justice.— The placing of double-irons upon the prisoner by order of your Excellence is also considered a cruel precaution without any necessity for it. I am assured by respectable authority that all these acts are contrary to the laws of this Republic; and that Your Excellency has no right to interfere in any manner between the prisoner and the Tribunals that have to try him. The prisoner is in the custody of the Court; and the Court alone can prescribe the treatment he shall receive—and even that authority can not do it arbitrarily, but only in accordance with law. I speak of the law as it is expounded to me, and if its character is such as I represent it, I would respectfully request Your Excellency to reconsider the orders alluded to and to allow the prisoner to be visited by such of his friends as he may desire to consult. This is the practice of all civilized nations. I would also suggest the propriety of allowing the

prisoner an Interpreter; in as much as without one he can have no use for a lawyer That Interpreter should be one of own selection, in whom he can repose confidence. I make this remark because it has been intimated to me, that Your Excellency is willing to concede this favor to the prisoner provided he will accept an Interpreter of Your Excellency's own selection.— I have not been disposed to give credence to this proposition; because it is one far more offensive to every sentiment of justice than the withholding of an Interpreter entirely.— I beg leave to remark, that if I have been wrongly informed as to the law; and that it should result, that Your Excellency in reality possesses the legal right of prescribing the course of treatment to be pursued towards the prisoner then the question becomes one of humanity and justice; in which case I have nothing to offer more than the general observation that cruelty to the unfortunate can never be a virtue.— I do not pretend to have much knowledge of this case, but I infer from the little I do know of it that it is far from being one that can justify the commencement of the prisoners punishment before his trial and conviction. I have no disposition to protect Mr Conway in the wrong. If he has fallen into error and misfortune by accident or otherwise, let him be judged accordingly. I only ask in his behalf a fair trial—that no impediments may be placed in the way of impartial justice, and that he may not be persecuted on account of his nationality. These things I have a right to demand; nor will I impute to Your Excellency any indisposition to do what is legal and just in the case—

[Endorsed:] *Not Sent*

No. 2766. P. TRAETA [?] TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Government of Punta Arenas June 8, 1859

Honorable MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

SIR.

I have seen your esteemed letter, date of yesterday relative to bringing to my mind the difficulties which the condemned criminal Edward F. Conway has for acquiring the facts and the power with them to formulate his defence in the case which they are constructing against him in the competent Court, as well as the fact that you say that the prisoner is complaining of the prison in which they have him confined. Concerning the first, Your Honor is a witness to the contrary, and concerning the second, I must say to you, although it grieves me, that it is altogether impossible for me to accede to the petition to give the aforesaid criminal more liberty than he has.

With the above explanation, Honored Sir, I hope to have satisfied the object of your said letter; there remaining to me only the liberty of subscribing myself your most attentive servant.

P. TRAETA [? Rubric]

[Endorsed:] Letter from the Governor of Punta Arenas Respecting Mr Conway to Genl Lamar

No. 2767. JOSÉ M. CAÑAS TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

S. José June 10, 1859

Honorable General Dn. M. M. LAMAR.

SIR,

I knew of your arrival at that port and hoped to have the pleasure of seeing you here; but afterwards I learned that you awaited the return of the vessel in order to continue your voyage to the United States.— This resolution makes me very sorry for selfish reasons only—that is—because it deprived me of the pleasure of seeing you— I shall confine myself then, to wishing you *bon voyage*; and that you find your family in good health—and asking you not to forget the friendship which your humble servant professes for you

JOSÉ M. CANAS [Rubric]

No. 2769. MARQUIS L. HINE TO LAMAR

San José, June 24th /59

MY DEAR GENERAL—

Wondering for some days past, why I receive no reply to my last note, and whether you had found any thing amiss in the same, I am informed by the Comr. of the "Cyane" that *you have been sick for several days past, but are getting better.*

Had I know of your sickness, I should have started immediately for Puntarenas, and only wait to hear from you, to do so, now. I say that I wait to hear from you, for this reason— It has occurred to me that the news by the last steamer, and the presence of the "Cyane" in Puntarenas, may induce you to leave sooner than you had intended, not waiting for the return of the "Columbus," in which event I might arrive "the day after the fair," which would certainly be annoying.

Please write me therefore immediately, and look for shortly afterwards.

Truly Yours &c .

MARQUIS L. HINE

Gen M. B. Lamar etc etc etc Puntarenas.

No. 2770. F. MAYER TO LAMAR

Lepanto, [Costa Rica] June 28th 1859:

General LAMAR

Punta Arenas,

DEAR SIR

I was very sorry to learn from Mr. Becker, that you were unwell, but I hope that by this time You are perfectly well again, and able and willing to come over to see us and our Estate. We all expect you.

The Boat and Boatman is to Your Order.

The continuous rains until now prevented me from sending the Boat before, as I did not think it advisable for you to make the trip in this weather. As it is now, starting after breakfast from P. A. You will be perfectly safe from rain.

I would have liked very much to go myself and to bring you over but unfortunately I can not on account of some boils, which have not

left me yet.— Mr. Becker is detained on account of the indisposition of his wife.

You will therefore excuse us for not coming over in the Boat.

I hope, You will not disappoint us.—

Respectfully Yours

MAYER

[Addressed:] General Lamar Hotel Americana Punta Arenas

No. 2772. JOHN J. DESHON TO LAMAR

Leon June 30th 1859

To General M B LAMAR

Washington

MY DEAR GENERAL

I have just received the Enclosed letter from Mr Greer with the request that I would forward it to you—which I accordingly do.

Since you left here I have not been off my Plantation & consequently I have nothing new to communicate. General Jeres ret'd by last Steamer was caught by a temporal & detained at my house for two days. The rivers from the rains having swollen so as to be impassible. he tells me that all the difficulties with the U States are finally settled, but wh[en he] told me that the Congress would have to [be forc]ed to ratify this final settlement . . . [mutilated] *quien sabe* . . . [mutilated] If you can help me to get the appointment I would feel much obliged to you

Hoping you may have a safe & pleasant journey to your home & find your family & friends in good health

I remain your friend & obdt Servt

JOHN J DESHON

[Addressed:] General M B Lamar State Department Washington
City U S of A

No. 2773. THOMAS W. UPSHUR TO LAMAR

[United States Ship *Cyane*, Harbor of Punta Arenas
Costa Rica? June or July 1859]

I am constrained to say Sir, that if the Honorable Secretary of the Navy would order Lieutenants Spotts Morris and Stillwell, with Dr. Williams and Purser Murray, to some other ship or ships, and their places filled by others—it would be a move well calculated to benefit the service. I am strongly of the opinion that the above constitute a "clique," who have tendencies to insubordination and can see no good in anything with which Commander Lockwood has to do; he is their superior so far as I am competent of judging, in every respect, and should be sustained by the Department, for a more worthy, energetic and able officer I have never seen.

Yours,

THOS. W. UPSHUR

No. 2774. MARQUIS L. HINE TO LAMAR

San José July 1st 1859

MY DEAR GENERAL

I have this moment arrived in town from the "Hacienda" and there is but a few moments before the departure of the mail— you will therefore excuse me, if, in my leave taking, I am brief—

I wish you would ascertain in Washington whether they ever read my despatches— I dont think they do—at least no attention is never paid them, & if they are of no use, I should prefer not to write.

I shall expect to hear from you after your arrival in the U. S. and shall be glad to do so always, whenever you may have time and inclination to write. I presume you will feel an interest in the march of events here, and shall take the liberty of posting you up occasionally

I wish you a speedy and happy return to your family— I had hoped to have made their acquaintance here, but you, or Providence, have altered it otherwise, and "I bide my time" under protest.

I beg leave to enclose a communication for the comptroller, in Washington,—not important—and you may put it into any P. O. in the U. S.—and for the present, My Dear General, good bye, and God bless you ever yours—

Truly Yours &C. MARQUIS L. HINE

Please make my respects to the Commander of the "Cyane" and if he has time, I should be happy to see him in San José. H.

No. 2775. JOSÉ M. CAÑAS TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Puntarenas, July 2, 1859.

General Dn. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

MY VERY DEAR SIR AND ESTEEMED FRIEND.

I am very sorry that various obligations force me to be absent from this port, today at 3 P. M., since they deprive me of the pleasure of accompanying Your Excellency and the Honorable Commander of the "*Cyane*," according to the invitation that you had the kindness to send me.

I never intended to absent myself without presenting to you my respects and friendship, and had the intention of visiting you today, which I shall do at 12, if it does not trouble you at that hour.

The sentiments which you are pleased to manifest to me Honorable General, honor me much; and in recompense of such great kindness, I can only offer you a true friendship and the most profound respect.

In answering your appreciated favor of this morning, I take the greatest pleasure, since it affords me the occasion to assure you that I am your most affectionate Servant and Friend.

JOSÉ M. CANAS [Rubric]

No. 2781. MÁXIMO JEREZ TO LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

Managua, July 27, 1859.

Honorable Gen. MIRABEAU LAMAR

MOST ESTEEMED SIR

At present I am thinking of you on going back to your home, and I hope that your health is restored. With such thought I hasten to

congratulate you on your return to the bosom of your family, although to me the vacancy that you have left in Nicaragua may be very distressing.

I suppose that you received in Punta Arenas the letter which I wrote you by the last boat. Even afterward I was informed of other difficulties perhaps greater than that which was insinuated in our conversation in said port with relation to complications in the matter of transit. I have found that the Govt. on the 30 of May declared free transit, on account of this there would not be much embarrassment in terminating the questions with the Company of New York in the manner which I arranged them, but that on the 15 of June another contract was made with Belly designating to him as a route for his transit from San Juan del Sur to La Virgen, in virtue of which the declaration of the 30 leaves to the Govt. the power of designating exclusive routes to those who may obtain patents for making the transit. The case is that Belly succeeded in prolonging the acceptances of stipulations truly advantageous for Nicaragua; and from this it is evident that a new source of difficulties is presenting itself for putting an end to this so disagreeable as well as prejudicial embroglio of transit. Congress does not know what will be done in the matter.

In regard to the treaty made here with you, it is already ratified by Congress with the amendment that the Govt. of the U. S. required for accepting it. God grant that the rest may come out this same way.

I repeat to you that I desire your perfect recovery, and I subscribe myself

Your Most Affect. Attentive Servant

MÁXIMO JEREZ [Rubric]

I hope that of your kindness you will not fail to write to me although it may be only a few lines—

No. 2782. LAMAR TO ISAAC TOUCEY³⁹

Washington [D. C.] 29th Augt 1859

To the Hon Secretary of the Navy.

SIR/

Enclosed is a note from Mr Upsher, Secretary to Capt Lockwood of the Cyane, in relation to the misunderstanding between Capt. Lockwood and the subordinate officers under his command. Mr. Upsher, is quite a clever, worthy young man, and Nephew of the Honle. Abel P. Upsher, formerly Secretary of State.— From my short acquaintance with Capt Lockwood, I had formed a very favorable opinion of him. He is certainly most exceptionable in his morals and general character as a man; and as an officer he appeared to me to be extremely vigilant and active, and enthusiastically devoted to his profession and its duties.—

Yours respectfully

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR

³⁹See No. 2773.

No. 2783. LAMAR TO TOMÁS MARTINEZ

Washington [D. C.] August 30th. 1859.

DEAR SIR

I have this moment seen in one of the New York papers the announcement that the proposed amendment to the Lamar Zeledon Treaty has been adopted with great unanimity by the Government of Nicaragua. I rejoice exceedingly at this, and regard it as the dawn of a brighter to your country. That all the blessings proposed to be secured by that Treaty may be speedily realized, is the sincere desire of my heart. Nothing is now wanting to the consummation of the great and glorious ends of peace, confidence and prosperity, but the opening of Transit route. I regret to learn that this question is still involved in great imbroglio. I hope, however, the difficulties are not of a serious nature, and may soon be surmounted. The opening of that route will give new life to Nicaragua. It will awaken a spirit of enterprise, and cause capital to flow into the country.— I have no fears whatever, of any collisions and strifes between our respective people. When they shall be thrown together in social intercourse and become connected in Commercial affairs, I am confident that perfect harmony and good-feeling will prevail among them. Nothing is wanting to unite them in the bands of friendship but, a little better knowledge of each other. With regard to the the [*sic*] American Reclamations against Nicaragua, according to my promise I suggested to my government the propriety . . . [mutilated] had any disposition to deal arbitrarily or harshly with any power, and especially with a weak one.— You will find my Successor, Professor Dimitry, well disposed towards your country.— He enjoys a high reputation for extensive knowledge and scholastic attainments; and being a perfect master of the Spanish language, and a good Catholic, as well as a gentleman of an open, frank and social disposition, he cannot fail to render himself an acceptable Minister to your government. Allow me, dear Sir, in conclusion to assure you that I retain a . . . [mutilated]

To His Excellency Tomás Martinez President of the Republic of Nicaragua Managua.—

No. 2789. LAMAR TO LEWIS CASS

[Washington? D. C.? August? 1859]

SIR,

I beg leave, herewith to present my account against the Government for services rendered in my late capacity as Foreign minister. I have made out the account according to my best judgement as to what is reasonable, just and legal. Nevertheless, if any portion of it should be disapproved by the Department, I am willing that the same shall be stricken out, and the amount due me, be adjusted to the Satisfaction of the Government.

There are some two or three items in my account upon which I deem it proper to offer a few words of explanation.—

First— When my Commission was changed from Minister Plenipotentiary to that of Resident Minister in Nicaragua an[d] Costa Rica, I was told in my instructions that my extra pay as Minister to the

latter Republic would commence from the day of my departure to the same.—

[MIRABEAU B. LAMAR]

No. 2790. LAMAR'S ACCOUNT FOR DIPLOMATIC SERVICES

[Washington, D. C., August? 1859]

Dr. The United States in acct. with M. B. Lamar, their Envoy Extraordinary and Minister Plenipotenciary to Nicaragua.

1857.	For my Salary from the 30 of December 1857 to the 14. of May 1858, at the rate of \$10000. per annum.—	\$3388	00	Cr. By Draft to G.B. Lamar 1 Janry. 1858—	500	00
	Credit—	1500	00	By Draft to Henry Brencker 27th Sept. 1858.—	1000	00
	Due me—	\$1888	00		\$1500	00

Summary of M. B. Lamar's Account with the United States.

Dr	
For my Salary as Minister Resident to the Argentine Confederation	\$2500.00
Salary as Minister Plenipotentiary to Nicaragua—	\$3753.80
For Salary as Minister Resident to Nicaragua	\$9375 00
For Salary as Minister Resedent to Costa Rica	3626.76
For loss on Exchange	100.00
For postage and contingent Expenses	\$568
Additional Salary as Minister to Costa Rica	1160 55
	\$20084—21

No. 2792. LAMAR TO PANFILO OSORNO⁴⁰

[Newspaper clipping] Richmond Texas— October 4th 1859

SIR—

You are I hope aware that my failure to reply to the Complimentary letter, dated Managua March 24th. which your Excellency did me the honor to address to me, on the eve of my expected departure from your Country, was far from being designed as a discourtesy, or from any want of a proper appreciation of the kindly sentiments it expressed— On the Contrary, you are acquainted with the unforeseen causes which occupied the interval of preparation, and left me at last, but a hurried moment for taking leave—

I thank you for the kind wish you express to see me again in Nicaragua, and if I were a younger man, I should be tempted to accept your hospitality, were it only to witness the development of your magnificent Country, under the benign influence of the arts of peace—

As I spent most of my time near the Government at Managua, and therefore saw much of its people, in unofficial life; I desire to return to them, through your Excellency, my warmest thanks for their kindness— They are as warm hearted, & genial as their clime, and their cordial welcome clusters around the stranger in Tropical profusion & fragrance—

Please accept for yourself personally, my warmest wishes for your prosperity & happiness— & believe me— Dear Sir—

With the highest respect Your obt Servant

MIRABEAU B LAMAR

To The Hon Panfilo Osorno Sub Prefect and Judge—Managua Nicaragua

No. 2793. LAMAR TO FERNANDO LACAYO AND SEBASTIAN MARENCO⁴¹

[Newspaper clipping] Richmond, Texas, Oct. 4th, 1859.

GENTLEMEN:— You will not, I hope, refuse to accept an acknowledgement of your kind and friendly letter of March last, on account of the interval which has elapsed. I designed to reply to it at the time

⁴⁰Appended to No. 2740.⁴¹Appended to No. 2740.

of its reception, and would have gladly done so with all the warmth which its generous courtesy inspired, but for the new matters of interest which immediately followed the completion of the treaty, and the continual occurrence of important events which have so engrossed my attention since, as to leave me no leisure, until the present moment, for private correspondence. If I have contributed in any manner—as you are pleased to intimate—either in my individual or official character, to allay the asperities of the past, and to smoothe the way to a better understanding and more harmonious relations between our respective governments and people, I have only effected what my mission was designed to bring about; and in the performance of this duty, I beg leave to say, that I have been guided as much by my own desire and impulses, as by the instructions and policy of my government. It is true, my mission commenced under very unpromising circumstances. I had many difficulties to contend against—prejudices to combat; passions to allay; and misconceptions to remove; but it is a source of gratification to know that my steady perseverance in the cause of peace and friendship, has not been unattended with good results. Having toiled so long against the apprehensions and suspicions natural to a people who had suffered the evils of every form of war, and brought about at last a better state of feeling, I should be loth to see your fine country convulsed again by any untoward circumstances. The treaty between Nicaragua and the United States is now adjusted to the satisfaction of both parties, and is as liberal on the part of the former as any American citizen can reasonably desire. That it will be ratified by our Senate, I have no doubt; and those who shall attempt to disturb the tranquility and good relations it establishes, by marauding invasions of your territory, must assume a very high responsibility. Whatever justification the fillibusters may have claimed by virtue of your own invitation for their first entrance into Nicaragua, they can no longer plead it, in the face of the liberal provisions and friendly spirit of that treaty. That treaty opens the door to every American who chooses to enter the country as a peaceful and law-abiding citizen. And what more can a good man require that this? Any attempt, therefore, under these circumstances, to seize upon the country by unprovoked and lawless aggression, is equally a violation of the laws of the United States, as of those of Nicaragua, and cannot fail to draw down upon its authors the reprobation of every unprejudiced and thinking mind. I am confident that such a system of rapacity and murder will never receive the sanction of the American people, or be tolerated by my government, so long as Nicaragua shall adhere to, and abide by the treaty in the same good faith in which it was made. It is therefore, to be sincerely hoped that your people will not allow any feeling of distrust and insecurity to be engendered in their minds, nor permit the relations, now so happily existing between the two countries, to be destroyed by the selfish counsels or malign influences of those whose machinations are inspired more by their hatred of my nation than by any sincere regard for the welfare of yours. No man can be the true friend of Nicaragua who would sow the seeds of discord and strife between her and the United States, which I cannot but regard as the natural friend and, in the last resort, the protector of Nicaragua. I address you from my rural home in Texas, where, should you ever

wander so far, I would be happy to reciprocate [*sic*] your generous hospitality.

Your sincere friend,

MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

Senores Fernando Lacayo, Sebastian Marengo. Granada, Nicaragua.

No. 2794. EDWARD FONTAINE TO LAMAR

Hinds Co. Miss. Near Jackson.
Octer. 24th. 1859.

Genl. MIRABEAU B. LAMAR.

MY DEAR FRIEND.

I am gratified to learn through the papers that you have returned safely to your home on the Brazos. Genl. McLeod & other friends in Galveston have no doubt told you that I have also retired from my post in Austin, & greatly improved my condition, by marrying and turning planter. I married a Lady, who is just such an one as my best friends would have selected for me, & who suits me exactly; and although I would greatly prefer a home and employment in Texas, yet I am very pleasantly situated where I am. I am living upon 1500 acres of good land, & working 27 hands the individed estate of my wife and her three children. The children are a beautiful little girl 7 years old, and two little boys who are younger. They are all sprightly and affectionate, and I find no difficulty in managing them as my own, and I feel towards them as a father, and they love and reverence me as a parent. The two elder, and my youngest (Edward) recite to a young Lady whom we have employed as a governess. Henry is pursuing his studies very well under my direction; & I hear his lessons twice a day. My wife attends to the welfare of my children as if they were her own, and the two groups of our separate offspring are completely amalgamated. My attention to the plantation, which is under the management of a good overseer gives me but little trouble; and I have more leisure for reading & writing than I have had for some years past. I am often tranquilized, when small troubles disturb my mind, by the reflection that I am now entirely independent, and although by no means wealthy, yet if I manage my affairs with even ordinary prudence and industry, I can never suffer the want of any necessary of life, and will always possess whatever a man of my age & profession can enjoy without pain. I am at present troubled with no debts, and those which will fall due at the end of the year I shall be able to meet, and I am then determined to contract no more. This is far better than I expected a year ago, and having no avarice to stimulate me to exertion I cannot reasonably hope ever to be in a much better condition financially.—

I preach almost every Sunday in the neighbouring Parishes, giving the people of Jackson two Sundays in the month, as the assistant of their Rector. This suits me much better than to be the Rector of a parish dependent for a support upon those who receive my services.

I hope if you visit Georgia, or Washington City, or any of the Northern or Middle States you will take the Mississippi Central Rail Road, Connecting New Orleans, Jackson, & all the great Northern &

Eastern Routes, & visit me. I live between this Rail Road & the Jackson & Vicksburg, 7 miles from each, & about 9 miles from Jackson where they unite; and I will send a Carriage for you to that City whenever I learn that you are there, or that you will be there at a certain time, I can breakfast at home, & sup in New Orleans,

The only source of anxiety I suffer and one which is unceasing, is the conduct & condition of my oldest son. I wrote to you more than a year since, that he had suddenly left me, as I thought, to join some *fillibustering* expedition. I conjectured that he had joined Walker, or Lockridge. He was going on very well with his studies, & had done nothing dishonorable. I had applied for an appointment for him as Cadet at West Point, and felt confident of getting a situation for him in 1860, when there will be a vacancy for Texas. I have just written to Judge Hemphill requesting him to secure an appointment for him if possible. The last time I heard from him he was living with a Mr. Walker on the Brazos, in Fort Bend Co. near Pitt'sville. I should like very much to get him into some kind of business in Texas which will employ him honestly until I can learn the result of his application for admission into the Military Academy. If he cannot get an appointment I will then send him to some good school or college until he is qualified for business which will support him. I will have some means which will enable me to do this by the first of next May. If you can find him in your County, a little advice from you at this time would be of great service to him; and you might perhaps through some friend in Washington aid me in getting an appointment as a Cadet. He would suit the army better than anything else. He is very brave & energetic, and is a fine rider & an excellent marksman. I had him at a very good school when he deserted his home, and he had nearly completed the arithmetic, & could read Latin pretty well. He wrote a good hand, and could draw respectably. He possesses a better talent for mechanism, than the most of boys exhibit, & is quite skillful in working with many kinds of tools. But I know nothing of his occupations or his associations for the last 18 months. When he left me he was one of the Teachers in my Sunday School, and assistant Librarian; & he had been guilty of no act of immorality, or of gross disobedience. Actuated by some romantic notion, and prompted by the restless spirit, and a desire for roving & for adventure common to boys of his age who have read much history & many books of travels, & who possess poetical imaginations he suddenly cut short his studies, arrested the plane of education I had formed for him, renounced my authority & set up for himself. I have suffered Severely on his account, and I am afraid that he may never recover from the effect of such an unfortunate beginning of his career.

I wrote to you several Letters before leaving Austin to the care of the Secy of State in regard to the business mentioned in your last to me. I also wrote a private Letter to Genl. Cass contradicting some articles which appeared in the papers caluminating you villainously, and I denounced the authors of them as severely as I could. My address is Jackson Miss. Please let me hear from you, & do not fail to come and see me. I have a most comfortable and beautiful home, where I can enjoy your company.

Sincerely & affectionately Yr friend & St

EWD. FONTAINE

No. 2796. JAMES H. STARR TO LAMAR

Nacogdoches Dec 15, 1859

DEAR GENERAL

Allow me to congratulate you on your successful mission to Central America and safe return to your family— I hope your family and yourself are in good health and that the quiet of Texas home-life is not unwelcome to you after your long absence and more exciting and laborious duties abroad—

In regard to your interests in My Charge, the Accounts and remittances rendered to Mrs Lamar will shew all collections & payments, excepting a trifle of recent expenses which will appear in my next statement, to be made after the present year's taxes shall have been paid— And my present letters contain such information as I was able to give Respecting the unsold lands—

In my last letter to Mrs Lamar dated Jan'y 10th— last, I mentioned an existing difficulty about one of the unsold Cherokee tracts—subsequently the matter was arranged and the improvement rented for the present year, pr \$20. payable, 1st next month at which time possession was to be given— As this settlement was made with the aid of a lawyer I presume the rent note will be consumed by the fee— This was better however than a suit for possession There have been applications for half of the tract— (the Townsend Gardner 480 acres) during the summer at \$2½ pr Acre part on time if you wish to sell part or all please advise me early with instructions as the improvement should otherwise be rented for the next year— It is possible that some of the other tracts may sell but not at very satisfactory prices & I presume as Cherokee & Smith Co. lands are not in great demand— the drought of the present and last year having somewhat injured their reputation—

Your Western lands in charge of Mr Hill, I know nothing of— hope he sends you tax receipts regularly & gives them the personal attention which they need & which at this remote point I am unable to give.—

I will soon for[war]d receipt for present year's taxes on the few tracts in my care—but hope in the mean time to hear from you about selling or renting the improved place mentioned—

My family & myself have enjoyed usual health during the year until the last two weeks, in which I have been quite unwell—but am now recovering & able to resume business with moderation—

With kind regards to Mrs Lamar I remain your friend and obt Servt
JAS. H. STARR

Genl M. B. Lamar Richmond Texas

[Endorsed:] From Dr. Starr— Dec 15 1859—

No. 2798. ON THE WRITING OF HISTORY. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

In writing History, shall the historian confine himself to a simple narration [*sic*] of facts and events, or shall he give the motives and feelings which prompted the deeds he records?

If we persue the latter course, some of the distinguished personages

who figure in history would be stripped of all their honors; for it cannot be denied that many of the most exalted of human achievements, and the noblest deeds which have resulted in national glory and good, were inspired and prompted by very base and unworthy passions. The act and the actor may be to each as light & darkness. The one may be fraught with boundless blessings, and the other filled with the worst of fires. I conceive that the *whole* truth should be given; & that the simple chronicling of events, without the statements of the motives of the actors, is but the telling of half a truth, and falling short of the duty of the historian. Such a course is of pernicious influence. When we read of any great exploit that extorts our approval, and wonder, it at the same time excites a high admiration of the actor, and if undeceived as to his motives, we ascribe to him principles & virtues equal to his acts, which indeed he may have never felt. And thus whilst we are enlightened in one way we are falsely impressed in another. The historian leaves upon the mind of the reader two impressions—a *true* knowledge of an incident and a *wrong* idea of the character. Is it not as important that the real character of those who figure in public, should be known as the knowledge of their acts? The mere narration of events cannot be useful. It may be amusing, but even in this point history must yield to fiction. The only way in which history can be made useful, is to give the *whole* truth and a full & fair, and not a false representation of the persons treated of; to do this, their motives must be exposed, and where they are virtuous, they must receive their due praise, and where vicious or unworthy, their just condemnation. By such a course, history may be made to act as strong incentive to virtue and a terror from evil; for the reader will find in its pages, that justice will be done him, that if he is influenced by mean & aggravating spirit, his character will be lost & the glory of his deeds tarnished; but if on the other hand, the reader finds that in history that the deed itself and not the virtue of the actor brings applause—that no distinction between good & bad motives are drawn, provided the deed lie something beyond common attainment, he will have his inducement to honesty weakened, and his temptation to accomplish grand objects regardless of the means, greatly strengthened—

[Endorsed:] General observations on writing History

No. 2800. EARLY SETTLEMENT OF TEXAS. LAMAR⁴²

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

CHAPTER 2ND

The precise object of Philip Nolan's operations in Texas is not known.— In 1799, at the head of a small party he penetrated into the interior of the country between the Trinity and the Brazos, for the avowed purpose of catching wild horses; but with the secret object, as it was supposed, of searching for gold mines in the Commanchee regions.— He was not ignorant of the law of Spain, prohibiting the admission of foreigners into the country. No one was allowed to

⁴²Original pagination not continuous.

traverse the territory without special permission; and of consequence his present trespass was committed in open defiance of this mandate. He relied upon his arms alone for protection; and in all probability a forcible occupancy of the country was meditated in the event of his finding the Eldorado which he sought. Nolan had been the Agent of Genl. Wilkinson in New-Orleans, while the latter was engaged with Governor Miro in the tobacco trade; and it is not an unreasonable suspicion that the General may have had some connection with his friend's adventure upon the Trinity and Brazos; for this military hero was no less grasping after gold than glory.— This, however, is mere conjecture. The enterprise of Nolan—whatever may have been its object—was a failure. The Spanish authorities hearing of his intrusion, despatched Miguel Musquiz against him, with a competent force to expel him from the country. The parties met somewhere on the Brazos, and an obstinate battle ensued, in which the bold intruder lost his life, and his hardy followers were either killed or captured, except Jack House and Robert Ashley, who made their escape. Bean was released on account of his youth; and the most of the prisoners perished in detail under their long confinement and harsh treatment. We do not pretend to offer this affair as a regular attempt towards the settlement of Texas; although a forcible appropriation of its mineral wealth, which was probably contemplated, would have lead to this result. We give it as a matter of curiosity merely.

The first legitimate attempt to establish a colony in Texas, as far as our knowledge extends, was made by an Irish-Catholic curate at Baton Rouge. While Louisiana belonged to Spain, a number of enterprising foreigners had found their way into that Province, and were still residing there, when the country was transferred to the United States. Among this class was the Baron de Bastrop, Moses Austin and John Brady. As soon as the American Govt. took possession of the Country, the last mentioned of these adventurers, conceived the idea of planting a Colony in Texas. He was joined in the enterprise by Captain Despalier, a French Creole. They petitioned the Spanish authorities in 1804 for the privilege of making a Settlement on the Gaudalupe, to consist of fifteen hundred Catholic families from Louisiana. The families were represented as having been faithful subjects of his Majesty while this country belonged to Spain, and therefore, as being entitled to some consideration from that Government. The application was supported by Don José Ugarte, Captain commanding at Nacogdoches, who addressed a letter to the Governor upon the subject, in which he speaks of Brady as a perfect master of the English, French and Spanish languages, as well as of his own, dear native Erse.— Brady and Despalier, however, failed in their object. Although flattered for a while with a pretty fair prospect of success, the habitual jealousy of Spain of all foreigners, prevailed in the Councils, and their application was finally rejected. They were indebted for their defeat in some degree to the interference of Friar Antonio de Sedella, a Spanish Curate in New-Orleans. This vigilant defender of his country's religion, fearful of the consequences of introducing a heretical population into his Majesty's dominions, write to the Sen. Dn. Antonio Cordero, Governor of Texas, discouraging the proposed enterprise. The idea that Brady's and Des-

palier's emigrants would be Roman Catholics in reality, he regarded as a perfect humbug. They might, indeed, assume the name; but as for being the thing itself—it was totally out of the question. The Friar seems to have been fully aware of the great advantages of a speedy settlement of that country; but the inevitable difficulties, which the Government would experience in controlling a rebellious race, and of protecting the holy church from the contamination of their diabolical heresies, far out-weighed, in his opinion, all the advantages which could possibly flow from their enterprising industry. The following is an extract, freely translated from his letter to the Governor upon this subject, the original of which in Spanish, though bad enough in point of style, is sufficiently astute as to matter. "My dear Sir: I avail myself of this favorable opportunity of assuring you in the first place of the high respect which I entertain for you personally, and in the second place, to advise you of a letter, dated the 27th of May last, which I received from the Revd. John Brady, an Irish Minister of the Carmelite order, who is now discharging the duties of Curate at Baton-Rouge. He informes me in said letter, that he has obtained permission to introduce into the province fifteen hundred Catholic families, (so he says, but whether it is so or not God only knows) for the purpose of populating the country. I have resided in Louisiana for 27 years, and the conduct of this famo[u]s father has not escaped my observation; which conduct I will not particularise, contenting myself with this insinuation, which may serve to put you on your guard with respect to him. These Ministers (who call themselves Spaniards) know the generous credulity of our Government, and do not hesitate to propose projects from which, even if realized, the Government could expect nothing but to redouble its cares and vigilance for restraining the infidelity which is natural to them.— I can assure you, that as the leaders are, so will be the followers; and in any case it will be far better to leave our country to its natural defense and and [*sic*] our lands uncleared than to have them cultivated and inhabited by our hidden enemies, who only assume the specious title of Catholics when they wish to deceive or surprise our government. Our Government is the best in the world—the most wise, pious and prudent—but it cannot foresee nor prevent all the evils which may result from the bad citizens of its distant provinces."—

Almost simultaneously with Brady's application was another from the Baron de Bastrop. This enterprising and benevolent individual seems to have had a perfect mania for territorial possessions. He became the owner— as we have heard— of extensive tracts of the waste and mountainous domain of the Old Dominion. He also obtained from Baron Carondelet, Governor of Louisiana, a grant of twelve square leagues of Land on the banks of the Washita.⁴²—The emigrants with which he was to settle the lands, were not to be molested for their religious opinions; yet at the same time they were to be deprived of the liberty of performing any religious rights or ceremonies except those of the Roman Catholic church. The grant was made in 1796.—

⁴²[Note in document:] In 1802 the Baron ceded a part of his grant to Moorhouse; but "the King disapproved of the arrangement and by a royal schedule of the 18 of July, forbade the grant of any land in Louisiana to a citizen of the US." See Martin, page 100.

In 1805, the Baron applied for permission to establish on the Trinity in Texas, a colony to be composed of French families and Choctaw Indians. Juan Bautista Elguezabel at the time was Governor pro. tem. of the Province. He was favorable to the enterprise, and readily granted the Baron's petition; but the higher authorities of the country, refused to ratify the act, and of consequence the project was never carried into execution. The following is a translation of the letter, dated Bexar 18th Octr. 1805, which the acting Governor addressed to Nemecio Salcedo, Commanding general of the Northern provinces, announcing what he had done. "This day I have granted to the Baron de Bastrop, vassal of his Majesty, inhabitant of Ouachita in the province of Louisiana, License to emigrate from that country to this, and to establish himself in his province on the lands and rivers between the Trinity and this Capital (Bexar) with a Colony of seventy or a hundred families of the same class, and of Choctaw Indians, faithful dependents of the Spanish Dominions, on account of their having agreed to conform to the conditions and regulations prescribed by the Viceroy, and approved by his Majesty, and to subject themselves entirely in their establishment to the rules, conditions and orders existing in that jurisdiction, the particulars of which I have informed said Baron verbally, not having thought it suitable to do so by written communication, on account of the risk of the papers, by some event, falling into the hands of the Anglo-americans."—

Although failing in his colonising attempt, the Baron removed—we know not where—to Texas; and was residing at Bexar at the time that Moses Austin arrived there in 1820, seeking the same privilege which the Baron had sought some fifteen years before. During the residence of the latter in that providence, he had acquired much influence with the people and the public authorities and was able to assist his old acquaintance in his project in a very essential manner, as will be made to appear in our future pages when the subject shall come up in its chronological order. The Baron was a good man; and died at Saltillio, beloved by all, and was buried with becoming honors; altho' his interment was followed by a very ludicrous and singular circumstance. The Baron was placed at rest, not with his martial cloak around him; but in a new suit of fine black cloth, provided for the occasion. A Mexican came at night to rob the corps; and whilst he was in the act of removing the coveted apparel, one of the arms of the deceased, in slipping thro the sleeve of the coat, happened to strike the thief on on [*sic*] the side of the head; whereupon the rascal fled in terror and consternation, believing that the Barron had come to life. The Mexican was immediately taken ill and died in three days from the effect of the fright,—confessing the above circumstance to the Priest who attended his last moments.

The next colonizer in order is Richd. R. Keen. Altho' a native citizen of the Unites States he obtained from Ferdinand 7th of Spain, a deed to the entire territory of Texas. He was bound, on his part, to introduce into the country a certain number of Catholic settlers. The contract, however, was afterwards annulled by the Cortez, on the ground that the King possessed no authority to make such a grant. The national domain could not be thus disposed of and alienated without the concurrence of the popular branch of the Government, and the

present attempt of his Majesty to do so, was resisted by that body as a dangerous usurpation.

These pacific endeavors to obtain a foot-hold in those fair and forbidden regions, having totally failed, an opportunity occurred finally of seeking admission duly by the sword. The Mexican Revolution, which broke out shortly after the planting of Joseph Bonaparte upon the throne of Spain, was progressing slowly, with many reverses, when Bernardo Gutierrez de Lara made his appearance in the United States, seeking succor and assistance for his afflicted country. His appeal to the American people was not in vain. He was soon joined by McGehee, Perry, Kemper, Ross Lucket and many other of the bravest and most generous spirits that ever rallied to the call of freedom. In a short time, there was collected on the banks of the Sabine a small force—about two hundred men—with Gutierrez for their nominal and McGehee for their actual leader. Their first move was to to [*sic*] Nacogdoches, driving Zanbrannon before them, and taking quiet possession of the place. From this point they proceeded to the Trinity, where they halted awhile for the purpose of increasing their strength and obtaining additional supplies. By the 25th of August 1812 they were prepared to take up the line of march. Their force consisted of three hundred Americans, and about one hundred and fifty Mexicans and Cochattee Indians, making in the whole four hundred and fifty men, all told. Instead of proceeding directly to Bexar, the capital of the province, they diverged to the ancient town of La Bahia, now called Goliad, which they reached without opposition and captured without difficulty. In a few days the place was besieged by Solcedo and Herrera at the head of fifteen hundred men. Daily conflicts ensued, in all of which the Royalists were uniformly worsted. These conflicts continued until Salsedo was so reduced that he was forced to raise the siege and retreat to Bexar. Here he was reinforced; and with a fresh army well provided with artillery he marched to the Salado, for the purpose of repelling the Americans, who by this time had abandoned La Bahia and was on their march for Sanantonio. A battle ensued between the parties; which resulted in the total [*sic*] defeat and loss of every thing on the part of the Royalists. The victorious patriots soon made their appearance before the town of San Antonio. The place capitulated without a struggle; and the Revolutionary authority was fully established in the Capital. There was, however, but a brief interval of repose. With wonderful rapidity another formidable army was raised by the Royalists, and appeared in the field under the command of Elisondo. He was met at the Alizan. The Battle which followed, resulted as all the preceding ones—in a glorious triumph of the patriot arms. The victory was complete. Elisondo himself escaped with a small party leaving four hundred of his men dead in the field and the balance scattered or captured. Notwithstanding all these terrible reverses and disasters, the King's party was not disposed to give up the contest. Tidings were soon received in Sanantonio that Aradondo was advancing with an army, Eight thousand strong. Preparations were made to receive him. But McGehee in the meantime, had died, Kemper, Lucket and others had left, and Bernardo Gutierrez had been deposed on account of an act of bloody and vindictive retaliation upon the foe, and Toledo appointed in his place. This new commander

marched to the Medina to meet the advancing Aradondo. An obstinate and frightful conflict immediately followed. It was the bloodiest and the last. The Americans who had been so victorious up to the present period, was doomed in this terrible battle to confirm their devotion to the cause of freedom by the blood of martyrdom. Almost every man was a victim. Their bones were scattered from the Medina to the Trinity. Elisondo who had been conquered at the Alisan, pursued the retreating patriots, and murdered them, as he caught them. He in his turn, however, was doomed to a just retribution. One of his own party, shocked at his barbarity, effected insanity and seized upon the guilty butcherer [*sic*] and planted a dagger in his heart. Thus ended this unequal struggle between liberty and despotism; and thus perished this little band of noble heroes, only four hundred in number, after successfully contending with and destroying three of the best appointed armies of Spain. Notwithstanding their final defeat, their glorious career was not without its utility; for it had the happy effect of paralyzing the enemy; of arresting, for a while, his ferocious progress, and of inspiring the patriots of the Interior with fresh hopes and animating them to higher exertion. But for the American arms in Texas, the formidable forces brought against them would have been turned like hell-hounds upon other sections of the country, and in all probability might have changed the whole current of the Revolution.—

After the disastrous Battle of Medina, which took place on the 18th day of August 1813, the country relapsed into its original condition. The native inhabitants could do nothing without the aid of American valor, and the Royalists, having no longer any thing too apprehend from this source, resumed their wonted despotism, and ruled the Province with an iron hand. Matters continued thus for two years, when Col. Henry Perry, aided by Marshall Ania and J. R. Grimes, of New Orleans attempted to revive the struggle in 1815.— The attempt, however, proved unfortunate. Perry had assembled nearly three hundred men at Chini a Tigre; but not being able to obtain suitable transportation, in consequence of the prevailing hostility in New-Orleans against the expedition, he was compelled to ship only a part of his men and stores at a time, in a small vessel commanded by Capt Wilson, who sailed with his first cargo, in the early part of November and landed opposite the east end of Galveston, at a point, to which the name of Bolivar was given by Col. Perry. Hence the origin of Bolivar Point. The Vessel, in making her second voyage, laden with the balance of the men and military stores at Chini au Tigre, was wrecked upon a small Island called Campeachy, forming now a part of Galveston; and out of the seventy eight human beings on board, only twelve escaped a watery grave; and these when rescued, were found in a wretched condition, having floated nine days on a raft, and having been forced to devour one of their own companions who had died in the mean time. Among the wrecked was a woman called Hannah, who was found upon a neighboring Island which received her name, and is still known as Hannah's Island. It lies a little above the city of Galvezton. The arms and military stores were all destroyed. The unfortunate wreck defeated the enterprise. In the ensuing Spring of 1816, Perry, with a portion of his former recruits united with Comodore Aury, who was

also looking to the subjugation of Texas, and was making, at this period, his Head Quarters at Galvezton Island.—

Aury—a Frenchman by birth—was naval commander in the patriot service with the rank of *comodore*; and in addition to this station, he had received the appointment of Governor of Texas and commander of its armies, conferred upon him by Don José Manuel Herrera, while the latter was in New-Orleans as resident ambassador of the Revolutionary Government in the days of Moreles. Aury had recruited about one hundred and fifty men, when he was joined by Perry. His object was to invade La Bahia and San Antonio, and take forcible possession of the Country. The troops were placed under the Command of Perry; and all the preparations for the campaign were nearly completed, when a difficulty arose between the two adventurers, which change the whole plan of operations, and gave a new direction to the enterprise. The difficulty was occasioned by the arrival of General Mina.

Xavier Mina—with the exception of his Uncle Francisco de Espoz y Mina—was probably one of the most distinguished and popular Guerilla warriors in the fierce and sanguinary conflicts of the Peninsula. At the early age of 18 he forsook his books at Saragosa, and buckled on his sword in defense of his invaded country. At the head of his hardy mountaneers, he soon rendered himself an object of general attention and of univrsal admiration; His exploits were indeed extraordinary for a youth—daring brilliant and confounding to the foe.—Nor were his personal accomplishments less remarkable than his military genius. Graceful in manners, generous in temper, captivating in address, and chivaleric to a fault, he was the theme of all praise and the idol of all hearts. But he was not exempt from misfortune. He was captured at an early period of the contest, and was detained in Paris as a prisoner, suffering from hardships, until the fall of Napoleon in 1814. On his return to the land of his nativity whose soil he had so nobly defended against its invaders, he was doomed, like almost all the genuine patriots of the country, to experience the persecutions and proscription of his perfidious and perjured Monarch; for as soon as this treacherous and tiranical monster was restored to liberty and the throne of Spain, instead of redeeming the pledges he had given, and fulfilling the hopes which he had inspired in favor of a Constitutional and limited monarchy, he commenced a war of extermination against the Constitutional party, and indeed against all who had evinced any decided predelictions for a just, rational and restricted government. Among the special objects of his vengeance were the two Minas, who had rendered themselves no less conspicuous for their vindication of liberal principles than for their astonishing career in arms. After a vain attempt which they made in Navarr to re-establish the Constitution they were forced to fly their country, and seek security in foreign lands. They were finally compelled, by the persecutions of the despot, to fly their country and seek security in foreign lands. They retired to Great Britain, where they were well received; and where the younger one had a liberal pension allowed him by the government. Espoz returned to Spain in 1819 on the restoration of the Constitution—fled after its overthrow—and returned again as soon as the queen succeeded to the throne, and took command of the forces

against the Carlists.⁴⁴ He died, however, very soon after. Axiver, in the mean time, had opened to himself a new career. During his residence in England, he conceived the project of mingling in the Revolution of Mexico, and of aiding that oppressed and bleeding country in its heroic struggle for Independence. Through the assistance of a few individuals, friendly to the cause, he was able to fit out a small expedition, with which he sailed for the United States and landed at Norfolk in Virginia on the 27th September 1816.— His expectation of augmenting his resources in this country were not realized. He succeeded in obtaining only a few additional supplies, and a small reinforcement; and after being much embarrassed & harrassed by the Spanish Ambassador, Don Onis, he finally set sail for Port au Prince, whence a portion of his expedition had preceeded him, and from that point, to the Island of Galvezton, where he arrived on the 24th November 1816, and was welcomed with a generous enthusiasm by Aury and his fire-eating followers.—

And now it was that the dissention, already alluded to, arose between comodore Aury and Col. Perry. Mina was bound with his expedition for the interior of Mexico, with the expectation of forming a junction with Victoria and other prominent leaders of the Revolution. This seemed to open a wider field of operations to Perry than the project in which he was now engaged; and he made known his desire to sever his connection with Aury and to join the standard of Mina. This gave offence to the Comodore; and an open rupture soon ensued between them. The parties were about to appeal to arms, when the controversy was fortunately terminated by a proposition which was mutually agreed to, that the Soldiers connected with the enterprise should be allowed to choose for themselves the standard they would follow. The majority preferred to share the fortunes of Mina; and accordingly preparations were made for a general embarcation with him. Aury interposed no further obstacles; but lending his vessel as a transport for the artillery and cavalry, he sailed on the 27th of March 1817. with the expedition to Santander, the point of debarcation, where he separated from his companions, and soon after entered into the servise of some of the South American States.—

The Expedition of Mina belongs to the history of Mexico, and no cognizance need be taken of it here, except so far as Perry was connected with it. Perry was certainly an excellent officer; and one of the bravest of men; but he was nevertheless a man of some exentricities of temper, which rendered his connection with Mina a source of disappointment to that leader and of disaster to himself. Without assigning any adequate reason for his course, he abandoned the expedition at an early period and left it materially weakened by the loss of those who retired with him. He did not withdraw, however, until he had rendered some servise. He had the honor of fighting the first battle in the campaign, and of putting to flight an enemy three times stronger than himself. It occurred in the following manner.—

The Expedition disembarked at Santander on the 15th of April, and

⁴⁴[Note in document:] Espos. without any cost or expense, whatever to the Govt. raised and maintained a Division, with which he commenced his career, and ended by Capturing 13 strong fortresses & towns, and killing & capturing 40.000 of the enemy.

proceeded immediately up the river to the town of Soto la Marina, which was taken possession of without opposition—the commanding officer of that district, Col. Don Felipi de la Garza having retired at the approach of the new comers. Mina was informed, very soon after his arrival here, that Don La Mora, one of the wealthiest citizens of the place was making his escape to the enemy, taking with him a large amount of specie and much valuable property. La Mora in his first interview with Mina, had made many professions of friendship, and had promised to furnish him with necessary supplies; but at the very time of doing this, he was secretly arranging for his flight, and had already despatched a messenger to La Garza to come to his relief and aid him in the removal of his effects. Perry was despatched immediately in pursuit of the hypocritical fugative. La Mora escaped; but the specie and property were captured. This, however, was no sooner done, than La Garza, who was coming to the protection of La Mora made his appearance at the head of three hundred and fifty cavalry—a force more than three times greater than Perry's, which was composed of infantry alone. A parley was held. La Garza demanded the restoration of the property; and promised the Royal clemency to all who should lay down their arms. This attempt to seduce the allegiance of his troops, fired the indignation of Perry, who at once defied the foe, and prepared for battle. La Garza, in the confidence of superior numbers, regarded victory on his side as certain and easy, & had no hesitancy in entering into the conflict. He charged the Americans with unusual activity and vigor. But without avail. Perry received him with firmness, and by a timely and well-directed volley, checked his impetuosity and forced him to fall back. The attempt was renewed again and again by Garza, but in every instance with the same ill-success. At length he dismounted his men and came into open battle. A few rounds were exchanged between the belligerents, when Perry concluded that it was his turn to make a charge; and sallying accordingly from the favorable position he occupied, he advanced upon the foe with such unwavering firmness, that the latter took fright; mounted his men and fled in utter confusion. The loss of the enemy were nine men. In the ranks of Perry, not one had been killed or wounded. The treasure in dispute, however, was recaptured by the royalists; for while this skirmishing was going on between the main forces, a party had fallen in the rear of Perry, and bore away the prize, after killing one and capturing two of the guard who had been detailed to protect it.— The specie only was recaptured; the other effects were too bulky for removal; and Perry had to abandon them to the enemy and return to Soto la Marina.

Mina himself expected to have participated in this fight; but was prevented by accident from so doing; and this failure on his part to cooperate, though altogether unavoidable, was supposed to be one of the grounds of that discontent which Perry began to manifest very shortly after this affair. The real cause, however, of his dissatisfaction was never known; but it was evident to all that his heart was no longer enlisted in the cause; and it was not many days before his determination to withdraw from the Expedition and return to the United States, was openly avowed.— No explanations or concessions had any effect upon him; he was resolved to go; and Major Gordon and several val-

uable officers, together with fifty of Perry's own troops, volunteered to accompany him. With this small force he commenced his homeward travels.—

A journey by land from Soto la Marina to the United States was an extraordinary undertaking, especially when it is remembered how difficult were the means of subsistence and how numerous the foes that beset the path. The path was more perilous than the one they abandoned; and yet, in defiance of all the difficulties so insurmountable apparently, this daring and undaunted party encountered and conquered them all; literally carving their way by the sword, until they reached the town of La Bahia, the theatre of Perry's former glory. Here they fought their last fight. It was supposed that there was no real necessity of this conflict, and that Perry might have avoided it by passing below the town without observation; but it is now impossible to decide upon the propriety or policy of his course; it may have been dictated by emergencies unknown to us; and we shall confine ourselves to a simple state of the fact, that immediately on his arrival at La Bahia, he summoned the Commandant, Castañada, to surrender—a summons which in all probability would have been obeyed had it not been for a very unexpected circumstance.— While the Commandant was deliberating as to what he should do, a formidable force made its appearance upon the plains. It was Col. Martinez from Bexar at the head of a large body of cavalry. This decided the matter. Castañada of course refused to surrender; and Perry perceiving his own inability to cope with so large a force, commenced a retreat; but the Royalists, following in prompt pursuit, overtook the party at a grove, called the Perdido; where a battle, as ferocious and fatal as that of the Medina, took place on the 19th day of June 1817; in which the Americans were all sacrificed to a man; but not until their own numbers had been quadrupled by the dead of the foe. Perry was the last survivor; and preferring death to captivity, he placed a pistol to his head and terminated his own existence; and thus escaped the indignities and outrages which this brutal enemy was always wont to inflict upon prisoners.— Such was the sad conclusion of this hero's career. We have no comment to offer. Perry's integrity and honor were never doubted or impeached and his chivalry was beyond all question. With regard to his abandonment of the Expedition at Soto la Marina—it was involved in mystery at the time and it still remains so.—

The next adventurer who claims our attention is General Lalaman—a French refugee—who planted a small colony upon the Trinity in 1818. It may be well to remark, however, by way of parenthesis, that General Humbert, had previous to this, taken possession of Galvezton, and had issued Commissions to privateers to cruize against the Spanish Commerce. His occupancy of the Island, however, was not of long continuance; for about the time that Lalaman was founding his settlement, the Royal Authorities at San Antonio dispatched Col. Castañada at the head of seven hundred men against Humbert; who, hearing of their approach abandoned his position. Castañada found the Island deserted. All the information we have respecting the settlement of Lalaman is derived from three sources—viz—Zavalla's History of the Mexican Revolution, the History of France by Anquetil and Gallois, and a brief memorandum of a conversation which we once had with

Judge Martin of New-Orleans. Having nothing of our own to add, we must rely upon these sources for the accuracy of our statements. The wars of France; and especially the events that followed the Abdication of Bonaparte in 1814 and the Battle of Waterloo in 1815, occasioned a large number of the French to emigrate to the United States. The American Congress, by an Act of the 5th of March 1817, granted to these exiles 92,000 acres of land in the territory of Alabama upon the Mobile and Tombecbee rivers, at the price of two francs per acre, payable in fourteen years, without interest, for the purpose of introducing the culture of the vine and the olive in this country. From some cause, however, to us unknown, the most of the emigrants, thus favored, relinquished the idea of settling these lands, and sold their grant to a company of speculators, who, it is said, made considerable profit from the operation. A few of these refugees, after the sale of their lands, went to Galvezton where Genl. Humbert had established himself; but about three hundred of them, under the direction and Conduct of General Lalaman, formed a settlement on the territory lying between the Neches and the Trinity; to which they gave the name of *Champ d' Asile*, or land of refuge. Here they established a kind of military government; parcelled out the lands, and published to the world a manifesto in which they declared themselves a sovereign and independent State. Lalaman had had some correspondence with the Insurgent Chiefs of Mexico, and expected, by espousing their cause and cooperating with them in their revolutionary struggle that his claims to the territory which he had thus appropriated, would be recognised by the patriot authorities. A difficulty, however, very soon arose, which he had not foreseen. Mr Monroe sent Commissioners to Lalaman to notify him confidentially of the claims which the united States had to that country, and that the Government could not permit his establishment to go on. The enterprise was accordingly abandoned—having existed only 8 months—and most of the refugees returned to the United States and settled in the State of Alabama. Previous to the dissolution of the Settlement, however, the colonists had become greatly discouraged.— They were harrassed by the savages, threatened by the Spaniards, their means were exhausted, and a hundred of their negroes had made their escape to the Indians.— Tidings of their misfortunes having reached their native country, the sum of Ten thousand dollars was collected in Paris and forwarded to Paul Poultz, a broker in New-Orleans, to be distributed among the sufferers by three individuals to be chosen for that purpose by the Governor. Governor Villeré selected Judge Martin, Destreham and Judge Moreau, who made the distribution accordingly. Lalaman declined to receive his portion, leaving it to his followers. Thus terminated this military kingdom in miniature—the *champ d' Asile*.—There were two Lalamans, brothers, and both Generals. The eldest, who headed this enterprise, sailed to old Spain, to mingle in the wars of that Country; while the other retired to Philadelphia, where he married the niece of the celebrated Stephen Girard.—

But among all the adventurers connected with the early attempts towards the occupancy and settlement of Texas, there is no one whose name has excited a deeper curiosity, and whose character is involved in greater obscurity than the celebrated Lafitte. We do not pretend to

know anything of his early history. It is stated in some publications extravagant and unreliable, that he was born at St Maloes in France in 1781; that he was brought up on the sea, and that his youth was distinguished by activity, talent and lawless exploits. It may really be so—yet there is no certainty of its truth. So many embellished and exaggerated accounts have been given of him, that it is now almost impossible to distinguish what is true from that which is purely fictitious. There is indeed no satisfactory history of his career, as far as we have seen, prior to his appearance at Barrataria; and the circumstances under which he took possession of that Island and its bays, as well as his conduct whilst abiding there, have been very clearly exhibited in the Historical Memoirs of Latour, and the history of the war of 1812 by Judge Brackenrige. We refer the reader to these authors as the source from which we derive the materials of our present sketch.—

Gaudaloupe, lying in the Caribbean Sea, is one of the most valuable of the West India Islands. It now belongs to the French; but in 1810, it was taken by the British, who held it until 1814, when it was restored to its former owners. Prior to its capture in 1810, the Government of that Island had been pretty liberal in the distribution of Privateer Commissions; and it was from this source that Lafitte obtained his first license to depredate upon Spanish Commerce. It was a proper and legal Commission—one which sent him forth against an enemy at war with his own native Country; and one to which no possible censure can justly attach. Whether he ever acted piratically under that Commission, is, in our opinion very questionable.—The crime has been imputed to him; but it wants authentication. At the time that Gaudaloupe fell into the hands of the British, many of the Privateers sailing under the authority of that Island, was still out on a cruise; and not being able to return to the Port whence they had sailed, in order to have their Captures condemned, and where they might be able to vend their prizes, they were compelled to seek refuge, as well as a market in some other quarter. Fortunately for them, they struck upon Barrataria; perhaps one of the most favorable positions for their necessities which the world could afford, it being near a large mart (New Orleans) into which they could easily introduce their goods, and at the same time remain in almost perfect security, inasmuch as the waters which they occupied were at that time but little known to any one except themselves. This was the beginning of the Barratarian settlement, of which Lafitte became the acknowledged head.

In this secluded and almost inaccessible point, the Privateers, amounting to the number of five or six hundred, continued for some time vending their goods and probably deliberating upon their future course. The Commissions which they had received from the Government of Gaudaloupe, was now about expiring; and unless they could have them supplied by others from some power at war with Spain, it was evident that they would have to disband, or to act piratically. In this dilemma, they applied to the Government of Carthagena, which had recently declared its Independence. They were well received by the people of that country, and found no difficulty in obtaining the boon they sought. Under the flag and authority of this Govt they blockaded the Ports of the Royalists for a long time—capturing many valuable prizes and

bringing them to Barrataria, where they were sure of a ready market and a safe retreat. So far as their spoliations upon the Spanish Commerce was concerned, their course was evidently legal and just, and sanctioned by the practice of the most enlightened nations. Upon this score there could be no reasonable complaint against them. Their offence consisted in this—in the bringing of their prizes to Barrataria, and there condemning them, as Judge Brackenrige observes “in their own way,” instead of taking them to Carthagena, under whose flag they were acting. This conduct caused them to be regarded by many, as Pirates, instead of Privateers; and they were generally so represented in the public prints of the day. But this was not exactly just. No doubt that many of them were very daring and desperate men; but no evidence was ever adduced to fix the crime of Piracy upon them. On the contrary, their papers, when submitted to an examination, were found to contain an exact list of all their numerous prizes, and left but little doubt of of [*sic*] the legality of their captures. Their real and undisputed offense was that of smuggling; an offense committed in the first instance under peculiar circumstances, & afterwards continued under the encouragement and protection of the people of Louisiana. New Orleans furnished them with a ready and convenient market; their goods were introduced into the city in a clandestine manner, and there disposed of, at prices which rendered the trafic as pleasing and profitable to the purchasers as to the vendors. This reciprocity of interest engendered good-will; so that the prevailing disposition of the community was rather in favor of the Smugglers than against them. This was all manifestly wrong, demoralizing in its nature, injurious to the public revenues and violative of the laws of nations, as the United States & Spain were then at peace. But who were the most culpable—the smugglers—their patrons—or the Government that connived at the trafic? Lafitte brought his prizes very improperly to Barrataria; and he was encouraged to do this by the impunity which he was permitted to enjoy, and the *open* manner in which his contraband commodities were purchased. We say *open* manner, because this illicit trade conducted secretly at first, began, after a while, to assume the form and regularity of a fair and legitimate commerce. The smugglers would occasionally go in person to dispose of their articles; and almost without any pretention to concealment, many of the Merchants and planters would repair to Barrataria to make their purchases. It is stated also that orders for goods were even received from the City of New-York.— Thus encouraged and sustained by public opinion, the Barratarians pursued their contraband trafic, without molestation; until finally after the lapse of four years, the Governor of the State (Claiborn) felt himself constrained by a sense of shame if not of duty, to adopt some measures for there extermination of these contrabandists. Various attempts were accordingly made; but all of them proving ineffectual, the fertile imagination of His Excellency, at length, suggested the sapient policy of issuing a Proclamation, with a reward of five hundred dollars, for the apprehension and safe delivery of the leader of the band. This vigorous measure, however, did not inspire the terror which was expected; it produced no other effect than to call forth a rejoinder from the Barratarian Chief, who in his proclamation, doubled the sum for the apprehension of His Excellency. The Govern-

ment of the United States, had finally to interpose its power; and accordingly an expedition, by land and by sea, was despatched against the Republic of Barrataria, composed of the combined forces of Col. Ross and Commodore Patterson. The Barratarians pretended to succumb to the majesty of the law; and retired from their position without bloodshed. They however, reoccupied their old haunts and hiding places as soon as the government forces were withdrawn; and remained unmolested in their old vocation, until the arrival of the British at the mouth of the Mississippi in 1814, when their affairs took a new turn, and they were called to act a nobler part.—

The British were now arranging for their attack upon New-Orleans; and it was supposed that they intended to bring their fleet up the river, to co-operate with their land forces. It was an important matter to secure the friendship and services of Lafitte; for his accurate knowledge of all the secret passages to the Mississippi, would enable him, were he so disposed, to conduct an enemy to the very entrance of the City undiscovered. An alliance with him, was accordingly proposed by the British officers, who offered him, gold, rank and promotion, if he would unite with them in their meditated attack upon New-Orleans. The Barratarian, however although an out-law at the time, was not seduced by these splendid allurements from his allegiance to his adopted country. The nefarious proposition was rejected; and the proscribed infractor of the revenue laws, instead of acting the part of a traitor and a hireling, was found in the day of danger, amongst the foremost in his country's defense.

The instrument employed in this infamous overture, was Captain Lockrey, of the British navy. Having on the 2nd Sept 1814, anchored near the entrance of the main pass, within observation of the Privateers, a party of the latter set off in a small boat to reconnoiter the vessel.— They were met by Capt Lockrey and Capt Williams in a pinnace bearing the British colors and a flag of truce. After a few questions, these officers remarked to one of the privateers that they had a packet for Mr Lafitte of Barrataria, and requested him to take charge of it and to deliver it into Lafitte's own hands. The Barratarian received the packet and promised to deliver it accordingly; but being a man of some address and talent, he suggested to Capt Lockrey, the propriety of his going on shore and communicating with Mr Lafitte in person. The Captain consented to do so; and the two parties made for the shore. When they were near the land, and the officers were fully in the power of the privateers, the individual who had received the packet, assumed his real character and said to captain Lockrey "I am the person whom you seek—Mr Lafitte of Barrataria."— The officers were doubtless a little surprised, and may have thought of the unexpected meeting of Fitz James and Rodrick Duh; but the Barratarian commander assured them that they had nothing to apprehend as long as they were under his protection—an assurance, however, which he was scarcely able to redeem, in consequence of the prevailing hostility of the Privateers to the British nation; for the British had attempted, only a year before at Cat Island, to despoil them of their prizes, and to seize upon some of their armed vessels. They were repulsed, however in the attempt, & sustained considerable loss. Besides this, the sympathies of the Barratarians were generally on the side of the United

States in their contest with that power; and it was this feeling mainly that occasioned the excitement which arose among them on the landing of these two officers. Scarcely had they placed foot upon the soil when a clamor was raised by more than two hundred of the privateers had assembled on the beach, demanding that Lockrey and Williams should be sent to the Governor and be tried and punished as Spies. With much difficulty they were finally appeased; and Lafitte proceeded to his dwelling accompanied by his guests.— Here the packet which had been given to him was opened. It contained the dishonorable proposition which we have already mentioned; the merits of which were now fully discussed by Lockrey, who employed every art and argument which he supposed might effect a man in Lafitte's situation, to lure him to his purposes and commit him to the British cause. He enlarged upon the multitude of advantages which the desired alliance would bring to Lafitte and his crew; and admonished him of the dangers of his present situation and of the final ruin that threatened him; to all of which the Barratarian Chief gave a deferential ear, and only asked that a few days might be allowed him for reflection. No reflection is necessary in a case so plain, retorted the importunate Lockrey. Are you not an outlaw, with a standing reward for your head, reviled, insulted and branded as infamous? And your brave associates—are they not persecuted by the American Government, denounced as pirates and hunted down as if they were the enemies of mankind? And is not your brother Paul at this very moment loaded with irons in the New-Orlean's prison? What claims then can a Government have upon your fidelity and affection which pursues you with vengeance and gives no quarters to your kindred or companions? On the other hand, by uniting with us, you will be received in the British service with an honorable rank; your character will be restored; your fortunes redeemed, and a wide field will be opened to you for the display of your talents, and the reaping of that vengeance which your wrongs demand.— Why then hesitate between prosperity and persecution—between glory and degradation—between the destiny of a hero and the fate of a felon?— Such was the spirit, of the Captains logic; in addition to which he spoke of the incongeniality that existed between the Louisianians and the American people; and of the great advantages which the negro population would be to them, when armed and excited to insurrection. The argument was closed by an offer of 30 000\$ as earnest money, to be paid at any time and place the recipient might designate. Lafitte pretended to be sensibly affected by the Captain's magnificent promises and inspiring picture of future glory and greatness; but still he replied as he had done before, that time for reflection was necessary; and that he would give a decisive answer in a few days. And here the parties separated for a while. Important business, demanding his personal attention called Lafitte away. Taking leave of his guests, he promised to return in brief space.—

Lafitte, however, had absented himself but a short time, when the British officers, together with their crew, were seized and confined by the disaffected Persons who had desired on their first landing to send them as prisoners to New-Orleans. They still believed these officers to be spies, and were anxious to have them dealt with accordingly.— The excitement became so violent and general, that Lafitte, on his

return, experienced great difficulty in keeping down an insurrection among the crew. He finally prevailed upon them, however, to forego their resentments, by reminding them of the shame and dishonor which would follow such a flagrant violation of the flag of truce, and by giving at the same time some slight indications of his own ulterior plans and views. The officers were accordingly set at liberty; and after receiving due apologies for the unceremonious treatment which they had recd. they departed for the brig in their little pinnace; not, however, until the Lord of Barrataria, had drawn from them a pretty free and full development of their meditated invasion of lower Louisiana.

Lafitte, lost no time in communicating these circumstances to the authorities of the State.— But first, however, it was necessary for him to sound his followers upon the part which he was about to play. His plan was to tender himself and the whole Barratarian force, to the service of the Country. The proposition was made. It was recd. with enthusiasm; all were in favor of it; and the alluvial Delta of Barrataria was shaken by their loud huzzas. A letter was immediately addressed to Mr Blanque, a member of the Louisiana Legislature, enclosing the documents received from Captain Lockrey, and another to Governor Claiborn, containing the proposition above resolved upon. In his letter to the latter, Lafitte uses the following langu[a]ge. “I offer to you to restore to this State several citizens, who perhaps in your eyes have lost that sacred title. I offer you them, however, such as you could wish to find them, ready to exert their utmost efforts in defence of the country. This point of Louisiana, which I occupy, is of great importance in the present crisis. I tender my services to defend it; and the only reward I ask is that a stop be put to the prosecution against me and my adherents, by an act of oblivion, for all that has been done hitherto.” He says also in the same letter “I have never sailed under any flag but that of the republic of Carthage; and my vessels are perfectly regular in that respect.” The following sentence we take from his letter to Mr Blank— “I may have evaded the payment of duties to the Custom house; but I have never ceased to be a good citizen.”— We make these extracts, in order that the Barratarian may [be] allowed [to] speak for himself, since so very few have been found, who were willing to speak for him.—

Lafitte's proposition was accepted. A reconciliation ensued between him and His Excellency; all prosecutions were suspended; and on the 8th of January 1815, in the great and concluding Battle between the two contending nations, the bold Barratarian and his Lieutenant Dominique were seen at the head of a hardy race of men who delighted in danger and who defied all foes. Justice was done to their unparalleled bravery in the official report of the Com— . . . [incomplete]

No. 2801. ADVENTURES OF XAVIER MINA. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

The death of Perry terminates the connection of Mina's adventures with our present sketch. Nevertheless, as the reader may possibly have some desire to learn the sequel of those adventures, we will, for the gratification of his curiosity, continue our narrative of this valiant Navarrese and his *Three hundred*. However irrelevant and protracted

the Episode may appear; still it will serve as a slight tribute to the memory of men whose extraordinary valor has been seldom equalled and perhaps never surpassed.

When Mina arrived at Soto la Marina, his force did not exceed Three hundred men.— The engagement which took place between Col. Perry and La Garza immediately upon the occupancy of this town, we have already noticed; and while the signal victory obtained over superior numbers on that occasion, was truly cheering to the little band of heroes, it tended greatly on the other hand, to increase the excitement and alarm which the landing of Mina had already produced among the Royalists. The fame of the General had preceded him. His character was well understood in Mexico; and the Royal authorities, dreading the influence which a leader of his popularity and real abilities might have among the people and probably among the royal troops also, determined to crush him at a single blow, before he could have any communication with the insurgents or should be able to arouse the country to a general resistance; and for this purpose, the most formidable army that could be collected was put in movement against him under Arredondo; and at the same time a naval force was ordered to the mouth of the Santander, to destroy the transports of the invader, and thus deprive him of the means of either retreating, or of strengthening himself from abroad. Mina was not ignorant of the dangers by which he was surrounded, and accordingly he lost no time in making a suitable appeal to the friends of liberty and the disaffected of all parties to rally to his standard and defend their rights. This was done in an eloquent Proclamation, in which he explained the object of his expedition; the motives that inspired him and the principles which were to guide him in his operations. The appeal, however, was not responded to with any degree of enthusiasm by the people. He was joined, it is true, by a few brave spirits; but the inhabitants in general were deterred from taking any part in the difficulties by the great superiority of the Royal forces.— The fact is, that Mina had landed in the country with too small a force to inspire confidence; and the insurgent chiefs themselves, even more derelict than the people, regarded his numbers as too inconsiderable for their attention, and left him to take care of himself.—

In this perilous situation—threatened by an overwhelming force, and without the prospect of any material augmentation of his own strength—Mina resolved upon the following desperate policy—viz—to throw up a small work of defense; garrison it with 150 men for the purpose of protecting the military stores, and with the residue of his command to cut his way to the patriot chiefs in the interior. His calculations were to secure the co-operation of those Chiefs, and to return with a competent force in time to save the garrison and defeat the foe.— Should he fail, however, in his attempt to penetrate into the Country he looked to this fort as the point to which he should fall back in the day of disaster—and make his last desperate stand. These were his plans and expectations; and in pursuance of them, a fortification, composed of mud, was speedily erected; and 50 Americans and 100 of the Mexican recruits, were detailed to garrison it, under the command of Major Don. Jose Sardá. When the arrangements for his departure were nearly completed, two circumstances occurred in their

nature very dispiriting. One of them was the withdrawal of Col. Perry which we have previously related; and the other was, the capture of the flotilla at the mouth of the Santander. These were real misfortunes. The desertion of Perry and his fifty followers at that particular crisis, was indeed a serious loss; and the destruction of the vessels was no less so, inasmuch as it prevented Major Bradburn from going to Neworleans after a reinforcement for the garrison, which he was preparing to do. These unexpected reverses, however, were borne with the greatest composure. They produced no change in the plans of our indomitable hero. He still believed it practicable, by hard fighting, to win his way into the interior, and to return in time to succor the garrison; and clinging to this forlorn hope, he paraded his men and commenced the daring march. The force of Mina numbered about three hundred; and was composed, perhaps, of the most heterogeneous materials that were ever collected in one body of the same size. Besides the Americans, who outnumbered the balance of the foreigners, there were bold representatives of almost every nation of Europe, and all of them speaking their respective languages without understanding much of any other. There was the Frenchman and the Spaniard, the German and the Englishman, the Creole and the Guachupin; and last though not least the immortal Paddy—for where was there ever a fight in which Pat did not take a part. And all these were more or less divided and estranged by complexion, habits, prejudices, religion and national antipathies; and may have been in all probability during their chequered careers, arrayed against each other in deadly strife. It would seem almost impossible that a mass so incoherent and discordant could be held together. There was every thing to engender jealousy, hatred, strife and disunion; and scarcely a single natural tie, or bond of sympathy to hold them in unity and harmony. And yet they did cling to each other, even unto death. Their gallant and accomplished leader had the happy faculty of inspiring them with his own lofty sentiments of honor, chivalry and devotion; and very soon after the commencement of their perilous march, they become consolidated and cemented by common dangers, sufferings and victories, until at length there was in that little army, but one heart, and that heart throbbled alone with the high resolve—to conquer or to die.

The points which they were aiming to reach, were the Provinces of Guadalajara and Vallodalad, where the Patriots held possession of three forts, Sombrero, Los Remedios and Jauxillo, and where the infamous Padre Torres, commander in Chief, had established something which he called a Congress, holding its sessions at Jauxillo; but in order to arrive at those points, they would have to surmount very formidable obstacles—they would [have] to traverse hot and barren plains—suffer greatly with thirst and hunger—make forced marches by day and by night, and at every step, to be exposed to the attacks of superior numbers.—These things were inevitable; yet nothing dispirited by the terrific difficulties of the enterprise, they bid adieu to Soto la Marina, on the 24th of May, a little more than one month from the date of their arrival there. In order to avoid Arredondo, who was directly in their path, they diverged from the main route and pursued a devious march through unfrequented ways; it being the true policy of this Spartan band, not to have their numbers thinned by unneces-

sary conflicts with superior forces; for even though they might be very often victorious, yet their repeated losses would finally disable them from the achievement of their ends.—

We cannot enter into the minute details of their career—for this would protract our sketch beyond all just & reasonable bounds—and yet those very details are the most interesting and thrilling part of their whole history. We must confine ourselves to a brief outline; and notice those more prominent events only which are necessary to a tolerable fair comprehension of their extraordinary valor and prowess.—The marches of the four first days brought them to a Rancho, where the fugitive La Mora had secreted a portion of the plunder which Col. Perry had previously captured, and which was now retaken, and so much of it appropriated as were necessary to the comfort of the troops. La Mora himself escaped, as he had done on the former occasion; but his loss was well compensated by the representative he left behind.— Two days after this event the Division captured seven hundred horses, which the enemy had collected for the pursuit of this very party. It was a serious loss to the Royalists; and of no great benefit to the captures; for in three days the horses stampeded and escaped during a dark and stormy night. The line of march was continued without much interruption until the 8 of June, when our adventurers struck upon the foe. It was near the *Valle de Mais*. In three leagues of the town, Mina found two hundred cavalry in waiting for him, and occupying a well-selected position. They were the advance guard of the main force. One vigorous charge sufficed. The enemy fled in confusion, leaving on the ground five dead. Mina pursued them to the Valle de Mais—encountered the main forces—drove them from the place—pursued them on the plains, and then returned to in triumph to town, without having lost a single man in either engagement.

Don Joaquin Arredondo, the general who commanded the royal forces at the Battle of Medina, and who had disfigured his victory on that occasion with so many unheard of atrocities, was still at this period commanding the Northern and Eastern provinces of the Kingdom, making his Head-Quarters at Monterrey. He appears to have been sufficiently dilatory in his movements against Mina; so much so, as to allow to the latter ample time to erect a fortification at Soto la Marina and to make all the necessary preparations for his contemplated incursion into the interior of the country. Mina's plans were to leave a small detachment in the mud fort at Soto la Marina, and with the balance of his troops, by means of hard fighting, to form a junction with the patriot chiefs in the Interior; a disposition of affairs, however, which does not seem to have been the most wise & judicious under all the circumstances; for by the time he was ready to take up the line of march, it was known that Arredondo had put himself in movement, and was indeed already within a few leagues of Soto la Marina, at the head of two thousand men, & seventeen peices of artillery. The policy of his departure, therefore, at this particular crisis, may well be questioned; for it is manifest that the small force which he might leave in the fort would be utterly incompetent to resist the assault of so formidable an army. There was almost a moral certainty of their falling victims to the superior enemy, if they should be left

to themselves. According to our conception of the matter, Mina ought to have done one of two things—either to have remained at Soto la Marina and met Arredondo; or to have taken with him, in his march for the interior the entire force of his expedition. In either event he would have had his hands full. Whether he should remain or depart, the perils by [which] he was surrounded, and the alarming odds which he would have to encounter, imperiously demanded the union and co-operation of the whole command. The attempt to penetrate into the interior of the country with only a portion of his troops; about 270; was an undertaking sufficiently desperate and rash; but the leaving behind him 100 men to protect themselves against the formidable force which was then marching upon them, was a measure still more unreasonable, and one which apparently admits of no apology.— We do not pretend to say that this division of his force, was the cause of his subsequent calamities; for we think it more than probable that under any arrangements his defeat was inevitable, rendered so by the divided and unsettled condition of the patriots rather than by the weakness of his force. Had his command remained united, and been stronger than it really was, the general result of his expedition would have been the same. The want of co-operation on the part of the patriot chiefs and the prevailing indisposition of the party to sustain him, rendered success impossible and defeat inevitable; and we have objected to the division which he made of his command at Soto la Marina only because it strikes us as a movement altogether unreasonable & astonishing in a General of such undoubted talents and long experience as Mina.— Had he been ever so successful in his own adventures, it would not have saved the one hundred that he left behind exposed to the vengeance of Arredondo.— It was like dooming them to death; and could have no forgiveness for an error so palpable and fatal, if it were not for the fact that it [was] the only one committed by this extraordinary hero in his whole career.—

Commenced 24 May—25 was conducted by a guide thro' obscure paths—had nothing but beef to eat. suffered much from the boiling sun. Came to an hacienda, where they tarried the night— The two next days 26 & 27th, brought them by rapid & secret march, to the hacienda to which La Mora had retired; here some of the property formerly captured by Perry was found, and was appropriated as far as it was necessary to the comfort of the party. This was about 25 leagues from Soto la Marina.

Next day 28 crossed the river Altamira where they lost one man Lt. Gabet. This was at the town of Horcasitas.—

Next day 29 went 5 leagues to hacienda down the stream & halted for the day.— here they captured 700 horses—sever[e] loss to the enemy.— Afternoon 30, Mina continued his march, his men mounted on the best of the captured horses, the remainder being driven along.— These horses were designed for his pursuit— sore loss— He however in three days, one dark night, lost them all.

8th of June, in the morning, Mina was told by a peasant that the enemy from El Valle de Mais, was stationed on the road to intercept him. The division pushed on to encounter them; the out post or advance guard was 200 Cavalry well posted & waiting; this was 3 leagues from El Valle de Mais. Mina attacked them they retreated with 5

Killed, to the main body—attacks the main body—pursues them thro' the town; captures a small piece of artillery & some prisoners—Kills many—the enemy totally routed. Mina then returns to the town, with no one killed & only one wounded.—

The inhabitants fled—rich place the valle—Mina prevented all violence & plundering—took a few articles necessary to the troops & a small sum of money which was divided among the troops—

The people had just celebrated the burning of the Flotilla.—

Evening 9th June—hears that Armiñan, from Altamira was in pursuit of him, with 700 infantry & strong body cavalry, & was in two days march of him in his rear. Council was called—determined not to wait the arrival of the Enemy & give him battle, but to push on and “endeavor to join the patriots, before the enemy could get up.”— The council was for going on; and at dawn 10 June took the march.

The marches were long and without rest & little to eat.—

12th at night halted at a ranch, next morning 13, had tortillas & meat. Armiñan was but few leagues off— Mina “thereupon caused his division to move forward” advanced rapidly—no time to procure provisions— On night 14 arrived at the haciendo Peotillos—the enemy close in the rear; Captured one of Mina's men who lagged behind.—

He arrived at the hacienda at night, hungry & fatigued; expected here something to eat; but to their surprise found the place deserted & nothing to eat. Fatigued, they slept soundly, hoping to get something to eat in the morning. In the morning 15 while they were cooking their meals & cheered with the prospect of a good breakfast, it was announced that the advance guard was within 2 miles of the place. They were called to arms; marched to an eminence; whence he reconnoitered the enemy. A battle was now inevitable to retreat in their broken down condition was folly; “he therefor determined to strike a blow trusting that it might be attended by some fortunate result.” He asked his men if they were willing to fight so strong a force; three cheers in the affirmative decide the matter.

The first charge of the enemy the enemy lost 22 dead one fire. this was with the advance guard—this advance continued to play round, waiting for the main force to come up harrassing Mina in the meantime.— The main body came up with infantry, Cavalry & artillery, advancing under cover of the bushes unseen by Mina, until they opened a havy fire upon him from Artillery. see page 101.

Morning 16 moved forward—at noon reached a ranch; where they took up quarters & fared sumptuously.—

17—march resumed— Sun set reached an haciendo—the priest rang the Bells—pretended to be friend; but was enemy, & boasted to the Royalists that he had counted the troops as they were formed in the square.—

Next day's march 18 brough him to a large hacienda called *Espiritu Santo*, on the frontier of the provinces possessed by the Patriots—the owner had it garrisoned at his own expense; but fearing mina, retreated to San Luis The most of the male inhabitants had been ordered to leave by the owner. but Mina was met by a troop of females bearing the picture of the virgin & singing hymns—tarried that night outside of the hacienda—rations were provided & departed next morning 111

Next morning 19—forced march they reached the *Real de Pinos* at sunset. In Zacatecas.— It had a garrison of 300 men— Mina summoned the place to surrender—refusal returned—prepared to storm the place See page 112—

They now hoped in few days to form the long desired junction with the patriots. 3 day they marched thro' an arid plain strewed with bones—beast, bird, human being nothing visible—a perfect waste. No provisions procured; covered with grass for their horses.—

22nd Guide became bewildered & the Division halted—been 3 days without nourishment—

Early 23 they fell in with a small party patriots who were reconnoitering See page 114—

Thro mistake they attacked Mina as an Enemy; explanations—

“The joy of the troops, at having at length, after surmounting so many obstacles, joined their allies, may be readily imagined.” All forgot past sufferings, & looked forward to future glory. Mina set off to meet the Commt. Col. Don Christoval Naba, & in the fore noon returned to his encampmt.

The district under the comd of Naba was poor— Mina learned from him that 5 leagues off was a national ranch, & 4 leagues farther was the national fort called Sombbrero.— resumed his march.—22

“While ascending the heights of Ybarra, a strong body of the enemy were seen in the plain below. Their appearance was as unexpected as unwelcome, to the exhausted troops— Mina prepared for battle—the enemy declined— & Mina moved on to the national ranch unmolested; foun[d] plenty provisions & feasted 4 days.

The enemy was encamped close by, comanded by “Don Francisco de Orrantia, who, it appeared, had been ordered, after the defeat at Teotillas, from the city of Queretaro, to prevent Mina’s junction with the patriots”

“Mina, with his staff early on the morning 24 proceeded to the fort” the division followed soon after & “arrived at noon at the patriot fortress. where they were recd. with the most cordial demonstrations of joy. The patriots viewed the Division with astonishment, & could scarcely believe it possible that such a handful of men could have penetrated such a distance to the interior, & thro’ a country occupied by Royalists in every part of the route”———“The division had been 30 days on the march, and had gone over a distance of two hundred & 20 leagues.”— See page 117. double the real distance between Soto la Marina & Sombbrero, in consequence of the Circuitous route they had to take, thro’ unfrequented paths.—

They reached Sombbrero with 269 men—Killed and taken prisoners on the road amounted to 39—and 25 wounded.

See reflections page 119, & 120

On arriving at Sombbrero, he published a manifesto; & also wrote to Padre Torres, “a neighboring chieftain, who bore the title of Commander in Chief. Sombbrero was commanded by Don Pedro Moreno Mariscal de Campo had 80 infantry & few cavalry tolerably well clothed & armed.—Dn Pedro had also under his orders, a body of about 200 Cavalry Commanded by Don Encarnacion Ortiz, who traversed the Country in the [neighborhood?] of Sombbrero.”—

Sombrero was called by the Royalists *Comonjo* in 18 leagues of Guanajuato; five leagues from Lagos.

See reflection at the end of the Chaptr—122 page.

No. 2802. BRIEF BIOGRAPHY OF LORENZO DE ZAVALA.
LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

The present period is not favorable for speaking of the dead of other days. The public cannot think on the past while the present is full of great and important results. The nation is occupied with living; and for a brief period the memory of the talented and virtuous dead will remain sepultured. Nevertheless, it may be possible that there are some individuals who are not occupied with the events of the day so much so that they exclude all other matters from their consideration; and if there be such, for them alone, I would write this brief biography. I would like to give a picture, full and perfect, of Honorable Señor De Zavala; but this is not my present object.— A work of this kind, will have to be done some day; and with a pen more skilled than mine.— Now, I desire to say only what may be necessary to depict his character, and show to the world, that Mexico has produced, at least one individual, who, in times of universal corruption, lived and died an honest man and an excellent patriot.

Lorenzo de Zavala was born in the city of Merida, Capital of the State of Yucatan; he was one of the first patriots who proclaimed the *Independence* of Mexico. He was a man of talent and virtue, well born, well educated, of affable manners and courteous in all things and a perfect Gentleman. These qualities being united with great wealth made him an important and efficient acquisition to the cause of the Revolution. He was young when he completed his studies.— From College he embarked on the tempestuous sea of public life; and never abandoned the sentiments of virtue, honor and patriotism with which he commenced his career. Eloquent in debate; powerful with his pen and energetic in his actions, he early became the object of the persecutions of the government; and he was imprisoned in the Castle of San Juan de Ulua, Vera-Cruz; where he was held a prisoner for three years, without knowing the cause of his arrest. Having obtained his liberty, he embarked for Sisal, the principal commercial city of the State of Yucatan; and immediately after he arrived at that port, he was appointed deputy by general acclamation of all the inhabitants to the Congress at Madrid. The circumstances made his departure very necessary. He embarked without delay. Scarcely had he taken his seat in the Chamber of deputies, when he was warned by his friends that he was still the object of the persecutions of the government, and that his life was in great danger. This information made him retire to France. The government ordered him to return to Madrid; but Zavala did not obey; and in a short time he embarked for New-Orleans accompanied by General Wade Hampton, resident of said city, being notable for his wealth. From this point he embarked for his native State, where he arrived safely and was well received by his fellow-citizens.—

Señor De Zavala was by nature a lover of liberty; and on account of much study and reflection he became a perfect Republican. Never did he abandon his opinions and sentiments. Although he was a personal friend of Iturbide, nevertheless, he openly opposed him in his usurpations; and he continued his opposition while there was the least chance of effecting any good by his efforts. He yielded to the bad state of public affairs, only when all the means were exhausted for preventing or correcting them:— Iturbide when his government was organized, offered to Zavala one of the chief offices. "I cannot accept it," said Zavala, "unless I may be permitted to retain and vindicate my principles and my republican views; which I believe and hope will triumph in my country."— Iturbide was content to receive the aid of Zavala on any condition whatever; and the friends of free government, were likewise rejoiced in having him in the councils of the country, where he would be able to excite good influences over the Usurper.— The people recognized in Señor De Zavala the defender of liberty under all circumstances.— The history of Iturbide is well known. Señor Zavala was his friend in adversity and obtained and enjoyed his affection without losing the confidence of the public. This was the natural effect of his frank disposition.— He never flattered Iturbide: neither did he deceive the people.— He was true to the one, as a friend, and to the other as a patriot.

After the fall of Iturbide and his expulsion from the country, the nation felt the necessity of establishing order and good government without delay. The different States appointed their deputies; and very soon was convoked in the city of Mexico a national convention, called the "*Constituent Congress.*" This was in the year 1824.— Señor Zavala was deputy from Yucatan; and appointed President of that body. This congress drew up the Constitution of Mexico and to Zavala must be attributed the merit, whatever it may be, of incorporating in said document such wise and excellent provisions; because he had studied the free institutions of the United States, more profoundly than others, and he had likewise, the popularity and influence to enforce his views and opinions. When the government was organized under the Constitution, and with Guadalupe Victoria as President, Señor Zavala was placed at the head of the Department of the Treasury; in which office he functioned a short period,⁴⁵ when he was made Governor of Mexico.—

At that time the State of Yucatan rebelled against the Federal government, and proclaimed its Independence. Zavala was sent there to pacify the inhabitants, and to induce them to proclaim the Federation again; but scarcely had Zavala arrived at Sisal, when they ordered him to leave the city. The inhabitants were informed of his mission before his arrival and although they were all his personal friends, they spoke to him to this effect, "Señor Zavala"—they said,

"We know the object of your visit; and as we are determined never to reunite ourselves with the other States in a common government, it is neither proper nor prudent that you be received by us, or that we permit you to remain here;—Consequently you will have to leave immediately."—Zavala requested the privilege of going to Merida to see

⁴⁵[Note in document] showing in the management of the treasury disinterestedness and economy which augmented it.

his family; whom he had not seen since his release from San Juan de Ulua. This privilege was denied him, and he was obliged to leave there without visiting his family. The vessel which carried him, was not out of sight, when his wife arrived at Sisal seeking him, having news of his arrival in that city. She could not bear the shock; and after much suffering died of grief.— Yucatan became reconciled, and again united itself to the Federation.—

Zavala thus expelled from Yucatan returned to Mexico in order to perform his duties as Governor.— The country was producing ambitious aspirants who were seeking their own glory without considering the good of the nation. Among this class, was a Colonel of the army (whose name I do not remember) who went to the house of Señor Zavala to propose to him some project or design that was infamous and perfidious. This man and Zavala had been intimate friends for many years; nevertheless the Señor Zavala could not permit this indignity and insult without resenting it. Before giving him any response, he took out his pistols, and presenting one to his friend, spoke to him thus— “traitor take this for thy defense— I will show you that I am capable of vindicating my honor, and likewise of punishing your treason.”— The Colonel unprepared for such reception, and having much apprehension of the consequences, lost no time in making honorable reparation; and in a few minutes both friends were taking chocolate in observance of their friendship.— After concluding, Zavala rose from the table, and said to his visitor— “my friend let us leave off our disputing; but as a sentinel over the liberties of the people, I am impelled to say that if you do not retire from this city in less than twenty-four hours you will lose your head.” A word to the wise is sufficient. These friends separated; and after many years, Zavala saw the Colonel again; but he was then a corpse on the field of San Jacinto.—

We have reached the most important period of Zavala's life.— During the first years of the presidency of Guadalupe Victoria, the nation enjoyed the greatest tranquillity; but toward the end of his administration of the government, the country began to be divided into two factions of a most ferocious character, that finally took up arms against each other, and involved the nation in a series of civil wars, which have not terminated to the present day. These factions were called *Escoseses* and *Yorkinos*; the first sustaining the principles of monarchy, and the other vindicating the principles of a Republican government. The contest was between aristocracy and democracy— between the power of the few, and the rights of the many. Señor Zavala was a founder and leader of the *Yorkinos*, and he believed that the liberties of the nation depended upon the triumph of his party. The competitors for the presidency were Guerrero, who was supported by the *Yorkinos*, and Pedraza the candidate of the *Escoseses*— Pedraza was elected by a very small majority.—Zavala regarded the election of Pedraza as the death of his hope for Mexico; because in his opinion, it demonstrated that wealth was more powerful than truth, and that the Church was stronger than the people; and looking at the subject in this light, he did not vacillate in taking arms against the victors. His voice called the inhabitants to war, and in a brief period the Revolution of the Acordado shook the nation as an earthquake. The im-

mediate results were the elevation of Guerrero to the presidency, the expulsion of Pedraza from the country and the pillaging of the city of Mexico for three days; the most remote consequences have lasted until this hour, and are still being felt. Such was the work of a man of great capacity, energy, and patriotism; and although the propriety and policy of this deed has been doubted, the purity and integrity of his motives have never been suspected; and with regard to the pillage of the city, it is proper to say that it was done contrary to the will and order of Zavala, and should be considered as one of those outrages which no human power can prevent nor foresee when an angry people take up arms.

At the time of the Revolution of the *Acordado* Genl. Santa Anna occupied, the castle of San Juan de Ulua, with very few soldiers, who almost died of hunger and thirst, and he could not leave there because the city was surrounded by the army of Gen. Echavarria. From this critical situation Santana was relieved by said revolution; because, as soon as Echavarria was notified of that event, he broke up his camp and retired to another point. Then Santa Anna left Vera-Cruz with his small force, and went to Zavalete, where he promulgated his plan of government, which was the final means of elevating him to the Presidency.

It is not necessary to write in detail of the sanguinary events which followed rapidly upon the Revolution of the *Acordado*.— Suffice it to say for the present, that Guerrero was expelled from the presidency by Bustamante; and that Bustamante was expelled from the same station by Santa Anna. By such events the nation was left without a President, when Pedraza was recalled to the country, and with the consent and approbation of both parties entered on the duties of the Presidency and functioned, until the conclusion of his term. Santa Anna succeeded Pedraza.—

At that time Santa Anna was the great champion and upholder of liberal principles. He was the friend of the Federation and of the constitution; enemy of the Church and defender of the rights of the people; and with his open declaration of these sentiments and views, he gained the confidence and affection of Señor Zavala, who then supported his pretensions to the presidency under the belief that Santa Anna was the sincere friend of the country and would be the shield of its liberties. But the hopes which had been founded on the promises of this imposter, soon all disappeared. As soon as he was secure in his authority with full power and ability to correct the predominant evils of the day, and to reestablish the constitution of the country, in place of effecting these most noble objects and sustaining the liberties of the people, he abandoned himself to his hypocrisy, and with unequalled audacity, publicly proclaimed himself Dictator of the nation. The veil so brilliant and deceiving which had hidden his deformity was torn asunder; and in place of the affable semblance of the patriot, he presented to view the physiognomy of a Demon, burning with the fires of inferno. He jeered at the credulity of the nation with a malignant smile; and then trampled the constitution in the dust.— As the frozen serpent, warmed into life in the bosom of the laborer, bit his preserver to death; thus Santa Anna paid, with ingratitude and persecutions the affections and the confidence of his friends.—

Señor Zavala was the friend of religious liberty, and presented to Congress a proposal for a law to secure it— This measure caused him all his misfortunes. On the policy of taking such step, he consulted Santa Anna, who gave his approbation of the measure, and promised to sustain the same under all circumstances; but he was far from complying with the promise, as will be seen in a very short time.— In the United States this principle is well understood—that religious despotism and civil liberty can not exist in the same government; and a people which neither sees nor feels this truth, is incapable of comprehending or defending their rights. Señor Zavala seems to have been almost the only man who appreciated this important truth; and believing that a favorable period had arrived for liberating the Country from the despotism of the Church, and establishing the right to think, speak and write, on religion, as freely as on the principles and measures of civil government, he presented to Congress the above mentioned proposal, with the expectation of being sustained in his course by Santa Anna; but this traitor instead of fulfilling his promise abandoned his friend and his cause, and united himself with the sacerdotal party. The army marched before the door of the church where it was ordered to kneel before the picture of Our Lady of Guadalupe and to swear to defend the interests of the Church. An order soon followed on this event for the arrest of Zavala, who having notice of his danger, fled to the mountains for safety. But Zavala could not be persecuted with impunity; because the people liked him too much; and would not permit it. The man who had begun the Revolution of the Acordado, still had sufficient power to be feared; and although he had failed in effecting his own object, he could still embarrass his enemies in their ambitious views.— When his flight from the city was made public, the indignant populace rose clamorous for his return; so much so that his enemies judged it best to permit him to resume his seat in Congress.—

It was evident that these two men could never live in harmony; and in order to get rid of an enemy intrepid and inflexible, Santa Anna appointed Zavala as Minister to France.— Zavala was not ignorant of the motive which dictated this measure. He well knew that he was sent to that country in exile; but being placed between two alternatives, to go to France or to lose his head, as a wise man, he chose the former; and left without delay. A little after arriving in Paris, he despatched a letter to Santa Anna concerning the affairs of Mexico, and he concluded it by resigning his station as Minister, saying that he would not have any office under a man whose conduct he could not uphold. Santa Anna then ordered him to return to Mexico, with secret views of punishing him; but Zavala was wise enough not to obey; and in place of going to Mexico, he embarked for New-Orleans; and from there to Texas, where he commenced his new career, which, though brief, was brilliant, and brought honors to himself as well as usefulness to the country.—

When Señor Zavala was in Paris as minister, the King of France asked him, respecting the political condition of Mexico. Zavala replied that the country was tranquil and happy.— “Yes, Señor”—said the King—“they are happy and harmonious now but how long will they remain?” speaking jokingly to Señor Zavala concerning the frequent revolutions in his country. Zavala responded thus.—“by experi-

ence, we secure wisdom; and Your Majesty should not forget, that by Revolution, you now have the crown of France."

But never were the advantages realized which Zavala thought his country ought to have acquired by the experience.— The wars in Mexico continued; but the people did not derive any benefit from them, and the nation now is experiencing all the horrible consequences which flow and will always flow from ignorance and evil doing. The wars commenced under the first organization of the government; and since such beginning, what could result except the convulsions which, for so many years, have disturbed and destroyed the country?—

Mexico seems to be incapable of acquiring wisdom from its own experience or from the examples of other nations. By the Revolution Independence was gained; but it has not secured liberty. The people have changed their masters—nothing more—and I ask what benefit—what advantage have they obtained by the exchange? None— As Vampire Spain drank the blood of the people;—the present governors of Mexico have done and are doing the same. What are they but assassins and freebooters; and what is the nation but the deplorable victim of their cruelty and insatiable rapacity?— The people have been trampled in the dust for more than twenty-five years; and yet they devote themselves to their tyrants; and give them the adoration and affection which should be given to God alone. Notwithstanding they have suffered many injuries, and still are suffering numerous calamities, nevertheless, they can neither see nor imagine that there may be anything evil or defective in their system of government, in their agents or in themselves. They think that they are wiser, freer, more powerful than any nation of the world whatsoever. They believe that the city of Mexico is greater than London, Paris, or Peking, and that the priest of the village is wiser than Solomon or Socrates. This is the result of ignorance—an ignorance which weighs on their moral, and intellectual faculties as their own native mountains; an ignorance that will last while the church and the army remain united against the rights of the people. In Mexico, the Church and the army are the natural enemies of liberty; but the people cannot understand this truth; and the friend who attempts to vindicate their rights will sacrifice himself to their vengeance. Such is the condition of Mexico, past and present and how will its lamentable destiny be improved?— It is useless to speak to the deaf—they cannot hear; so likewise it is useless to reason with a people ignorant and perverse; because it cannot comprehend or appreciate the important truths which its sincere friends would teach. What hope, then, has the patriot for the future prosperity of his country? The past and the present are dark and who can see any light in the future?— The patriot would despair if it were not for the power of education. As the sun is to the world, so is education to the soul of man. It is the life of virtue and the shield of liberty; and until its benign influence is extended over the earth, the people of Mexico will have to remain as now, victims of two infernal powers, priestly and military.

When Zavala went to Texas, he fixed his residence near to San-jacinto; where he and Santa Anna met the first time after their separation in the city of Mexico. This wicked Usurper, had carried forward his ambitious purposes until he lacked little in fulfilling them.

His great object and design was to destroy the authority of the States, and erect upon its ruins, a Central government, and for himself to be at the Head of it. He wished to be crowned like Iturbide; and he hoped to escape the destiny of that aspirant. All the other States had submitted to his dictatorship, except Zacateccas and Texas.— These still resisted his usurpations. Zacateccas finally became the victim of his vengeance; and Texas, then, remained the sole obstacle to securing his desires. The destruction of that State was indispensable to his views; and he lost no time in organizing a formidable army for invading it.— In this critical moment Santa Anna proposed, that if Texas delivered Señor Zavala to him, he would abandon the war against the country. The infamous proposition was made by General Martin Perfecto de Cos under the instructions of his master. At this time, Zavala did not understand well the character of the Americans, and had some fear that they might wish to buy peace on the condition proposed, the price being so small. Under such apprehensions he spoke to them to this effect— “Fellow-citizens, if I know that my death would assure the liberties of this country I would not live another hour; but I am certain that it is not myself alone, but my republican views, that the tyrant desires to kill; and if you should sacrifice me to his vengeance, the soil shall not drink my blood, before the same sword that takes my life will strike against you.”— This demand for the head of Zavala, was made in the spirit of barbarity which belonged to Mexico; but such proposal, so detestible, could not inspire any sentiments except disgust and indignation; and so far from delivering Zavala to his enemies, the people, on the contrary, raised him to a high and honorable position; because Texas, on organizing its government anew, made Señor Zavala Vice President of the nation; an office that he held until his death, fulfilling his duties with satisfaction to the country, and with honor to himself.—

The Usurper who had such thirst for the blood of Zavala finally was obliged to beg the clemency and pardon which he had never shown to others. The Battle of Sanjacinto took place facing and near the house of Zavala; and when Santa Anna was made prisoner, he threw himself into the arms of Zavala, begging him not to take his life. With his natural generosity Zavala effaced from his memory the injuries which he had received from this man, and relieved his necessities. Santa Anna was put at liberty by Texas; and about this time, Señor Zavala died in the midst of his activity and usefulness, lamented by all the Americans. Texas has honored his memory, by naming one of its counties —“*Zavala*.”

Zavala died in October 1836; his age was not known. He had a son and a daughter by his first wife in Yucatan. His daughter married well,—an official of the army; his son was at the Battle of Sanjacinto; and within a short time after the death of his father he went to Yucatan where he still resides. The second wife of Zavala was an American lady of beauty, talent and virtue, by whom he had two or three children.—

Lorenzo de Zavala was a little below the average height; well made, full face, beautiful features and of an open countenance. He was dignified in his bearing, courteous in his manners and temperate in his habits. In a word, he was all that a gentleman should be. His head

was clear, his heart sound, and his knowledge great. In the arts, the sciences and in general literature he was the most enlightened of his fellow-citizens; and frequently spoke important truths that the nation could not believe. He had written much; but his writings were designed solely for the day and they must perish with the day. His fame as an author will have to rest on his history of Mexico; a work of elegance and truth, beautiful in style and faithful in its narrations. Such is the character of Lorenzo de Zavala; ornament of his age, and one of the founders of two Republics, Mexican and American.—

No. 2803. THE HEAD OF THE CHURCH. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Richmond? Texas, 185—?]

The Church is called in the Holy Bible *a body*. Consequently it has to have a head. Who occupies that place? That is the question. We gather from the sacred book that it is no other than Our Lord Jesus Christ. He was the founder of the Church; he established it on earth, and still is its life and soul.— Who then but he can be its head? The Roman Catholics hold themselves as opposed to this view of the matter. It is contended by them that the Pope is the head of the Church. But we ask, what are their reasons for this extravagant pretension? Let them set forth their proofs.— Where can they find the evidence that the Pope is in truth the head of the Church?— But let us explain ourselves. We forget that there is anything which so provokes a Roman Catholic as to ask him the proof of anything.— “The proof”—he exclaims. “Who dares to ask proof of a Church that is infallible? What are the advantages of infallibility if its decrees may be controverted? Nothing avails except blind obedience. Granted that the Catholics do not wish to confirm the pretensions of the Pope, by citing the sacred Scriptures, we shall search the pages of the Bible for them, and we will try to see what that holy Book says in their favor. We shall begin with Genesis. Well, we go on searching to Revelations, turning page by page. And what do we find? Nothing with relation to the Pope, not a single work with regard to his supremacy. His name is not in that Book. There is no mention in any part of a similar person.— Is it not strange, then, that the Catholics should always be provoked whenever they are questioned concerning or relative to the primacy of the Pope. Not having any foundation on which to base a title so preposterous and so insulting to human understanding, they resort to anger when it is wished to make that title a matter of investigation. According to their belief it is a point which ought not to be touched on. To controvert it is an action of extreme sinfulness. All men, are commanded to read the Bible; and each has to judge of its contents for himself according to his own understanding and the intelligence which he may have. “Search the Scriptures”—says our Lord Jesus Christ. Let no one prevent its being done. In the discharge of this imperative duty, we find many things against the pretensions of the Roman Catholics with respect to the Pope. In the Ephesians Our Lord Jesus Christ declared himself to be “the head over all the affairs of the Church, which is his body.” See chapter 1.— verse 22 and 23.— The Church being thus the body of Christ, the head of that Church must be Christ also; since these two

things (body and Head) are accustomed to be united.— In order to make the Pope the head of the Church, it is necessary first, to decapitate our Redeemer. The Jews crucified him; but they did not cut off his head. He still carried it; and consequently the Pope cannot substitute his own for the other. What can be more absurd than to say that the Pope is the head and Christ is the body of the same thing and at one and the same time? And notwithstanding, the Catholics are taught to believe that the Pope is the Head of the Church. Likewise it is declared explicitly in another part of Ephesians that Christ is the head of the Church in the same manner that the husband is the head of the wife.— The same thing is repeated in Colossians; to wit; “he is the head of the body of the Church.”— In the same way it is evident from these citations, and many others that might be added that Christ is the head of the Church: How is it possible that the Pope can be also unless the Church may have two heads— a thing without reason, which cannot be conceded without converting it into a monstrosity.— It is true, that the Catholics maintain that Christ being absent, it is necessary that some person be substituted for him, to the end that the Church may have a *visible* Head. Such Head, they say, is the Pope—head that can be seen— And is it true that Jesus Christ is absent?— Let us hear what Jesus, himself says on this point.— Behold I am with you always; even unto the end of the world.” Moreover, he says, “When two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.” This does not sound very much like absence. He is absent indeed to those who do not wish to seek him; to all those who appreciate the Pope more than himself, but he is always present to those who love him and keep his commandments. The Pope is called the visible Head. But, why? Is he visible to all parts of the habitable globe? Can he be seen of all? No, certainly. . . . To whom is he visible? To the people of Rome; and to those who assemble there. To no others. Why then, do they call him the visible head? The head is worth very little which can only be found in Rome, while the various members or portions of the body remain scattered over all parts of the world.— If for argument we grant that the Pope possibly may be useful in the management and administration of the secular affairs of the Church, what then? Does it follow that he has power likewise over the spiritual world? Does he become infallible by virtue of his temporal authority? Such supposition is preposterous—it is shameful in the extreme. Not content to usurp the divine prerogatives of Our Savior, the Pope of Rome arrogates to himself the right of doing things prohibited—things expressly denounced by God; such as to prevent the reading of the sacred Scriptures; altering them in many parts; offering worship to idols; selling licenses in order to sin; receiving money in payment for crimes, and many others of equal abomination, and too numerous to mention. From where is derived his authority for working in this manner? Surely not from God. It is clear that it may have come out of hell. It is of the devil. The work of the prince of the demons— What a beautiful head for a Church! How worthy of the adoration of those who hope to reach Heaven by unlawful and wicked ways.— I have nothing more to say concerning the matter.—

No. 2804. ON CIVIL AND RELIGIOUS LIBERTY. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish] [Richmond? Texas, about 185-?]

While I was in Mexico during the last war with that nation, I remember conversing freely and frankly concerning the events of the day, with the worthy Alcalde of Sabinas, when he said to me that what grieved him more than any other thing in connection with the struggle pending, was the evil which the war was producing on the established religion of the country. The influence which it exercised over the Church was very great indeed; but whether this was for good or evil is a debatable question.— My friend thought in the manner of all Roman Catholics, that religious tolerance or free worship, and civil liberty are two things entirely incompatible, that they cannot exist together simultaneously. Of the truth of this, he was firmly persuaded; while in reality, the contrary is the true manner of thinking; since nothing can be clearer and more certain than that no people can be free politically, and enslaved religiously, at the same time.—

No. 2805. ON PRUDENCE. LAMAR

[Translation from the Spanish]

[Richmond? Texas, about 185-?]

Before burying this question, I shall advance a few observations that, though they appear as paradoxes at first sight, embrace much truth. In the first place I must confess that I cannot agree with the world in its appreciation of what is called "prudent men." According to my idea the world owes them sufficiently little. Their merit is negative; it consists in not doing evil.— Never do they attempt great undertakings for the good of humanity. They work only for their own interest, and leave the rest to take care of themselves. Their character is indicated in the signification of the term "prudent," which always carried with it the idea of not endangering anything. The principal which guides them in all their actions is that of gaining the most and losing the least that they can. It is their habit to look well before they leap; they calculate the cost of a thing before they do it; and take care that no harm results to them. Content with doing what the law requires, they do not aspire to anything further. Never do they do more than what the most rigorous obligation requires. It is evident that men of this class are not capable of running risks and making the sacrifices which are required for forming great patriots and benefactors of their country. To oppose a popular error, or to run counter to a prejudice of the people is too dangerous a business for them.

No. 2810. BIOGRAPHY OF GUTIERREZ DE LARA. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

BERNARDO GUITEREZ.

One of the earliest heroes who took the field in Texas, in favor of Independence was Bernardo Gutierrez a Mexican who had suffered much in the revolt of 1808 in which the celebrated Delgado lost his head and his adherents were forced to fly their country. The first account

which we have of his connection with the events of this country is derived from himself. It appears from his own account, that he joined Hidalgo and Allende at the Hacienda of Santa Marie whilst they were on their retreat to the northern provinces after the disastrous battle at the bridge of Calderon; and in consideration of some services which he had recently rendered, as well as his known devotion to the cause of Independence, he was deputed by these distinguished chiefs to proceed to the United States of the North for the purpose of cultivating friendly relations with that government and procuring munitions of war, as well as the military assistance of its citizens. He accordingly sat out upon his mission without delay; but had not not [*sic*] advanced more than five days travel on his journey before he was overtaken by the unwelcome tidings that his chiefs had fallen into the hands of their enemies through the treachery of two of their former companions, Ignacio Ellisond and the lawyer Bustamente. These desperate traitors, alarmed at the recent defeat of Hidalgo, were mean enough to purchase their own peace with the Government, by a cowardly desertion of the cause which they had once espoused and a base betrayal of their compatriots in arms.

Gutierrez had some short time previous to his joining Hidalgo, issued various proclamations, strongly appealing to the chivalry and patriotism of his countrymen, and urging them to desert the royal standard and strike boldly for the cause of liberty. It appears from his own statement, that these addresses, had a wonderful effect in stirring up the people to resistance and especially in producing the declaration of the Garrison at Bexar in favor of Independence. This post, then about two thousand strong, was under the command of Captain Juan Cassa, who was the first to avow himself on the side of the liberals. The soldiers following his example, and the citizens stimulated to the same by the Eloquence of Aldama, a patriot of great abilities and address, the Governors Salcedo and Herrera, were immediately made prisoners and sent to Monclover, together with other distinguished & dangerous royalists. Salcedo and Herrera, however, had been in Monclover but a short time before they succeeded in corrupting the two traitors already mentioned Ellisondo and Bustamente, who had received many favors from Hidalgo and still enjoyed his entire confidence. Influenced by their perfidious counsels, this unfortunate hero, leaving Ryan in command of the main body of his forces, started for Monclover, accompanied by Allende and other of his faithful followers, and was surprised and captured at a ranch called Acatita de-Bejan. He was hurried to Monclover & thence to Chihuahua, where he was degraded and shot by order of Nemecio Salcedo commander General of that province and uncle to Manuel Salcedo, the Governor of Texas. Hidalgo was captured on the 21st of March and suffered on the 27th July 1811.— So soon as the intelligence of his capture was conveyed to Bexar, a counter-revolution immediately ensued, headed by Padra Zambranon, who hoped to escape the resentment of Salcedo by becoming as violent a royalist now as he had been a patriot in the first revolt. The first demonstration of new loyalty was to make prisoners of Cassa and Aldama. The latter individual, shocked at the Padra's infidelity, and still hoping that he might awaken him as well as the soldiers and citizens, once more to a sense of duty, he made a powerful appeal to their chivalry, honor and patriotism; in

the course of which he addressed himself directly to the perfidious priest, and exclaimed, is it possible Padra Zanbrannon that you are willing to preserve your life by not only by deserting a cause which you have taught us to believe was holy and sacred, but by sacrificing your friends—your honor and your Country, and bringing shame upon your religion, and eternal infamy upon your name?— if so then I have only one request to make, which is this—that you will take my life immediately, and not surrender me to the blood thirsty Gauchupins, as I desire to die by the hands of my own countrymen. The appeal however had no visible effect upon either Zambrannon, the soldiery or the populace, for all other feelings of nature seemed to be overcome & destroyed by the terror inspired by the capture of Hidalgo, and the dreadful apprehensions of that sanguinary vengeance which would follow the return of Saucedo and Herrera. In spite of his eloquence and the general appreciation of his talents and virtues, Aldama was taken to Chihuahua together with Casso, where they were both doomed to ignominious deaths. In three days after their Execution, the head of Casso was exhibited on a pole in the streets of Bexar; whilst the hopes of Padra Zambrannon were more than realized, for he was not only pardoned all his past political offences, but was rewarded for his recent fidelity to his King by being made Commandant of the garrison as well as being still recognised father of the Church—

On hearing of the capture of his chiefs, Gutierrez changed the direction of his journey and instead of proceeding to Texas, went to Revilla, his native village, where he arrived on the 17th of April; and after tarrying a few days, returned to Monclover, for the purpose, as he says of effecting the release of Hidalgo; but finding on his arrival there that the captive had been taken to Chihuahua and being himself regarded by the authorities with some suspicion, he deemed it necessary to go into concealment for the preservation of his life; in which situation he remained until the middle of July when he was visited by a patriot from Bexar, one of the family of the Monchacas, who was flying the persecutions of Solcedo and Herrera. He received the fugitive in his house as a friend and compatriot, and gave him all the protection & security which he himself enjoyed. Gutierrez had not abandoned his original intention of proceeding to the United States, but was secretly engaged in making arrangements for his departure; for notwithstanding the desperate state of his own affairs, as well as the discouraging condition of the cause in which he was engaged, he still cherished a strong hope that such foreign assistance might be procured as would enable him to give a new impulse to the Revolution and turn the current of events in favor of the patriots. He found in Monchaca a ready supporter of his views, who was willing to embark with him in the arduous enterprise and share his destiny. In a short time these two patriots left the city in disguise, &c—accompanied by twelve followers, and commenced their long and perilous journey, which they had to prosecute through devious and untravellered ways to avoid apprehension. In passing through the various tribes of Indians, Gutierrez had the address, not only to escape their barbarity, but to cultivate amicable relations with them; and succeeded in establishing a partial alliance with some, who agreed to unite with him against the Gauchupins on his return from the United States. Worn down with hunger and fatigue, and all

the sufferings incident to such a perilous and protracted journey, he at length arrived upon the *Neutral Ground*, where he imagined he would be safe from the further persecutions of his enemies. Not so however; his dangers were not yet over; for Salcedo, obtaining information of his movements, had dispatched a set of assassins to intercept him on the confines of the two countries. These miscreants, true to their purpose as hell-hounds, dogged his footsteps to the domicile of a Frenchman who lived on the Bayou Piere, where Gutierrez had stopped for the night. Whilst the unfortunate adventurer was congratulating himself on the dangers past, and rejoicing in his present security, he was violently assailed by his persuers, fifty in number, who succeeded in killing three of his men, and putting the ballance to flight. Gutierrez himself, being in bed and having no time to apparel himself, escaped in his dishabille with the total loss of every thing, his papers, money, arms and clothing, which were all born[e] away by the enemy. In this deplorable condition he reached Natchitoches, where he was kindly received, and met with many friends to his cause.

Leaving Monchaca at Natchitoches, to gather recruits, our adventurer departed for Washington City, going by the way of New Orleans, where he was furnished with flattering letters to the Governors of the several States through which he would have to pass, as also to the Secretary of war, and other members of the Cabinet. On arriving at the Capital, he was received in a manner entirely satisfactory to himself, and was much gratified to learn that the Government had been previously apprised of the object of his visit, as well as informed of the misfortunes which had befallen him. But when he unfolded his views, and made known the expectations which he indulged, he was much surprised to find that with every feeling in favor of his cause, the government was wholly indisposed to render the aid which he desired. He was told that he was now in a free country where he was at liberty to make whatever purchases of arms and amunition that he chose, and to proselyte as many of the people as he could to his cause and take them with him; but that the government of the United States, being at peace with all nations, and unwilling to involve itself in the civil quarrels of any, could not entertain the idea of violating a neutrality which it was its policy to preserve, for the mere gratification of private partialities and individual sympathies. Upon the score of policy, Gutierrez conceived it to be decidedly the interest of that government to aid in effecting the Independence of his country, inasmuch as the US would be able, in consideration of such assistance, to secure by treaty a monopoly of the commerce of Mexico, which was rich and vast, and the fruits of which, if not gathered by the American Nation would go to swell the power & grandeur of her ambitious rivals. Besides, he urged the remembrance of the aid which she had obtained from France during her Revolutionary struggle. Mexico was now suffering in a similar cause; and for the United States, said he, to render to her the same assistance which she once solicited and received, would not only be a high manifestation of gratitude to Providence, and the best return to France, but it would lead to the spread of her free institutions over the whole continent of America, and she would have the glory and proud satisfaction of beholding the inhabitants of one fourth of the globe, prosperous and happy in the liberty which she had imparted.

Perceiving, however, that these considerations, which appeared so cogent and irresistible in his own mind, had produced but little effect upon the public functionaries, his hopes of succor began to diminish, and finally closed in despair when he was informed that the Province in which he was about to operate, belonged to the United States; and that she was preparing to assert her claims to it as far as the Riogrande, as a part of Louisiana, which she had purchased of France, and which France had claimed by virtue of Lasalle's discovery. Against this measure he solemnly protested; and on being requested to give his reasons in writing, he civilly declined, but expressed his readiness to defend the claims of Spain orally.

Whilst he was thus occupied in his negotiation, he received the unwelcome intelligence, that his companion in misfortune whom he had left at Natchitoches collecting volunteers, had abandoned the patriot cause, and compromised his difficulties with his former persecutors. Monchaca had succeeded in raising a fine Company and had marched with them to the *Neutral Ground*, when he was bought up by Salcedo and Herrere, who were to indemnify his losses, and give him future protection.— Deserting his gallant little band who were ready to die for him and his cause, he hastened to Santonio to enjoy the reward of his perfidy. And what did he receive—the gold of Salcedo?—No—The protection of Herere? Certainly not. But he was paid in the vengeance of both; for immediately on his arrival, he was seized by their order, and thrown into prison. The next day, his head was seen on the public gate. Such was the fate of Monchaca. His crime deserved the punishment. But his murderers were made to rue the deed; for they too as will hereafter be shewn were doomed in their turn to a righteous retribution.

Failing in the main object of his visit, yet pleased in every other respect, Gutierrez prepared to leave the city. Before his departure, however, it it [*sic*] may be well to remark, that he was visited by a man by the name of Toledo, a Creole from Havanna, who was then residing in Philadelphia. This ambitious and designing individual being extremely anxious to connect himself in some way with the mission, proposed to Gutierrez to allow him to remain in Washington as his successor, and desired that he would prevail upon the government: to receive him as such, whilst Gutierrez himself should return to Texas, and gathering the friends of Independence, organize a government to direct the Revolution in that Province, and through which all necessary communications might be made and proper information disseminated. Gutierrez felt the propriety of having the Revolutionary party represented at Washington, and was ready to give his assent to this proposition, when he was admonished by some of the Cabinet who knew the character of Toledo to have nothing to do with him. Receiving this advice partly as an intimation that the proposed arrangement would not be recognised by the government, he declined the overtures of Toledo, who returned, disappointed and resentful, to Philadelphia; whilst our hero himself, very shortly after commenced his homeward journey, delighted with the personal attentions which had been paid him, and not ungrateful to the government for defraying his expenses in the Capital and supplying him with the necessary funds for his re-

turn. He took his leave of the city on the 12th of February 1812, and arrived at Natchitoches without adventure on the latter part of May.

Guiterez was apprehensive that his own character might suffer by the extraordinary conduct of Monchaca; but finding on his return to Natchitoches that the people were still friendly to him & favorable to his views, he issued a proclamation, explaining his intended operations, and offering a liberal donation of land, and an equal division of the spoils of conquest to all who should rally in his cause. The appointed rendezvous was Crow's ferry on the Sabine river; where in a short time the Banner of Texan Independence was surrounded by three hundred as hardy and intrepid adventurers as the world could afford. The command of these daring asserters of freedom, was assigned to Colonel McGee—an excellent and high-spirited officer, whose appointment, however, created considerable dissatisfaction with a certain refractory portion of the army. Whilst yet a Lieutenant in the United States service at Fort Claiborne he was ordered to remove the intruders from the Neutral Ground, lying between the Oro Honjo and the Sabine.—a duty which he had just discharged when he met with Guiterez—in the execution of which he was compelled to exercise a rigor and severity which was hard to be borne by the fiery spirits he was expelling. Many of these men, still smarting under his recent inflictions, were now enlisted in this service, and when they found themselves under the command of one who had provoked their strongest hatred, it was with great difficulty that they submitted to his authority or restrained their revenges. They never became fully reconciled to his appointment, although it was generally admitted that he was well worthy of the station he held upon the score of military talents & personal chivalry.

Padre Zanbrannon, who had betrayed Aldama & Casso, as we have already related was at this time in Nacogdoches on a trading expedition; having with him and hundred bales of wool for the American market. Apprised of these military operations on the Sabine, and burning with a holy zeal to repel the invaders, he placed himself at the head of three hundred men, and was pushing rapidly towards the theatre of action with a right royal courage, when he was most unexpectedly saluted by the advance guard of the invading patriots, consisting of three in number only, whose well-directed fire caused him and his whole cavalcade to recoil in consternation and confusion. The *worsted* hero, wheeling to the right about-face, retired with a laudable precipitancy that saved his life but lost his *fleece*. He did not even stop at Nacogdoches to gather his breath; but dashed on in double-quick time to Santonio, and for aught that we have heard to the contrary he may be retreating to the present day. His valiant companions in arms, equally disgusted with the brutality of this Trio, turned their backs indignantly upon them, and followed in the footsteps of their illustrious leader. But these, having neither his wind nor his heels, called a halt at Nacogdoches, and taking shelter in the fort, boldly waited the arrival of their persuers, when they might shew by the surrender of their arms that their magnanimity was equal to their valor.

At Nacogdoches, McGee was joined by three congenial spirits, Perry, Ross, and Kemper. Here his forces were also considerably augmented. Leaving a small garrison to patrol the place, he moved on to Solcedo, a small town on the Trinity, where he procured the necessary supplies

for his march, and then pushed with all possible speed for La Bihia. His numbers being considered too small to risk a general engagement, it was an important object to gain this post before the enemy should reinforce it. This he was enabled to do in consequence of the Royalists having stationed themselves at the crossing of the St. Mark on what is called the upper road, under the expectation that the invaders were making for Sanantonio, and would take that route. Fortunately, however, instead of doing this they dashed directly for La Bihia, which they reached before the enemy discovered their movements. They arrived on the first of November, about four hundred strong, and took possession of the fort without opposition. In a few days, Herrere, the commander of the spanish forces, made his appearance. He was regarded as a skilfull officer, and marshalled about two thousand men well disciplined & equipped. A skirmish ensued immediately upon his arrival, in which, however, neither party sustained much damage. The Royalists retired from the field; and the next morning invested the fort with three divisions, placed in a triangular form, the first being commanded, by Herrere himself, the second by Colonel Ignecia Peris and the third by Colonel Montara. In this situation they remained inactive more than a week, waiting the arrival of their heavy artillery. As soon as it was received, they attempted to take the fort by storm. The assault was commenced on the morning of the fifteenth, by the opening of three eighteen pounders, whose voices were feebly responded to by an equal number of small cannon which the patriots had acquired by the capture of the place. These noisy salutations continued for some time until the americans discovered a movement among the enemy which seemed to be new in military affairs, and is not laid down in either Scott or Stuben. Herrere had ordered a detachment to assault the fort and scale the walls, but instead of their coming to work with a bold and vigerous charge, each man advanced with a large round bale of hay before him, rolling it forward pretty much as a certain undignified insect tumbles its treasures along. They had hoped by this means to approach the fort in safety, and form with the bales a species of Bulwark which would enable them to carry on a more equal war with the soldiers on the rampire. But in this they were disappointed; for when they had advanced within a suitable distance for the American rifle, its sharp and unerring shot hit them between the hip and the hay, and caused them to fly back to their lines with an almost supernatural velocity. Herrere now put his whole force in motion, apparently for the purpose of making a furious charge on the fort; but the recent exhibition of pusillanimity determined the Americans to meet him on the plain and give him fair and open battle. They accordingly sallied forth sword in hand, and formed for action. The spanish General consolidated his advancing divisions, and in a few minutes the conflict began. And never was a battle better fought than this on the part of patriots, except some after ones, by the same set of heroes. It lasted three hours, and terminated by a complete discomfiture of the Royal forces, who were met and repulsed at every point, and finally thrown into irrecoverable confusion and forced to fly the town.

Herrere though defeated was not subdued. Rallying his disconcerted forces, on the succeeding day he resumed the same position which he

had previously occupied with a determination to reduce the garrison by intercepting its supplies. A strong patrol was accordingly established in the town, whilst the fort was narrowly watched by the three divisions of the army. The vigilance of the enemy was superior to his courage; and he was more successful in cutting off supplies than in cutting off his foes. All communication between the town and the fort was now effectually destroyed, and a further introduction of provisions seemed impossible. But the policy of Herrere was misapplied. He hoped to accomplish by starvation, what he could not achieve by his arms without reflecting that a body of men with whom he could not cope in open battle, would hardly be willing to perish to death with food before them and weapons in their hands. Nevertheless, this non-intercourse system caused the garrison to suffer greatly. They suffered in various ways; by hunger, sickness and desertion. Their small stock of provisions was nearly exhausted, and had to be dealt out sparingly; many of the men were unable to do duty; captain Galvin deserted to the enemy, taking with him the entire caballa which had been confided to his care, and the citizens of the town who had hitherto been their friends, becoming alarmed at the aspect of affairs, proclaimed in favor of the Royal cause. Under these circumstances, it was apparent that the Americans had to rely upon their valor for their future supplies and snatch provisions from the enemy by hard fighting. They had literally to live by the sword; and it was not long before this new commissary of subsistence was called to the discharge of its duties. On the 18th of December, one of the soldiers of the garrison killed a cow that had strayed between the fort and the lines of the enemy. To secure this beef was an object of some consequence to the Americans; and the enemy deeming it of equal importance to their policy that they should not get it, a contest arose between them, which soon led to a general engagement, in which the whole force and energies of both parties were called into play. The action commenced at One Oelk in the afternoon, and continued till the close of day; and although the Royalists outnumbered the patriots five to one, they were doomed to the same disasters which attended them in their previous conflicts—they were forced to fly the field with considerable loss without doing much damage to their antagonists. The loss on the part of the garrison was three wound and one killed—captain Taylor's slave, a faithful servant and a gallant soldier, who continued fighting after he had received his mortal wound, and died exhorting the patriots never to surrender. He had been in all the fights, and had distinguished himself in all.

This cheering victory was soon succeeded by a bold exploit, well conceived and skilfully executed, and which had the happy effect of relaxing the vigilance of the enemy's police. It was ascertained that the patrol established in the town travelled every night a certain road which had the bank of the river on one side and a brush fence on the other. Their strength being known to be about an hundred, an equal number of Americans placed themselves, on New-Year's eve behind this fence which screened them from view, and waited the coming of the enemy. About the dawn of morning they made their appearance, and as they were marching through the narrow lane, a well-concerted and simultaneous fire from the ambuscade, killed every man of them, with

the exception of four who made their escape, and one who was taken prisoner. The prisoner ever after went by the name of *New Year's Gift*, having been captured on the first of January. About this time the garrison was called to lament the loss of their gallant leader, Colonel McGee, who died of a pulmonary affection, leaving behind him the reputation of a severe disciplinarian, but a brave and skilful officer. The command after the death of McGee devolved on Colonel Samuel Kemper.

It is not our intention to follow this gallant band of patriots thro' all their victories. Such as we have mentioned are intended as specimens only of what daily occurred during the continuance of the siege. For fully four months, the garrison rarely ever consumed a ration that was not first won by the sword. The details of these conflicts it is now impossible to give, and even if it were practicable, they would only tire the reader with their sameness and the uniformity of the results. It is sufficient to state, that in every engagement, the Americans were not only victorious, but the loss of the enemy compared to theirs, was fourfold greater than the disparity that existed in their forces. Out of more than one hundred battles, including the light skirmishes and the more serious conflicts, the americans were never worsted in a single one; and if Spaniards had not reinforced as fast as their ranks were cut down, their whole army would have been utterly annihilated.

Wearied of this protracted warfare inconclusive & decisive of nothing, the americans at length resolved to bring it to an end by a bold and decisive engagement. Although they were less qualified for a such a step at that moment than they had been at any former period, owing to the disability of so many of their own men, and the additional strength of three hundred fresh troops which the enemy had just received, yet when the proposition was first made to the garrison, it produced a general rejoicing; and every soldier capable of bearing arms prepared immediately for the conflict. The disadvantages under which they were about to engage the enemy was a matter of no consideration. They were so inspired by their former successes, that they looked upon victory as certain; and such was the anxiety of all to mingle in the fray and share in the glory, that several of the lame and sick deserted their beds, and went into battle tottering under the weight of their weapons. The action was brought on by captains Francis and Monchaca. Having been ordered on the 9th of February with thirty six men to examine the enemy's position, they kept the encampment during that night in a state of continued inquietude and alarm. Early on the morning of the 10th they discovered, moving towards the fort, a detachment of three hundred of the enemy, which they immediately encountered and repulsed with a fierce fire, and then fell back themselves to a neighboring ravine where they could avoid observation and watch the further movements of the foe. As soon as the disconcerted detachment returned to the encampment, the drum was heard, and in an instant the whole force of Herrere was under arms, and seen advancing with a port of bold defiance towards the fort. As they were passing by the ravine in which Francis and Monchaca were concealed, thinking of victory ahead and not of present danger, these gallant officers saluted them with an effective shot, which caused them to recoil a few paces in

confusion; from which, however, they soon recovered, and pushing forward with a rapid march, formed on a commanding eminence in full view of their antagonists. The Americans were already displayed before of the Fort in battle-array waiting their approach and eager for the contest. Before the battle commenced, however, a circumstance occurred which deprived the Spanish leader of the use of his heavy artillery. Having already dispatched a detachment of sixty men against Francis & Monchaca, he ordered the artillery to play upon the rear of the fort whilst he, himself should engage the Americans in front of it. Such being his plan, the action was delayed a few minutes until the artillery corpse should reach its destination. As it drew near the fort and was about to assume its position for assault, the company was almost entirely destroyed by a party of sharp shooters who had been placed in the entrenchments for their special reception. Exasperated at this unexpected reverse, Herrere advanced with an impatient Zeal for battle for battle [*sic*], which being fully reciprocated by his adversary a sanguinary conflict ensued in which both parties looked forward with equal hopes of victory; the royalists deriving confidence from their superior numbers, and the patriots inspired by conscious valor and the justice of their cause. The conflict was bloody and protracted, and was maintained on the part of the Spaniards with a firmness and an obstinacy which had not hitherto characterised their warfare; but the Americans whose prowess and courage always rise with the occasion, sustained themselves with a skill and coolness which no zeal or activity of the enemy could baffle or disconcert. Whilst the field was thus warmly contested by the main body of the two armies, another action was going on in different quarter, with fewer numbers engaged, but with equal spirit and animation. The company of Francis and Monchaca, (which was now under the command of Captain Gomley) and the detachment which Herrere had dispatched against it, encountered each other at a certain log house which both parties were desirous to occupy as a fortification.—Gomley was the first to get possession; but after a long and fierce assault was dislodged, with four of his followers slightly wounded; But rallying his men immediately he turned upon his assailant, and dealing deeper wounds than those received, he was equally successful in expelling him. Each of these assault consumed at least an hour; during which time the Royalists recd a reinforcement, and coming to the charge again with new vigor, dispossessed the Americans a second time. But Gomley, who was neither slow nor feeble in his retaliations, reassaulted the citadel with an energy and a long continued violence which not only drove the enemy thence, but forced him to retire altogether from the contest. Gomley followed up his victory, and pushing the retreating troops to a deep ravine which they were unable to cross, they threw down their arms and surrendered, sixty in number, to the gallant captain's thirty-six. As Gomley was about to march his prisoners to the disputed cabin, a loud huzza was heard in the direction of the fort. It was the shout of victory. Herrere, & his whole force was flying before the triumphant arms of the Americans. The vanquished leader had maintained his ground for five full hours with unwonted gallantry; but on beholding so many of his own men falling around him, and the ranks of the Americans still unthinned and their ardor unabated, he attempted to bear down, and

overwhelm his enemy by the force of numbers, in a furious and desperate charge. He came with the rush of a torrent, but striking against a pillar of adamant, his army shivered to pieces he, like the waves of the ocean that roll against the rocks and are broken, retired with precipitation from the conflict.

The defeated and dispirited Herrere, collecting his scattered troops, drew off a short distance from the town, where he remained about ten days, apparently in a state of indiscussion as to what course he ought to pursue. Not able to cope with his adversary, and yet unwilling to fly, he at length dispatched an express to Bexar for additional recruits; but before these could be raised many of his men alarmed at the terror of the Americans arms, fled his encampment, whilst others, attracted by its lustre or desirous of its protection enlisted under the banner of the patriots. In this deplorable situation, with nearly one half of his army either killed or disabled, and a large portion of the remainder deserting his standard, he was compelled to raise the siege and transfer the war from La Bihia to Bexar. Fearful of observation and pursuit, he broke up his encampment at night and hurried forward with a rapid march; but not eluding as he had hoped the vigilance of his adversary, Captain Holmes, who had been ordered to watch his movements, followed in his rear with fifty mounted men, and at the dawn of day succeeded in cutting off his entire baggage (which was packed on mules) and brought it to the garrison without molestation.— Thus was a strong and well disciplined army of the Royalists, commanded by a brave and experienced officer, completely routed and destroyed by a small band of patriots, whose numbers ranged from three hundred and fifty to four hundred. In this memorable conflict, the loss on the royal side, as well as could be gathered from the deserters, was about four hundred killed and more than that number wounded; whilst that of the patriots was only two killed and 30 wounded.

No. 2812. HISTORY OF MEXICO. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

CHAPTER 1st

COLONIAL GOVERNMENT AND POLICY OF SPAIN

The atrocities committed by the Spaniards in their foreign Conquests, and the subsequent tyranny and injustice of the Government established over the conquered countries have seldom found a parallel in the annals of civilized nations. Such has been their preeminence in this respect, that the name of Spaniard, has almost become synonymous with cruelty and crime. It would be difficult, indeed, for human ingenuity to devise a system of government more despotic in its character, and intensely selfish and oppressive in all its details than that which Old Spain imposed upon her American Colonies, and enforced with unrelenting rapacity and severity for more than three hundred years.—

Mexico was governed, as all the Spanish colonies were, by a Viceroy, invested with powers as absolute and unlimited as the Sovereign he represented. What the King could do in Spain, the Viceroy could do within the limits of his own jurisdiction, without being responsible for

his acts to any one, except to him from whom he derived his appointment. This made him, as a matter of course, subservient to the King, the retention of whose favor depended entirely upon the fidelity with which his will was executed. The judicial proceedings were confided to what was called the *Audiencia*—a kind of Chancery Court, whose powers were only one degree inferior to those of the Viceroy. Other tribunals of inferior jurisdiction were established; such as the *Ayuntamientos*, whose powers were municipal merely—the *Intendentes*,⁴⁶ who were charged with the collection of the revenues—and the *Alcalde's* courts, which acted as conservators of the peace, and decided civil cases of a petty nature—together with various others of more or less importance—all of which, however were subordinate to the two great dictatorial powers, already mentioned—the Viceroy and the *Audiencia*. This judicial board not only possessed jurisdiction over all classes of cases, civil, criminal and ecclesiastical; but it also acted in the less dignified capacity of Spy and informer to the Crown, which, giving it a direct correspondence with the Sovereign, made it a formidable tribunal, whose influence was to be dreaded and courted.— Its authority, however, in the last resort, was subordinate to that of the Viceroy, whose decision in all cases of direct collision was the paramount law. For any abuse of his prerogatives, he was amenable to the council of the Indies; but could not be arraigned or punished until after the expiration of his commission; and then only with the consent of the King. Thus we perceive that, inspite of all the machinery of government, the absolute authority abided in the hands of one man; and he was virtually irresponsible for his administration so long as this was not injurious to the special interest of the Crown.—

Intimately connected with the government of the Colonies was another tribunal, residing in the capitol of Spain, known as the Council of the Indies. At the head of this Council was the King himself. It was established in 1511 by Ferdinand the Second;—remodded by Charles the fifth, in 1524, and was always the exclusive medium through which the transactions between the mother country and the Colonies were conducted. The object⁴⁷ of its organization was to relieve the Sovereign from personal attention to the multifarious affairs of his foreign possessions. The Americas were regarded as belonging exclusively to the Spanish Monarchs, and subject alone to their control, by virtue of a bull of Pope Alexander the fourth, granting to Ferdinand and Isabela an absolute right to all the newly discovered regions. Tenacious of this right, and always jealous of their power, the Spanish Monarchs retained in their own hands the government of those dominions; and it was for the purpose of assisting them in such government, that the board alluded to was first created and subsequently continued. Its jurisdiction extended to every branch of business pertaining to the Colonies. It was the soul medium of communication between the Monarch and his trans-atlantic subjects. All nominations to office had to be transmitted through it to the Colonies—by the King, ordinances and royal decrees—without which they possessed no validity.⁴⁸ It not only

⁴⁶[Note in document:] See Ward, 100.

⁴⁷[Note in document:] See Zavala, page 11.

⁴⁸[Note in document:] See Ward, 99.

regulated and controlled the ecclesiastical, civil, military and commercial departments; but as a tribunal of justice, it sat in judgements upon the conduct of all the public functionaries in the colonies, from the viceroy down to officers of the lowest grade, having power to reward or punish them according to their respective merits. Such was the Council of the Indies⁴⁹—the tribunal in which was united all the departments of government—legislative, judicial and executive—for the general superintendence and direction of the Colonial affairs. It had a code of its own, separate from that which governed the Kingdom; and the general collection and publication of its multiplicity of laws, ordenances and decrees, was known by the name of “Recopilation of the laws of the Indies.” This Recopilation, although designed as a code for the government of the Colonies, was very little else than a heterogeneous mass of absurdities and contradictions, and so chaotic and incomprehensible as to render it impossible for the most acute juriconsultate to determine what was law or what was not. The Council, however, although organized upon principles the most despotic and rapacious, was, nevertheless, entitled to the credit of having corrected many abuses in the administration of the transatlantic governments, which it was the duty of that body to watch as well as direct. It would seem, indeed, from some of its powers, that its authority in Colonial matters, were equal, if not superior to that of the King. Certainly in theory, it threw many restrictions and limitations around his freedom of action; but we can scarcely believe that such was its practical operation, when we remember that it was created and sustained by the most arbitrary and despotic monarchs of modern times who were quite too tenacious of their power, to tolerate an institution for a moment which should attempt to thwart their purposes, or abridge the royal prerogative.—

These were the three great agents—The Viceroy, the Audiencia, and the Council of the Indies—employed by the Spanish Monarchs for the government of their American possessions. Their Colonial policy, in principle, was as little complicated as the government constructed for its execution. It was simply to secure to the Crown a monopoly of the commerce of those vast dominions, and to cause their entire productions to flow to the Peninsula.⁵⁰—To effect this object it was necessary to interdict all intercourse with foreign nations, and to reduce the Colonies to an absolute dependence upon the mother country—It was accordingly decreed that no foreigner should enter the Spanish territory in America without special permission—that the ports should be closed to all foreign Vessels—that the productions of the Colonies should be carried to Spain; and in Spanish bottoms.—that the inhabitants should not be allowed to own vessels—that one colony should not trade with another—that Spain alone should supply their necessities; and that death and confiscation of property should be the punishment of every individual detected in a violation of these regulations. Such were some of the edicts adopted by Ferdinand as early as 1501. They formed the basis of the whole Colonial System, and were rigidly enforced as long as Spain retained the power to enforce them.

The mode of carrying out this policy was as much at war with the

⁴⁹[Note in document:] See Niles, 66. Ward, 92.

⁵⁰[Note in document:] See Zavala, page 14.

principles of humanity and justice as the policy itself.⁵¹ To enter into a minute exposition of the early arrangement made between the Crown and the Conquerors of the country—the partition of lands—the system of revenues—and the various efforts to reduce the Indians to labor in the mines, as well as to make them adopt the Catholic Religion, would not only extend this sketch beyond our intended limits; but would lead us into a multiplicity of details which would prove more wearisome than interesting to the reader. Suffice it to say, in reference to the aborigines, that almost every human means were adopted to wring from this unfortunate race, the greatest possible amount of profit, without any regard to the precepts of the Bible or the claims of common humanity. The reduction to unconditional Slavery of a wild and wandering people, whose whole nature and habits were averse to confinement, and who regarded labor as one of the greatest of all calamities, was certainly a task of no easy execution; and one which the Spaniards scarcely effected after all their atrocious cruelties. The disappearance of the Aborigines under the rapacious and sanguinary attempt at their enslavement, was like the melting of snows before the sun. The race seemed to be threatened with sudden extinction. In fifteen years from the first settlement of St Domingo, they had declined under the persecutions of the Spaniards, from one million, to sixty thousand—making a dreadful chasm which was sought to be filled, under the sanction of the King, by inveigling with false promises, from the neighboring Islands forty thousand Indians, who, instead of realizing the alluring prospects which had been held out to them, were doomed to toil and disappear as those who had gone before them. Moved to compassion by their sufferings, the venerable Las Casas, proposed to relieve them from servitude and thus to save them from utter destruction, by the substitution of African slaves in their place—a proposition which was finally adopted, and gave rise to a regular Slave-Trade in the Spanish Dominions.— A few slaves had been sent into the New World in 1503—eight years afterwards they were imported in larger numbers by permission of Ferdinand; and in 1518, the plan of Las Casas being adopted Charles the Fifth, granted a regular license for the trade. The contract for supplying the Colonies with negroes was called the *Asiento*—& was a long while enjoyed by France; until transferred to England 1713 by the treaty of Utrecht.

The Commerce which was carried on between the mother country and the Colonies, requires a more extended notice, on account of the singular principles upon which it was conducted. The importations from the New-world, being chiefly gold and silver, the Court of Madrid, guarded its interest with a vigilant eye; and in order that the Royal revenues might not be improperly curtailed, an arrangement was made with a few wealthy merchants of Seville, by which the entire commercial intercourse between the Mother country and her American Colonies was confided to their exclusive management. They were accordingly organised into a board of trade called "*Cassa de Contratacion*"; which was followed up by a Royal edict, declaring that all vessels destined for the Colonies must sail from the port of Seville; and must also, not only procure a license for the voyage from this Board; but must have their

⁵¹[Note in document]: See Zavala, page 14.

cargoes inspected by it; and on their return, must report their importations to the same. These privileges were enjoyed by Seville until 1720, when she was compelled to resign them to her rival Cadiz.—

And how was this commerce conducted? On the principle of equal benefit to the Merchant and the Customer? No certainly. Notwithstanding the power of unlimited extortion which the regulations with the Seville Merchants conferred, the monopolists were not required to consult, in the least degree, the interests, wishes or convenience of the Colonists. Instead of supplying them, from time to time, with such commodities and articles as were necessary to their comfort and congenial to their tastes and habits, they were visited annually only, by two mercantile fleets, called the *Galeons*, and the *Flota*, which brought the entire supplies for that year. The *Galeons* sailed for Portobello and the *Flota* for Veracruz—the two points to which the commerce of Peru and Mexico was confined, and to which the productions of those extensive countries, designed for exportation, had to be brought, chiefly by land, at vast expense. The Cargoes from Seville and Cadiz, usually consisted of the miserable fabrics of Spanish manufacture, and such unsaleable refuse as the Spanish merchants found on their hands after the year's transactions. And even of these, there was seldom a sufficiency for the demand; for it was the mistaken policy of Spain, to stint the market in order to raise the prices, instead of endeavoring to to [*sic*] enlarge the traffic, by increasing the consumption. This method of annual communication was continued for a long period, until it was interrupted by the *War of Succession*.—

During the contest between the Austrian and Bourbon competitors for the throne of Spain—called the war of Succession—the Colonies experienced a temporary respite from the burthens of the Commercial prohibitions and restrictions; for during that period the mother country being too much occupied with the struggle to bestow her accustomed attention to the affairs of her colonies, other nations of maritime force, opened with the New-World, an active and profitable commerce, which resulted in twofold benefit to the Colonies, by relieving them from the extortions of the Cadiz Merchants and at the same time imparting to them, useful knowledge with respect to the character, habits, laws institutions and conditions of other countries, from which they had hitherto been effectually shut out. Goods were now furnished them in great abundance, adapted to their wants and on reasonable terms. These advantages, however, terminated with the treaty of Utrecht, which put an end to the war, as well as to the illicit commerce.—

As soon as the successful Bourbon was placed on the throne of Spain as Philip the Fifth, the first object of his attention was to reestablish the old System of Spanish monopoly and exclusion; and for this purpose he fitted out and despatched to various points on the coast, a formidable armament, called *Guarda Costa*; but in spite of all his endeavors, his American income was still diminished by a Sett of contraband dealers known as *Buccaneers*, who were willing to fight their way, rather than forego a commerce which they had enjoyed for some time without interruption. After a long perseverance in the most vigorous efforts to clear the seas of these fearless intruders, or *interlopers* as they were termed, the Spanish Monarch was at length convinced of the impracticability of guarding a maritime frontier so extensive as

that of the New World, and was forced to relax a little in his system of exclusion. This relaxation, however, was of little or no benefit to the Colonies. When the mother country was no longer able to keep the Interlopers out of the colonial ports, she allowed the vessels of other nations to participate in the commerce by registering their vessels in Spain, and obtaining a license from the Council of the Indies.— This license, however, had to be purchased at a rate which was equivalent to an equal division of profits between the Crown and the merchant; so that although the Colonies, by this arrangement, was abundantly supplied with commodities, they were still burthened with extravagant prices. The interlopers, no longer tempted by enormous gains, abandoned their hazzardous traffic; and the Colonies, after a brief enjoyment of a free trade, were resubjected to the commercial rapacities of the mother country. The *Register ships* supplanted the Galeons, which were abandoned in 1784, after a continuance of two hundred years.—

In the unhallowed anxiety of the mother country to perpetuate her dominion over the Americas, and to make herself the soul recipient of its mineral wealth, every possible measure was adopted to detain the people in a state of dependence and degradation. The national energies were directed exclusively to the working of the mines, to the prohibition of almost every other branch of industry. Nothing was allowed to be produced in the colonies—whether agricultural or mechanical—which the Peninsula was capable of furnishing. The inhabitants were forbid to cultivate the vine, the olive, tobacco, the mulberry for the rearing of silk-worms, and indeed every kind of production which might compete with with [*sic*] the mother country in the culture of the same. Nor were they allowed to pursue the mechanic arts—to work in iron—to make their own utensils of labor—to establish factories of any kind—or even to fabricate many of the simplest articles of domestic comfort. They were forced to rely upon the Peninsula for nearly all the necessaries of life; for clothing, furniture, ornaments, luxuries of every kind, and even for some of the primary articles of subsistence which their prolific soil and propitious climate were capable of producing almost spontaneously. Every thing had to be imported from Old Spain; and upon the onorous terms which we have already described. It seemed, indeed that if the Court of Madrid had possessed the power of drying up the fountains of the country, it would have been done in order that other revenues might arise from the supplying the New-World with water.—

By these means not only was the industry of the Peninsula stimulated and a profitable market secured for its productions; but an other object was promoted of vital importance to the views of the Crown. We allude to the benighting effects of such a policy upon the mind and character of the people. It prevented the growth of intelligence among them, and the habit of thinking for themselves—an indispensable consequence to the stability of Spanish domination; for it is evident that no government founded upon such tiranical principles could ever long be inforced—even by the sword—without the aid of ignorance. Hence the necessity of keeping the Creoles in such condition. Their degradation was the strength of the government. In view of this truth, they were forbid the use of books—excluded from all participation in public affairs—shut out from the hope of social equality—treated as

an inferior race of people—insulted by the Gachupins—robbed by the Priests and persecuted by the authorities of the country. They were not even allowed to visit the Peninsula, except by special permission, lest they should learn what slaves should never know—their own degradation. As a further check upon their dreaded acquisition of wealth and power, the public officers—composed exclusively of European Spaniar[d]s—were selected with special reference to their prejudice and hatred towards this unfortunate class. The slightest manifestation of sympathy for their wrongs or interest in their welfare, was a fatal barrier to promotion. These, in conjunction, with other causes, necessarily engendered a deep-rooted jealousy and hatred between the two classes, which was fomented and encouraged by the government to such extent that friendship for the Creole was almost considered as treason to the King, and a rapacious temper, the best recommendation to royal confidence.

In addition to these sources of complaint, the Mexicans or Creoles were impoverished by enormous taxation for the support of two great appendages to the government designed for their physical subjection and their mental debasement. We mean the regular army, and the Roman church. Silent obedience, was secured by the former; while it was the special provence of the latter to pour into the benighted intellect the “leprous distilment” of bigotry, Idolatry and superstition. The duty thus assigned the ecclesiastical power was performed too well. Its uncontradicted teachings, from generation to generation, for whole centuries, could hardly fail to produce the intended effect. It made the Mexicans what the government desired them to be—a blind, servile and superstitious people, insensible to their degraded condition, and incapable of asserting their rights. They were taught to believe that the King of Spain could do no wrong—that he ruled by divine authority—and that a connection with a Monarchy so great and glorious as that of Castile and Aragon, upon whose dominions the sun never set, was an honor and distinction that more than compensated the sacrifices which they were called upon to make. These, and the like contaminating lessons of a wicked priesthood, kept their minds and their consciences in a state of thralldom, the more deplorable, because it was more difficult to dissolve, than that political and judicial despotism which was robbing them of almost every means of subsistence. The chains with which tyranny binds the physical man may be easily broken. Give but a blow and the links are shivered.— But how shall we sever the adamantine fetters which a false religion throws around the uncultivated intellect!—

Such, however, was not the condition of the entire creole population. The Cimmerian darkness had been penetrated by a few straggling rays of light, as we have already shown, during the War of Succession. Light also found its way into the country at a later period, by the general diffusion of letters; by the example of the North-American Colonies; as well as through the numerous writings which were poured forth during the French Revolution. In the progress of time schools were also established in Mexico; and although the sciences and Classics only were allowed to be taught, to the total exclusion of those branches of knowledge, which were calculated to enlighten the people upon the subject of their rights, or to inspire them with the love of liberty, yet

it was impossible to enforce the policy to the extent intended; for in spite of every vigilance and precaution, books would be introduced, and were sought after and read with more avidity for the very reason of their proscription. The works denounced were the most devoured.

The growth of intelligence, under such circumstances was necessarily very slow. It was chiefly confined to the higher orders, without producing any immediate and material change upon the general character of the nation. The great body of the people remained essentially the same; and although they had been gradually emerging, with the growth of population, from their ancient darkness; yet they were far from being awakened to a knowledge of their humiliating condition, or having any clear conception of the principles of free government. The great masses still abided in their blind devotion to the power which enslaved them, without daring to think of a better state of things. It is true that the Creoles were greatly embittered against the Gachupins of Mexico; but this hostility did not extend to the mother country, which still commanded their veneration and respect.— Thus we see, that Notwithstanding their accumulated wrongs and outrages—the insult, degradation and oppression to which they were daily subjected—they still continued faithful in their allegiance to Old Spain, and believed her the most powerful and enlightened of all nations.

Such was the condition of the people of Mexico at the time of the French invasion of the Peninsula in 1808. Up to that period, they had never ceased to boast of the Spanish blood that flowed in their veins, or hesitated for a moment in their obedience to the arbitrary and oppressive mandates of the King. How long this state of things would have continued, had it not been interrupted by the events of that epoch, it is difficult to conjecture; but there is one thing certain, that the Revolution which followed, was not the offspring of the people's own free-will. That they were reluctantly forced into it by the ingratitude and folly of the mother country, will appear from a review of the events that conducted to it. The immediate causes that produced the outbreak, will form the subject of the next chapter.

Some writers have attempted to exonerate the Court of Spain from the responsibility of the excesses which were committed in the colonies to the disgrace of the Spanish character, by imputing them to unprincipled agents who were either too powerful or too remote to be restrained by law. This may possibly be in part true with respect to the first Conquerors of the country; but even then, the Spanish Monarchs, with exception of the good and pious Isabella, was duly alert in securing their portion of the gains which were wrung from the life-blood of this unfortunate race.— If they possessed any sympathy or compassion for the Indians, they certainly evinced none for the Creoles; who were doomed to as many wrongs and hardships as the Aborigines; and if they did not perish as those under their heavy oppressions, it was because the[y] were born under the system tyranny—was enured to it—knew nothing else, and was more docile under the yoke, than the wild, untamable race that perished in the breaking.— Very little reflection will shew that nearly all the repudiated evils, instead of being solely imputable to the agents of the government, were the natural and unavoidable consequences of the system itself and inherent in it. The Colonial Policy of Spain, never could have been carried out by scrupu-

lous consciencious agents. It was too unjust in its principles and too mercenary in its ends.— What was the object of Spain in extending her dominion over the Americas? Was it the good of the people—the only legitimate end of all government? Was it to improve their condition—elevate them to the rank of other nations—and to make them great and prosperous as herself? No one will assert this. On the contrary, we have just seen that all her enegies were directed to the very opposite purpose, of keeping the inhabitants in a state of ignorance, servility and degradation, in order that she might snatch, with insatiate rapacity, the products of their extorted labor.— No good man could lend himself to such a purpose. Who that possessed one particle of humanity, piety or justice, could have consented to serve as an instrument to impoverish by taxation—shut out from the lights of knowledge—exclude from social equality, and in every way to crush the independent spirit of a million of people who sprang from his own race—spoke the same language, and professed the same religion, for the purpose merely of ministering to a tyrant's unhallowed lust of gold and dominion. Yet all this was necessary to the ends of the Crown; for without it, Spain would have lost her power over the Americas, and the unbounded wealth of their mountains would have found its way into other nations instead of the Peninsula. Hence the necessity of employing such miserable miscreants, both civil and ecclesiastical, who were willing to misguide and plunder the people to any extent for the benefit of the Crown, so long as they were allowed a due share of the spoils. The price of their services was the toleration of their private and individual rapacities.

The same privilege of oppressing and plundering had to be extended to all the European Spaniards in the Colonies, whether in or out of Office; for it was through them, that the Sovereign was able to maintain his authority in the country; and in order to make sure of their fidelity and loyalty, it was necessary to have their interest identified with the general system, and to keep their prosperity antagonistic to that of the Creoles. All, therefore, felt that they were privileged to gather spoils wherever found; and that to prey upon the people and peculate upon the government, involved no immorality, or crime. These feelings gave rise to a universal corruption, which pervaded the whole body politic; and was practised to an incredible extent by every officer of government—from the Sovereign himself, to his humblest subaltern. Not satisfied with the enormous sums which were continually flowing into his coffers from exhaustless fountains, the King monopolised the traffic in tobacco and quicksilver, and speculated in the Pope's Bulls. His regal representatives, the Viceroy's, animated by the spirit of their royal master, augmented their own treasures by the sale of exclusive privileges, nominations to office, and grants for the introduction of prohibited goods; while innumerable swarms of army and revenue officers, defrauded the crown of a goodly portion of the gathered tributes of the people. Under such a state of things, what value can we attach to those apologies which are intended to screne the Spanish Monarchs from the odium of those transactions which darken the pages of their Colonial history? These very corruptions and oppressions were the main pillars of their power; without which the whole Colonial Policy would have tumbled into ruins.—

Such are the great outlines of a System of tyranny pursued by Spain in the government of her Colonies for three centuries; in all which we can discover nothing but the most outrageous and unrelenting invasion of human rights on record; and the whole unrelieved by one solitary example of generosity or the slightest manifestation of sympathy for human misery.— That Spain should have been able, in an age of bigotry and superstition, to enforce her rapacious policy, and detain the people in a miserable state of dependence and mental darkness, is not to be wondered at; but that she should have been able to continue that policy down to the enlightened period of the nineteenth century, is certainly a matter of profound astonishment; and serves to shew how spiritless—how abject—how degraded a people may become through the combined efforts of a despotic government and a polluted Church.—

CHAPTER 2nd

BEGINNING OF THE MEXICAN REVOLUTION

It is known to the intelligent reader that, in consequence of the insurrection of Aranjues, occasioned by the popular indignation against the Minister, Godoy, commonly called the Prince of Peace, the Old King Charles the Fourth of Spain was constrained to resign his crown to his son Ferdinand. This he did on the 20th March 1808. Greatly dissatisfied, however with the act, he preferred his complaints to the Emperor of the French, invoking his friendly interposition and protesting against the abdication on the ground that he had been forced into it, by the temporary fury of the populace. Under the pretense of adjusting the family feud, Napoleon inveigled both father and son to Bayonne, where he immediately made them prisoners—thus availing himself of the opportunity of carrying into execution a project which he had long contemplated—that of placing his brother Joseph upon the throne of Spain. With a view to this end, he had already sent Murat with a large army to Madrid as a pretended friend and ally of the country. While the people of Spain were waiting with breathless anxiety to hear the result of the proceedings at Bayonne, an order arrived from Napoleon, demanding the immediate presence of the Queen Etruria and her children in that place.— The populace, until that moment, had abstained from any violent manifestations of their ire; but when they saw the queen and her family depart for Bayonne, which they did on the 2nd of May, they were no longer able to restrain their feelings; and accordingly precipitated themselves upon the soldiers of Murat, with the utmost fury and enthusiasm. The conflict lasted several hours, and literally made the streets of the city run with blood.— Order was scarcely restored when the astounding intelligence arrived that Charles and Ferdinand had both renounced the Crown, on the 6th May 1808, in favor of Joseph Bonaparte. The Council of the Indies ratified the abdication, and transferred the dominion of the Colonies to the new King. Spain was now involved in all the horrors of anarchy, without other government than the military despotism of the french. With a view to redeem the country from this deplorable condition; to reestablish order, and to organize a resistance to the invaders, political Juntas sprang up in all the Provinces, each one arrogating the direction of public affairs, and all of them claiming to rule the nation in the name of Ferdinand. That of Seville, finally took the

lead, styling itself the Supreme Junta of Spain, and the Indies and declared war against France, 6th of June 1808.—

Tidings of these things having reached Mexico, 29th July 1808, operated like a spark of fire in a magazine. It produced a sudden burst of indignation throughout the country against the french. The creole population was excited to the highest pitch of resentment, and was ready to make common cause with the mother country.— No one thought at that time of availing themselves of the troubled condition of the Peninsula to shake off the Colonial yoke and to establish the independence of the country. On the contrary, there was an almost universal determination on the part of the Creoles to resist the authority of the new King and to maintain their allegiance to the captive Ferdinand. He was every where proclaimed King; and large sums of money were collected by voluntary contribution and sent to Spain for the purpose of sustaining his right to the Crown and aiding in the war against his perfidious captor. Instead of striking at once, and boldly as they ought to have done at that favorable crisis, in defense of their long-trampled rights, they generously forgot their own wrongs in their resentment of those which were heaped upon their oppressors.—

It was evidently the policy of the Mother Country—situated as she was—to have fostered these feelings, and to have maintained the most amicable relations with her Colonies; for she needed both the money and men which they were able and willing to furnish; but instead of appreciating their zeal and loyalty, and keeping down all causes of dissention and complaint, she seems to have disignedly adopted the very opposite course, as if it were her determined purpose to extinguish their affection and drive them into rebellion.

Joseph Bonaparte, after the abdication of Ferdinand in his favor, lost no time in despatching agents to Mexico, to announce the change of Government, and to claim the allegiance of the people. A similar demand was also made by two sets of Commissioners from the Peninsula, sent by the rival Juntas of Seville and Asturias, both claiming the right to rule the Colonies as the substitute of Ferdinand, and each at the same time denouncing the other for the assumption of unwarrantable power. Besides these claimants, there were two others that set up their pretensions to control the commercial and political affairs of the Colonies. These were the Council of the Indies, and the Regency appointed by Ferdinand previous to his departure for Bayonne. Thus we behold five competitors for the Royal prerogative—King Joseph; the Junta of Seville; that of Asturias; the Council of the Indies, and the Ferdinand—Regency. These conflicting pretensions; and the contradictory orders emanating from them, proved a source of great perplexity to the government as well as to the people of Mexico. The difficulties were still increased by internal dissensions which threatened the country with anarchy and discord. The emisaries of Bonaparte had succeeded in winning over the Spaniards to the french cause by giving assurances to those who held office, that they should retain their places, and by promises of Royal favor to the rest. This occasioned great bitterness of feeling between them and the Creoles; while the latter, though united in their hostility to the french, were divided among themselves upon the question of obedience to the Juntas of the Peninsula. They regarded all these demands upon their allegiance as

unfounded and preposterous. Nevertheless, there were some who were not unwilling, for the sake of avoiding intestine commotion, to acknowledge the authority of the Sevil Junta, so long as it governed in the name of Ferdinand.

Under these embarrassing circumstances—in the impossibility of executing all the orders received; and not knowing which authority to obey—the Viceroy, Don José Iturrigaray resolved to overcome the difficulties, by convoking a national assembly, to be composed of delegates from all the Provinces, for the purpose of deliberating on the affairs of the nation, and forming a Junta, or provisional government in imitation of the mother country. This was certainly a wise and natural course; and was indeed the only rightful remedy for existing evils.— That the Vice-roy was a good and just man, actuated in this matter by the purest motives, and without any intention of being disloyal to the mother country, is now generally conceded. His sole purpose was to arrest the progress of french influence—to snatch the country from the grasp of Napoleon, and to hold it for Ferdinand until his restoration might be effected. In spite, however, of the obvious necessity of the measure, as well as of the loyalty that dictated it, it awakened the universal jealousy of the Spaniards in Mexico, who strenuously opposed it, because it was popular with the people and necessarily contemplated the meeting of the Creoles and the Europeans in a general Council. This was peculiarly offensive to the former, not only because it blended the two classes—the natives and the Gachupins—and placed them upon a level; but still more, because it recognised the right of the people to have a voice in the administration of public affairs, and to think and to act for themselves in great emergencies.— That the Creoles possessed any such right, was utterly denied by the Europeans; and for the purpose of suffocating so dangerous a principle, and punishing him who was willing to introduce it into public affairs, the Spaniards in the Capital, seized the Viceroy on the night of the 16th of September 1808, and sent him and his family prisoners to the Peninsula. This violent procedure against a public functionary who had committed no other offense than that of respecting the natural rights of those over whom he ruled, and of trying to save the country from the state of anarchy into which it was likely to be precipitated by contending factions, could not fail to open the eyes of the Creoles with regard to the deep malignity and hatred of the Gachupins towards them; and the subsequent approval of the act, by the mother country, was well calculated to chill every generous sentiment and to extinguish forever the enthusiasm and affection of the people towards the ungrateful recipients of their loyalty and devotion.

The pretensions of the Seville Junta to rule the Colonies as King, was the height of absurdity and audacity.— All those Juntas were self-constituted authorities, democratic in their origin and could no more assume the Royal prerogative over the provinces of Ultramar, than any other sett of popular demagogues or patriotic bodies, of the day. What possible right could such ephemeral organizations have to govern the Colonies, when they were not able to manage the affairs of their own country. The Creoles could owe no allegiance to any such authority. Their allegiance was due alone to the King; for it is a fundamental principle of the Spanish Monarchy, that the domin-

ion of the Colonies was vested in the Crown and not in the State; and it follows as a matter of course, that when the monarchy was destroyed, the King captured, and the nation left without a government, it belonged as much to the Colonies as to the Mother Country, to look to their own immediate security, and to decide upon their future policy. Their allegiance to the King, terminated with his dethronement and the extinction of his power; and so did that of all the inhabitants of the Peninsula. If latter, or any portion of them, might determine upon a counter-revolution, for the purpose of dethroning the King *de facto*, and reinstating the imprisoned Monarch, they possessed the right to organize a Junta, and to invest it with necessary powers to carry out their designs; but surely any attempt on the part of such junta to prohibit the Colonies doing the same thing, for the same purpose, would be an intolerable wrong which might almost cause the stones to rise in mutiny. Yet such was the position assumed by the Junta of Seville towards the Colonies. That body not only demanded their allegiance, but denounced and punished as open rebellion an attempt to imitate the mother country in a policy which was held up to the admiration of the peninsulars. Thus do we see that what was patriotism in the parent country, was treason in the Colonies. And all this was done in the name of a King who was powerless and in the hands of his enemies—a king without a crown, whose reign was over, and whose royal prerogatives had passed into the possession of another.—

The reader cannot fail to perceive, from this exposition of affairs, that the conduct of the Spanish authorities towards Mexico at this critical epoch (1808) was based upon the old maxim, always contended for, "that while a Castilian Cobler remained in the Peninsula, he had a right to govern the Americas." The Creoles were regarded as belonging to the Spanish race, subject alone to their dictation, and were no more entitled than the brute creation, to the exercise of any political rights and privileges whatever. This was one of the fundamental principles of the Colonial System—a system which had been persevered in from the conquest of the country to the captivity of Ferdinand; but one whose rigid enforcement was unsuited to the stormy and revolutionary period of which we speak; and still less adapted to the advanced condition of the Creoles, who inspite of all the efforts of the government to the contrary, had become sufficiently enlightened by the progress of general knowledge, to entitle them to be governed by some of the principles of humanity and justice. Bancroft Library

The Spaniards, however, contended that any relaxation of their Colonial System would be equivalent to a total surrender of the system itself. The principle of self-government, once admitted into the Colonies, would prove an inextinguishable greek-fire which would diffuse itself without limitation and might be as easily directed against a domestic tyrant as against a foreign usurper. If the Colonies were allowed, like the peninsula, to organize a resistance to King Joseph, they might be emboldened, after a while, to do the same to King Ferdinand, or to any other unacceptable authority. In the opinion of the Gachupins, no calamity could befall the nation, equal to that of its removal by the Creoles. The duty of these was limited to that of simply obeying and paying; and all aspirations beyond, were treason and rebellion.

Such were the principles, and such the mode of reasoning that influenced the councils of the mother country in the beginning of the difficulties with her colonies. Her great error consisted in her forgetting what tyrants seem fated never to remember or regard, that all government has to be in harmony with the character and condition of the people; and that even the most abject and submissive of the human race may be driven to desperation by intolerable wrongs. The Creoles in 1808 were a different people from what they were in the sixteenth century, and therefore required to be governed by very different laws; but blind to the necessity of making those modifications in her government which the progress of intelligence had rendered imperious, Old Spain still hoped to maintain her authority in the colonies unimpaired; and to coerce by physical force that obedience and submission which had been formerly rendered in a great measure, through ignorance and superstition, and more recently through voluntary homage and sincere devotion.— It was upon this hope that the Gachupins acted in the arrest of Iturrigaray. As his was the first attempt at an exercise of self-government in Mexico, it was believed that the infliction of condign punishment upon him and his supporters, would fill the Creoles with alarm; and would quite suffice for the re-establishment of the old system of passive obedience and non-resistance in its former rigor and severity. But how different were the results from those expected. That high-handed measure, instead of extinguishing the sentiment of liberty, was the very thing that lighted its torch. It aroused the people to reflection, and engendered the first idea of a revolution—an idea which was, at the beginning, but a small spark, that might have been easily extinguished at the moment, but which was fanned by the folly and madness of the mother country, into a mighty flame that finally threw its hallowed illumination over the whole country. The generous enthusiasm of the Creoles in favor of Ferdinand and his cause was converted into hatred of the whole Spanish race; and the desire of freedom and of vengeance took deep root in the heart of the nation.—

The arrest, however, of the Viceroy, though productive of universal indignation among the Creoles, did not immediately generalize the desire of a revolution. This had to be the work of time and circumstances. The ties which had sprung up between the Colonies and the parent country during three hundred years, could not be disrupted in a moment.— She may have acted the part of a cruel parent; but the Creoles knew no other mother, and the old feeling of reverence and respect which they had been taught to cherish towards her, still lingered in the heart inspite of all their just resentments. It is true that the dissensions of the Royal family, the occurrences at Bayonne, and the invasion of the peninsula by the french, had somewhat impaired, the *prestige*, which attached to the name of Spain. Still she was regarded by the masses with superstitious veneration; and the idea of drawing the sword against the mother country, had not yet lost its religious horror.— These feelings, however, diminished daily. They gradually gave way under the influx of light which was continually pouring in, upon the minds of the benighted multitude. In spite of the double vigilance and rigor of the government, books found their way into the country; and the press for the first time began to discuss political affairs. Indeed it was impossible that the Creoles could have

remained stationary in such a stirring epoch, so pregnant with important events which were continually provoking reflection and exciting to action. The times were favorable to the acquisition of political knowledge; and it was manifest to the Spaniards themselves, that the chain which ignorance and superstition had thrown around the heart and the understanding of the Creoles, were rapidly dissolving, in the sunshine of intelligence.—

Nothing, perhaps, contributed so much to sink the mother country in the eyes of the Creoles, and to inspire confidence in themselves, as the rapid progress of the french arms. The invaders were everywhere triumphant during the year 1809.— The direction of affairs in the Peninsula at this time was confided to what was styled the "*Central Junta*" composed of delegates from the Provincial Juntas, and was installed in Sevil, 25th September 1808. It was generally recognized and obeyed as the Supreme authority of the nation. It proved, however, incompetent to its high functions; and after permitting the French to overrun nearly the whole kingdom, was finally put to flight itself. It was driven from Seville to Cadiz. Previous to leaving Seville, however; it issued a proclamation, dated 5th June 1809, convoking a National Congress to assemble on the 1st of March 1810; and on reaching Cadiz—its last refuge it resigned its powers after having first appointing a Regency to administer the government until the meeting of the proposed Congress. This gave the finishing blow to the moral force by which Spain had always controled her Colonies. Her prestige was now lost forever; her invincibility was gone, and her boasted superiority vanished into thin air. The mighty monarchy which the Creoles had been taught to believe was the most powerful and enlightened on the globe, had, in their estimation, dwindled to a mere french dependency; and in proportion to the once exalted idea which they had entertained of her grandure and grateness, was their present depreciation and contempt.—

This state of affairs continued until the beginning of 1810. By this time the Creoles had arrived to a pretty clear conception of their rights, as well as of a consciousness of their strength; which they were daily becoming more disposed to exert. It was impossible for Spain to close her eyes any longer to the true state of things. The increasing alienation of the Creoles to the mother country, and their disposition to revolt, began to be well understood in the Peninsula; and it was obvious to all, that without some change in the conduct of the government towards them, they would soon be in open rebellion. At that particular crisis, when the banners of the french were triumphantly waving over the strong places of the country, the reduction of the Colonies by physical force, to their former dependence and obedience, could hardly be hoped for; and it only remained for the Government of Spain to lure them back to their ancient allegiance and affection, by the adoption of a more extended, just, and liberal policy towards them. An attempt was accordingly made; but it proved a total failure, for the want of sincerity and good faith on the part of the mother country.—

The first step towards allaying the revolutionary spirit of the Colonies was taken by the Central Junta in the agonies of its dissolution. In making the convocation, (which we have just mentioned) of a National Cortes, that Junta announced to the Provinces of Ultramar,

that they were no longer regarded in the light of Colonies, but as component parts of the Spanish Monarchy—that they were entitled to a representation of the proposed Congress—and that the Americans were to enjoy a perfect equality of rights with their European brethren. These concessions were reiterated by the Regency, who in calling upon the Colonies to proceed to the election of their delegates to the Congress, accompanied their decree, with an appeal to the people declaring that they were now raised to the dignity of freemen, having their destiny in their own hands, and no longer dependent for their rights, upon the will of Kings, Viceroy and governors. The press of the peninsula was loud in support of the same thing—addressing the people of Spain as sovereigns, the Creoles as equals, and all classes in general, not as subjects but as citizens;—and in order to make assurances doubly sure, the Regency, in a Decree dated 17th May 1810, granted to the Colonies a temporary free-trade—a measure of vast importance to them, and which although limited as to time and encumbered with restrictions, was nevertheless well calculated of itself to promote the desired object.

The demands of the Colonies were, indeed, more than met by these concessions, and a reconciliation would have ensued without further difficulty, had the concessions been carried into practical operation. But such was not the design of the mother country. It never was her intention to concede to the Colonies one solitary right of any essential value; or in the slightest degree to relinquish her ancient system of exclusion and monopoly. Her sole purpose seems to have been to amuse the Colonies with hopes which were never to be realized; and by her deceitful and fallacious promises to keep them from a general outbreak, until she should find herself in a situation to throw her Ananconda folds around them again with double pressure.

The free-trade Concession of May 17th 1810 was rescinded almost as soon as made. This was done in obedience to the dictation of the merchants of Cadiz whose profits were diminished by it, and who had sufficient power to coerce its repeal. The Regency not only abrogated the act, but denounced the Decree as a forgery, and actually punished some of the subalterns of the Department, in order to escape the responsibility of having sanctioned it. This vacillating and cowardly conduct, could not fail to to [*sic*] augment the general incredulity of the colonies with regard to all the pledges of the government, and to strengthen the conviction that they would finally have to rely upon themselves for a redress of their grievances.

The boasted concession of National representation, and equality of rights, resulted in like manner. It amounted to no concession at all. It was but the paltering with the Colonies in a double sense. The solemn assurances that the Colonies were merged with the Peninsula in a common Monarchy, and that there was no distinction between the European and the American subjects, when stripped of their verbage and reduced to practice amounted to nothing more than this—that the transatlantic Provinces should be allowed to send twenty six delegates to the intended National Congress, on condition of their falling back into their former dependence, and rendering their accustomed obedience to the Mother Country. The Viceroy, the Audiencia, and the prohibitory laws and commercial restrictions—the very things com-

plained of, and chief sources of all the Colonial grievances—were to be retained according to the ancient order of things, without any modification of the latter, or abridgement of the powers of the former. In a word, the Creoles were literally to resume their hereditary chains—to reoccupy their old condition of servitude—and to receive in recompense, the right already alluded to, of electing to the national Cortes, an useless representation, whose influence would be but as a drop of water in the ocean. Such a proposition, instead of closing, only tended to widen the breach between the parties. These official proclamations, however, though intended to deceive had the good effect of making the Creoles feel that they were in reality what the government had pronounced them—freemen—and as such were determined never to resume the cast off collar of the tyrant.

It will be seen, therefore, that the great difficulty of effecting a reconciliation between the mother country and her Colonies, consisted in this—that there was no half-way ground on which the parties could meet. They could not compromise by mutual concessions—by giving and taking, or splitting the difference—because the struggle had now become one of life and death, in which all had to be won, or all lost. The colonies, guided at first by their generous impulses, would have been content with some moderate reforms; but more enlightened upon the subjects of their rights, and more confident of ability to assert them, they were now imperious in their exactions. They demanded a radical alteration of those prohibitory laws and commercial restrictions by which the natural resources of the country were paralyzed, and the inhabitants degraded and impoverished—a demand, which, however reasonable and just, it was impossible for the mother country to grant without giving up her entire policy; for the great object of the system itself was to produce the very results complained of—that is to reduce the people to such a state of humility and degradation, that they might not be able to perceive their rights, or avenge the rapacity that impoverished them. The evils of such a system—thus founded upon ignorance and sustained by force—could admit of no remedy short of political freedom.—

The only possible relief, of any practical value, which could have been extended to the Colonies was the relinquishment to them of some self-protecting power—such as a right of Colonial legislation; a veto upon the decrees of the of the [*sic*] Council of the Indies; or an equality of representation in the councils of the Monarchy, together with a full participation in public affairs. Any of these rights would have lead by *degrees* to the ameriolation which was sought; but at the same time it is obvious that its unrestricted exercise would have naturally and unavoidably conducted, in the course of time, to the emancipation of the Colonies—a consequence, which however remote, the Peninsula was resolved at all hazzard to prevent. Indeed, there is every reason to believe that there never was a time when the mother country would not have preferred the total extinction of the Creoles, to the surrender of one jot or tittle of her long-indulged prerogative of treating them as beasts of burthen.—

The parties at length began to comprehend each other. The Colonies, aware of their own strength, as well as of the true value of the rights they claimed, were determined not to be satisfied with anything

short of a full and perfect redress of grievances; and the mother country, no less confident of her power and resources, and duly alive to the importance of the stake at issue, was equally resolved on her part not to yield the slightest portion of her former power. The hope of an amicable adjustment of difficulties, being no longer entertained, both parties prepared for war; and in brief time there was a general rush to arms from Buenos Ayres to Mexico—the Colonies contending for absolute Independence; and the mother country for their unconditional submission.

Such are some of the most prominent events and considerations which lead to the Mexican Revolution. Other causes, however, existed which were hurrying the country into the same course. Indeed it was impossible that Spain could have retained her domination much longer—at least in its former extent—over a nation which was increasing so rapidly in population, resources and knowledge as New Spain. The catastrophe which she might have delayed by wisdom and moderation, was accelerated in the manner already unfolded. There is no doubt but that the quarrell between the parties might have been settled at the beginning by very reasonable concessions; and if the tendency of these concessions were to ultimate emancipation, Spain should have remembered that other causes, beyond her control, were operating to the same effect; and knowing this, it would have been wise in her, instead of forcing the Colonies into immediate revolution, to have made with them some arrangements by which the parties might have abided in friendly alliance and cooperated in the prosecution of reciprocal interest. Had she done this, she would not only have saved herself from the odium of stamping the revolution that followed, with the dark atrocities that disfigured her conquest of the country; but she would have still retained her Colonies—if not in a state of abject servitude—at least as tributary friends in peace, and faithful allies in war. But such was not her policy. If she could not hold the Creoles in slavish subjection, she was not willing to know them as friends. And thus did a bigoted and foolish nation lose by pride and malignity, the brightest jewels of her diadem.—

If it were admissible to derive pleasure from the misfortunes of those who have deeply wronged us, Mexico and the South American States might find some gratification in the reflection, that the very oppressions which they were doomed to experience during their long Colonial bondage, was one of the most prominent and efficient causes which lead to the reduction of the Peninsula from its high estate to its present, humble rank among the family of nations. The unbounded quantity of the precious metals which flowed into Spain from the New World, raised her to a grandure and magnificence that admitted of no rival; and to the astonishment of all Europe, the Peninsula was suddenly flooded with gold and silver, inviting to its ports the commerce of the world, and diffusing individual wealth and luxury, unexampled in modern times. For a while this sudden influx of wealth, imparted vigor and activity to every branch of industry; but in the course of time, it was discovered to have a pernicious effect upon the Country, by changing the morals and habits of the people. As a thoughtless inheritor of a large estate, just coming into the possession of his property, plunges into all the destroying vices which indolence and self-

indulgence prepare for their victims, so did the Spanish Monarchs and their subjects—intoxicated by their unexampled prosperity—fall into almost every species of extravagance, profligacy and corruption which could dishonor and destroy a nation. Amidst their exuberant treasures, all the ordinary pursuits of life were abandoned; and every thing that gives strength and stability to a nation, was suffered to decline. Agricultural industry and the mechanic arts were neglected and contemned—the manufactories sank into ruins—commerce was given up to foreigners—and their thousand merchant vessels and their great Armadas were allowed to disappear like so many bubbles on the ocean. In fine the nation continued to retrograde from the reign of Philip the Third down to 1808, when she found herself in a state of hopeless imbecility and degradation. No doubt but that other causes contributed to this result; among which many unnecessary wars of its ambitious Sovereigns may not be the least; but it is believed that the primary and most effectual cause of that kingdom's declension, is to be found in the corrupting influence which the profusion of wealth, wrung by oppression from the Colonies,—so suddenly introduced into the Peninsula and easily acquired, exercised over the policy of the government, and upon the morals and habits of the people.—

No. 2813. THE CATHOLIC CHURCH IN MEXICO. LAMAR

[Richmond? Texas, 185-?]

The truth is there can be no national faith or public virtue in a country like Mexico, where the Catholic religion prevails to the exclusion of all others. It is the nature of this church to darken the understanding, to corrupt the conscience and to enslave the soul of man. Its dominion is founded upon ignorance, bigotry and superstition. It perishes in the light of truth. Wherever it is established by government and is invested with the exclusive prerogative of of [*sic*] imparting religious instruction and prescribing moral duties combined with the power of enforcing obedience to its mandates and precepts, the people must necessarily become whatever the Priesthood may choose to make them—and most certainly these spiritual guides will never choose to make them anything else than fanatical slaves to the Church and blind instruments of its cupidity.— There can be no truth where reason is not permitted to combat error; and there can be no prevailing piety or virtue among a people who are taught to believe that vice and crime are legitimate indulgences when duly atoned for by filthy lucre. This is the great feature of the Catholic Religion. The vices of the people are the profits of the Church; and the higher the crime, the greater the income. No one is ever dismissed unburthened of his sins who has the ability to pay for their absolution; and the only offense which neither Priest nor Potentate can pardon is a faithful examination into clerical abuses and oppressions. Under such a system of moral and religious tuition, the people, as a matter of course, cannot be otherwise than supremely ignorant, supersititious and wicked; and precisely of this character were the benighted inhabitants of Mexico, when they obtained their Independence.— Nor have they yet emerged from that barbaric condition; for although they had valor and patriotism to shake off the yoke of Spanish despotism, they still wanted intelligence

and virtue to disenthral themselves of the more deplorable and debasing bondage of the Priesthood, whose baleful influence is still predominant in the country, demoralizing all classes of the community, and sanctifying every species of crime. We marvel not, then, at the perfidious and sanguinary conduct of this mal-instructed race towards our unfortunate hero; for in staining their soil with his blood, they only did what they would gladly do to the citizens of every civilized nation who would permit the atrocity to go unpunished.—

No. 2814. HISTORICAL NOTES. ANONYMOUS

[185-?]

S. F. Austin supreme Judge and Col of Militia, he immediately laid off the country into Precincts; an Alcaldi elected in each Precinct, after that he procured a law establishing a supreme court, composed of all the alcaldis's appellate Jurisdiction

Mills M. Battle.	Presd
James Cummings)
J P Cole,)
T. M. Duke,)
W. Stafford,)

Department of Bexar Ramon Musquis Political Chief, included the entire province of Texas.

In 1828, the Municipality of Austin organized under the constitution of 1824 included all territory from the Gaudeloupe to San Jacinto.—

Thomas M Duke, 1st constitutional Alcaldi, San Felipe the Capital, with an Ayuntamiento composed of first and second Regedor and Sendico Procurador—

1829. Jno: White, Alcaldi second Year, the alcalde and Ayuntamiento elected every year, the Alcaldi not eligible until the expiration of one year, 1830 Thomas Barnett, 1841, F. S. Johnson, 1832 Chriesman, 1833, Lesassier, 1834 R. M. Williamson, 1835 Jno: M Money

The Department of Brazos, organized in 1832 Henry Smith Political Chief, time expired 1834. J. B. Miller appointed successor; The Department of Nacogdoches organized, in 1834, Henry Rueg Chief of Department.—

Municipality of Brazoria,	organized in	1833,
“ “ Matagorda,	“ “	1833,
“ “ Liberty,	“ “	1832,
“ “ Bastrop or Mina,	“ “	1833,
“ “ Gonzalis,		1832 or 3,
“ “ Washington,		1834,
“ “ Viesca,		1834
“ “ Harrisburg,		1834,

INDEX *

- Abererombie, James, II, 501.
- Abolition, II, 28, 138, 251, III, 101, IV, pt. 2, 136, V, 179.
- Abrams, Andrew, V, 169.
- Adamson, John, letter, III, 415.
- Adamson & Company, III, 114.
- Advertiser of the Port of Matamoras*, I, 86-88.
- Agency of Texas at New Orleans, II, 331, 464, 502.
- Aguillar, Francisco, statement, VI, 65.
- Aikens, John, VI, 101.
- Ajax* (brig), V, 80.
- Alabama Grays, I, 436, II, 139, V, 111, 181.
- Alabama Volunteers, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 20.
- Alamán, Lucas, I, 56, VI, 245.
- Alamo, calls for help for, I, 338 (Travis), 343 (Smith); fall, I, 351, II, 245; origin of the name, III, 281; victims, I, 542, IV, pt. 1, 220, VI, 297.
- Aldredge, Edward, V, 92.
- Aldrich, Collin, II, 264; letter, II, 310, V, 219.
- Aldridge, William, agreement, II, 162.
- Alexander* (schooner), II, 183.
- Aliens, exclusion from office, II, 372.
- Allen, I, 562, II, 43.
- Allen & Webster, IV, pt. 2, 148.
- Allen, Captain, VI, 111.
- Allen, James M., III, 21, V, 294; letter, III, 567, V, 485.
- Allen, John K., I, 267, 296; letter, II, 195.
- Allen, John M., II, 416, V, 237; *jurat*, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 8; letters, II, 464, III, 60, V, 286, 303.
- Allen, J. M., V, 236.
- Allen, John O., III, 504, V, 464.
- Allen, O. H., I, 160, V, 52.
- Allen, William Y., II, 298.
- Alley, I, 244, V, 85, 88.
- Almonte, Juan Nepomuceno, I, 353, 405, II, 567, 569, 583, 594, III, 1, 8, V, 101; custody and disposal of, I, 489; letter, I, 384; release, I, 492.
- Alsbury, Dr., VI, 103.
- Alsbury, Thomas J., II, 245.
- Alvarado, Pedro, IV, pt. 2, 184.
- Amarillas, Marques de las, letter, I, 1.
- Ambulancia*, IV, pt. 2, 132.
- American Atlantic & Pacific Ship Canal Company, IV, pt. 2, 145, 207.
- American National Common School Convention, 1839, II, 506.
- American Whig Society (Princeton), III, 203, V, 336.
- Amira, Pablo, letter, IV, pt. 1, 168, VI, 92.
- Amnesty Law of 1835, IV, pt. 1, 208.
- Amory, Nathaniel, III, 534; certificate, II, 372; document, III, 149; letters, II, 456, III, 31, 135, 151, 153, 199, 342, 543, V, 331.
- Ampudia, VI, 112, 113.
- Anahuac, custom disputes, IV, pt. 1, 298; disturbances, 1832, I, 90-93, 94-148, 544, III, 237, 238-42, 250, V, 351, 361, VI, 185; disturbances, 1835, I, 202, 205, 236, III, 235, 246, V, 281; history, III, 242, IV, pt. 1, 208, V, 351.
- Anahuac, fort of, I, 125.
- Anaya, I, 4.
- Anderson, A. A., III, 322; letter, III, 135.
- Anderson, J. L., letter, IV, pt. 2, 57, VI, 347.
- Anderson, Cullen, V, 250.
- Anderson, Kenneth L., II, 279, 313, 486, 511, 515, III, 154, V, 212, 220; letter, II, 534.
- Anderson, Thomas P., IV, pt. 1, 112, 123; joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 110, VI, 12.
- Anderson, William P., II, 274, 279, V, 212.
- Andrews, Garnet, letter, II, 435.
- Andrews, J. D., letters, III, 340, 432. (*See also* League, Andrews & Company.)
- Andrews, John, II, 501, V, 266; joint letter, II, 501, V, 266.
- Andrews, John T., joint letter, II, 240, V, 202.
- Andrews, Joseph W., IV, pt. 2, 237.
- Andrews, Robert, I, 2.
- Andrews, S. P., II, 372.
- Anduze, N. B., III, 222, V, 342.
- Anglo-Americans, I, 95; Cherokee relations, I, 238; ingratitude to Mexico, I, 119.
- Annexation of Texas, I, 464, 509, 542, 547, 565, 568, II, 1, 138, 249, 324, 408, III, 364, IV, pt. 1, 47, 108, 110, 111, V, 153, 179, 414, IV, pt. 1, 47, 108, 110, VI, 9, 10, 12; application, withdrawal, II, 179, 241, 243, 273,

- 274, V, 209; convention, petition, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 8; pamphlet on, II, 8.
- Anonymous letters and articles, *1816*, I, 30; *1827*, I, 69; *1829*, I, 71, 78, V, 30; *1830*, I, 88; *1832*, I, 148, V, 52; *1834*, I, 193, V, 179; *1835*, I, 228, 230, 277; *1836*, I, 405, 423, 444, V, 101, 106, 109; *1837*, I, 536, 568, II, 5, 8, V, 167, 168; *1838*, II, 225, 344, 384; *1839*, III, 120, 226; *183—*, III, 246, 251, 264, 283, 285, 286, V, 356, 378, 385; *1840*, III, 482, V, 456; *1842*, IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 497; *1844*, IV, pt. 1, 47, 95; *1845*, IV, pt. 1, 108, 110, 193, VI, 161; *184—*, IV, pt. 1, 208, 215, 223, 242, 249, 261, VI, 181-4, 296, 301; *1851*, IV, pt. 1, 284; *1852*, IV, pt. 1, 287; *1853*, IV, pt. 2, 1; *1857*, IV, pt. 2, 38; *1858*, IV, pt. 2, 132, 141, 189, 200, VI, 369, 375, 406; *1859*, IV, pt. 2, 211, 217, VI, 419, 421; *185—*, IV, pt. 2, 236, 237, VI, 498.
- Anquetil, Louis Pierre, V, 46.
- Anthony, I, 114.
- Anthony, D. W., I, 160, V, 52.
- Apodaca, V, 47, VI, 182, 210.
- Appleman, John, I, 312; letter, III, 504, V, 465; orders to, I, 302, 311; receipt, I, 313.
- Aransas, citizens' meeting, proceedings, III, 21; custom house, II, 555, III, 21; living conditions, *1838*, II, 183; port, I, 302.
- Archer, Branch Tanner, I, 97, 233, II, 138, 181, 569, III, 108, 356, 563, 569, 573, 582, 592, V, 179, 319, VI, 177; biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; letters, II, 24, 453, III, 58, V, 170, 252; memorandum, I, 524; orders, III, 555; urged to run for the presidency, I, 440.
- Archer, Powhatan, II, 569.
- Archer House, Velasco, II, 24, V, 170.
- Archives, removal to Austin, III, 62, 80, 139, 203, 204; retention at Austin, *1842*, IV, pt. 1, 5, 19.
- Argentine Republic, IV, pt. 2, 41-43; VI, 343, 344; information on, IV, pt. 2, 52.
- Arispe, Mariano, VI, 253.
- Arispe, Ramos, report to, I, 70, V, 24, VI, 235.
- Arista, Mariano, I, 160, IV, pt. 1, 194, V, 53, 403, VI, 99, 187.
- Armijo, VI, 214, 244.
- Armistice with Mexico, *1843*, IV, pt. 1, 21, 22-25, 123.
- Armory, Houston, II, 338, 503.
- Armstrong, James, letters, II, 553, III, 537, V, 279; speech, III, 226, V, 343.
- Army of Texas, I, 408, 534, III, 334, 335, III, 378, 581, V, 130, 222, 298, 420; addresses to, I, 369, 396, III, 352; attitude toward the land question, I, 551, 556; clothing and supplies, I, 337, 412, 419; claims for service in, II, 335, 336, 337; commander-in-chief, I, 259, 263, 416, 489; conditions, *1836*, I, 445; dispersal, II, 206; election returns, I, 259, 323; force in the field, *1838*, II, 199-201, 205, 208-10; insubordination, I, 417, 562; movements, *1836*, I, 436; muster roll, I, 352; needs, I, 261, 349, 395; officers, I, 344, 352, 416, II, 203; 340, III, 84, V, 103; organization, II, 215, 386; provisions, I, 311-12, 410, 414, 419; receipts, I, 298, V, 91; transportation, I, 313; troubles, *1836*, I, 341, 436. (*See also* recruiting, volunteer army, volunteers from the United States, etc.)
- Arnold, Hayden, joint petition, II, 555.
- Arredondo, Joaquin de, I, 31, IV, pt. 2, 37, VI, 181, 194, 210, 218, 337.
- Arsenal (Austin), troops, III, 581.
- Ashworth, Jesse, III, 340.
- Atkinson, I, 32.
- Atkinson, Elizabeth, letter, II, 417.
- Atkinson, T. J., letter, II, 517, V, 269.
- Aubrey & Kinney, III, 563; letters, III, 562, 568, 589.
- Auditor of Texas, report, *1836*, I, 451.
- Augusta Chronicle*, I, 71, V, 30.
- Augustine, Henry W., III, 372.
- Aury, Luis, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 438.
- Austin, Archibald, VI, 176.
- Austin, conduct, II, 448.
- Austin, Emily, I, 45, 90, 95. (*See also* Bryan, Emily Austin and Perry, Emily Austin.)
- Austin, Henry, biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; letters, II, 502, III, 590, V, 490.
- Austin, Horace, VI, 76.
- Austin, James Elijah Brown, death, I, 75, 76, V, 39, 40.
- Austin, John, I, 93, 95-98, 100, 101, 114-16, 118, 123, 125, 127, 137, 142-3, 148; biography, IV, pt. 1, 209; command, *1832*, I, 105; conduct, *1832*, I, 119; land, I, 555; orders, I, 99, 100-1.
- Austin, Mary Brown (Mrs. Moses Austin), I, 2, 45, 46; letter, I, 53.
- Austin, Moses, I, 45, V, 5; biography, I, 2, IV, pt. 1, 308; VI, 171-81; colonization plans, I, 45; death, I, 46; journey to Missouri, *1796-7*, I, 3; letter, I, 45; loss, *1821*, I, 45; memorandum, I, 3; papers, I, 2.
- Austin, Stephen Fuller, I, 175, 464, 551, V, 120; address at Louisville, *1836*, I, 344; address of welcome to, *1832*, I, 141; arrival at Velasco, *1836*, I, 405; attitude, *1832*, I, 145; biogra-

- phy, I, 2, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; candidacy, I, 436, 440; circular, I, 237; colonists, I, 2; commander-in-chief: elected, I, 243, superseded, I, 259, correspondence on file in Bexar, II, 44, III, 524; diary, 1821, I, 46; diary, 1833-4 (prison journal), I, 165; Fisher's relations with, III, 285; Hawkins's co-operation with, I, 46; health, I, 75, 78; heirs' claims, IV, pt. 2, 25; Indian talk in behalf of, I, 239; influence toward modification of the decree of *April 6, 1830*, I, 163; letters, 1821, I, 45; 1823, I, 54; 1829, I, 70, 75-6; 1830, I, 78, 86; 1832, I, 90, 93, 95; 1833, I, 148, 160; 1834, I, 165, 170; 1835, I, 198, 240; 1836, I, 405, 408, 409, III, 66, V, 39, 40, 48, 49, 53, 102; letters to, I, 53, 198, 202, 236, 240, 241, 243, 244-5, 247, V, 85; memorandum, I, 3; mission to Mexico, 1833, I, 523, V, 127; movements, 1832, I, 131, 145; notes, I, 54; order, I, 247; papers, I, 55, 534, 589; plans, 1835, I, 204; portraits, I, 2; proclamation, I, 69; reception at San Antonio, 1821, IV, pt. 1, 209; regard for Lamar, II, 206; V, 193; release, 1835, I, 204; report to, I, 246; speech, I, 237; translations of laws, I, 46.
- Austin, William T., I, 115, 140, 145, III, 566, V, 485; appointment, II, 343; biography of John Austin, IV, pt. 1, 209; letters, III, 307, 438, 445, 541, IV, pt. 1, 47, 258; V, 481, 513; Texas Revolution, IV, pt. 1, 96.
- Austin family, records, I, 2, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81.
- Austin (city), II, 435, 436, 531, 571, III, 60, 512, 566, V, 244, 273, 283, 484; ball, IV, pt. 1, 202, VI, 168; barbecue, IV, pt. 1, 21, V, 503; building, II, 587, III, 11, 43, 50; citizens, II, 43; condition, 1843, IV, pt. 1, 19; defense, III, 351; description, 1839, III, 91, 92, V, 309; general satisfaction with, III, 62; health, III, 557; Indians near, III, 126, 410, 432, IV, pt. 1, 176, 236, V, 428; Lamar's real estate, III, 62, IV, pt. 1, 157, 158, 193, 206, VI, 83, 87, 163, 169; latitude and longitude, III, 531, V, 274; laying off, II, 570, III, 11, 40; living conditions, 1839, III, 35; lots, III, 5, 30, 57, 153, 393, V, 297; mail service, III, 145, 306, 432, 440; maps, comments, III, 330, 346, V, 405, 406; meeting of Congress, 1839, III, 35; plan modifications, II, 587; public dinner, III, 497, V, 460; roads from, III, 126, 419; sketches, III, 92, V, 309; streets, naming, III, 40; topography, II, 587. (*See also*, archives, capital, capitol, Waller; Edwin, etc.)
- Austin (sloop of war), III, 409, 412, 414.
- Austin City Gazette, III, 135, 199, 544, IV, pt. 1, 6.
- Austin College, IV, pt. 2, 25.
- Austin, jurisdiction, ayuntamiento, *see* San Felipe de Austin, ayuntamiento.
- Austin, jurisdiction, committee of safety, letters, I, 237, 240, 242.
- Austin, Villa de, *see* San Felipe de Austin.
- Austin & Williams's colony, land titles, I, 204.
- Austin's colonies, III, 264, IV, pt. 1, 224; affairs, I, 201; Austin's visit to, 1821, I, 46; beginnings, I, 54, IV, pt. 1, 208, IV, pt. 1, 209; citizens' meeting, July, 1833, I, 128; Indian difficulties, 1822-34, IV, pt. 1, 245; inhabitants, I, 123, 129; laws governing founding, I, 46; militia, I, 96; municipalities, IV, pt. 2, 241, VI, 498; Navidad, Karankawas and Lavaca settlements, I, 125, 127, 137, 138; popular confusion, I, 137; Williams's efforts to arouse to loyalty to Mexico, I, 131.
- Autry, I, 295.
- Ayers, Lewis, journal, I, 334.
- Ayish Bayou, district, inhabitants, I, 145-7, 148, 419, V, 52.
- Bache, R., letters, I, 451, III, 28, V, 119.
- Badgett, J. B., I, 344.
- Badgett, Jesse, V, 93.
- Bagly, I, 567, V, 152.
- Bahia, La, alcalde, I, 49, 51; battle, 1835, I, 512; commander, I, 44, 49; Long's capture of, 1831, I, 46, 49, 51; Long's surrender, I, 52, III, 280; road, IV, pt. 1, 39. (*See also* Goliad.)
- Bailey, E., letter, II, 518.
- Bailey, Samuel A., letter, III, 409.
- Baker, II, 538.
- Baker, Daniel, letter, IV, pt. 2, 25.
- Baker, Frederick, letter, I, 438.
- Baker, Joseph, historical note from, IV, pt. 1, 258, VI, 300; letter, II, 397.
- Baker, Joseph (?), II, 155, 341.
- Baker, Moseley, I, 236, 246, V, 81, 171; account of defense of Brazos crossing, III, 282; arrest ordered, I, 220; guest of Zavala, 1835, I, 218; letters, I, 445, II, 7.
- Baker, Moseley (?), II, 155, 164, 341.
- Baldwin, John, III, 475.
- Bancks, C. W., letter, III, 352, V, 412.
- "Band of Brothers," III, 106, 108.

- La Bandera* (Matamoros), IV, pt. 1, 191, VI, 143.
- Bank of the United States, II, 257, 408; III, 140, V, 319; connection with Texas finances, II, 274, 284, III, 1, 7, 126, 139, 185, 186; proposed branch in Texas, I, 536, III, 142.
- Banks and banking in Texas, II, 15, 179, 339, 344, 396, III, 6, 302, 533, 541, IV, pt. 2, 34, VI, 177.
- Barataria, I, 287, V, 90.
- Barbey, Theodore, circular, III, 531, V, 475; letter, III, 536.
- Barhydt, D. P., III, 581, V, 488.
- Barhydt, J. P., III, 369; order to, III, 438.
- Baring Brothers, London, II, 399.
- Barker, John, document, I, 579.
- Barkeson, Richard, letter, II, 198, V, 192.
- Barnard, Joseph H., letter, II, 449.
- Barnett, George W., II, 421, V, 238.
- Barnwell, James, II, 202.
- Barragán, I, 245, V, 216.
- Barrera, Agustin, list, IV, pt. 1, 220; VI, 297; notes, IV, pt. 2, 37, VI, 337.
- Barrett, D. C., I, 236, 246.
- Barrios, Jauregui, Jacinto de, I, 1.
- Bartlett, Cocoin, II, 453.
- Barton, II, 587.
- Barton, Dr., V, 247.
- Bartons, I, 131.
- Bassett, V, 219.
- Bassett, C. W., letter, II, 466.
- Bastrop, Baron de, I, 3, 45, III, 228, IV, pt. 2, 235, V, 351, VI, 438.
- Bastrop (town), citizens' meeting, letter, I, 137; Indians near, II, 303, III, 126; public dinners, III, 133, 135, 594, V, 496.
- Bastrop county, citizens, III, 594, V, 496.
- Bates, Thomas, II, 515, V, 268.
- Batts, James S., V, 92.
- Baudin, Charles, II, 523, 561, 567, III, 8, V, 316; visit to Texas, II, 561.
- Baxter, Eli H., I, 547.
- Baylor, John W., II, 43, V, 177.
- Baylor, Robert Emmett Bledsoe, letters, II, 43, 161, 310, III, 539, V, 177, 186, 480.
- Bayne, Griffin, letter, I, 595.
- Baznet, Henry, III, 108.
- Beach, H., & Company, letter, III, 332.
- Beal, search for Long's expedition, III, 228, V, 351.
- Beal, Susan Caroline, and Hill v. Duncan, I, 564, V, 150; v. Smith, I, 564; V, 150.
- Beal, William M., V, 261.
- Beale, II, 192, 492, 513, 516, 524, 534, 552, V, 261.
- Beale, Charles A., colony, I, 198; grant, I, 443, II, 211, V, 195.
- Beale's river grant, V, 195.
- Bean, Peter Ellis, I, 545, 559.
- Beaumont, custom house, II, 563; postal service, II, 491.
- Beck, II, 519.
- Beck, P., III, 505, V, 465.
- Beckum, VI, 111.
- Bedell, George W., letter, I, 435.
- Bee, II, 554.
- Bee, Barnard E., II, 181, 207, 212, 243, 402, 425, 548, 589, III, 471, 505, 520, 530, V, 467; commended to Lamar, I, 542; confirmation as secretary of state, II, 331; deed to, I, 555; expectations regarding a Texas-Mexican treaty, III, 86; hopefulness, III, 33; introduced, I, 403, 415, V, 100; letters, I, 519, II, 217, 218, 255, 314, 500, 519, 547, 549, 569, 579, 583, 594, 598, 599, III, 1, 8-9, 155, 504, 542, 566, V, 484; mission to Mexico, II, 513, III, 18, 28, 35, 125; nomination for vice-president, II, 196; resignation from cabinet, II, 243.
- Bee, Barnard E., Jr., IV, pt. 1, 137, 182, VI, 15.
- Bee, Mrs. Barnard E., III, 155.
- Bee, Hamilton P., IV, pt. 1, 166, 172, 177, 179; letters, IV, pt. 1, 110, 149, 182, 189, VI, 11, 142.
- Bee*, New Orleans, *see* *New Orleans Bee*.
- Beisel, Frederick F., joint petition, III, 590, V, 492.
- Belgium, relations with Texas, III, 82, 354, 425.
- Bell, IV, pt. 1, 236.
- Bell, A., joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 195, VI, 164.
- Bell, Colonel, VI, 162.
- Bell, Peter Hansborough, IV, pt. 1, 198; address, IV, pt. 1, 202, VI, 167; letters, I, 445, III, 497, 592, V, 459, 494; movements, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 187, 193, VI, 162.
- Bell, T., IV, pt. 2, 65, VI, 352; letter, IV, pt. 2, 65, VI, 353.
- Bell, Thomas W., I, 116.
- Bell, William, III, 505, V, 466.
- Bell, William W., III, 505, V, 466.
- Belt, P. F., notes from, I, 545; statement I, 576.
- Benavides, Basilio, VI, 128, 129, 133, 165.
- Benavides, Santos, VI, 128, 129.
- Bennet, Valentine, I, 331, II, 329; letter, II, 328.
- Bennett, Joseph, III, 156.
- Benthuyssen, A. B., I, 592.
- Benton, Thomas Hart, IV, pt. 1, 204, V, 204.

- Berger, Charles J., IV, pt. 1, 208.
- Berrien, John McPherson, I, 44; letter, IV, pt. 1, 126, VI, 15.
- Berry, I, 265.
- Berry, Joseph, III, 198.
- Bevil, John, II, 453.
- Bexar, *see* San Antonio de Bexar.
- Bexar county, boundaries, II, 139.
- Biddle, Clement C., III, 473, V, 452; letter, III, 473.
- Biddle, Nicholas, II, 21, 535; connection with Texas Loan, II, 274, 411, 564, III, 1, 7; resignation, II, 524, 526.
- Big Mush (Cherokee chief), II, 199, 200; invitations to, I, 559, II, 199, 255; talks, I, 238, II, 265; talk to, I, 239.
- Biloxi Indians, II, 49, 199, 223.
- Bino, Antonio, II, 41.
- Bird, John, IV, pt. 1, 99.
- Birdsall, John, II, 37, 225, III, 101, V, 174, 197; letter, III, 369.
- Bivins, Uriah H., letter, III, 417.
- Blackrode, Thomas, letter, III, 556.
- Blair & Vedder, I, 534, V, 130.
- Bliss, Luke, letter, II, 136.
- Bliss, William Wallace Smith, IV, pt. 1, 141, 162, 172, 175, 183, VI, 138; letters, IV, pt. 1, 143, 158, 169, 176, 182, 184, VI, 90, 140.
- Blockade of Texas ports, II, 136, 243; of Vera Cruz, II, 238, 540.
- Blount, Alexander C., II, 48.
- Blount, William, I, 293.
- Boatwright, Thomas, II, 475, V, 256.
- Bocanegra, José María de, IV, pt. 1, 22, 123; circular, IV, pt. 1, 22.
- Bogert, James L., II, 243.
- Bogert & Hawthorne, letter, II, 520.
- Bonds, Cuban, IV, pt. 1, 282; Texas, II, 458, 512, 513, 526, III, 1, 60, 82, 202, 216, 562, V, 483; United States, IV, pt. 2, 95, VI, 365.
- Bonham, I, 293.
- Bonham, James B., II, 49, V, 93, 178.
- Bonham, Milledge S., II, 48, 49, 169, V, 178.
- Bonis, Peter E., letter, I, 319; order to, I, 238.
- Bonnell, George W., I, 293, II, 28.
- Booker, III, 506.
- Booker, Dr., VI, 122, 127.
- Booker, Shields, report, III, 43.
- Boon, Peter, IV, pt. 1, 261.
- Boone, Hamilton R., IV, pt. 1, 101.
- Borden, I, 534.
- Borden, Gail, Jr., I, 125, 242, III, 532, IV, pt. 1, 190, V, 476; letter, II, 204.
- Borden, John P., II, 204, III, 139, 203, 412; letters, II, 473, III, 204, 343, 453, 470, 471, V, 449.
- Border guards, III, 437, 439.
- Borders, William M., letter, I, 561, V, 147.
- Boundaries of Texas, I, 424, II, 403, 416, 425, 570, 595, III, 9, 596, V, 237, 242; advice to convention regarding, I, 318; discussion, 1850, IV, pt. 1, 263; report, 1828, I, 70; survey, 1839, II, 199, 271, III, 151, 212, 296, 299, 334, V, 339; surveyor, II, 9.
- Boundary, Harrisburg-Montgomery, II, 544.
- Bourland, William H., historical note, IV, pt. 1, 235.
- Bowen, William, I, 44.
- Bowie, James, I, 338, III, 271, V, 93, 95, VI, 85; joint letters, I, 245, 247.
- The Bowl ("Col. Bowles," Cherokee chief), I, 239; 317, 352, 559, II, 198, 199, 200, 211, 255, 522, 590, III, 72; last battle, III, 45, 46; letters, II, 199, 200, 277; talks, I, 238, II, 265.
- Bowman, P. F., notes, IV, pt. 1, 238.
- Boyd, Samuel F., letter, IV, pt. 1, 166; petition, joint, IV, pt. 1, 164.
- Boykin, James, letter, III, 302.
- Boylan, James D., letter, II, 531, V, 273.
- Boyle, Andrew A., joint petition, III, 52.
- Brackenridge, H. M., article, I, 424.
- Bradburn, Juan Davis, III, 268; biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; connection with the troubles of 1832, I, 90, 91, 95, 98, 99, 120, 121, 544, 545; difficulties with Morgan and Reed, IV, pt. 1, 298.
- Bradford, Thomas M., letter, II, 292.
- Bradley, John, III, 456.
- Brady, John, colonization scheme, III, 283, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 438.
- Brame, Charles E., III, 428, V, 435.
- Branch, II, 274, III, 375, 411, V, 210, 418.
- Brannum, William Thomas, III, 34, 472.
- Brantley, William, I, 71, V, 31.
- Bravo, VI, 206.
- Bravo* (Mexican armed vessel), I, 274.
- Brazoria, citizens, I, 92, 145; citizens' meetings, I, 118; address, I, 142; proceedings, I, 97, 345; "City Guard," I, 118; committee of vigilance, I, 118, 140; letter, I, 138; committee, standing, of consultation, I, 118; letter, I, 117; disturbances, 1832, I, 96-121, 123-31, 137-43; importations, I, 93; militia, I, 96; journal, I, 116; port, I, 76; press, III, 410, V, 430; public dinner, I, 237.
- Brazoria Gazette*, V, 94.
- Brazoria* (schooner), I, 99, 101, 114, 123, 125, 139, 143.
- Brazos, department of, I, 178, 214.

- Brazos River, crossing, defense, III, 282; falls, IV, pt. 1, 29; port, III, 53.
- Breckenridge, III, 21, 101, V, 294.
- Breedlove, A. W., document, I, 141.
- Brenham, R. F., V, 313.
- Brennan, III, 31.
- Brennan, Thomas H., III, 56, V, 302.
- Brewster, Henry P., III, 410, V, 428, 430; letter, II, 271, V, 208.
- Briant, John S., III, 299.
- Bridge, I, 93.
- Brigham, Asa, I, 137, III, 369; agreement, I, 96; letters, I, 118, II, 280, 333, 336, 422, 459, 558, III, 21, 80, V, 221, 294; report, I, 451.
- Bringas, Juan, I, 539.
- Briscoe, Andrew, II, 576; agreement, I, 202; letter, II, 450.
- Britton, Forbes, IV, pt. 1, 145, 150, VI, 22, 32.
- Broadnax, John H., letter, II, 14, V, 168.
- Brooke, John C., II, 454.
- Brookfield, William, letter, III, 300.
- Brooks, J. S., V, 91.
- Brooks, Julius, V, 169.
- Brookshire, IV, pt. 1, 99.
- Brown & Guion, claim, II, 159, V, 286; letter, II, 159.
- Brown, Abia, I, 2, V, 5.
- Brown, David Paul, III, 101; letter, III, 17, V, 290.
- Brown, Emmeline C. Handy, letters, II, 565, III, 199, 387, V, 329, 424.
- Brown, Henry S., division, I, 110.
- Brown, J. S., I, 98; letter, I, 99.
- Brown, Jeremiah, I, 437, V, 170.
- Brown, John, V, 91.
- Brown, L. B., report, III, 44.
- Brown, Mary, *see* Austin, Maria Brown.
- Brown, R., I, 441, V, 118.
- Brown, Reuben R., I, 569, IV, pt. 1, 13, 16, V, 155; historical note, III, 272, V, 367; letter, III, 543, V, 482.
- Brown, Robert C., letter, I, 453.
- Brown, Samuel T., historical notes, II, 8-12.
- Brown, William, joint letter, I, 139.
- Browne, John, letter, III, 106.
- Brutus* (Texas brig of war), II, 208, IV, pt. 1, 103, 104, VI, 7.
- Bryan, Emily Austin, I, 45.
- Bryan, Guy Morrison, II, 206, V, 193.
- Bryan, James, I, 45.
- Bryan, Moses Austin, II, 400, 573.
- Bryan, William, II, 331, III, 332, 386, 470, 544, IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 449, 502; letters, II, 500, 524, III, 589, V, 272.
- Bryant, III, 428, V, 435.
- Buache, Philippe, chart, comment, IV, pt. 1, 253, VI, 298.
- Bucarely y Ursua, Antonio, letter, I, 1.
- Buchanan, IV, pt. 1, 31.
- Buchanan, Green B., II, 163, IV, pt. 2, 38, 214, V, 187, 193; documents, IV, pt. 2, 66, 76, 77; letters, IV, pt. 1, 300; messages, IV, pt. 2, 78, 188.
- Buckley, II, 509, V, 266.
- Buckley, C. W., II, 158; letter, II, 238, V, 200.
- Buckner, Aylett C., I, 117, IV, pt. 1, 254; biography, I, 2; letter, I, 95.
- Buentello, Tomás, report, I, 49.
- Buffalo Bayou, III, 214, IV, pt. 1, 124.
- Buford, Jefferson, III, 250.
- Buford, Thomas Y., letter, I, 415, V, 166.
- Bugg, II, 211, V, 194.
- Bugg, Anselm, letters, II, 181, 211, III, 481, V, 190, 194.
- Bull, Jesse L., I, 453.
- Bulletin*, II, 240, V, 202.
- Bunker, Elihu S., II, 243.
- Burdgess, Captain, V, 203.
- Burdgess, John, colonization scheme, II, 327; letter, II, 327.
- Burgess, Charles H., III, 377, V, 419.
- Burk, David, letter, IV, pt. 1, 127, VI, 16.
- Burke, D. N., V, 92.
- Burke, James, letters, II, 424, III, 60, V, 241, 313.
- Burke, John R., III, 330, V, 404.
- Burleson, Edward, I, 272, V, 95, 98; autobiography, IV, pt. 1, 46; brigade, III, 43; characteristics, I, 272; II, 530; conduct, *December, 1835*, IV, pt. 1, 47, V, 513; elected commander-in-chief, I, 259; letters, II, 49, 335, 515, III, 18, 98, 320, 531; orders, II, 543; sketch, IV, pt. 1, 39.
- Burlesons, I, 131.
- Burnet, David G., I, 349, 353, 417, 438, III, 31, 56, 336, 488, 507-9, IV, pt. 1, 165, 215, 287, IV, pt. 2, 57, V, 5, 259, 302, 459, VI, 296, 347; *ad interim* appointment, III, 3-4, 299, 599; candidacy and campaigns, 1838, II, 50, 139, 168, 196, 208, 217, 218, V, 182; 1841, III, 532, 557, 560, 562, 566, V, 476; colony, I, 261, II, 310; document, I, 404; estimates of, II, 37, 408, III, 190, IV, pt. 1, 5, V, 326; home surroundings, IV, pt. 1, 204; Houston's reply to, 1855, IV, pt. 2, 26; letters, I, 403, 405, 409, 410-14, II, 46, 267, 414, 421, III, 4, 60, 306, IV, pt. 1, 204, IV, pt. 2, 24, 27, 37, 53, 234, V, 235, 238, VI, 340; memorandum, IV, pt. 1, 253; message, I, 453, (cited, I, 491).
- Burnett, William D., I, 90.
- Burnley, Albert T., III, 185, 186, 380, 429, 497, 506, 507, 517, V, 459; letters, III, 201, 209, 383, 488, V, 335,

- 459; services as loan agent, II, 243, 274, 373, 396, 411, 435, III, 1, 7, 35, 70, 126, 216, 365, V, 226.
- Burr, A. P., letter, II, 30, V, 171.
- Burton, Isaac W., II, 196, 293, 294, 407, 408, 515, III, 372, V, 171, 235; journal, III, 287; letter, II, 208.
- Bussey, John B., I, 557.
- Bustamante, Anastacio, III, 264; biography, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 186, 212, 216, 303.
- Butler, III, 79.
- Butler, Anthony, biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; letter, II, 333.
- Butler, Pickens, I, 579.
- Butler, Pierce M., IV, pt. 2, 59; letters, II, 48, 569.
- Byrne, William, III, 342, V, 411; commission, III, 5; letter, III, 463; oath of office, III, 391.
- Cabinet of Texas, 1836-41, I, 387, 423, II, 396, 465, 480, 553, 573, 576, III, 3-4, 412, V, 109; authorization for calling militia, III, 546; changes, II, 34; confirmations, II, 331; letter to, I, 370; quandary, 1837, I, 589; suggestions for, II, 208, 214, 267, 268, 273, 274, 314, V, 204, 209, 212; treaties with Santa Anna, I, 381, 382.
- Caddo Indians, I, 592, II, 211, 256, 296; invitation to, I, 559; machinations, I, 572, II, 307; operations against, 1838-9, II, 298, 302, 308, 404-6; removal desired, II, 307, 308.
- Cade, Joel T., II, 498.
- Cadle, Joseph, letter, I, 403.
- Cady, Rangers, IV, pt. 1, 135.
- Cage, Benjamin F., III, 505, V, 465.
- Cahawba Press*, I, 53, V, 11.
- Calava, Gabriel, document, IV, pt. 1, 135, VI, 20.
- Caldwell, II, 513.
- Caldwell, Abner, V, 170.
- Caldwell, James F., letter, I, 114.
- Caldwell, Joseph, I, 100.
- Caldwell, Matthew, II, 402, 468.
- Caldwell, Pinckney, II, 474, V, 166, 255.
- Calhoun, J., letter, II, 158.
- Calhoun, John Caldwell, II, 138, 257, IV, pt. 1, 108, 204, V, 179.
- Calleja, VI, 182, 204, 211.
- Callonet, Felix C., II, 159.
- Callender, III, 505, V, 466.
- Calvit, S., I, 98.
- Camack, James, letter, III, 30.
- Cameron, VI, 99.
- Campbell, III, 24.
- Campbell, II, 547.
- Campbell, A., II, 452.
- Campbell, D. H., letter, II, 263.
- Campbell, David, letter, II, 483, V, 256.
- Campbell, James, biography, IV, pt. 2, 18.
- Campbell, John A., IV, pt. 1, 262, VI, 310.
- Campbell, John B., V, 256.
- Campbell, R. C., letter, III, 480, V, 456.
- Camp-meeting, Independence, III, 590, V, 493.
- Campos, Isidro, I, 539.
- Canal, II, 181; Nicaraguan policy, IV, pt. 2, 217.
- Canal, transcontinental, IV, pt. 1, 261, IV, pt. 2, 147, 217. *See* interoceanic canal.
- Canales, Antonio, I, 313, 316, II, 389, III, 355, 375, 391, 392, 424, V, 403, 413, 418, 426, VI, 97; address, III, 330; letters, II, 335, III, 386, 397, 423, V, 223, 424, 427; movements, IV, pt. 2, 70; order, IV, pt. 1, 167.
- Canalizo, Valentin, IV, pt. 1, 169, VI, 103.
- Cannon; Austin, III, 351; Gonzales, I, 240; from San Felipe, I, 123, 125; San Jacinto ("Twin Sisters"), III, 110, V, 311.
- Capen, Nahum, letter, III, 510.
- Capital of Texas, IV, pt. 1, 52; permanent, II, 419, 421, 435, 436, 437, 468, 513, 517, 531, 571, III, 11, 74, 120, 133, V, 238, 244, 254, 268, 269, 273; removal, II, 441, III, 437, V, 438.
- Capitol, Austin, ball, IV, pt. 1, 202, VI, 168; party, III, 568, V, 487; Houston, dinner, II, 495.
- Capt *und Comp.*, Louis, III, 410, V, 428.
- Carbajal, José María, I, 86, 204, III, 60, V, 49, 304.
- Carbajal, José M. J., letter, III, 424, V, 49, 304, VI, 100.
- Cárdenas, J. Miguel, joint letter, IV, pt. 2, 210, VI, 418.
- Cárdenas, Jesús, III, 381, 391, V, 426, VI, 97, 115, 121; letter, III, 364.
- Careses (?) Indians, VI, 105, 128.
- Carlos's ranch, III, 106.
- Carper, William M., certificate, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 8.
- Carradine, III, 198, V, 328.
- Carson, Samuel P., letter, I, 508.
- Carter, Nicholas, letter, II, 268, V, 204.
- Carter, Thomas Whineup, V, 204.
- Casa Yrujo, Marqués de, I, 30.
- Casas, Juan Bautista de las, IV, pt. 1, 258; biography, IV, pt. 2, 71; execution, I, 4; insurrection, III, 278; revolutionary career, III, 284, V, 383.
- Case, Joel T., letter, III, 299.
- Case, Uriah F., III, 158, 423.
- Cass, Lewis, I, 422, II, 212, IV, pt. 2, 66, 76-77, 96-100, 136, 142, 146, 174, 176, 182, 215, 229-232, 233, VI, 430; document, IV, pt. 2, 68; instructions, IV, pt. 2, 68; letters, IV, pt. 2, 42, 127, 151, VI, 367; speech, IV, pt. 2, 36.

- Casteñada, V, 47.
 Casteñada, Carlos E., V, 3.
 Castro, Ygnacio, V, 91.
 Castro (Lipan chief), II, 585, III, 559.
 Cater, H. W., letters, II, 45, III, 6, V, 178.
 Catlett, Fairfax, II, 396, 414.
 Cautry, J. W., letter, II, 543.
 Cayce, Thomas I., 557; letters, I, 591, 596, V, 163, 165.
 Cazneau, J. M. (Mrs. William Leslie), IV, pt. 1, 144, IV, pt. 2, 55, 184, VI, 22, 345, 389; letters, IV, pt. 2, 129, 135, 176, 203, 206.
 Cazneau, William Leslie, I, 408, III, 473, IV, pt. 1, 106, 144, 204, IV, pt. 2, 37, 176, VI, 22, 340; letters, III, 495, IV, pt. 2, 73.
 Cazo, Don Juan Garcia, VI, 338.
 Central America, destiny, IV, pt. 2, 195, VI, 409; foreign relations, IV, pt. 2, 138, 195, VI, 409; intervention opposed, IV, pt. 1, 206, 207, 208, VI, 171-181; policy, IV, pt. 2, 195, VI, 409; political history, IV, pt. 2, 138; question, IV, pt. 2, 36, 73, 201, VI, 416; United States' attitude toward, IV, pt. 2, 186, VI, 393.
 Centralists of Mexico, III, 321, 375, 378, 423, 424.
 Chaddick, Martin, IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 140.
 Chadwick, J. M., V, 91, 92.
 Chalmers, John G., III, 527, 555, 557, 586, IV, pt. 1, 157, VI, 83; letter, III, 587.
 Chalmers, Mrs. John G., III, 555, 557.
 Chambers, Thomas Jefferson, I, 246, 490.
Champ d'Asile, I, 78, V, 46.
 Chandy, II, 524, V, 272.
 Channing, William Ellery, II, 8.
 Chapman, R. M., letter, II, 13.
 Chappell, IV, pt. 1, 262, VI, 310.
 Chappell, A. H., II, 330, V, 220.
Charleston (armed steamed brig), II, 274, 492, 535, V, 261. (*See also Zavala.*)
 Chenoweth, John, I, 414; letter, I, 410.
 Cherokee Indians, II, 196, III, 258; agent to, II, 199, 200; battle, *July 16, 1839*, III, 45-7; campaign against, *July, 1839*, III, 31, 475; complicity in Cordova's rebellion, II, 522, 590; lands, II, 211, III, 300, 372, 476, IV, pt. 2, 96, V, 455; Miracle's mission to, I, 572, II, 307; policy of expulsion, II, 590; intertribal and Mexican relations, II, 590, III, 11; relations with Texas, I, 317, 352, II, 293, 590; removal desired, II, 308; settlement in East Texas, II, 310; talks to, I, 238, 239, II, 198, 199; treaty with Mexico cited, I, 534; with Texas, I, 352, 559, II, 198; uneasiness, II, 199, 200.
Cherokee Phoenix, I, 71, V, 30.
 Cheves, Langdon, III, 364, V, 414.
 Cheshier, V, 95.
 Chihuahua, presidential companies, I, 57; road to, IV, pt. 1, 202.
 Childers, G., letter, III, 430.
 Childers, James W. L., letter, II, 519.
 Childress, George C., address, I, 253; letter, III, 535, V, 478.
 Childress, N., letter, II, 279, V, 213.
 Chinn, R. Holmes, letter, II, 372, 492, III, 590, V, 262, 264, 490.
 Choctaw Indians, II, 308.
 Cholera, V, 53; in New Orleans, VI, 169.
 Chriesman, Horatio, documents, I, 120, 123, 128, 129.
 Christy, William, letters, I, 415, 550.
Chronicle (Nacogdoches), II, 171, 173.
 Cissany (Caddo chief), II, 308.
Civilian and City Gazette (Galveston), II, 498, IV, pt. 2, 26, 28.
 Claims, against Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 79, 80, 101-4, 173, 188, 215, VI, 423; against Texas, I, 572, II, 425, III, 148, 214, 418, V, 157.
 Clark, II, 171.
 Clark, III, 222, V, 342.
 Clark, Henry, I, 423, V, 106.
 Clark, Mrs. Henry, I, 423, V, 106.
 Clark, James, I, 54.
 Clark, James, letter, I, 423, V, 106.
 Clark, John, III, 342, 406.
 Clark, Lewis, letter, I, 438.
 Clark, William, IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 141.
 Clark, Charles I., document, II, 14, V, 170.
 Clay, Edwin R., statement, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 31.
 Clay, Henry, I, 568, II, 28, V, 153; compromise bill, comment, IV, pt. 1, 262; record, II, 257; strictures on letter to, II, 8.
 Clay, J. M., IV, pt. 1, 146, 152, VI, 24, 36; letter, IV, pt. 1, 152, VI, 36.
 Clay, Watkins, receipt, II, 424.
 Clayton, John, IV, pt. 2, 164, VI, 382; treaty negotiated by, IV, pt. 1, 261.
 Clements, Abner L., letter, III, 198.
 Cleveland, Jesse F., letter, III, 504, V, 464.
 Clysophic Society of the College of New Jersey, III, 203, V, 336.
 Clygatt (?), A. G., letter, II, 576.
 Coahuila, disturbances, *1834-5*, III, 238, IV, pt. 1, 242; governor, I, 1; revolution, *1834-40*, II, 335, III, 321, 364, IV, pt. 1, 181, V, 223; Coahuila and Texas, I, 78; capital, I, 523, V, 127; charges of smuggling, I, 190; decrees, I, 87; citation and comment, I, 204,

- III, 287, V, 397; governors, III, 594; presidential companies, I, 60; under constitution of 1824, I, 523, V, 127.
- Coahuila, Nuevo León and Texas, provincial deputies, I, 54.
- Coast, defense, I, 319; survey, III, 521, 532, V, 476.
- Cocke, III, 86.
- Cocke (Cox?), J. D., II, 13, V, 215; letter, II, 23; political attitude, II, 483.
- Coffee, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 20.
- Coker, Arlin, V, 169.
- Cole, J. L., letters, IV, pt. 2, 138, 148.
- Cole, James P., III, 187, V, 325; letters, II, 524, 576.
- Coleburn, II, 211, V, 195, 215.
- Coleman, IV, pt. 2, 24, 26.
- Coleman, A., historical note, IV, pt. 1, 236.
- Colerac's company, V, 205.
- Coles, John P., letters, I, 236, II, 495, V, 81, 263.
- College Hill (Austin), III, 473.
- Collins, I, 423, V, 106.
- Collinsworth, George M., III, 502; letters, I, 138, 243, II, 404, V, 234; movements, I, 244, V, 85.
- Collinsworth, George M. (?), historical note, IV, pt. 1, 259.
- Collinsworth, James, I, 405, 488, 502, 504, 505, V, 170; letter, 506.
- Colonies, English, III, 214; French, II, 588, III, 110; German, II, 460, III, 19, 110, 199, V, 331; Scotch, II, 327.
- Colonization, Austin's plans, I, 3; contract, I, 46; contract cited, III, 521, V, 471; early efforts of foreigners, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 435; laws of Mexico, I, 46, 236, III, 256, V, 81; plans, III, 103; society, II, 460.
- Colorado and Red River Land Company, II, 211, V, 195.
- Colorado Navigation Company, III, 198.
- Colorado River, country, inhabitants, II, 587; improvement and navigation, II, 304, 305; Indian difficulties of early settlers, IV, pt. 1, 215; Indians near, II, 303, IV, pt. 1, 191, 215; land, I, 591, 596, III, 198, V, 163, 165; settlements, I, 45, 137, IV, pt. 1, 39, 215; Texan force on, 1836, IV, pt. 2, 30; valley, II, 437.
- Colquhoun, Angus, I, 489, V, 124.
- Colquitt's, V, 161.
- Columbia, citizens' meeting, call, I, 219; resolutions, I, 228; jurisdiction, address, I, 223; committee of safety and correspondence, call, I, 233; proceedings, I, 229; nomination meeting, 1838, II, 154; protection, *April, 1836*, III, 272.
- Columbia* (steam packet), II, 175; capture, III, 237, 250, V, 351, 357.
- Columbia Telegraph*, I, 491.
- Columbus Enquirer*, I, 70, 71, 165, 560, 563, II, 479, V, 29, 30, 31, 66, 67, 144; sale, I, 575, II, 271, V, 160, 207.
- Columbus* (schooner), V, 91.
- Colutta (Koasati councilor), talk, III, 16.
- Comanche Indians, I, 401, 475, III, 556, V, 255; campaigns against, 1839-40, II, 437, 473, III, 92, 444, V, 255, 439; captives, III, 439, 470, V, 451; character, II, 194; court adjourned to fight, II, 272; customs and characteristics, IV, pt. 1, 221; depredations, II, 371, III, 66; fear of, II, 183, IV, pt. 1, 198; fight on Little River, 1839, IV, pt. 1, 99; fight with Shawnees, III, 460; friendliness, II, 306; good faith, I, 548; hostilities in and near Bexar, 1836-41, IV, pt. 1, 229.
- Commercial Intelligence*, II, 225, III, 31, V, 197, 297.
- Commissioners of the Federalists, III, 345; of Texas to the United States, I, 344 (Austin), 354, (Wharton), 419, 524.
- Comptroller of Texas, report, 1836, I, 451.
- Concepción (mission), battle, I, 247, III, 253; commemoration ball, I, 576.
- Condelle, V, 98.
- Condert, IV, pt. 1, 286-7.
- Congress of Coahuila and Texas, I, 512; delegates, III, 255.
- Congress of Mexico, I, 4; dissolution, 1834, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 301.
- Congress of Nicaragua, IV, pt. 1, 206, 284, VI, 314, 325.
- Congress of Texas: first, 1836-7, I, 548, inaction, I, 556, message to, I, 453; second, 1837-8, I, 595, act, III, 158, canal action, II, 181, V, 190, quandary, I, 589; third, 1838-9, II, 402, acts, II, 372, 387, 425, candidates, II, 203, 207, V, 194, Houston's conduct toward, II, 408, legislation, suggestions for, II, 274, 294, 295, 301, 308, 339, messages to, II, 344, 346, 389, 402, petitions to, II, 304, 305, 372, V, 225, resolution, cited, II, 308; fourth, 1839-40, II, 590, III, 126, act submitted to Supreme Court, III, 308, 310, candidates, III, 24, Houston party, III, 24, meeting at Austin, 1839, III, 35, messages to, III, 159, 188, 207, 228, III, 296, 303, 311, 315, 317, V, 350; fifth, 1840-1, III, 537, candidates, III, 392, 431, 439, V, 437, elections, III, 432, 437, V, 438, criticized, III, 498, extra session discussed, III,

- 517, 530, legislation, III, 496, messages to, III, 464, 471; sixth, 1841-2, candidates, III, 533, 557, Houston party in campaign for, III, 560, message to, III, 592, V, 494; seventh, 1842-3, candidates, IV, pt. 1, 5; ninth, 1844-5, IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 5.
- Consulates of Texas: Amsterdam, III, 508; Boston, II, 159, 456, III, 41, V, 298; Charleston, II, 257; Hull, III, 515; Liverpool, II, 374, III, 508, 515; Marseilles, III, 424, V, 434; Mississippi Valley towns, III, 13; New Orleans, II, 303, 333, 334, V, 221; New York, II, 396, 464, III, 567, V, 485; Paris, III, 536; Philadelphia, III, 21, 112, 473, V, 294, 452; Savannah, II, 140, 257, 286, III, 424, V, 241; Vicksburg, III, 13.
- Consuls of the United States to Texas, II, 36.
- Consultation, 1835, I, 219, 233, 237, 245; advice to, I, 251, 252; calls for, I, 222, 223; declaration of causes, I, 248; proceedings, first day, I, 248.
- Convention, 1836, I, 301, 302, 318, 344, IV, pt. 1, 259; campaign for, I, 302; declaration of independence, I, 344; delegates, I, 318; resolution, I, 344; suggestions to, I, 318.
- Convention, Western, proposed, IV, pt. 1, 19.
- Cook, Kerlin, letter, I, 569, V, 155.
- Cooke, Louis P., III, 63, 96, 108, 141, 314, 449, V, 297; account, III, 389; appointment as secretary of the navy, III, 358; letters, III, 34, 44, 144, 145, 362, 363, 406, 448, 449, 458; order, III, 409.
- Cooke, William G., III, 183, 497, 516, V, 92, 460; historical notes, IV, pt. 1, 42; letters, III, 158, 496, IV, pt. 1, 179; order, II, 328.
- Cooper, Thomas, II, 543, 569, 572.
- Cooper, Thomas Priestly, II, 543, 569, 572.
- Cópano, I, 244, 302, V, 85.
- Cópano Bay, Lamar's land on, II, 174, 202, III, 392, 506, V, 467; Lamar's town site on, II, 492, 516, 534, V, 261; protection, III, 572.
- Córdova, Vicente, II, 205, 590; rebellion, II, 49, 522, III, 375, 381.
- Corpus Christi, III, 562; early history, IV, pt. 1, 211-4; road from, IV, pt. 1, 202.
- Correo (steamboat), II, 452, III, 285, V, 251, 384.
- El Correo Atlantico*, I, 399, II, 143.
- Correo del Bravo del Norte*, prospectus, IV, pt. 1, 170, V, 403.
- Cortazar, VI, 206, 216.
- Corzine, Shelby, II, 441, 448, 452, V, 250, 251; death certificate, II, 440.
- Cos, Martin Perfecto de, I, 199, 220, 551, V, 89, 98; letters, I, 198, 244; order, I, 221; plans, I, 236, 237; release asked, I, 539.
- Cosgrove, John M., II, 456.
- Costly, Michael, I, 573, 574, II, 542.
- Cotten, Godwin Brown, I, 86.
- Cotton, circular, comment, III, 101; price, 1857, IV, pt. 2, 57; seed, V, 318.
- Council, general ("permanent"), resolutions, I, 246.
- Council, general (provisional), I, 261, 263, 295, 297, 301, 302, 309, 310, 313, 314, 317, 318, 319, 331, 332, 338, 341, 344; address, 1835, I, 294; committee report to, I, 293, 294; membership, I, 295; message to, I, 297; quarrel with Smith, I, 293, 294, 297, 298, 301, 302-7, 308-10, 344; resolutions, I, 263, 297.
- Counterfeit money, III, 521.
- Counterfeiters, IV, pt. 1, 215, VI, 296.
- Courier and Enquirer* (New York), I, 417, V, 104.
- Courrier des Etats-Unis*, III, 192, V, 327.
- Cow Bayou people, I, 123.
- Cowboys, VI, 99.
- Cowles, J., letter, II, 269, V, 207.
- Crane, Ambrose, III, 541, V, 481.
- Crawford* (schooner), V, 80.
- Crawford & Shepherd, letter, III, 450, V, 443.
- Crawford, A. C., IV, pt. 1, 106.
- Crawford, Joel (?), letter, I, 54.
- Crawford, John, certificate, II, 375.
- Crawford, Joseph T., I, 562.
- Credit of Texas, I, 482, 583.
- Creek Indians, I, 76, 79, 84, 419, 436, 588, II, 14, 477, III, 103, V, 111, 168; commission, letters, I, 79-86.
- Creery, John, letter, III, 444, V, 440.
- Creery, Joseph, III, 444, V, 440.
- Crisp, Dowling, II, 337.
- Criswell, John, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 21.
- Crittenden, I, 452, V, 120.
- Crittenden, Alexander P., III, 470, V, 450.
- Crocheron, Henry, joint letter, III, 133.
- Crockett, David, I, 295.
- Crockett, G. F. H., letter, III, 48.
- Crolley, Hugh, joint petition, II, 304.
- Cromlin, Charles, II, 501.
- Cropper, Elisha G., III, 42, V, 300; letter, III, 20, V, 290.
- Crops, 1840, III, 392, 437, V, 438.
- Crosby, S., VI, 168.
- Crossman, G. H., IV, pt. 1, 146, 147, 148, 155, 156, VI, 24, 25, 28, 69, 72.

- Cross timbers, campaign, 1838, II, 298.
 Crowell, Col., I, 71, 79, 84, V, 30.
 Cruger & Moore, receipt, I, 579.
 Cuba, direct trade, III, 445; filibustering expedition, 1850, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 310; plan for liberating, IV, pt. 1, 284; revolution, 1851, IV, pt. 1, 282, 284, VI, 314, 325; trade, III, 523.
 Cuba (steam packet), II, 243, 520, III, 23, 35.
 Cuernavaca, plan of, I, 166-9.
 Cullen, E. W., II, 452, 534; letters, I, 569, 577, II, 441, 446, 447, 454, 498, 511, III, 24, 108, 199, V, 250.
 Cullen, W. W., letter, III, 21.
 Cummins, I, 146.
 Cunningham, L. C., III, 322, V, 402.
 Currency of Texas, I, 76, II, 159, 274, 441, 491, 513, 523, III, 33, 72, 96, 348, 366, 386, 432, 485, 562, 590, V, 423, 483, 491; depreciation, III, 112; fluctuation, III, 587.
 Curry, Jabez, letter, I, 567, V, 152.
 Curtis, Samuel R., letter, IV, pt. 1, 159, VI, 91.
 Cushatta, Cushatties, *see* Koasati.
 Custom house: Aransas, II, 555; Beaumont, II, 563; Galveston, II, 164, 398, 404, 415, III, 124, 154, 191, 222, 506, 590, IV, pt. 2, 37, V, 232, 233, 467, 491; Quintana, II, 400.
 Customs, administration, III, 511; bonding, III, 112; collectorships: Aransas, II, 307, V, 218; Brazos District, II, 256, V, 204; Galveston, I, 86, 148, II, 398, III, 285, IV, pt. 1, 106, 190, 204, IV, pt. 2, 38, V, 232, 386, VI, 341; Matagorda, II, 237, 333, V, 198; San Augustine, II, 279, III, 154; Velasco, II, 343; disputes over, 1832?, IV, pt. 1, 298; officers, salaries, III, 423, V, 430.
 Daingerfield, William Henry, II, 337, III, 101, 140, 498, 542, V, 319; letters, II, 44, III, 523.
 Dalmatie, Maréchal Soult, Duc de, III, 104; letter, III, 105.
 Dalton, N., V, 91.
 Dana, Henry B., letter, I, 578, V, 161.
 Dance, Henry C., historical note, I, 368, V, 95.
 Darling, E. C., letter, III, 149, V, 320.
 Dashiell, William C. V., III, 56, V, 302.
 Davenport, Samuel, VI, 148.
 Davidson, Richard O., II, 206, V, 192.
 Dávila, VI, 219.
 Dávila, Gregorio García, *see* García Dávila, Gregorio.
 Davis, I, 34.
 Davis, II, 190.
 Davis, A. B., letter, II, 434, V, 243.
 Davis, Alexander M., II, 333.
 Davis, Charles H., agreement, IV, pt. 2, 38, 206.
 Davis, D. L., II, 543.
 Davis, G. W., letter, I, 240.
 Davis, John M. B., letter, III, 55, V, 302.
 Davis, Thomas C., IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 497; joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 18, V, 497.
 Dawson, Frederick, II, 411, 578, III, 144, 458; letter, III, 202.
 Dawson, John B., letters, II, 243, 403, III, 21.
 Dawson, William C., letters, II, 330, 435, III, 437.
 De Bland, III, 321, V, 401.
 De Bland, Colin, letter, I, 507.
 De Bray, Xavier B., historical notes, III, 278-82, V, 6; translations, I, 46-51.
 De Buys, William, II, 519.
 De Castro ("General," Lipan chief), II, 43.
 De Cordova, Jacob, biographical sketch by, IV, pt. 2, 189; joint circular, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 81; letter, III, 410.
 De Cordova, P., joint circular, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 81.
 Decree of April 6, 1830, comment I, 93; repeal of Art. 11, I, 160, 163.
 Decrow case, I, 160, V, 52.
 Deen, C., certificate, II, 440.
 Delap, John, III, 456, 461, V, 445.
 Delaware Indians, I, 559, II, 211.
 Delesdernie, George H., certificate, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 8.
 Delfasse, letter, I, 33.
 Delgado, IV, pt. 1, 258.
 Delgado, Rafael, certificate, II, 35; decree, I, 246; order, I, 238.
 De León, Martin, colony, III, 255, 264, V, 365.
 De Morse, Charles, letters, III, 364, 385.
 Denman, Charles L., III, 452; letter, III, 453.
 Despallier, VI, 145.
 DeWitt, III, 218.
 DeWitt, Green, colony, III, 254, 264.
 Dexter, joint letter, III, 354.
 Dexter, P. B., III, 135.
 Dexter, Thomas A., II, 456.
 Dibble, E. E., joint claim, I, 582, 583, II, 423.
 Dillard, Thomas, III, 304.
 Dimitt, Philip, III, 589; capture, III, 546, 592, V, 494; letters, I, 244, 245, III, 345, 369, V, 85, 87, 416; release, III, 555, 568.
 Dimon, Samuel, letter, III, 566.
 Dinsmore, Silas, III, 456, V, 445.
 Diplomatic correspondence of the Republic of Texas, cited, I, 534, 572, II, 307.

- Direct trade, Cuban, III, 445; French, III, 536; Southern movement for, II, 257, 408; Texan opportunity for, II, 408.
- Dixon, Francis H., III, 21.
- Doby, II, 37, V, 174.
- Docker, William, II, 374, 375.
- Doom, Randolph C., II, 563, III, 123, V, 312; letters, III, 133, IV, pt. 1, 41, V, 314.
- Dor, John M., deposition, III, 117.
- Doswell & Adams, V, 311.
- Doswell, J. Temple, III, 153, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 505; letters, III, 527, 531, V, 472.
- Douglass, Kelsey H., II, 268, III, 458; letters, III, 45, 46; note, II, 496; orders, III, 54, 55, 123.
- Douglass, Kelsey, H.?, II, 172, 191, 208, 404.
- Douglass, Samuel C., letters, II, 41, 224, V, 176.
- Doyle, Nimrod, II, 477.
- Doyle, Percy W., IV, pt. 1, 22, 123; letter, IV, pt. 1, 22.
- Drake, Daniel, III, 110, V, 311.
- Drake, K. R., IV, pt. 1, 169, VI, 93.
- Dryden, William G., III, 361, 556.
- Dryden, W. G., letter, III, 386, V, 423.
- Duclor, Francisco M. y, *see* M. y Duclor, Francisco.
- Duffield, W. C., joint petition, II, 476; letter, II, 268.
- Duke, Thomas Marshall, I, 117, II, 237, 333, 391, V, 198.
- Duncan, James E., Beall and Hill v., I, 564, V, 150.
- Dunham, George W., letters, II, 211, 296, V, 195, 215.
- Dunlap, Richard G., II, 156, 374, 465, 471, 573, III, 14, 35, 86, 96, 131, 202, 333, 342, V, 244, 252, 276, 408; letters, II, 403, 466, 497, 500, 509, 513, III, 20, 120, 142, 213, 330, V, 265, 295, 404.
- Du Pre, Daniel, letter, III, 142, V, 319.
- Dupree, George, letter, III, 147.
- Duran, VI, 187.
- Durango* (brig), III, 34.
- Durham, George I., letter, IV, pt. 2, 16.
- Durocher, C. L., V, 171.
- Durst, James H., letter, III, 514.
- Durst, John?, II, 172, III, 268.
- Duval, John Crittenden, IV, pt. 1, 135; escape from Goliad, II, 8.
- Duval, Thomas H., letter, IV, pt. 1, 135.
- Duval's company, V, 92.
- Dwyer, VI, 164.
- Dyer, John H., II, 298, 308; letter, II, 256.
- Earle, John T., I, 507.
- Early, Frank S., letter, IV, pt. 1, 135, VI, 20.
- Eastland, N. W., letter, II, 444, V, 439.
- Eaton, John Henry, I, 79.
- Eberly, I, 244, V, 85, VI, 172.
- Eberly, Mrs., IV, pt. 1, 254-8.
- Eckly, Lem, joint letter, I, 561, V, 148.
- Eddy, Zimri O. W., letter, III, 200, V, 332.
- Eden, Catherine, letters, II, 421, 565, V, 238.
- Eden, John, II, 263.
- Edmondson, Bud, VI, 311.
- Edmondston, James, letters, IV, pt. 2, 67, 68, VI, 354.
- Edmunds, P., letter, IV, pt. 1, 28.
- Edson, joint letter, II, 538, 561, V, 276, 282.
- Education, II, 391, V, 199; in Texas, I, 567, 570, II, 13, 30, 297, 480, III, 313, IV, pt. 2, 237. (*See also* schools.)
- Edwards, letter, I, 467.
- Edwards, Benjamin W., proclamation, I, 66, VI, 185.
- Edwards, Hayden, I, 68, III, 258, VI, 185.
- Edwards, Monroe, letters, I, 91, II, 387.
- Elanie (Shawnee chief), II, 295.
- Eldredge, Joseph C., letters, III, 344, 459, V, 447.
- Eldridge, John W., joint letter, II, 225.
- Eldridge, John W., Jr., document, II, 419.
- Elections, Texas: 1836, I, 449; 1838, II, 216-8, 222-4; 1839, III, 94-6; 1841, III, 568, V, 487; 1846, IV, pt. 1, 126, 130, 149, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 32; 1847, IV, pt. 1, 171, 172-5.
- Elguezabal, Juan Bautista de, letter, I, 7.
- Elisondo, V, 28, VI, 205, 210, 339.
- Elizabeth* (schooner), I, 101.
- Elliott, IV, pt. 1, 108, VI, 9.
- Elliott, Katherine, VI, 197, 314, 418.
- Ellis, N. W., letter, II, 21, V, 170.
- Ellis, Powhatan, II, 513, 573.
- Ellis, Samuel, II, 464, 500, 502, 518.
- Ellison, Samuel, III, 514, V, 470.
- Elys, II, 513.
- Immigration to Texas, I, 423, III, 142, 154, 417, 422, IV, pt. 2, 13, V, 105, 323; direction, II, 441; encouragement, III, 415, 536; influence of financial panic of 1839, II, 528.
- Emison?, R. S.?, letter, III, 250.
- Empresario, claims, III, 356; contracts, I, 87; fees, I, 204; scrip, I, 443, III, 406.
- England, attitude toward Texas and slavery, II, 23; commercial agreement with Texas, II, 283; demands

- against Texas, III, 303; distrust of, III, 345, 381; financial condition, 1839, III, 186; Parliament, debates on Texas and Mexico, 1836, I, 436, V, 112; popular feeling against in Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 206; relations with Texas, II, 243, III, 387, 530, 534, 543; war with the United States threatened, II, 21-3.
- English, George, III, 54.
- "English Bill," III, 329, V, 404.
- Erath, George B., historical note, IV, pt. 1, 31.
- Ernst, Fritz, letter, III, 561.
- Escoseses*, VI, 246.
- Evans, John S., letters, II, 240, 583, III, 31, 42, 135, V, 202, 287, 297, 300, 315; Republic v., III, 502, V, 463.
- Evans, M. F. T., letter, II, 307, V, 218.
- Evans, Musgrove, III, 145, 362; account, III, 227; letters, III, 148, 472.
- Evans, North, joint petition, II, 304.
- Evening Star* (New York), I, 565, 568, V, 153.
- Everette, George, letters, II, 535, III, 30, 139, 460, 563, V, 297, 317, 484.
- Everitt, Stephen H., I, 265, 295, 592, II, 185, III, 117, V, 287; document, I, 572; editorial, II, 8; fight with Ashbel Smith, II, 407; letters, I, 265, 554, 588, II, 40, 164, 185, 203, 222, 331, 401, 441, 453, 491, 518, 563, III, 123, 356, 436, 513, V, 248, 312, 470; speeches, I, 489, 491.
- Ewing, William H., III, 534, V, 477.
- Falcón, José María, document, I, 214.
- Falconer, Thomas, III, 474, V, 452; letter, III, 531, V, 474.
- Falvel, Luke A., IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 7.
- Fanger, C. B., II, 437.
- Fannin, A. B., letter, I, 514.
- Fannin, Isham S., II, 180, V, 189.
- Fannin, James W., Jr., I, 260, 313, 321, 322-4, 330-1, 514, II, 5, 180, III, 272, 278, V, 167, 189, 375; accounts, I, 313-4, 317; certificates, I, 312; letters, I, 245, 247, 302, 309, 315, 319, 331-4, 338, 341; massacre of, I, 349, 542, II, 5, V, 133, 167; orders, I, 302, 304, 311; surrender, I, 396, II, 5, V, 167.
- Fannin, Mrs. James W., I, 548, 551.
- Fanning, James G., letter, I, 509.
- Fanthorp, H., letter, III, 158.
- Farley, Massilon, II, 521.
- Farrar, II, 403.
- Fatio, Felipe, I, 32-4.
- Federalist War, III, 378, 392, 412, 423, 439, IV, pt. 1, 170, 192, 212, 224, 238, 249, VI, 97-138, 155, 297.
- Federalists of Mexico, II, 389, 419, 513; relations with Texas, II, 540, III, 246, 364, 381, 386, 424, V, 356, 424.
- Fenell, Augustus, I, 536, V, 131.
- Fenell, Mickleberry, letter, I, 536, V, 131.
- Ferguson, Allanson, III, 568.
- Ferris, I, 341.
- Field, A. Pope, letter, II, 435, V, 244.
- Field, Dr. Joseph, II, 5, V, 167.
- Fields, I, 545.
- Fields, Citizen Richard of the Cherokees, VI, 185.
- Filibusters and filibustering, Cuba, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 310; Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 100, 176, 178; Texas, III, 283, IV, pt. 2, 235-6, V, 383, VI, 438, 453.
- Filisola, Vicente, I, 353, 387, 423, 523, V, 109; defense, I, 440.
- Finances of Texas, I, 260, 276, 279, 307, 311, 313-4, 317, 330, 338, 383, 464, 481-3, 519, 536, 561, 563, 583, 588, 595, II, 21, 136, 159, 212, 238, 241, 243, 255, 270, 274, 284, 302, 329, 335, 336, 337, 341, 373, 422, 425, 453, 459, 461, 492, 526, 535, III, 82, 228, 377, V, 146, 226, 261, 350, 420.
- Fisher, George, I, 148, 165, 169, 170, 243, 319; biography, III, 237, 285, V, 351, 386; difficulties with Morgan and Reid, IV, pt. 1, 298; editorials, I, 188, 190; frauds, I, 238, 246, 319, II, 35; hoax, I, 148, V, 52; letters, I, 86, 89, 199, III, 503, 505; resignation, 1833, I, 93. (*See also* Fisher, Davis & Lubbock.)
- Fisher, Davis & Lubbock, announcement, II, 187.
- Fisher, Samuel Rhoads, I, 117, II, 208, V, 171; death, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 22; letters, I, 408, 502, 512, II, 38, 152, 237, V, 198; papers, note upon, I, 512; report, I, 274; trial, I, 584, II, 46.
- Fisher, William S., V, 170, 263.
- Fisk, Greenleaf, III, 322, V, 402; letter, II, 334, V, 222.
- Flacco (Lipan chief), IV, pt. 1, 220, VI, 297.
- Flack, V, 247.
- Flag of Texas, origin, III, 483.
- Flash* (schooner), I, 464, 466, V, 120, 122.
- Flint, Timothy, I, 70, V, 28.
- Flora* (schooner), I, 302, 311-2.
- Flores, Antonio, VI, 145.
- Flores, Tomás, IV, pt. 1, 154, VI, 44-65.
- Foley, Henry, I, 312.
- Fontain, IV, pt. 1, 206, VI, 270.
- Fontaine, Edward, III, 555, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355; letters, III, 512, 557,

- 590, IV, pt. 1, 14, IV, pt. 2, 95, 233, V, 493, VI, 365, 435.
- Fontaine, Mrs. Edward, III, 512.
- Fontaine, H. W., III, 120, V, 312.
- Fontaine, Lamar, III, 590, IV, pt. 2, 233, V, 493, VI, 435.
- Foote, Henry Stuart, III, 66, 299, V, 261; letters, II, 509, 542, 547, III, 108, 190, 378, V, 266, 277, 326; *Texas and Texans*, citation and comment, III, 13, 190, 378, V, 326.
- Forbes, Charles H., letter, III, 322.
- Forbes, John, letters, I, 245, 251-3, 258, 259, 263, 265-7, 302.
- Forbes, Robert M., letters, II, 383, III, 474, V, 227.
- Ford, John A., letter, III, 53.
- Ford, John S., VI, 168.
- Forster, Thomas Gales, III, 412, 523; certificate, III, 321, V, 400; letter, III, 196, V, 328.
- Forsyth, John, I, 30, III, 366, V, 237; letter, I, 30; speech, I, 30.
- Fort Jessup, II, 296.
- Fort Smith, Texas, IV, pt. 1, 99.
- Fort Towson, II, 296.
- Foster, I, 93, 415.
- Foster, II, 310.
- Foster, Anthony, II, 48, V, 178; letter, I, 596, V, 166.
- "Four Hundred Speculation," II, 194-6.
- Fowler, A. J., letter, III, 475, V, 454.
- France, agent to Texas, 1839, II, 238, 508; citizens in Mexico, II, 238.
- Francis, IV, pt. 1, 135.
- Franklin, Benjamin C., I, 561, 564, II, 466, 473, V, 148, 150, VI, 170; letters, II, 414, III, 187, 535, V, 236, 325, 479.
- Franklin, William W., III, 187, V, 325; letters, II, 407, III, 202.
- Franklin College (University of Georgia), I, 71, III, 31, V, 31, 298.
- Fraser, I, 331.
- Fredonian War, I, 66-9, III, 258, IV, pt. 1, 209, 257, VI, 185.
- Freedmen, I, 480, II, 35, 198, 290, V, 172, 192.
- Freeman, III, 20.
- Freeman, Oliver K., letter, III, 82, V, 308.
- Free trade, II, 140, 241, 408, III, 104.
- French, Parker H., letters, IV, pt. 2, 105, 128.
- French-Mexican War, 1839 ("Pastry War"), II, 513.
- Frizzell, W. W., letter, III, 423, V, 432.
- Frontier of Texas, conditions, II, 174, 192, 256, 269, 272, 273, 299, 306, 371, 397, 441, 477, 529-31, 543, III, 320, 419, 592, IV, pt. 1, 159-62, 179, 186, V, 207, 209; defense, II, 174, 192, 256, 263, 272, 289, 306, 308, 334, 335, 340, 371, 386, 404, 458, 474, 477, 484, 490, 522, 529-31, III, 32, 54, 58, 67, 120, 200, 375, 419, 432, 458, 496, 562, 563, 572, 592, IV, pt. 1, 159-62, 174, 176-81, 182, 183, 185, 186, 187, 200-1, V, 222, 332, VI, 139, 141.
- Frontin, Theodore, joint letter, II, 460.
- Fugitive slaves, II, 519, III, 361, 391, 412, V, 426.
- Fuller, II, 513.
- Fuller, Benjamin, I, 2, V, 5.
- Fuller, Samuel, letter, II, 256, V, 204.
- Fulton, II, 216, 220-2, 307, V, 218.
- Gaillard, Ann Alston, letter, III, 594, V, 495.
- Gaillardet, Frederick, II, 519, V, 270; letter, III, 192, V, 327.
- Gaïnes, I, 279.
- Gaines, Edmund Pendleton, II, 292; movements, 1836, I, 415, 419, 572.
- Galaga, James, VI, 111.
- Gales & Seaton, III, 86.
- Gallois, Leonard, I, 78, V, 48.
- Galveston, I, 405, III, 214, 452, IV, pt. 1, 3; blockade, II, 136; citizens, letter, III, 398; corporation seal, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 8; fortification advised, I, 309; health, III, 134, 568, 590, IV, pt. 1, 187, V, 487, 491; inhabitants' attitude toward Lamar, II, 587, III, 371; mail service, II, 274; mayor and aldermen, resolution, IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327; patents, II, 473; post, III, 412; public dinners, III, 398-408, 417; public meetings, III, 322, 541; San Jacinto ball, II, 511, V, 267; town company, II, 204.
- Galveston Bay, settlers, IV, pt. 1, 124.
- Galveston chowder club, letter, III, 417.
- Galveston Civilian*, II, 162, 168, 177-9, 196, 225, V, 197.
- Galveston Island, I, 34, 369, III, 110, V, 311; health, III, 562, V, 483; Lamar's strength, 1838, II, 175, 184; physical and commercial conditions, 1839, II, 441, V, 248; militia, III, 371; newspaper projected, III, 31, V, 297; treatment of Houston, III, 380; vindication, IV, pt. 2, 28.
- Galveston News*, IV, pt. 1, 123, IV, pt. 2, 43, 49.
- Galveston University, proposed charter, etc., III, 336.
- Galveston Volunteer Battalion, letter, III, 375.
- Galveston Volunteer Company, III, 380.
- Galvez, Don Lucas de, V, 456.
- Gamble, Joseph, letter, I, 475, V, 123.
- García, Carlos, decree, I, 163.
- García Dávila, Gregorio, statements, IV, pt. 1, 151, 155, VI, 34, 68.
- García, Francisco, I, 51, VI, 188.

- García, Luis de la, IV, pt. 1, 171.
 García, María Jesús, III, 283, V, 383.
 Garland, R., letter, IV, pt. 1, 184.
 Garning?, R., & Company, II, 296, V, 215.
 Garrett, letter, I, 77.
 Garrett, Dr., V, 206.
 Garrett, John, letter, II, 238, V, 199.
 Gay, Thomas, II, 531, V, 272.
 Gayle, Alexander T., bill of lading, III, 447.
 Gazley, Thomas J., letter, I, 137.
 Gazley & Robinson, III, 447, 451; letter, III, 447.
 Geary, John, IV, pt. 1, 235.
General Houston (Texas naval vessel), I, 489.
General Santa Anna (brigantine), I, 143.
 Geological survey of Texas, IV, pt. 2, 95, VI, 365.
 Georgia, colonists from, II, 14, V, 168; controversy with Maine, II, 257; government and politics, 1833-8, I, 148, 423, 569, II, 169, 257, 572, V, 105, 155; militia, I, 78; v. African slaves, I, 44; Georgia Battalion, I, 292, 323, 349, 441, 475, II, 330, V, 118, 123, 220.
 Georgia Company, eleven league grant, IV, pt. 1, 203, 204, 206, VI, 168, 169, 170.
 "Georgia cottage," VI, 170.
 German-American Emigration Society of Philadelphia, III, 304.
 Germans of Texas, vote, 1839, III, 304.
 Gholson, II, 501.
 Gibson, Fenton M., I, 502, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355; claims, II, 492, 550; letters, II, 181, III, 511, IV, pt. 1, 14; petition, joint, II, 578.
 Gillen, Benjamin W., III, 140, V, 319.
 Gilmer, William Ray, letter, II, 240, V, 203.
 Gilmore, I, 295.
 Glenn, J. C., V, 311.
 Glenn, Robert Henry, letter, III, 102, V, 309.
 Goliad, I, 264; capture, 1835, I, 243; conditions, 1839, III, 106; Fannin's suggestions, 1836, I, 309; importance of holding, 1835, I, 244, 245, V, 85, 87; massacre, I, 349-52, 396, 436, II, 171, IV, pt. 1, 198, V, 111, 189; massacre, victims, I, 396, 399, 400, 512, 539, 542, 564, II, 5, 45, 139, 163, 330, 557, V, 132, 133, 150, 167, 178, 181, 220, 279; Mexican designs against, I, 330, 341; operations near, 1836, IV, pt. 2, 237; protection, 1835, I, 242, 245, V, 87.
 Golightly, Thomas J., II, 576, 578, V, 91; joint letter, II, 434.
 Gómez, Fariás Valentín, letter, III, 125, VI, 193.
 Gomez, Pedraza Manuel, circular, I, 64.
 Gonzales, Ambrosio José, IV, pt. 1, 284, VI, 314; letter, IV, pt. 1, 282.
 Gonzales, José María, I, 313; statement, IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 34, 110, 113, 132, 165.
 Gonzales, Rafael, *bando*, I, 55.
 Gonzales, I, 236, 343; committee of safety, I, 240, letter, I, 240; Indian depredations, II, 397; meeting, *July*, 1835, I, 220; outbreak of Revolution, I, 240-1, III, 243, 256.
 Gonzales County, defense, II, 468.
 Gooch, B., letter, II, 595.
 Goodall, Albert G., III, 201, 217, V, 334, 341; letter, III, 198.
 Goodall, James P., III, 201, V, 334; letters, III, 217, 311, V, 341, 399.
Good Hope (brig), I, 482.
 Goodman, W. B., III, 568.
 Gordon, John, letter, I, 548, V, 135.
 Gordon, Thomas G., letter, II, 528, III, 366, 456.
 Gordon, William F.?, II, 257.
 Gorman, John A., letter, III, 14, V, 288.
 Gorostiza, Manuel E., letters, II, 567, III, 8.
 Gosnay, Abram, III, 286.
 Gourley, James, II, 307, V, 218.
 Goyens, William, I, 238, 559.
 Graham, John E., letter, II, 240, V, 200.
 Granada (Nicaragua), municipality, IV, pt. 2, 130, 131, 206, VI, 368, 369, 417.
Grand Gulf Advertiser, II, 424, V, 241.
 Grant, James, III, 278, 283, V, 375, 378.
 Grass Fight, I, 533, III, 251.
 Gray, F. S., II, 336, V, 270; letter, II, 337.
 Gray, Fairfax, IV, pt. 1, 106.
 Gray, Nathan, Jr., letter, II, 479.
 Gray, Peter W., III, 510, 512, 514.
 Gray, William Fairfax, III, 510, 511; letters, III, 431, 463, V, 437, 449.
 Grayson, Peter W., I, 405, 574, II, 164, 280, 435, V, 159, 244, 271; characterized, II, 181; letters, I, 243, 535, 556, II, 181; nomination and candidacy for presidency, II, 8, 168, 171-3, 176, 179, 181, 194, 196-7; suicide, II, 181, 182, 203, 208, 280.
 Grayson, Thomas W., letter, III, 67.
 Green, Kollock H., letter, II, 336, V, 224.
 Green, Thomas J., I, 409, 445, III, 299, 386, 520, 573, IV, pt. 1, 130, 204, IV, pt. 2, 37, V, 270, 423, VI, 340; appeal, I, 347; letters, II, 163, 181, 241-2, 443, 561, 569, III, 62, 64-6, 322, 410, 428, 471, 569, 581, 582, IV, pt.

- 2, 38, V, 189, 247, 430, 436, 488, VI, 341; note, IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 502.
- Green, William, letter, II, 207.
- Greene, Allen, letter, II, 421, V, 239.
- Greer, D. G., V, 313.
- Greer, John A., III, 24; letters, II, 313, 452, 477, V, 220.
- Greer, S. V., letters, III, 333, 345.
- Gregg, D., letter, I, 533.
- Griffith, II, 202, 433, III, 506, V, 242, 467.
- Griffith, Horatio, II, 515.
- Grimes, Garraty, III, 438.
- Grimes, Jesse, III, 423, VI, 175; letter, II, 475, V, 256.
- Grimes, A. W., II, 434.
- Grinnan, Robert, II, 28.
- Griswold, S. Parsons, III, 21.
- Gritten, Edward, letter, I, 236; translation, I, 396.
- Grooms, Col., VI, 169.
- Gross, biography, I, 2.
- Grubb, J. Stewart, letter, III, 427.
- Grumbles, Lieutenant, VI, 99.
- Grush, H. L., V, 169.
- Guadalajara, liberal movement, 1836, I, 313.
- Guadalupe Victoria (Texas), *see* Victoria.
- Guajardo, Pedro, IV, pt. 1, 136, VI, 20; receipt, IV, pt. 1, 136.
- Guerrero, Vicente, I, 567, III, 256; biography, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 303.
- Guilbeau, C. H., letter, III, 559.
- Guillon, Henri de, letter, I, 401.
- Guillot, Charles, letter, II, 588.
- Guion (Brown & Guion), V, 287.
- Gurrea, I, 302.
- Gutierrez de Lara, José Bernardo, biography, III, 287, IV, pt. 2, 37, 235, 241, V, 391, VI, 337, 438, 469; expedition, I, 33, IV, pt. 1, 193, VI, 162; report, I, 4; report concerning, I, 55.
- Gwathney, W. W., V, 171.
- Haderman, C. J., letter, III, 313.
- Hagler, VI, 127.
- Haile, Christopher M., I, 576; letter, I, 595, V, 164.
- Hainai Indians (Ionics), II, 211.
- Hall, I, 93.
- Hall, Edward, III, 470, V, 449; letters, I, 561, 563, 583, 588, II, 39, III, 386, 562, V, 146.
- Hall, Gideon, II, 295.
- Hall, Warren D. C., I, 91, 241, 279, II, 162, V, 171; letters, I, 93, IV, pt. 2, 36, VI, 330; notes, IV, pt. 1, 277; services in the Republican Army, I, 4.
- Hamilton, III, 328.
- Hamilton, James, I, 596, II, 21-3, 28, 140, 255, 269, 292, 411, 492, 516, 529, 572, III, 28, 33, 60, 70, 72, 86, 105, 113, 115, 118, 155, 197, 365, 380, 383, 458, 505, 507, 566, V, 207, 261, 296, 467, 484; appointment as loan commissioner, II, 441; draft, II, 213; letters, I, 403, 542, II, 49, 136, 212, 243, 274, 509, 512, 526, 564, 578, III, 1, 7, 82, 104, 111, 126, 139, 146, 214, 216, 302, 425, 474, 486, 508, 527, IV, pt. 1, 126, IV, pt. 2, 17, 50, 55, 59, V, 100, 178, 452, VI, 13; loan negotiations, II, 212, 274, 510, 513, 524, 594, III, 90, 131, 191, 482, 504, 505, 506, 511, 513, V, 467, 470; reception in Houston, 1839, II, 495, 529, V, 263; reputation in England, II, 238; treaties negotiated by, III, 482, 530.
- Hamilton, James B., Jr., II, 257, 274.
- Hamilton, Reverend, V, 243.
- Hamilton, Thomas Lynch, III, 1.
- Hamilton, William T., letter, II, 297.
- Hammekin, George Louis, II, 554, 559, III, 21, 506, V, 294; letter, II, 399.
- Hammond, R. H., I, 574, V, 159.
- Hancock, Tom, VI, 117.
- Hand, Jacob, II, 489, 547, V, 259, 278; letter, II, 557, V, 279.
- Hand, John J., II, 489, 557, V, 259, 279.
- Handy, Robert Eden, II, 310, 339, 565, III, 199, V, 219, 329; death, II, 421, V, 238; estate, II, 523, III, 17, 387, 457, V, 290, 424; letters, I, 384, 573, II, 36, 50, 158, 171, 184, V, 189, 191; obituary, II, 404, V, 233; removal to Philadelphia, II, 565-7.
- Hanks, Wyatt, I, 264, 293, 295; letter, I, 318.
- Hanna, Benjamin F., III, 135.
- Hannah Elizabeth* (American schooner), I, 274, 512.
- Hansford, John M., II, 274, V, 212; letters, II, 273, 279, 416, 419, 425, 448, V, 209, 237, 242, 250.
- Hardee, Thomas, I, 88.
- Hardeen, Ed., letter, I, 574.
- Hardin, II, 531, V, 272.
- Hardin, Mrs. Martin, IV, pt. 1, 124.
- Hardin, William, historical notes, I, 544, III, 239.
- Hardwick, N. S., letter, III, 198.
- Harney, General, VI, 170.
- Harper, L., letter, III, 110.
- Harris, III, 475.
- Harris, David Kelsey, letter, III, 204, V, 337.
- Harris, Eli, letter, III, 483.
- Harris, John W., letter, III, 218.
- Harris, William, II, 453.
- Harris, William P., historical note, III, 235.

- Harrisburg County, jail, II, 489; northern boundary, II, 544; volunteers, address to, II, 510.
- Harrison, I, 349.
- Harrison County, V, 242.
- Harrison, William C., III, 305.
- Harrison, William Henry, I, 349.
- Hart, William, document, III, 587; letters, II, 576, III, 589, V, 489.
- Hartridge, H. E., letter, III, 328.
- Harwell, III, 198.
- Hastie, Henry, I, 539, V, 132.
- Hatch, firm letter, II, 538, 561, V, 276, 282.
- Hatch, Silvanus, joint document, II, 300; letter, III, 391, V, 426.
- Hatcher, Mrs. Mattie Austin, V, 3.
- Hawkins, Joseph H., I, 45; letter, I, 46.
- Hawkins, M., letter, I, 307.
- Hayden, Denis E., letters, II, 571, III, 200, V, 283.
- Hayden, George Washington, III, 200.
- Haydon, III, 222, V, 342.
- Haynes, J. P., III, 481.
- Haynie, S. C., joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 202, VI, 168.
- Hays, II, 181, V, 190.
- Hays, J., V, 190.
- Hays, J. G., III, 55.
- Hays, John, II, 403.
- Hays, John C., III, 333, IV, pt. 1, 176-8, 202, 229, V, 409; letters, IV, pt. 1, 138, 195, VI, 164.
- Heard, A. C., IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 140.
- Heard, William T., letter, III, 103.
- Hedenberg, Charles J., joint petition, II, 586.
- Helm, Charles J., IV, pt. 1, 195, 200.
- Hemphill, John, II, 436, V, 245; document, III, 375; letters, II, 480, 497, III, 218, V, 263.
- Hempstead, D. S., letter, II, 254, V, 203.
- Henderson, I, 462.
- Henderson, II, 274, V, 212.
- Henderson, James Pinckney, II, 49, 93, 138, 212, 526, III, 6, 82, 111, 115, 126-33, 135, 216, 302, 412, 431, IV, pt. 1, 133, 136-40, 156, 161, 179, 185, 186, 203, 204, 206, V, 179, 437, VI, 72, 74, 141, 168, 169, 170; letters, I, 534, II, 24, 238, 283, 290, 508, 540, III, 70, 92, 118, 375, 397, IV, pt. 1, 174, 176-8, V, 418.
- Henderson, J. W., report to, IV, pt. 1, 190.
- Henderson, John F. C., II, 371.
- Henderson, R., III, 470, V, 451.
- Henderson, William Fenner, IV, pt. 1, 223; letter, III, 461, V, 448.
- Hendricks, Jake, VI, 99.
- Henrie, Arthur, I, 259, 302, II, 303; V, 311; letter, II, 303, V, 217.
- Henrie, John M., I, 265, V, 91; letters, II, 205, 303.
- Henry, A., letter, III, 110, V, 311.
- Henry, Charles A., letter, I, 452, V, 119.
- Herckenrath, III, 508.
- Herrndon, Col., V, 290.
- Herrera, Simon de, I, 4, III, 284, IV, pt. 2, 37, V, 383, VI, 337.
- Heuter?, A., letter, IV, pt. 2, 147.
- Hewes, Samuel, I, 588; letters, II, 555, 585, III, 296, 342, V, 398, 411.
- Hewitson, *see* Power & Hewitson.
- Hickey, John B., statement, IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 34.
- Hicks, William B., letter, II, 274, V, 212.
- Hidalgo, Miguel, I, 4.
- Highsmith, III, 438.
- Hill, I, 508.
- Hill, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 20.
- Hill, Mrs., I, 589.
- Hill, Alexander, I, 507.
- Hill, Benjamin F., document, IV, pt. 1, 170.
- Hill, G. W., letters, II, 433, III, 304, IV, pt. 1, 23, V, 171, 235.
- Hill, Green v. Duncan, I, 564, V, 150; v. Smith, I, 564, V, 150.
- Hill, Henry P., letter, III, 336, V, 410.
- Hill, Mourning Elizabeth, v. Duncan, I, 564, V, 150; v. Smith, I, 564, V, 150.
- Hill, Thomas H., letter, I, 572, V, 157.
- Hill, W. G., I, 310.
- Hill, W. Pinckney, letter, III, 115.
- Hill, William K., joint address, I, 253.
- Hinton, II, 43, V, 177.
- Hinton, A. C., II, 571.
- Hitchcock, L. M., joint certificate, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 7.
- Hixon, Augustus P., letter, III, 431.
- Hockley, George W., I, 293, II, 155, 209, 215, 294, IV, pt. 1, 24, 47, V, 511; letters, II, 338, 370, 375, 503, III, 136, 217, 463, 470, V, 451.
- Hodge, I, 220.
- Hoffman, I, 265, 295.
- Hoffman, D. A., I, 239.
- Hoggatt, James, letter, III, 61.
- Holcombe, Henry B., letters, II, 257, IV, pt. 1, 261, 262, VI, 308, 310.
- Holcombe, John C., II, 257.
- Holcombe, Lucius Lamar, II, 257.
- Holden, Ezra, letter, III, 6.
- Holden, Irah S., II, 519.
- Holden, Joshua, IV, pt. 1, 157, VI, 83.
- Holford, James, II, 274.
- Holland, John H., III, 411.
- Holley, Mary Austin, VI, 176; *Texas* . . . cited, I, 141, 344, IV, pt. 1, 130.
- Holley, Nathaniel, I, 567; letter, I, 570.

- Holliday, John, II, 8.
 Holman, W. W., I, 445.
 Holmes, Edward L., II, 404, V, 234.
 Holmes, Issac, letter, IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 4.
 Holmes, II, 301.
 Holt, David J., I, 311, V, 92.
 Holt, James Lawrence, letter, II, 572, V, 284.
 Holzinger, Juan José, letter, I, 396.
 Honduras Revolution, 1859, IV, pt. 2, 225.
 Honey, John W., VI, 176.
 Hornsby, V, 313.
 Horton & Clements, I, 311.
 Horton, Albert C., II, 194-5, 208, 268, 452, 511; campaign, 1838, II, 142, 185, 203, 205, 207, 209, 217-9; letters, II, 161, 195, 421, III, 198, 560, V, 187, 483.
 Horton, Alexander?, II, 271.
 Hoskins, II, 41, V, 176.
 Hotchkiss, Archibald, II, 310.
 Houghton, John, letter, III, 199, V, 331.
 House of Representatives, journal (part), 1836, I, 475; 1839, III, 193; messages to, II, 389, III, 226, 311, V, 343; resolutions, I, 573, II, 373, 419, III, 202; resolutions cited, I, 574, II, 372, 469, III, 202, 599, V, 225.
 House-frame, imported, I, 534, V, 130.
 Houston, A., I, 583; joint report, I, 279.
 Houston, Sam, I, 330, 412, 462, 463, 475, 508, 533, 554, 556, 572, II, 170, 237, 336, 337, 423, III, 287, IV, pt. 1, 22-3, 108, 123, 277, 287, V, 198, VI, 312; address, I, 369; administration, II, 176, 242, 263, 499, III, 72, 120, 134, V, 315; army, attitude toward, I, 307, II, 203; assumption of presidency, 1835, I, 525; attitude toward annexation, IV, pt. 1, 108, 110, 111-22, VI, 9, 12; toward banks, IV, pt. 2, 34; toward loans, II, 243, III, 520; ball costume, I, 562; bill, III, 226, V, 343; biography, I, 2, III, 278, IV, pt. 1, 208, V, 375, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-181; career in Texas, IV, pt. 2, 34; charges against, III, 499, IV, pt. 2, 27; charges against Lamar's administration, IV, pt. 1, 131; coalition, II, 483; conduct in the Mexican-Indian revolt, 1838, II, 207, 208-10, III, 117 (Weiss's proposal); conduct of San Jacinto campaign, I, 350, IV, pt. 2, 31; conduct toward Congress, II, 408; conduct toward Moore, IV, pt. 2, 32; connection with fraudulent land certificates, III, 537; decline in popularity, III, 557; denounced, III, 587; dinner to, III, 193; health, I, 415, 554, 573; honorary membership in Milam Guards, II, 224; inaugural address, 1836, I, 469; Indian talks, I, 317, 352, 559, II, 198-9, 202; letters, I, 201, 293, 353, 369, 559, II, 24, 199-202, 435, IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 243, 502; Gonzales letter, publication, III, 544, 557; letters to, I, 415, 536, 560, II, 199, 237, 238, 268, V, 204; marriage, III, 353; message, comment, II, 308; message, summary, I, 584; movements, 1836, I, 295; 1841, III, 530; nomination of Birdsall criticized, II, 225, V, 197; party, II, 452, III, 24, 451, 514, 562, IV, pt. 1, 130, 165; personal appearance and characteristics, I, 552-5, II, 217, III, 392, IV, pt. 1, 5; personal relations: Fisher, II, 152; Hunt, III, 41; Lamar, II, 265; McKinney, II, 217; Morgan, I, 511; Rusk, II, 203; Whartons, I, 201; policy: army, II, 215; Indian, II, 217, 293, 405-6; navy, III, 349; political attitude, 1838, II, 176, 181, 203, 207; 1839, III, 77; political controversy, 1855, IV, pt. 2, 24, 26; political prospects: 1839, II, 563, III, 72, 151, V, 307, 321; 1840, III, 304, 353; 1841, III, 520, 532, 543, 544, 556, 560, 566, V, 476, 482; 1847, IV, pt. 1, 188; "political quackery," IV, pt. 1, 47; proclamations, I, 263, IV, pt. 1, 21; release of Santa Anna, I, 511, II, 573; rumored intention to resign, 1837, I, 556, 569; situation, 1836, I, 403; suits against, IV, pt. 2, 32; "traveling cabinet," II, 181, trustee, II, 33, V, 172; visit to Galveston, 1840, III, 353, 380; to Mississippi and Tennessee, 1839, III, 41, 190, V, 326; to Nacogdoches, 1838, II, 196; to New Orleans, 1839, III, 6; to San Augustine, 1838, II, 207, 211.
 Houston (city), II, 292, 569, III, 214, V, 214, 283; bar, III, 512; building operations, 1837, I, 534, V, 310; citizens' attitude toward Lamar, II, 178, 587; citizens' committee, letter, II, 495; conditions, 1839, I, 562, III, 57, 62, 220; health, III, 134, 220, 431, V, 437; "a lively village," I, 562; mail service, III, 145, 306, 438, 440; newspapers, I, 542, 591, II, 13, 28, III, 92, 340, V, 134, 309; Lamar's property, III, 480, V, 456; postmaster, III, 340; real estate values, I, 534, V, 130; representative, II, 305; wholesale prices current, *July*, 1838, II, 187.
 Howard, Catherine, letter, IV, pt. 1, 151, V, 34.
 Howard, Charles, II, 547, V, 278.
 Howard, Edward, II, 509.
 Howard, R. A., IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 34; letter, IV, pt. 1, 183, VI, 140.

- Howard, Volney E., letter, IV, pt. 1, 146.
- Howard, William A., letter, III, 23, V, 295.
- Howe, M. S., IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 74; letter, IV, pt. 1, 157.
- Hoxey, Asa, III, 79; letters, II, 497, III, 306.
- Hoyle, V, 243.
- Hoyle, Stephen Z., letter, II, 435.
- Hoyt, Nathaniel, naval commission and service, IV, pt. 1, 104, VI, 7-8; petition, IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 5.
- Hubbell, H. A., I, 409; letter, I, 399.
- Hubert, V, 212.
- Huckins, III, 302.
- Hudson, I, 437.
- Hudson, H. C., I, 453; report, I, 451.
- Hudson, Radcliffe, letter, II, 458.
- Huff, George, I, 117.
- Huff, Ramey, I, 117.
- Hughes, William, joint letter, I, 569, V, 155.
- Hughs, Edward, letter, II, 487.
- Huling, Thomas B., letter, III, 21, V, 294.
- Humphrey, Hardy P., letters, I, 567, II, 206, V, 151, 192.
- Humphreys, H., III, 95, 135; letter, III, 94.
- Humphreys, P. W., I, 437, 502.
- Hunt, Francis A., I, 567, V, 153.
- Hunt, Memucan, I, 534, 572, 595, II, 411, 508, 547, 579, III, 192, 366, IV, pt. 1, 6, 7, 14, 16, 18, V, 164; appointment as boundary commissioner, III, 192; as major-general, I, 402; confirmation as secretary of the navy, III, 331; dismissal from boundary commission, II, 380; electioneering, III, 506; estimate of, II, 573; letters, I, 402, 462, 463, 474, 489, 576, II, 47, 214-5, 284, 313, 396, 397, 414, 416, 423, 434, 477, 546, 547, 553, III, 6, 13, 18, 41, 42, 104, 212, 296, 299, 334, IV, pt. 1, 6, 7, 8, 16, V, 237, 298, 339; relations with Lamar, IV, pt. 1, 6-18, 28; resignation, 1839, II, 547, 553, 573.
- Hunt, William H., letters, II, 570, III, 55.
- Hunter, III, 278, V, 375.
- Hunter, J. D., VI, 185.
- Hunter, James M., II, 171, V, 189.
- Huntingdon, V, 249.
- Huntington, II, 35, V, 172, 185.
- Huntington, John F., II, 240, V, 202; Republic, v., III, 486, 502, V, 458, 463.
- Huson, V, 314.
- Huston, Felix, I, 489, II, 383, 490, III, 458, V, 171; letters, II, 376, III, 200, V, 332; "set," II, 483.
- Hutchens, Daniel R., letter, I, 440, V, 118.
- Hyde, James G., II, 448, V, 250.
- Ikin, Arthur, III, 482; letter, III, 497, V, 459.
- Ikin, Jonathan, affidavit, I, 443; colony, III, 214, 220, 299, 515; letters, III, 90, 322, 406.
- Immigrants and immigration, I, 423, 489, II, 23, 589, III, 547, IV, pt. 1, 126, V, 105.
- Impressment, I, 311-2.
- Independence, declaration, *March 2, 1836*, I, 344; discussion prior to convention, I, 267, 287, 318, 322.
- Independence* (Texan war vessel), prisoners, I, 556, 563, 582-3, II, 423, III, 444, V, 440.
- Indians of Texas, I, 512, III, 32, 380, V, 28; alliances with Mexico, I, 145, 572, II, 208, 223, 307, 522, III, 375, 381, IV, pt. 1, 166; campaigns against, 1838-40, II, 255, 256, 263-7, 268, 298, 302, 306, 308, 340-2, 405-6, 423, 513, 529-31, III, 67, 419, 458; captives, II, 397; conditions, 1838, II, 376; conference on Brazos River, 1835, I, 239; hostilities, 1820-46, II, 183 (San Antonio River), II, 263-7, 269, 293-4, 296, 303, 306, 371, 397, 420 (Robertson County), II, 464, III, 151, 276 (Red River country), III, 372-5, 378 (East Texas), III, 410, V, 428 (Austin), III, 432 (Texana and Linnville), IV, pt. 1, 31 (Falls of the Brazos, Milam and Robertson Counties), IV, pt. 1, 38 (Parker's Fort), 155, VI, 69 (Laredo), IV, pt. 1, 157 (between the Nueces and the Rio Frio), IV, pt. 1, 161 (frontier), 192, VI, 145 (Guadalupe and Colorado), IV, pt. 1, 217, 273 (Red River), V, 207, 321; lands, surveys, III, 571-2; near Austin, III, 126, 351, 410, IV, pt. 1, 229, V, 428; policy regarding, II, 223, 270, 295, 405-6, 437, 484, III, 39, 67, 103, 120, 133, 535, 559, V, 479; numbers, 1836, I, 523, V, 127; presents, I, 239; protection against, II, 436, 474, III, 351, IV, pt. 1, 200; relations, I, 352, 534, 559, 563, 572, II, 43, 49, 174, 198-9, 200, 207-11, 223, 255, 256, 263, 271, 293, 295, 296, 298, 302, 303, 306, 308, 310, 341, 397, 404, 421, 496, III, 230, 419, IV, pt. 1, 193; talks, I, 239, 317, 559, II, 43, 198-9, 200, 201, 202, 211, 255, 271, 295, III, 16; tribes in the Kickapoo fight, II, 265; warfare, II, 503, III, 60, V, 304. (*See also* names of tribes.)

- Indians of Texas, northern, II, 295, III, 264.
- Indians of the United States, in relation to Texas and the West, I, 76, 572, II, 294, 296-8, 308, III, 35, 103, 471.
- Ingram, Ira, article and letter, I, 146.
- Intelligencer*, II, 498, 499.
- Internal improvements, III, 226, 352, V, 412.
- Internal States, defense, I, 64; presidential companies, I, 63.
- Internal States, Eastern, I, 190.
- Interoceanic canal, IV, pt. 1, 261, IV, pt. 2, 147, 217. (*See also* Belly, Felix.)
- Intervention in Nicaragua and Central America, IV, pt. 1, 206, 207.
- Invincible* (Texan war schooner), I, 309, 401, 414, 437, II, 208, IV, pt. 2, 14.
- Ionies, *see* Hainai, II, 211.
- Irion, Robert A., letters, I, 572, II, 307.
- Irvine, R. B., letter, I, 576.
- Iturbide, Agustin de, I, 512, VI, 183, 185, 213.
- Iverson, Alfred, I, 30; compositions, I, 29, 44, 45.
- Izod, James, joint invitation, III, 538, V, 479; letter, III, 383.
- Jack, Patrick C., imprisonment, 1832, I, 90-3, V, 170, 267; letter, III, 530, V, 473; notes, III, 233.
- Jack, Spencer, I, 535; letter, III, 250, V, 357.
- Jack, William H., I, 142, II, 448, 516, V, 267; address, I, 223; letters, II, 196, III, 361, 599.
- Jackson, Mrs., II, 511, V, 267.
- Jackson, Alden A. M., III, 124; letters, III, 482, 506, 511, 547, 562, 567, V, 483.
- Jackson, Andrew, I, 409, 411, 414, 464, II, 138, V, 47, 179, VI, 175; attitude toward Gaines, I, 419; toward recognition and annexation of Texas, I, 464; character, I, 408.
- Jackson, P. L., letter, II, 391, V, 228.
- Jackson, Shepherd, III, 211, V, 338.
- Jackson, Thomas R., I, 308.
- Jackson County, citizens, document, II, 300.
- James v. James, II, 301.
- James, A. F., joint letter, III, 417.
- Jameson, G. B., V, 93.
- Jamison, John S., letter, I, 404, V, 101.
- Jasper, S. L. B., letter, II, 511, V, 267.
- Jasper County, II, 185, V, 279, citizens, letter, III, 348; settlers, IV, pt. 1, 41, vote, 1838, II, 222.
- Jeffers, John E., letter, III, 155, V, 323.
- Jefferys, VI, 103.
- Jefferson County, II, 185; vote, 1838, II, 222.
- Jemison, John, V, 188.
- Jenkins, Joseph?, letter, II, 484.
- Jernigan, Henry W., letters, I, 518, 532, 588.
- Jessup, T. S., IV, pt. 1, 158, VI, 88.
- Jeter, William G., I, 441, V, 118.
- Jeter, William L., letters, I, 575, II, 271, V, 160, 207.
- Jewell, George W., I, 573, 574, II, 542.
- Jewett, Henry J., I, 78, III, 35, 91, V, 46; letters, III, 92, 412, V, 309.
- Jimmerson, I, 532.
- Johns, E., & Company, II, 492, V, 260; letter, II, 499, V, 264.
- Johnson, II, 200.
- Johnson, III, 431, 434, 438, 440.
- Johnson, III, 535, 567, V, 478, 486.
- Johnson?, Andrew?, IV, pt. 1, 277, VI, 312.
- Johnson, A. R., V, 242.
- Johnson, B. F., joint letter, III, 581, V, 488.
- Johnson, Francis W., I, 125, 142, 236, 263, 315, 341, III, 255, 283, V, 81, 96, 365, 378; arrest, 1835, I, 204, 218; letters, I, 123, 272, 313, 321-3; movements, 1832, I, 92; plans, 1836, I, 341; resolution of thanks to, I, 246.
- Johnson, J. Benton, letter, IV, pt. 1, 188.
- Johnson, James, letter, I, 423, V, 105.
- Johnson, Thomas, III, 473, 474.
- Johnson's tavern, V, 90.
- Johnston, III, 375, V, 418.
- Johnston, Albert Sidney, II, 331, 333, 338, 370, 375, 516, 547, III, 45-7, 79, 106, 133, 136, 140, 299, 380, V, 170, 263, 319; letters, I, 540, II, 371, 404, 434, 522, III, 67, 427; mediation between Hunt and Lamar, IV, pt. 1, 17, 18 (demand, IV, pt. 1, 16; award, IV, pt. 1, 17); memoranda, III, 230; note of endorsement, III, 470, V, 450.
- Johnston, Albert Sidney?, III, 371, 386, V, 423.
- Johnston, Colonel Benjamin, V, 166.
- Johnston, George J., letter, III, 547, V, 482.
- Johnston, Hugh B., I, 142.
- Johnston, Malcolm A., letter, II, 519, V, 270.
- Johnston, Thomas, III, 423, V, 432.
- Johnston, W. Henry H., letter, III, 88.
- Jones, II, 344.
- Jones, II, 489.
- Jones, Alexander, letters, I, 419, 567, II, 249.
- Jones, Anson, I, 540, II, 573, III, 86, IV, pt. 1, 1, 3-4, V, 171, 241, 237, VI, 340; candidacy, II, 159, III, 410, V, 430; connection with annexation,

- IV, pt. 1, 108, VI, 9; letter, IV, pt. 1, 2.
- Jones, G. H., letter, IV, pt. 1, 147, VI, 25.
- Jones, Isaac N., letter, II, 425.
- Jones, J. A., letter, IV, pt. 1, 277, VI, 312.
- Jones, James A., I, 545, II, 154, 158, V, 135; letters, I, 587, II, 154, 175, 529, V, 162.
- Jones, John Rice, III, 200, 431, 436, 438, 456, V, 334; draft, III, 436; letters, III, 434, 440.
- Jones, Levi, III, 470, V, 449; joint invitation, II, 511, V, 267.
- Jones, Oliver, I, 148; letters, I, 170, III, 427.
- Jones, S. L., letter, III, 563.
- Jones, Seaborn, I, 44.
- Jones, Tonkaway, VI, 134.
- Jones, W. F., I, 462.
- Jones, William, joint petition, III, 444, V, 440; letter, III, 444, V, 439.
- Jones, William E., letter, IV, pt. 1, 35.
- Jones, William Jefferson, I, 587, II, 30, III, 380, V, 162, 421; campaign activity, 1838, II, 171; expedition, 1839, II, 529, III, 98; letters, I, 545, 596, II, 21-3, 28, 142, 154, 170, 172, 191-2, 437, 473, 530, 543, III, 61, 79, 135, 158, V, 135, 255, 316, 324; notes, II, 324.
- Jonesborough, III, 276.
- Jordan, VI, 99.
- Jordan, S. W., IV, pt. 1, 238, IV, pt. 2, 70.
- Journal des Debates*, III, 192, V, 327.
- Joy, Cyrus, III, 101, 112, 445; letters, III, 204, 387, 539, V, 337, 425, 480.
- Judiciary, condition, 1840, III, 367; organization, I, 504, II, 595.
- Julius Caesar* (vessel), I, 330.
- Jugan, Pierre (Choctaw chief), III, 361.
- Karankawa Indians, I, 512, 562, IV, pt. 1, 255.
- Karankawas, settlement, I, 125, 138.
- Karnes, Henry W., I, 408, 482, II, 404, 421, 510, 543, III, 60, 92, V, 304; capture, II, 34.
- Kaufman, David S., II, 172, III, 474; letters, II, 168, 302, III, 329, 474, V, 216, 404; mission to the United States, IV, pt. 1, 110, VI, 10; speech, II, 46.
- Kearns, *see* Karnes.
- Kechi Indians, I, 592.
- Keoper, Frances R. H., letter, II, 572, V, 284.
- Kellogg, Ralph, III, 41, V, 298.
- Kellogg, Harriet Elvira, IV, pt. 1, 47, VI, 3.
- Kelly, V, 314.
- Kelton, O. P., II, 398, 404, 433, V, 232, 233, 242; letters, II, 415, 487.
- Kemble, I, 295.
- Kemper, VI, 145.
- Kemper, John F., II, 474, V, 255.
- Kemper, Reuben, V, 79.
- Kendrick, V, 194.
- Kendrick, Harry, II, 404, V, 234.
- Kendrick, Harvey, letter, II, 502.
- Kennedy, William, III, 101; letter, III, 113; *Texas* . . . , comment, III, 113, IV, pt. 1, 204.
- Kenney, H. S., III, 560, V, 483.
- Kenney, Lawrence Richard, IV, pt. 1, 254, 257.
- Kennymore, John C. P., III, 187; letter, I, 531, V, 129.
- Kerby, VI, 99.
- Kerby, William, joint letter, II, 225.
- Kern, George P., letter, I, 567, V, 151.
- Kerr, James, II, 301, 501, 515, V, 88, 266, 268; broadside, I, 287; letters, II, 391, 501, III, 428, V, 266; memorandum, I, 525, V, 127.
- Kickapoo Indians, fight with, IV, pt. 1, 223; invitation to, I, 559; overtures, II, 223; removal desired, II, 308; town, fight at, 1838, II, 255, 263-7.
- Kilgore, I, 346.
- Kimbrow, William, II, 279, V, 212; letter, II, 440.
- King, III, 283, V, 378.
- King, A. B., V, 91.
- King, F. I., IV, pt. 2, 57.
- King, John William, III, 445.
- King, Thomas S., III, 445.
- King, William R., I, 419.
- Kinney, H. L., III, 21, 568; historical notes from, IV, pt. 1, 211-14; letters, IV, pt. 1, 175, IV, pt. 2, 75, 107, 141, VI, 138, 366, 374; ranch (Corpus Christi), IV, pt. 1, 213; scheme for Rio Grande town, IV, pt. 1, 202. (*See also* Aubrey & Kinney.)
- Kintzing, Anna Maria, III, 333, V, 408.
- Kintzing, Charles McAlester, III, 120, 333, V, 408.
- Kirkham, I, 45.
- Kitzie Indians, II, 211.
- Knies, John, I, 570.
- Knight, James, agreement, II, 162, V, 187.
- Koasati Indians (Cushatta), II, 211, 255, III, 16, 39, VI, 175; removal desired, II, 308.
- Kolb, William G., letter, III, 460, V, 447.
- Kray, Peter, letter, II, 517, V, 269.
- Kress, Mrs. Margaret Kenney, V, 3.
- Kuykendall, I, 332.
- Kuykendall, VI, 175.
- Kuykendall, Abner, I, 123.

- Kuykendall, Joe, IV, pt. 2, 13.
 Kyle, W. J., letter, II, 501.
- Labor, I, 480; coast, 1839, II, 559, III, 40, V, 281.
- La Branche, Alcée, II, 461, 543; letter, III, 363, V, 413.
- Lacaze, I, 34.
- Lacelles, Eugene, III, 66.
- Lacey, III, 374.
- Lafayette, Marquis de, IV, pt. 1, 127, VI, 15.
- Lafitte, I, 30, 34.
- Lafitte, Jean, III, 228, IV, pt. 2, 28, V, 90, 351; biography, I, 287, V, 90; death, II, 38, 152, IV, pt. 2, 18; duel, III, 232; Galveston establishment, III, 232; letters, I, 30, 34; operations in Texas, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 438; privateers, III, 232, IV, pt. 2, 18.
- Lafitte & Company, III, 486, 506, 508, 511, 527.
- La Gloire* (French frigate), II, 567, 579.
- Lallemand, Charles Francois Antoine, IV, pt. 2, 235, V, 47, VI, 438.
- La Grange College, I, 518.
- Lamar, I, 53, V, 11, 19.
- Lamar, Gazaway B., I, 403, II, 136, 196, 212, 275, III, 35, IV, pt. 1, 157, IV, pt. 2, 26, 40, 59, V, 100, VI, 83, 162, 163; letters, I, 514, II, 140, 286, 373, 455, III, 360, 454, IV, pt. 1, 134, IV, pt. 2, 58, V, 124, 226, VI, 19.
- Lamar, Mrs. Gazaway B., III, 257.
- Lamar, Henrietta Maffitt (Mrs. Mirabeau B. Lamar), IV, pt. 2, 24, 55, 107, VI, 345, 366.
- Lamar, Jefferson J., I, 350, III, 423, 482.
- Lamar, John, letter, III, 140, V, 318.
- Lamar, John T., II, 196; letters, I, 292, 556, II, 169, III, 19, V, 136.
- Lamar, Lucius, II, 257.
- Lamar, Mirabeau Buonaparte, I, 346, 402, 469, 534, 542, 564, 575, II, 36, 39, 153, 222, 238, 240, 241, III, 199, 427, 532, 567, IV, pt. 1, 123, 146, 170, 173, 277, IV, pt. 2, 138, V, 122, 130, 134, 150, 160, 197, 200, 202, 339, 434, 485, VI, 312, 374; administration, II, 192, 222, 263, 274, 284-9, 294, 441, 491, 498, 513, 518, 529, 543, 576, III, 21, 66, 72-6, 96, 120, 134, 156, 366, 371, 399, 419, 476, 496, 506, 507, 533, 562, IV, pt. 1, 131, IV, pt. 2, 16, V, 197, 294, 295, 311, 315; attacked, 1859, IV, pt. 2, 201-4; biography, IV, pt. 2, 67, 95, VI, 355, 365; candidacy and campaigns: 1833?, I, 148; 1836, I, 436, 441, 445, 530, V, 118, 130; 1838, I, 569, 577, 587, 588, 591-2, II, 8, 21-3, 37, 38, 47, 50, 138, 139, 140, 142, 152-3, 154, 161, 162, 163, 164-9, 170, 171-80, 181, 183, 184-6, 191-3, 194-7, 205, 208-10, 225, V, 179, 182, 186, 187, 189, 197; 1845, IV, pt. 1, 104; 1847, IV, pt. 1, 177, 184, 185, 188, VI, 141; charges against, II, 170, 171; claims against Texas, IV, pt. 1, 133, IV, pt. 2, 37, VI, 340; commander-in-chief, appointment, I, 412, 415, 416, 435, commission, I, 404; company (Mexican War), IV, pt. 1, 141, 201, VI, 166; contracts, II, 29, III, 473; credit for Texas educational system, IV, pt. 2, 237; diplomatic mission, 1858-9: appointment recommended, IV, pt. 2, 37, 38, VI, 340; commission as minister to Costa Rica, IV, pt. 2, 76; as minister to Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 66; as minister resident to Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 77; instructions to, IV, pt. 2, 68, 127, 142, 151, VI, 367; outfit, IV, pt. 2, 55; passport, IV, pt. 2, 68; salary, IV, pt. 2, 68, 127, 232, VI, 367, 430, 431; standing in Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 129, 135; election as president, 1838, II, 222, 243, 284; election as representative, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 188; family, II, 163, 171, 208, 217, 222, 238, 554, III, 101, IV, pt. 2, 67, V, 188, 197, 199, VI, 355; gifts to, II, 333, 505, 524, 534, III, 101, V, 222; health, III, 21, 27, 30, 40, 41, 62, 451, 475, 482, 485, 486, 488, 497, 512, 513, 521, IV, pt. 2, 226, V, 294, 296, 297, 305, 458, 459, 468, 470; introduced, I, 54, III, 475, IV, pt. 2, 38, 59, 75, VI, 350; invitations to, II, 477; 535, III, 375, 587, 589, IV, pt. 1, 21, 198, 202, V, 489, 503, VI, 165, 168; land and real estate: Austin, III, 62, IV, pt. 1, 157, 158, 193, 206, VI, 83, 87, 163, 169; Copano Bay, II, 174, 202, 452, 492, 516, III, 506, V, 251, 261, 467; eleven league grant, IV, pt. 1, 203, 206, VI, 168, 170; Galveston, III, 486, 502, V, 458, 463; Houston, III, 480, V, 456; Richmond, II, 36, IV, pt. 2, 17; land speculation, I, 350, 383, 384, 386, 449, 466, 535, 542, II, 40, V, 119, 121, 134; leave of absence, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 169; military prospects, 1846, IV, pt. 1, 146; orders to, IV, pt. 1, 143, 145, 146, 158, 159, VI, 23, 24, 90, 91; personal characteristics, I, 401, 542, II, 168, 225, V, 197; personal finances, I, 464, 466, 558, 579, II, 158-9, 169, 184, 224, 576, III, 198, 332, 393, 451, 454, 502, IV, pt. 1, 3, IV, pt. 2, 58, 128, 212, V, 120, 122, 191, 285, 463; personal relations: acquaintances in Cahawba, Alabama, II, 240, V, 200; in Georgia, I, 513, II, 422, 571, 572, III, 31, V, 239, 283,

- 284, 298; with Stephen F. Austin, II, 206, V, 193; Baker, II, 538; Bryan, II, 206, V, 193; Burnet, IV, pt. 1, 204, IV, pt. 2, 234; Collinsworth and Millard, I, 502, 505-6; Houston, II, 265; Hunt, IV, pt. 1, 3, 6-18, 28; Rusk, I, 416, 417; plans, 1836, I, 350, 417; popularity, I, 415, II, 36, 222, 529, III, 13, 392, 532, 557, V, 476; portrait criticized, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355; presidency of the Texas Philosophical Society, II, 302, V, 216; criticized, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355; presidency of the project for a national bank, III, 302; recall to Texas, 1837, I, 552-5, 556, 560, 572-3, V, 158; reception in Austin, 1839, III, 123, V, 313; record at San Jacinto, I, 417, III, 102, V, 104; reputation as a scholar, II, 13; resignation as secretary of war, I, 401; slaves, I, 567, II, 41, III, 366, 473, 590, V, 151, 176, 493; Stiff v., III, 450, 457; sword, IV, pt. 1, 127, VI, 15; travels, 1835, I, 287, V, 89; 1836, I, 346; 1837, I, 556, 558, 560, 561, 575-6, 577, V, 136, 137, 144, 146, 148; 1838, II, 184, V, 191; 1839, III, 50; 1841, III, 521, 555-8, 562, V, 472, 483; 1858, IV, pt. 2, 67; verses to, IV, pt. 1, 101; views on the Federal administration, 1857, IV, pt. 2, 69; free trade, III, 104; nullification, I, 542; Oregon question, IV, pt. 1, 128; writings: addresses and speeches, 1818, I, 30; 182—?, I, 77, 78, V, 41, 44; 1833?, I, 148, 165, V, 54; 1835, I, 193; 1836, I, 370, 467, 470; 1837, I, 560, 579, V, 144; 1838, II, 134, 212, 281, 283, 316 (inaugural, notes and suggestions for, II, 243, 274, 286, 314, 324; citation and comment, II, 396, 408, 424, V, 241), V, 196; 1839, I, 474, 510, III, 243, 251, 352, V, 356, 364; 1858, IV, pt. 2, 91; book reviews, I, 78, 88, III, 251, IV, pt. 2, 234, V, 45; editorials, I, 57, 69, 70, 71, 76, 165, IV, pt. 1, 156, V, 19, 22, 29, 30, 31, 66, VI, 79; historical and biographical, including notes, I, 163, 236, 279-87, 381, 512, 520, 523, 525-30, 544, 545, II, 10, 51, III, 228, 232, 237, 246, 251, 253, 255-64, 267-72, 278, 283, 284, 285-6, 287, 487, 594-6, 598, 599, IV, pt. 1, 29, 96-101, 123-6, 191, 192-3, 208, 210, 211-14, 215, 220, 224-35, 238, 239, 245, 252, 253, 254-8, 261, 273, 282, 298, IV, pt. 2, 13, 18, 30-6, 70-2, 189, 190, 191, 235-6, 237, 241 (citation and comment, II, 21, 38, IV, pt. 2, 37, VI, 340), V, 89-90, 127, 351, 365, 366, 375, 376, 383, 384, 391-8, 506, VI, 145-61, 171-81, 185, 197, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 303, 312, 379, 406, 407, 408, 438-67, 469-98; letters, 1822, I, 53, V, 19; 1836, I, 350, 370 (to the cabinet, citation and comment, I, 417, 423), I, 414, 416, 484, 488; 1837, I, 560, 561, 569, 573, 591, 592, V, 146, 155, 158; 1838, II, 43, 48, 134, 166, 194, 202, V, 178, 179; 1839, II, 458, 462, 465, 471, 489, 590, III, 3, 11, 24, 39, 50, 74, 95, 133, 139, 203; 1840, III, 308, 314, 369, 370, 399, 431, 436, 438; 1841, III, 488, 497, 573, V, 460; 1842, IV, pt. 1, 1, 6, 7, 14, 16, 19, V, 497; 1843, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 505; 1844, IV, pt. 1, 31; 1845, IV, pt. 1, 103, 106, 112, VI, 4; 1846, IV, pt. 1, 127, 133, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 150, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, VI, 15, 20, 22, 23, 25, 26, 27-28, 36, 40, 41, 67, 69, 72-4; 1847, IV, pt. 1, 158, 159-62, 165, 171-2, 175, 179-81, 186, 191, VI, 87, 91, 92, 138, 143; 1848, IV, pt. 1, 193, 196, 197, 200, VI, 163; 1849, IV, pt. 1, 203, 204, 206, VI, 168, 169, 170; 184—?, IV, pt. 1, 210, VI, 295; 1850, IV, pt. 1, 262, 263; 1851, IV, pt. 1, 284, VI, 314; 1852, IV, pt. 1, 286-7; 1854, IV, pt. 2, 15; 1857, IV, pt. 2, 40-1, 55, VI, 345; 1858, IV, pt. 2, 76, 91, 96-100, 107, 128, 136, 142-3, 145, 146, 161-3, 164-6, 167-8, 173, 174, 176, 178, 179, 184, 186, 188, 195, 200, VI, 378, 384, 391, 393, 395, 408-9; 1859, IV, pt. 2, 210, 212, 213, 215, 218, 219, 224, 226, 227-32, 233, VI, 418, 421, 423, 424, 429-30, 433; (correspondence with senate, comment, II, 21); messages, 1838, II, 344-69 (annual), 389; 1839, II, 402, III, 159 (annual, suggestion for, III, 146), III, 188, 207, 228, V, 350; 1840, III, 296, 303, 311, 315, 317, 464 (annual), 471; 1841, III, 592, V, 494 (annual); miscellaneous, I, 46, 89, 525, II, 385, 386, IV, pt. 2, 234, 236, 241, V, 7, 50-2, 128, 228, VI, 437, 467-9; official statements and memoranda: 1838, II, 386; 1846, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 74; 1847, IV, pt. 1, 157, 158, VI, 84, 90; 1858?, IV, pt. 2, 190, 192, VI, 408; orders, I, 406, II, 579, III, 139, 148, 202, IV, pt. 1, 145, 169, 171, 197; petition, IV, pt. 2, 130, VI, 368; preface, IV, pt. 2, 40; proclamation, II, 457; report, IV, pt. 1, 190; verse, I, 53, IV, pt. 1, 273, IV, pt. 2, 185, V, 11, 177, VI, 312, 392 (citation, IV, pt. 2, 195, VI, 408; review of *Verse Memorials*, IV, pt. 2, 68, VI, 356).
- Lamar, Mrs. Rebecca, III, 52, 66, 101, V, 301.

- Lamar, Rebecca Ann, I, 567, III, 61, 92, V, 152; death, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 504.
- Lamar, Shelby W., letters, II, 35, III, 475, V, 173, 453.
- Lamar, Dr. Thomas R., II, 148, VI, 168.
- Lamar (city), II, 555, III, 21, 66, 296, V, 398.
- Lambe, Robert, letters, III, 515, 528.
- Lampazos, presidial company, I, 61.
- Land, I, 75, 568, II, 37, 202, 455, 517, III, 31, 417, 444, 566, V, 174, 253, 269, 298, 439, 440; agencies: Henrie's, II, 303, V, 217; Royall's I, 548; bounty, I, 542, 561, 567, 595, II, 49, 139, 157, 159, 163, III, 504, IV, pt. 1, 103, 156, V, 133, 147, 153, 178, 181, 185, 186, 187, 464, VI, 5, 81; certificates, II, 589, III, 315, 317, 372, 537, 599; claims, I, 567, 574, II, 21, 37, 43, 436, 595, III, 78, 470, 504, V, 151, 159, 170, 174, 177, 245, 247, 464; commissioners, I, 261, III, 345, 380, 415, V, 421; contracts, I, 87; educational surveys, III, 571-2; frauds, I, 261, 443, II, 139, III, 214, 220, 299, 515; grants, I, 261, III, 20, 142, IV, pt. 1, 203, 204, 206, VI, 168, 169, 170; immigrants, III, 508; Indian, III, 372, 571-2; legislation, I, 583, II, 5, 139, III, 256, 315, 317, 481; litigation, III, 392; on Galveston Bay and Island, II, 204, III, 53, V, 301; patents, II, 453, 473, 595, III, 110, 315, 470, V, 311, 449; public, IV, pt. 1, 47; sales, I, 87, 216; scrip, I, 383, 464, 482, 561, 563, 583, 588, 595, II, 49, 211, 225, 296, III, 360, 470, IV, pt. 1, 110, V, 146, 195, 197, 215, 449, VI, 11; speculation, I, 292, 350, 383, 384, 386, 449, 462, 466, 535, 542, 547, 555, 572, 591, 596, II, 21, 40, 194-6, 211, 240, 399, 434, 524, III, 120, V, 119, 121, 134, 157, 163, 165, 170, 194, 200, 243; speculators, I, 241, 251, 462, II, 216, IV, pt. 1, 259; system, I, 251-3, 258, 259, 261, 265, 542, 548, 551, 556, 595, II, 41, 216, III, 508; tax, III, 120; titles, III, 474, 506, 581, V, 467, 488; trespass, IV, pt. 1, 126, VI, 15; values, I, 480, IV, pt. 1, 193, VI, 162.
- Land company of Redd and others, I, 572, II, 434, V, 157, 243.
- Land office of Georgia, I, 569, V, 155; of Texas, I, 295, 302, 556, V, 151.
- Landrum, V, 96.
- Landrum, Willis H., III, 123; regiment, III, 54.
- Lane, George, II, 498.
- Lane, John W., letter, II, 337.
- Langford, I, 596, V, 165.
- Laredo, alcalde, IV, pt. 1, 170; census, IV, pt. 1, 154, V, 44-65; capture and plunder, III, 439; conditions, 1846-7, IV, pt. 1, 155, 172, VI, 69; election, first under Texas laws, IV, pt. 1, 171, 172-4; Hays's expeditions against, IV, pt. 1, 229; guards (Mexican war), IV, pt. 1, 145, 146, 147-9, 150, 151-3, 154-6, 157, 158-9, 159-62, 162-5, 169-70, 172, 176, 177-81, 182-4, 185, 186, 187, 189, 193, 198-200, 201, VI, 24, 25-29, 30-1, 32-41, 65-72, 74-9, 84-7, 90-1, 92, 139, 140-1, 142, 165, 166; health, IV, pt. 1, 155, 158, VI, 69, 90; Indian depredations, IV, pt. 1, 155, 161, 166, 198, VI, 69; inhabitants, IV, pt. 1, 197; mail service, IV, pt. 1, 189, VI, 142; Mexican attack expected, IV, pt. 1, 181; Mexican troops, IV, pt. 1, 135; military occupation, IV, pt. 1, 143, 145, 155, 169, VI, 22, 69; sale of liquor forbidden, IV, pt. 1, 169; trade, IV, pt. 1, 158, VI, 89.
- LaSalle, V, 25, 28.
- Latimer, B. F., III, 214, V, 340.
- Lavaca, customs district, II, 404, III, 437, V, 234; settlement, I, 138; citizens' meeting, I, 125; committee, letter, I, 127.
- Lawhon, I, 295.
- Lawhon, Allen, letter, II, 383.
- Lawrence, III, 451.
- Lawrence, G. F., letter, II, 495, V, 263.
- Lawrence, William, letters, I, 481, II, 487.
- Lawson, Andrew, III, 214.
- League & Company, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 505.
- League, Andrews & Company, II, 432; letter, II, 505.
- Leal, Manuel, IV, pt. 1, 193.
- Leclerc, Frederick, letters, III, 225, 422.
- Le Blanc, Antoine, V, 272.
- Lee, Catherine, letter, III, 54.
- Lee, Joseph, joint invitation, III, 568, V, 487.
- Léger, Theodore, II, 29; draft, II, 28; letter, I, 590.
- Léger & Thompson, II, 29; disagreement with Jones, II, 154-5; letters, II, 38, 154, 162.
- Legislature of Coahuila and Texas, repeal of trade laws, I, 512.
- Legislature of Texas, act, *April 30, 1846*, IV, pt. 1, 132.
- Legrand, E. O., I, 577; letter, II, 443.
- Lehmann, Christian, letter, III, 410, V, 428.
- Leidesdorf, William A., letter, II, 519.
- Lemauer, VI, 185, 232.
- Lemos, Pedro, I, 165, IV, pt. 1, 189.
- Leonard, F. G., V, 92.
- Le Ray de Chaumont, Alexander, letter, I, 562; memorandum, II, 5.

- Lesassier, Luke, I, 142.
 Lester, James S., letters, III, 322, 419.
 Lettick, IV, pt. 1, 189, VI, 142.
 Levering, John, letters, II, 310, 523, III, 450, V, 219, 290, 442.
 Levert, Henry S., letter, II, 157.
 Lewis, H. K., I, 90.
 Lewis, William G., III, 158, 203, V, 324; letter, III, 203.
 Liberal party, Mexico, I, 313, 315, 321, 332.
Liberty (schooner), I, 309, 315.
 Likens, B. B., IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 140.
 Likens, Thomas M., IV, pt. 1, 147, VI, 25; case, IV, pt. 1, 146, 148-9, 150, 151, 152-3, 154, 156, VI, 24, 25-9, 30-1, 33-4, 35-9, 40-2, 65-72, 74; letters, IV, pt. 1, 146, 148, 152, 153, 154-5, VI, 24, 26, 35, 36, 67-8.
 Lind (Shawnee chief), III, 460.
 Lindley, Joseph, III, 39.
 Lindsay, James, letter, I, 90.
 Linn, Edward, letter, III, 443.
 Linn, John, V, 292.
 Linn, John P., II, 301; joint letter, II, 391.
 Linnee (Shawnee chief), III, 11.
 Linnville, Indian outbreak, 1840, III, 428, 432; port, III, 431, 432, V, 437.
 Lipan Indians, II, 43, 170, 303, 397; fight on Guadalupe River, 1820, IV, pt. 1, 191; friendliness, II, 306; hostilities on the Rio Grande, II, 585; removal urged, II, 559.
 Lipantitlan, I, 245, V, 87.
 Lipscomb, Abner S., letters, III, 448, 539, IV, pt. 1, 14.
Literary Register, V, 281.
 Littlejohn, Joseph B., Jr., II, 425.
 Little River, IV, pt. 1, 99; fort, III, 430.
 Lively, George W., letter, II, 333, V, 221.
Lively (schooner), IV, pt. 1, 209, 255.
 Livestock, importation, III, 515.
 Lizardi & Company, III, 9.
 Loan, public, for Texas, II, 212, 255, 274, 284, 373, 441, 452, 453, 509, 516, 524-8, 552, 594, III, 139, 371, 483, 525, 560, 562, V, 226, 251; advance, III, 1, 2; Houston's opposition, II, 243, III, 520; legislation, suggested, II, 212-14, 243, 274, III, 126; negotiations, II, 212, 274, 461, 509, 513, 524, 535, 564, 578, 594, III, 1, 2, 90, 96, 105, 120, 126-33, 146, 185-7, 190, 482, 486, 504, 505, 506, 508, 511, 513, 523, V, 326, 467, 470; precedents, III, 212, 216; prospects, III, 72, 185, 213, 216, 383.
 Lockrey, V, 90.
 Lockwood, Samuel, VI, 427, 429; letters, IV, pt. 2, 220, 222.
 Logan, William G., I, 239, 414.
 Logan, William M., letter, I, 414.
 Lombard, Francisco, I, 166.
 Long, James, I, 30, 34, II, 38, 51, 134, IV, pt. 2, 18, V, 6; death, III, 251, V, 365; declaration, I, 47; expeditions, 1819-21, I, 33, 34, 49-53, 512, III, 228, 279, 483, V, 351; interrogatories for, I, 44; letters, I, 46.
 Long, Jane H. Wilkinson (Mrs. James), I, 350, II, 34, 41, 134, III, 251, V, 5, 177, 365, VI, 181; biography, I, 2; letter, III, 198, V, 328.
 Long family, I, 512.
 Long, Dr. John, historical note, IV, pt. 1, 192, VI, 155.
 Longstreet, Augustus Baldwin?, letter, II, 1.
 Looney, I, 127.
 Lopez, Gaspar, letters, I, 51-3.
 Lopez, Narciso, IV, pt. 1, 261, 284, VI, 310, 314, 325.
 Lothrop, John T. K., II, 538, III, 409.
 Loud, John, III, 6.
 Loury, V, 188.
 Louisiana, aid to Texas from, I, 550; bishop, III, 222, V, 342; boundary, I, 70; governor, I, 33; Moses Austin's journey to, 1796-7, I, 3; medical board, II, 375.
Louisiana (schooner), II, 220.
Louisiana Advertiser, I, 45, 219.
 Louisville, Charleston and Cincinnati R. R., II, 572.
 Love, II, 492, V, 261.
 Love, James, II, 516, 497, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 505; letters, II, 552, III, 217, 353, 371, 380, 451, 506, 507, 541, V, 341; note of endorsement, III, 470, V, 450.
 Love, James?, III, 11.
 Love, William, letter, II, 206.
 Low, William, V, 169.
 Loyd, John, II, 475, V, 256.
 Lubbock, Francis Richard, letter, II, 225. (*See also* Fisher, Davis and Lubbock.)
 Luckie, S. M., II, 192.
 Luckie, Samuel H., I, 518, 531.
 Lumpkin, P. O., letter, II, 468, V, 254.
 Lusk, Sam. letter, II, 498, V, 290.
 Lusk and Handy, III, 450, 457, V, 442.
 Luzenberg, C. P., letter, II, 374.
 Lynch, J. B., agreement, II, 162, V, 187; letters, II, 436, III, 399, V, 245-7, 416.
 Lynch, Mrs. Nathaniel, *see Hardin*, Mrs. Martin.
 Lynch's Ferry, rendezvous, I, 92-3, 205.
 Lyons, G. L., letter, I, 452, V, 120.
 Lyons, S. L., letter, I, 518, V, 125.
 M. y Duclor, Francisco, I, 100, 119; letter, I, 101; order to, I, 100.

- Mabbitt, L. H., broadside, II, 532.
 McAllister, Thomas (free negro), II, 35, V, 172.
 McCall, George A., IV, pt. 1, 145, VI, 23.
 McCalla, Wm. L., III, 199, 204, V, 329, 337.
 McCarty, O. F., letter, II, 333.
 McClellan, II, 333.
 McCloskey, R. D., letter, III, 412, V, 430.
 McCloud, I, 318.
 McClung, Alexander Keith, III, 41.
 McConnell, D. D., IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 141.
 McCraven, William, letters, II, 192, 501, V, 265.
 McCraven, William M., I, 572, V, 157.
 McDonald, Daniel, V, 270.
 McDougal, claim, II, 383.
 McDougald, M., letter, I, 531.
 McDowell, George, letter, I, 574, V, 159.
 McDowell, William, I, 574, V, 159.
 MacFarlane, Alexander C., II, 483, V, 256, 290.
 MacFarlane, Nathan, joint receipts, IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 140.
 McGee, VI, 145.
 McGill, Prudentio (Karankawa chief), IV, pt. 1, 252.
 McGloin, James, III, 283, V, 378.
 McGowan, B., letter, II, 403.
 McGreal, Peter, III, 541, 543, V, 481, 482.
 McGuffey, Elizabeth Mansfield, III, 110, V, 311.
 McGuffin, Hugh, VI, 175.
 McIlheny, Samuel K., letter, III, 412.
 McIntire, I, 318.
 McIntosh, George S., I, 462, II, 508, 540, III, 397, 412, 498, 530, 566, V, 484; letter, III, 429.
 McIntyre, J. H., II, 515, V, 266, 268.
 McIver, Alexander, II, 555, 569.
 McKeen, Thomas C., letter, II, 273.
 McKenzie, Alexander, II, 522.
 Mackie, Henry, I, 515.
 McKinney, J. F., letter, I, 384.
 McKinney, R. W., letter, I, 435, V, 111.
 McKinney, Thomas F., II, 170, 217-9, IV, pt. 1, 190, V, 91, 170, 287, VI, 179; land speculation, II, 194-6; letter, III, 497.
 McKinney & Williams, I, 384, II, 142, VI, 179; letters, I, 383, III, 502, V, 463.
 McKinstry, George B., I, 93, 96, 115, 138, 140, 145, VI, 177; deed, I, 555; notes, III, 238, 242; order to, I, 100.
 McLaughlin, I, 91.
 McLaughlin, John, II, 14, V, 169, 170.
 McLellan, Rufus, letters, III, 14, 431, 461, V, 289.
 McLeod, Mrs., II, 302.
 McLeod, Hugh, I, 330, II, 169, 295, III, 473, 496, 514, IV, pt. 1, 106, 108, IV, pt. 2, 38, V, 305, VI, 171, 341; ability, II, 208; anecdote concerning, IV, pt. 1, 208; certificate, joint, III, 475; delegate to Southern Commercial Convention, 1855, IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327; letters, II, 171, 196, 209, 257, 265, 270, 293, 295, 296, 298, 302, 308, 341, 406, 423, III, 354, 437, 439, 462, 475, 516, 535, 538, IV, pt. 1, 144, IV, pt. 2, 26, 37, VI, 22, 340; orders, III, 183, 187; petition, joint, II, 578.
 McLeod, Hugh?, IV, pt. 1, 135, VI, 20.
 McLeod, John D., letters, II, 331, 343.
 McMullen, John, III, 283, 594, V, 378, 495; notes, I, 530.
 McMullen & McGloin's colony, III, 283, V, 378.
 McNeely, Samuel, I, 439, V, 117.
 McNeil & Woodson, I, 148.
 McNeilly, William Gibbs, letter, II, 572.
 McNutt, Alexander G., II, 475; letters, II, 542-3.
 Macomb, letter, III, 416, V, 103.
Macon News Carrier, editor, letter, I, 564, V, 149.
 Macon Volunteers, IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 4.
 McQueen, I, 92.
 Madden, Jim, II, 263.
 Maddox, John Newland, *Plea for Texas* . . . , I, 518.
 Magee, Augustus, expedition, IV, pt. 1, 192, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 145, 438.
 Mail service, III, 135, 145, 201, 306, 438, 440, 586, IV, pt. 1, 189, IV, pt. 2, 182, 184, VI, 142, 389.
 Maillard, III, 31.
 Maillard, Henry, letter, III, 56, V, 302.
Major Brown (United States war vessel), IV, pt. 1, 145, 146, 153, 158, VI, 22, 24, 39, 90.
 Malone, James M., II, 307.
 Managua, Francisco, III, 285, V, 385.
 Manchaca, company, II, 489.
 Manchaca, Antonio, II, 447, IV, pt. 2, 37, V, 250, VI, 337.
 Mann, Mrs. Pamela A., II, 586, III, 86.
 Manning & Marshall, II, 399.
 Manson, Thomas, letter, III, 218, V, 341.
 Maps, comment: Austin and vicinity, III, 330, 346, V, 405, 406; Buache's chart, etc., IV, pt. 1, 253, VI, 298.
 Marcy, William Larned, IV, pt. 1, 300.
 Marengo, Sebastian, IV, pt. 2, 233, VI, 433; joint letter, IV, pt. 2, 209.
 Marine Corps, I, 437.
 Marks, Samuel F., letter, I, 439, V, 117.
 Marmaduke, Colonel, V, 172.
 Marsh, Captain, V, 80.

- Marshall, Benjamin (half-breed Creek), petition, I, 70.
- Martha* (schooner), capture, III, 237, 250, V, 351, 357.
- Martin, I, 542, V, 134, 163.
- Martin, George, I, 591, 596, V, 163, 165; note, I, 557.
- Martin, John F., letter, II, 518.
- Martin, M. H., III, 55.
- Martin, Wylie, I, 92, 142, 148, 218, 512.
- Martines, Andrés, IV, pt. 1, 145, 154, 186, 198, VI, 44-65, 166; letter, IV, pt. 1, 145, VI, 22; statement, IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 33.
- Martinez, Antonio, I, 34, 45, 51-3, IV, pt. 1, 209; letter, I, 44.
- Mason, Charles, document, II, 14, V, 169; letters, III, 79, 372.
- Mason, John Thomas, I, 93; letter, II, 296, V, 215.
- Mason, Joseph B., letter, III, 498, V, 462.
- Mason, Samuel Watson, III, 498, V, 462.
- Matagorda, artillery company, III, 20; citizens, V, 446; citizens' recapture of the *Hannah Elizabeth*, I, 274; collector, II, 502; favorable to Lamar, II, 181; fortification advised, I, 309; public dinner, I, 146.
- Matagorda and Bay Prairie company, pledge, I, 242.
- Matagorda Bay, first settlement, III, 264.
- Matagorda Bulletin*, I, 587, 591, II, 168, V, 162, 312.
- Matamoros, I, 556, 583, IV, pt. 1, 215, V, 218, VI, 209, 213, 296; American occupation, 1846, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 79; commissary general, III, 285, V, 386; conditions, 1837, I, 563; custom house, I, 170; expedition against, I, 263, 272, 293, 313, 315, 321, 330, V, 94, 367; Mexican intentions regarding, I, 330; prisoners of war at, I, 439, II, 423, 537, III, 272, 286, V, 117, 367; weakness, I, 313, 441, V, 118.
- Matamoros Flag*, IV, pt. 1, 184.
- Mather, Mrs. Olivia A. Roberts, II, 523, V, 242, 249; letters, I, 575, II, 538.
- Mauzy, R. F., letter, III, 378, V, 420.
- May, George, II, 199-201.
- Mayer, F., letter, IV, pt. 2, 220, VI, 426.
- Mayfield, James, II, 256, 268, III, 45-7, 54-5, 475, 499, 544; agreement, IV, pt. 1, 17; letters, II, 452, 490, 496, III, 377-8, 411, 520, 530, 533, 560, 566, IV, pt. 1, 3, 18, V, 251, 420.
- Maylan, I, 86.
- Mayo, Harmon B., joint proclamation, I, 66.
- Mayrant, II, 157, III, 153, V, 322.
- Mayrant, J., letter, I, 584.
- Mays, Henry S., II, 330, V, 220.
- Mays, James A., letter, II, 157, V, 185.
- Mays, Robert C., letter, I, 409, V, 103, 220.
- Mays, Samuel A. J., I, 409, II, 330, V, 103, 220.
- Mayse, J. W., II, 181, 182.
- Mediation between Texas and Mexico: American, II, 573; English, II, 540.
- Medical department, III, 61.
- Medina, battle, I, 279, III, 255, IV, pt. 1, 123, 170, 192, 208, V, 28, 365, VI, 97, 145, 171-181.
- Megginson, Joseph C., letter, III, 568, V, 486.
- Meigs, Henry, I, 2; letters, I, 198, 202, 236, 240.
- Melton, Ethan, circular, II, 420.
- "Memorial to the United Mexican States," III, 474.
- Menard, M. B., joint letter, III, 474.
- Menard, Peter J., document, I, 279.
- Menchaca, José, IV, pt. 1, 253, VI, 299, 337, 339; biography, IV, pt. 2, 37, 71, VI, 337.
- Menchaca, José A., letter, IV, pt. 1, 198, VI, 166.
- Menchaca, Miguel, VI, 337, 339.
- Mendebil, D. Pablo, VI, 154.
- Méndez, Don Eleuterio, VI, 112, 119.
- Menefee, John S., letter, III, 437.
- Menefee, Thomas, I, 125, 127.
- Menefee, William, I, 117, III, 458; letter, I, 127.
- Mengle, III, 532.
- Mercurio del Puerto de Matamoros*, I, 169, 177, 190, 198, III, 285, V, 386.
- Merrel, VI, 100.
- Merritt, Robert, letter, II, 499.
- Metcalf, S. W., III, 307.
- Mexía, José Antonio, I, 145, 236, 513; addresses to, I, 141-3; attitude on statehood question, 1833, I, 160; information from, I, 309, invited to co-operate with Texans, I, 263; letters, I, 143, 449, 539.
- Mexican prisoners, I, 489; disposition of, I, 410-11; Lamar's letter on, I, 370; notes regarding, I, 544; sheriff's account for keeping, II, 440.
- Mexican War, IV, pt. 1, 134, 135, 136-44, 145, 146, 147-9, 150-3, 154-6, 157-83, 185, 193, 200, VI, 19, 20, 21-23, 24, 25-29, 30-41, 65-81, 84-91, 92-4, 138, 139, 140-1.
- Mexicans in Texas, III, 361; defeat by Burleson, II, 530; expulsion from Texas, 1832, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-

- 81; incursions near Austin, II, 587, III, 410, V, 428; influence on Texas frontier, IV, pt. 1, 161; influence upon slaves, III, 412; order regarding treatment of, II, 489; relations with Anglo-Americans, I, 125, 127; revolt, 1838, II, 198-202, 203, 205, 207, 208-11, 217-9, 223, 255, 265, 339, III, 117; robbers, II, 41, 183, IV, pt. 1, 166; Shawnee warned against alliance with, III, 11; traders, III, 563.
- Mexico, affairs, I, 76; armistice, 1843, IV, pt. 1, 21, 123; article upon, I, 444; attempt to establish authority of in Webb County, IV, pt. 1, 196; attitude towards robbers on Texas frontier, IV, pt. 1, 166; cabinet, I, 93; Catholic Church, IV, pt. 2, 241, VI, 497; centralization, I, 166-9, III, 283, V, 376; colonization policy, I, 163-4; conditions: 1835, I, 272; 1838, II, 14, V, 169; 1841, III, 499, 589; congress: Austin's plans for reorganization, cited, I, 54; decrees, I, 163; questions before, 1833, I, 160; unconstitutional assumption of power, 1835?, I, 277; conquest, I, 287, V, 89; constitution of 1824, Texans' attitude toward, I, 97, 141-3, 242; crisis, 1829, I, 70; distrust of, III, 381; expedition against, III, 427; faithlessness, III, 345; Filisola's representation to, I, 440; history, IV, pt. 1, 198, IV, pt. 2, 241; honors for army, 1836, I, 332; Indian allies and negotiations, I, 534, III, 471, IV, pt. 1, 166; invasion of by Spain, 1829-30, I, 55; invasion of Texas, 1842, IV, pt. 1, 35; 1836-42, I, 405-8, 562, 596, II, 14, 295, III, 329, 353, 371, 499, 506, IV, pt. 1, 3, V, 169; Liberals, I, 315, 321-3, 332; loyalty of Texans to, I, 120, 128-30, 131, 137; memorial to, III, 474; mines, IV, pt. 1, 203; minister of, to the United States, II, 274; minister of Texas to, II, 512; ministry of relations, decree, I, 163; ministry of war and marine, I, 540; mission of Bee to, II, 513, III, 18, 28, 35, 125; of Hockley and Williams, IV, pt. 1, 24, 47, V, 511; of Treat, III, 141, 197; of Webb, III, 517-9, 539, 541, 560; officers, rumored desertion to Texas, I, 563; organic act, Oct. 10, 1835, IV, pt. 1, 258, VI, 300; peace negotiations and prospects, I, 449, II, 373, 399, 452, III, 131, 142, 155, 360, 371, IV, pt. 1, 21, 123, V, 251; policy regarding, III, 425, 563; presidential decree, I, 163; relations: with France, II, 238; with Texas, II, 198, III, 377, V, 420; with the United States, II, 138, V, 179; revolutionary movements, 1833-47, I, 93, 160, 166-9, 315, 384, II, 299, 335, III, 321, IV, pt. 1, 191, VI, 143; supreme government, I, 54; proclamation cited, I, 445; resistance to, 1826, I, 66; Texan operations against, suggested, I, 419, II, 272, 292, III, 13; treaty with the United States cited, II, 294; troops in Texas, 1836, I, 315, 349, 352, 387, 401; "war and rumors of war," 1833, I, 160, V, 52. (See also War of Independence.)
- Mexico, northern, I, 315, 335, III, 321, 364, IV, pt. 1, 181, 191, VI, 143.
- Mexico (City), battle and capture, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 182, 184, VI, 140; capture by Guerrero, I, 576.
- Mexico (state), congress, report, I, 71.
- Mier y Terán, Manuel, see Terán, Manuel.
- Milam, Benjamin R., I, 86, V, 49, 545; memorial cited, III, 199, V, 330; siege of Bexar, I, 262, 368, V, 96.
- Milam County, citizens, petition, II, 521, V, 273; troops to operate in, II, 340; sketches of, IV, pt. 1, 31.
- Milam Guards, IV, pt. 1, 29; honorary members, II, 224-5; resolution, II, 224.
- Milburn, David H., I, 138.
- Miles, VI, 99.
- Militia, Mexican, I, 64; Texán, I, 410, 414, II, 293, 306, 308, 402, 404, 425, 490, III, 57, 200, 342, 386, 412, V, 242, 332, 411, 423.
- Millard, Henry, I, 502, 504-5, 506; certificate, III, 417; letters, I, 488, III, 417, 439, V, 438.
- Milledgeville (Georgia), State Rights meeting, resolutions, I, 161.
- Miller & Dexter, letter, III, 354.
- Miller, Burchard, document, III, 358; letter, II, 486, V, 258.
- Miller, James B., I, 220, 236; breach with Travis, I, 218; historical notes from, III, 256.
- Miller, James H. C., letter, I, 218.
- Miller, John, letter, II, 139.
- Miller, Morris S., VI, 167.
- Miller, W. D., letter, IV, pt. 1, 195.
- Miller, William P., II, 335, 403.
- Millet, William E., letter, II, 569, V, 283.
- Mills, John T., letters, II, 531, III, 534, V, 272, 477.
- Milton, John, letters, I, 445, 507, II, 522, IV, pt. 1, 13.
- Mims, Samuel?, I, 452, V, 119.
- Mina, Xavier, biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, IV, pt. 2, 235-6, VI, 171-181, 438, 453.
- Mina (Texas), I, 236; committee of safety, I, 240.

- Mines and mineral resources of Texas, II, 416, III, 27, 415.
- Mining company, V, 200.
- Miracle, Julian Pedro, Indian missionary, I, 572, II, 307.
- Miranda, Francisco, expedition, IV, pt. 1, 253.
- Mitchell, Asa, letters, I, 98, 139, V, 259.
- Mitchell, Dr. B. B., V, 172.
- Mitchell, James C., III, 378.
- Mitchell, William J., letter, II, 33, V, 172.
- Mobile Advertiser*, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 308.
- Mobile Register*, IV, pt. 1, 263.
- Model* (pilot boat), II, 136.
- Molano, Juan, III, 369, V, 416.
- Möllhausen, H., III, 330, V, 406; letters, III, 330, 351, V, 405; sketch, III, 346.
- Monchaca, *see* Menchaca.
- Monclova, I, 523, V, 127; disturbances, 1834-5, I, 204, IV, pt. 1, 96.
- Monell, Charles, III, 191, 199, V, 331; letter, III, 192.
- Money, Texan, *see* currency.
- Monterey, capture, 1846, IV, pt. 1, 136-40, 193, VI, 161; Santa Anna's plan to retake, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 32.
- Monterey Pioneer*, IV, pt. 1, 169.
- Montague & Pomeroy's hotel, V, 283.
- Montgomery, P. M., III, 21.
- Montgomery Advertiser and State Gazette*, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 308.
- Montgomery County, southern boundary, II, 544.
- Moody, J. A., letter, III, 342, V, 410.
- Moody, John W., III, 5, 79, V, 307; letters, I, 574, II, 542.
- Moore, II, 372, V, 225.
- Moore, II, 535.
- Moore, Charles, III, 511, 513, V, 470; letters, III, 460, 463, 511.
- Moore, Edwin Ward, III, 144, 448, 458, 474, 504, V, 295, 309, 465; capture of Mexican prize, III, 471; document, IV, pt. 1, 25; instruction to Wheelwright, III, 452; letters, III, 409, 412, 414, IV, pt. 1, 189; treatment, IV, pt. 2, 32.
- Moore, Dr. Francis, II, 170; certificate, III, 474; characterized, III, 60, IV, pt. 1, 5, V, 304; letters, II, 164, 572, III, 349; life and career before emigrating to Texas, II, 240, V, 202; political affiliations, II, 209, 483, IV, pt. 1, 5, 104; violation of pledge, II, 177.
- Moore, John H., I, 240, III, 419, 428, 444, V, 439; letter, I, 241.
- Moore, John W., expedition against Anahuac, I, 205-6; letter, II, 489.
- Moore, Thomas J., II, 397.
- Mordecai, B. H., I, 386, II, 547, V, 278, VI, 170.
- Morehouse, E., I, 488, II, 513, VI, 172; historical note, III, 272; letters, I, 504-5.
- Moreland, Isaac N., II, 473; letter, III, 102.
- Moreland, J. W., joint letter, II, 576.
- Moreland, Joseph, letters, II, 295, III, 525.
- Moret, Juan, I, 127.
- Morewood, II, 414, V, 235.
- Morgan, III, 533.
- Morgan & Reed, IV, pt. 1, 298.
- Morgan, S. H., III, 343.
- Morgan, James, I, 91, 123, 484, 561, 580, III, 53, 418, 445, V, 301; notes from, IV, pt. 1, 298.
- Morning Star* (Houston), III, 220.
- Morris, F. A., III, 322, 555, 558.
- Morris, John D., III, 313.
- Morris, Robert, case, III, 183-5.
- Morris, Robert C., I, 330, V, 96.
- Morrison, I, 117.
- Morse, G. W., letter, III, 424, V, 434.
- Morse, Samuel F. B., II, 546.
- Morton, John V., letters, III, 450, 457.
- Moseley, Elijah, V, 32.
- Moseley, J. W., letter, II, 335.
- Muldoon, Michael (*Padre*), I, 93, 148, V, 52, II, 559; imprisonment, I, 583-5; letter, I, 100.
- Murray, Louisa, letter, III, 386, V, 422.
- Muscos, *see* Musquiz.
- Muse, James Fort, letter, II, 186.
- Muse, K. H., II, 534; letter, II, 515, 401.
- Music, instruments, V, 283.
- Musquiz, Ramón, I, 123, 128-30, 137, IV, pt. 1, 166; address, I, 121.
- Mustian, J. L., II, 136.
- Myers, William, V, 279.
- Nacogdoches, I, 98, 265, 563, II, 170, III, 268, 560; citizens' petition, II, 555, presented, II, 569; conditions, 1836, I, 295; fight at, 1832, I, 145-7; post office, I, 251, 259; press, I, 302; public dinner, public meeting, III, 587, 589, V, 489; re-peopling, III, 257, V, 366; Supreme Court session, III, 308-11.
- Nacogdoches County, attempts to divide into factions, II, 576; Burnet's chances, 1841, III, 566; land scrip, IV, pt. 1, 110, VI, 11.
- Nacogdoches, Department, land distribution, I, 204.
- Nacogdoches, district, aid requested for, 1832, I, 145; inhabitants, proclamation to, I, 69; judge, I, 263.
- "Nacogdoches madmen," I, 69.
- Nacogdoches Telegraph*, V, 94.

- Nail, V, 96.
- Nashville (Tennessee), citizens' meeting, address, I, 253.
- Natchitoches, III, 20, 257, V, 291, 366; arrival of foreign troops, I, 44.
- National Banner* (Houston), II, 8, 168, 172.
- National Intelligencer* (Houston), III, 20, 31, V, 291, 297.
- Natzmer, B. von, letter, IV, pt. 2, 36.
- Naval service of Texas, shipping articles, III, 443.
- Navarro, José Antonio, I, 70, 75-6, 78, III, 532, V, 39-41, 48, 49; autobiography, III, 597; biography of Santa Anna cited, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355; historical note, III, 525; letters, II, 337, III, 321, 524.
- Navarro, Luciano, letter, III, 60, V, 304.
- Navarro family, politics, III, 439.
- Navidad settlement, citizens' meeting, I, 125, 138.
- Navy of Texas, III, 319, 332, 437, 489, 515, 584, II, 136, 243, 307, 396, 416, 576, 580, III, 28, 53, 60, 81, 296, 427, 445, V, 124, 218, 237, 275, 303, 308; agent, II, 535, 580, III, 472; commander-in-chief, III, 23, V, 295; commended, III, 349; court martial ordered, III, 449; destitution, II, 314; disposition, III, 353, 365; estimates for vessel, II, 425; force, IV, pt. 1, 25; officers, III, 188, 296, 305, 314, 406, 448, 504, IV, pt. 1, 104, 130, V, 465, VI, 8; purchase of vessels for, I, 489, II, 396; retrenchment suggested, II, 561; service in, II, 492, IV, pt. 1, 103-4, VI, 7, 8; station, Galveston, II, 314; storekeeper, III, 44, 60, V, 303; supplies, II, 558, 561, III, 34; vessels built at Baltimore under Williams & Dawson's contract, II, 411, 500, 531, 535, 540, 573, 576, 578, V, 273.
- Navy Department, Texas, I, 274, II, 403; accounts, III, 227, 358, 389; obligations, III, 362, 363; order cited, II, 558; records, extract, I, 274; secretary, II, 208, 553, III, 233, V, 351.
- Navy of the United States, Campbell's service, IV, pt. 2, 18; appointment in, asked for Texas officers, IV, pt. 1, 104, 106, 130, VI, 8.
- Neal, Abner, letter, II, 159, V, 186.
- Neal, Anson G., VI, 99.
- Neches, inhabitants, I, 69.
- Neches & Angelina navigation company, III, 226, V, 343.
- Neches River, Indians on, III, 372.
- Negroes, importation, I, 480, III, 387; in the Kickapoo fight, II, 265.
- Neill, Andrew, II, 299, III, 375; letter, II, 289.
- Neill, J. C., document, I, 309, V, 93; letter, I, 297.
- Neil, J. C.?, I, 319.
- Nelson, Hugh, III, 299.
- Nelson, William, IV, pt. 2, 147.
- Neptune* (steamer), II, 589.
- Newcomb, Captain, VI, 121-3.
- Newell, Stewart, III, 36.
- Newlands, John Alexander, II, 407, V, 234.
- New Mexico, attack expected, I, 32; defense, I, 64; inhabitants, letter to, III, 488; veteran companies, I, 62.
- New Orleans, I, 70, II, 526; citizens' meeting, proceedings, I, 244; commercial convention, 1855, IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327, 329; money conditions, 1839, III, 33; opinions for and against Texas, I, 513.
- New Orleans Bee*, I, 236, 243, III, 504, 505, 506, V, 467.
- New Orleans Commercial Bulletin*, I, 220, 369-70, 399, 409, 424, V, 80.
- New Orleans Courier*, I, 253.
- New Orleans Grays, V, 92, 96.
- New Orleans Observer*, II, 424, V, 241.
- New Orleans Picayune*, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 32.
- Newspapers of Texas, I, 542, 560, 575, 577, 578, 579, 587, 590-1, II, 8, 13, 28-9, 41, 154-5, 158, 162, 165, 168, 170, 172, 175, 208, 240, 402, 558, III, 31, 92, 135, 199, 340, 505, V, 134, 144, 160, 161, 162, 177, 202, 280, 297, 309, 315, 466.
- "New York Company business," I, 93.
- New York* (steam packet), II, 441, III, 296, V, 248.
- New York Herald*, II, 486, IV, pt. 1, 261, IV, pt. 2, 78, 161.
- New York Star*, II, 314.
- Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 37, 74, VI, 340; American colonists, IV, pt. 2, 142; amnesty decree, 1858, comment, IV, pt. 2, 91; attitude of the United States toward, IV, pt. 2, 179; claims against, IV, pt. 2, 79, 104, 181, 206, 215, 226, VI, 386, 423, 430; conditions, 1858, IV, pt. 2, 76, 135; congress: IV, pt. 2, 190, 225, 226, VI, 407; decree, IV, pt. 1, 206; letter, IV, pt. 2, 210, VI, 418; constituent assembly, IV, pt. 2, 135, VI, 372; European anti-American influence, IV, pt. 2, 142; government: IV, pt. 2, 94; unconstitutionality, IV, pt. 2, 148; feeling toward the United States, IV, pt. 2, 146, 148, 206; foreign policy, IV, pt. 2, 129, 135; foreign relations, IV, pt. 2, 222, 226, 227, VI, 427, 430; historical notes regarding,

- IV, pt. 2, 190, VI, 408; "Lake Steamers," IV, pt. 2, 96; military order, IV, pt. 2, 72, VI, 361; mission of Lamar to, IV, pt. 2, 229; officials IV, pt. 2, 104; presidents aids-de-camp, IV, pt. 2, 200; question, IV, pt. 2, 232; revolution, IV, pt. 2, 80, 177; Schlesinger's transaction with, IV, pt. 2, 200; slavery in, IV, pt. 2, 45; "Stebbins-White contract," IV, pt. 2, 96; transit and canal operations, IV, pt. 2, 137, 147, 215, 217; troubles, IV, pt. 2, 228; Walker's "reign of horror," IV, pt. 2, 192.
- Nicknames, pseudonyms, given names without surnames, initials: A, IV, pt. 1, 28; A. E. & Co., IV, pt. 1, 47, VI, 3; Agnes, II, 198, V, 192; Alamo, III, 53; Aristides, IV, pt. 1, 3, 6-13; Big Mingo, III, 537; Bolingbroke, III, 86; Caroline, II, 184, III, 473, V, 191; Citizens of Texas, IV, pt. 1, 111; *Unos Costaricenses*, IV, pt. 2, 132, 141, VI, 369, 375; Emily, III, 125; Esau, III, 537; *Fidus Achates* of the Republic of Texas, IV, pt. 1, 126, VI, 13; Genius of Matagorda, III, 365; George Mason, IV, pt. 1, 262, VI, 310; Great Ex., III, 353; I & Gt., I, 318; Jane, I, 404, V, 101; John, II, 198; Jostos, I, 230; Juan, IV, pt. 1, 286-7; Junius, I, 577; Mary Ann, I, 576; Milam, IV, pt. 1, 287; Mrs. D., II, 184, V, 191; Myself, III, 120; Old Ben the African, III, 79; Old Commodore, II, 411; Old Roman, V, 305; Old Sam, II, 196; Old Settler, IV, pt. 1, 47-96; *Un patriote*, II, 8, V, 169; *Primus*, I, 567, V, 152; Publius, III, 392; S. F., I, 568; Spirit of the South, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 308; William, IV, pt. 2, 15.
- Nile* (brig), I, 579, V, 162.
- Niles & company, V, 281.
- Niles, J. W. J., II, 28, III, 79; letters, I, 591, II, 13, 165.
- Niles' Weekly Register*, I, 70.
- Nixon, I, 145, 307.
- Noel, A. W., letter, II, 269, V, 205.
- Nolan, Philip, operations in Texas, I, 279, III, 283, IV, pt. 1, 253, IV, pt. 2, 235, VI, 299, 438.
- Norman, Steel & Company, letter, II, 333, V, 222.
- Norris, Samuel?, II, 223.
- North, Stephen B., letter, II, 292, V, 214.
- Norton, B. H., letter, II, 469, V, 286.
- Norwood, Math., III, 417.
- Nueces County, first election, IV, pt. 1, 171, 173-5; representative, IV, pt. 1, 88.
- Nueces River, II, 414, III, 58, IV, pt. 1, 157, V, 236; armed force upon, II, 585; cantonment on, I, 245; division of force on, I, 341; Fannin's suggestions for concentrating troops upon, I, 309; public domain beyond, II, 139.
- Nuevo León, I, 190; liberal movement, 1836, I, 313; revolution, 1838, IV, pt. 1, 170, VI, 97-138. (*See also* Coahuila, Nuevo León and Texas.)
- O'Connell, Daniel, attack upon Texas, III, 205, 422, 429.
- Odd Fellows, III, 410.
- O'Donoju, VI, 183, 217.
- O'Fallon, Benjamin, I, 32.
- Olds, Gamaliel S., letter, III, 26.
- Old Stone Fort, III, 268.
- Orcoquisas Indians, III, 284, V, 383.
- Ordnance Department, Hockley's recommendations, II, 338, 370, 375, III, 136, 138, V, 316.
- Oscar (schooner), I, 575, 579, V, 162.
- O'Shaughnessy, James, III, 448.
- Overton, John, III, 334.
- Owen, Hardeman, I, 193.
- Owen, Harrison, document, II, 436.
- Owen, James D., joint petition, III, 350.
- Pabstmann, Valentine, III, 14.
- Pace, Westley W., III, 155, V, 323.
- Pacho, Juan Maria, I, 90.
- Pacific coast policy, II, 384, III, 517.
- Pacific railroad, IV, pt. 2, 26; stock, IV, pt. 2, 37, VI, 340.
- Padilla, J. A.?, I, 2, V, 88.
- Page, Fred B., letter, II, 484.
- Page, Robert, joint letter, II, 473.
- Pagés, Bartolomé, declaration, I, 441.
- Paguire, II, 524, V, 272.
- Pakenham, Richard, II, 567, 583, 599, III, 9.
- Paldi, Ange, letter, III, 534, V, 477.
- Palmer, VI, 99, 133.
- Palmer, V. R., II, 334-5, V, 222; letters, II, 303, 306.
- Palmerston, Henry John Temple, Viscount, III, 111.
- Pantaleón, I, 332.
- Paredes, Mariano, IV, pt. 1, 193.
- Parham, F. A., letter, III, 470, V, 451.
- Park, Thomas, II, 572, III, 14, V, 288.
- Parker, A., certificate, IV, pt. 1, 153, VI, 38.
- Parker, Cynthia Ann, IV, pt. 1, 38.
- Parker, Daniel, I, 295.
- Parker, J. W., II, 583, V, 287.
- Parker, James W., letter, IV, pt. 1, 38; memorial, II, 493.
- Parker, John, IV, pt. 1, 38.
- Parker, W. W., II, 208, III, 199.
- Parker's Fort, IV, pt. 1, 38.

- Parmalee, R., III, 587.
 Parmer, Martin, III, 61.
 Parrott, Captain, V, 97.
 Parrott, Elizabeth (Mrs. T. F. L.),
 deed, I, 555.
 Parsons, Augustus, II, 33, V, 172.
 "The Parting Kiss" (Lamar), cited,
 III, 590, V, 491.
Passaic (schooner), I, 441.
 Patents, application for, II, 273, 312,
 342, III, 120, 199, V, 330.
 Patin, William, letter, II, 461.
 Patrick, George M., I, 90, 464, V, 120;
 letter, I, 466, V, 122.
 Patrick, Mrs. George M., I, 90.
 Patterson Robert, orders, IV, pt. 1,
 143, 145, VI, 22.
 Patterson, William, II, 243.
 Patillo, G. A., letter, III, 340.
 Patton, Alexander, document, I, 323;
 letter, I, 346.
 Paul, P. C., document, IV, pt. 1, 199,
 VI, 166.
 Peace negotiations, between Texas and
 Mexico, II, 373, 399, III, 155, 371.
 Peace, W. J., IV, pt. 1, 201, VI, 167.
 Peacock, V, 96.
 Pearman, W. J., letter, II, 180, V, 189.
 Pecan Point, V, 7.
 Peck, S. R., I, 239, V, 91.
 Peebles, L. S., I, 204.
 Peebles, Robert, letter, III, 21.
 Pemberton, A. H., letter, III, 72, V,
 306.
 Pendleton, Benjamin S., II, 158.
 Pennington, Sidney O., I, 344.
 Pennoyer, II, 274.
Pennsylvania (schooner), I, 412.
The People, I, 158, 168.
 Peraza, Martín Francisco, III, 567, 568,
 V, 487.
 Peraza, Mateo, I, 539.
 Perez, Ignacio expeditions. 1819-21, I,
 51-3, III, 282, V, 6; letter, I, 34.
 Perez, José Rosa, letters, IV, pt. 2, 213,
 217.
 Perkins, Austin, I, 567, V, 150.
 Perkins, E. S., III, 511; letter, III,
 519.
 Perry, Emily Austin (Mrs. James
 Franklin), I, 90, 95, VI, 176, 177.
 Perry, Gerald Raoul, IV, pt. 2, 213, VI,
 423; letters, IV, pt. 2, 188, 213, VI,
 422.
 Perry, Henry, IV, pt. 2, 236, VI, 453;
 certificate, I, 4, VI, 330; operations
 in Texas, I, 279, III, 285, IV, pt. 2,
 235, V, 384, VI, 438.
 Perry, James, letter, III, 423, V, 430.
 Perry, James Franklin, I, 90, 95; let-
 ters, I, 534, 556, 589, II, 400.
 Perry, Stuart, I, 463; letters, I, 482,
 558, II, 220-2.
 Pettus, William, I, 92; document, I,
 279, VI, 180; notes, IV, pt. 1, 224,
 245.
 Peyton, J. C., IV, pt. 1, 255.
 Phelan, Andrew J. F., III, 416-7, 418.
 Phelan, Richard, I, 566.
 Phelps, Henry C., letter, II, 26.
 Phelps, Mrs. Sarah V., II, 26, 528.
 Philadelphia, public meeting, 1839, III,
 72.
 Philosophical society of Philadelphia,
 II, 435, V, 244.
 Piedras, José de las, I, 123, 545, VI,
 268; alliance with Indians, I, 145;
 expulsion, 1832, III, 238, 268; letter,
 I, 94.
 Pigeon Roost and Mining company of
 Georgia, II, 194.
 Pierce, G. W., statement, IV, pt. 1, 148,
 VI, 28.
 Pilie, L. J., letter, II, 531, V, 273;
 maps, comment, III, 11; theft and
 punishment, III, 62.
 Pilkington, Samuel, II, 473, III, 135,
 V, 255, 316.
 Pillans, P. J., III, 506, V, 467; letters,
 III, 531, 533, V, 478.
 Pillman, James F., V, 92.
 Piper, Silvester, letter, III, 322, V, 401.
 Piper, Thomas, III, 322, V, 401.
 Pitkin, John W., III, 366, 428, 439, V,
 436; letters, III, 125, 427, V, 434.
 Pitkin Guards, III, 439.
 Pitman, L. F., V, 91.
 Placadores, I, 313.
 Platt, P. L., letter, III, 452.
 Plummer, II, 155.
 Plummer, Mrs. Clarissa Parker, IV, pt.
 1, 38.
 Plummer, Joseph E., letter, III, 572.
 Plummer, Samuel A., II, 583; letters,
 II, 452, 492, 516, 524, 534, 573, III,
 33, 66, 381, 392, V, 251, 261.
Pocket (brig), III, 34.
 Poinsett, Joel Roberts, I, 576, III, 35,
 IV, pt. 2, 241, VI, 230.
 Polk, James Knox, IV, pt. 1, 104, 106,
 108, 123, 165, VI, 8.
 Pollard, Dr. Amos, V, 93.
 Pollitt, George, V, 284.
 Pontois, Edouard, III, 82, 86.
 Ponton, Andrew, I, 220.
 Pool, VI, 127.
 Port Caddo, II, 298.
 Porter, III, 539.
 Porter, B. A., letter, I, 137.
 Porter, Charles, letter, II, 425.
 Porter, David, letter, I, 70, V, 265.
 Porter, J. W., joint petition, II, 521.
 Porter, W., III, 113; letter, I, 417, V,
 104.
 Porter, Dr., IV, pt. 1, 286.

- Porter, William N., letter, III, 514, V, 470.
- Portis, D. Y., letter, II, 299.
- Ports of Texas, blockade threatened, II, 243, 274.
- Postal service, *see* mail service.
- Postell, William Ross, III, 409, 448, 449; letter, III, 449.
- Post Office Department of Texas, III, 115, 431, 434, 436, 438, 440.
- Potomac* (brig), I, 595, V, 164.
- Potter, M. M., III, 568, V, 486.
- Potter, Reuben M., I, 302, III, 415, 445; letters, II, 307, III, 531, 532, 539, 566, IV, pt. 1, 19, V, 218, 474, 481, 485.
- Potter, Reuben M., III, 506.
- Powel, Thomas J., letters, III, 211, 499, V, 338.
- Powell, Thomas A., III, 254, 264.
- Power, III, 531, V, 474.
- Power, James, imprisonment, IV, pt. 1, 239.
- Power & Hewitson's Colony, III, 264; IV, pt. 1, 239.
- Powers, II, 216.
- Prairie Indians, II, 255.
- Pratt, Thomas, letters, II, 441, 523, 534, 568, III, 302, V, 248, 271, 274, 282, 398.
- Prentiss, Francis, III, 133; letters, III, 79, 133.
- Prentiss, Francis?, II, 441, 61, V, 248.
- President's house, fittings, II, 424.
- Preston, C. C., letter, II, 433.
- Price, VI, 99.
- Price, Charles M., II, 579.
- Printing press, V, 297.
- Prison conditions, 1839, II, 456.
- Prisoners, expense account for keeping, II, 489.
- Prisoner, mysterious, at Bexar, VI, 181.
- Privateering, IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 5.
- Proctor, Mrs. Elizabeth, II, 537.
- Provisional government of Texas, I, 260, 298, 301, 309, 314, 344, V, 93; opposition to, I, 295, 302; report to, I, 274.
- Public buildings, III, 40.
- Public debt of Texas, adjusting, IV, pt. 2, 17; auditing, IV, pt. 1, 131; increase during Lamar's administration, IV, pt. 2, 16; interest, III, 81.
- Public printing, II, 402, 559, III, 202, 412, V, 281.
- Puelles, José María, reports, I, 70, V, 24.
- Pulaski* (steamer), II, 136, 140, 196, 257.
- Purcell, Edward, letter, III, 295.
- Quarterly* of the Texas State Historical Association, I, 127, 165, 309, 312-13, 314, 317, 322, 334, 338, 344, 353, 408, 435, 481, 502.
- Quijano, Don Ignacio, V, 457.
- Quin, Caleb, III, 565; petition, III, 226, V, 349.
- Quin, Michael, V, 292.
- Quintana custom house, II, 400.
- Quintero, J. A., review, IV, pt. 2, 68, VI, 356.
- Quintero, J. N., letter, IV, pt. 2, 67, VI, 355.
- Quirk, VI, 145.
- Quitman, John A., joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 38.
- Rabb, A., IV, pt. 1, 215.
- Radcliff, Edward G., III, 296.
- Ragan, A. B., letter, II, 194.
- Ragsdale, Thomas, historical note, III, 276.
- Raguet, Condy, letter, III, 473, V, 452.
- Raguet, Henry, I, 239.
- Railroads, need of, III, 35; projects, II, 186, 399.
- Rains, Emory, II, 274, 534, V, 212; note, II, 511.
- Ramblers' Sketch Book*, prospectus, III, 397, V, 427.
- Ramesburgh, Jacob, I, 114.
- Ramey, I, 117.
- Ramirez, Norberto, IV, pt. 1, 207; decree, IV, pt. 1, 207.
- Ramón, I, 86.
- Ramón, José María, IV, pt. 1, 192, 193, VI, 165; joint letter, IV, pt. 1, 197, VI, 164.
- Rancho de Santo Domingo*, inhabitants, certificate, IV, pt. 1, 201.
- Rangers, II, 256.
- Rankin, George H., II, 535, V, 275.
- Ransom, James B., III, 458, 512, 514, 569, 582; letters, II, 515, III, 57, 62, 453, V, 268, 444; notes, II, 474, V, 255.
- Rapp, IV, pt. 2, 18.
- Ratliffe, James R., receipts, IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 141.
- Ravis, James P., IV, pt. 1, 220, VI, 297.
- Rawdon, Wright, Hatch & Edson, letters, II, 538, 561, V, 276, 282.
- Rawls, Daniel, I, 117.
- Ray, Samuel J., IV, pt. 1, 262, 263.
- Raymond, Charles H., III, 305, V, 399; letter, III, 455.
- Raymond, James H., VI, 168.
- Read, Ezra, II, 538, III, 144; letter, III, 63; memorial, II, 416.
- Read, Harriette Fanning, letters, IV, pt. 2, 59, VI, 350, 351.
- Recess appointments, III, 89, 149-51, 188, 296.
- Recognition of the independence of Texas, I, 405, 464, 509, 532, II, 24;

- by Belgium, III, 82; by England, II, 24, 241, 243, 508, III, 82, 111, 113, 118, 126-33, 216, 415, 429; by France, II, 24, 238, 241, 508, 526, 535, 540, III, 77-8, 82, 86, 92, 96, 126-33, 155, 216; by Mexico, I, 513, II, 582, 583, 598; by Russia, II, 384; by Spain, III, 445; by the United States, I, 349, 447.
- Recruiting, I, 419, 435, II, 529, III, 32-3, 42, 60, 66, 214, V, 300, 304, 340; difficulties, II, 293-4.
- Redfish Bar, custom difficulties, IV, pt. 1, 298.
- Red Lander*, III, 199.
- Redlanders, I, 415, 419.
- Red lands, II, 171, 205.
- Red River country, II, 172, III, 544, IV, pt. 1, 126; free navigation, II, 290; Indian troubles, III, 276, IV, pt. 1, 221, 273; road from Austin to, III, 419; settlement, I, 415, III, 276, IV, pt. 1, 126, 217, VI, 14; Shawnee settlement, I, 55-6, 63.
- Red River County, III, 192.
- Red Rovers of Alabama, I, 338; expense accounts, I, 260, 276.
- Redd, Charles A., letters, I, 535, III, 455.
- Redd, William D., I, 535, II, 528, III, 409, 455; historical note, I, 387; letters, I, 386, 401, 441, 463, 513, 542, 572, II, 34, 48, 492, III, 60, V, 118, 134, 157, 260, 304.
- Reed, Hugh; statement, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 30.
- Reed, James & Company, I, 556, 589.
- Rees, Joseph, I, 100.
- Refugio, mission, I, 331; battle, II, 10; families in, II, 174, 183.
- Refugio County, boundaries, II, 139; land surveys, etc., II, 41; land system, status, 1838, II, 216; notary public, III, 5.
- Reid, A. B., I, 561, V, 147.
- Reid, James, IV, pt. 1, 298.
- Reid, John R., II, 495, 501, III, 460, V, 261, 265; letters, III, 316, 321, 460, 510, 568, V, 400, 401, 487.
- Reily, James, II, 526, 555, IV, pt. 2, 43; connection with Texas loan, II, 492, 509, 513, III, 124, V, 261; instructions to, II, 458; letters, II, 569, III, 151, V, 284, 321.
- Reily, Mrs. James, III, 151, V, 321.
- Rejón, Donaciano G., III, 567, 568, V, 487.
- Relics in Austin family, VI, 176.
- Representatives for depopulated districts, III, 94, 95.
- Revolution, Texas, I, 242-5, 246-59, 260-1, 262-3, 264-79, 287-368, 369-401, 404, 405-9, 410-23, 430, 435, 436, 437-9, 440-1, 444, 445, 449, 481-8, 489-502, 504, 511-4, 525-30, 531, 533, 539, 540, 542, 544, 550, 556, 560, 561, 562-4, 567, 572, 574, 576, 582-3, 595, 596, II, 5, 14, 34, 43, 45, 49, 136, 138-9, 142, 143, 157, 159, 163, 171, 330, 383, III, 272, IV, pt. 1, 96, 208, V, 91, 93, 95, 101, 103, 104, 105, 106, 109, 111, 112, 117, 118, 129, 132, 133, 137, 144, 147, 150, 153, 159, 167, 169-70, 177, 178, 179-82, 183, 185, 186, 187, 189, 220, 367, VI, 171-81; beginning, III, 242, 287, IV, pt. 1, 42, 47, 96, V, 513; causes, I, 284, III, 267, 287, V, 397; finances, I, 330, 338, 536; in McMullen & McGloin's colony, III, 283, V, 378; land granted for services in, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 81; political condition at beginning, I, 542; Zavala's connection with, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 181-4.
- Ribaud, III, 27, V, 296.
- Richardson, D. S., letter, I, 547.
- Richardson, John P., letter, III, 212, V, 339.
- Richardson, Willard, III, 386, V, 422.
- Richmond Enquirer*, I, 464.
- Richmond Telescope and Texas Literary Register*, II, 558, III, 20, V, 280, 291.
- Riddle, Joseph, Jr., letters, II, 138, 142, 408, V, 179, 183.
- Riddle, Joseph?, IV, pt. 1, 31.
- Riddle, Mr. Joseph, II, 408.
- Riley, James, II, 257, 265.
- Rincón, José María, I, 127.
- Rio Grande, counties on, IV, pt. 1, 158, 174, 184, VI, 87; country, development, IV, pt. 1, 202; expedition up, IV, pt. 1, 166; fighting on, III, 378, 381; Mexican trade, II, 457; military colony on or near, suggested, II, 376; troops on, III, 423.
- Rio Grande and Texas Land Company, scrip, II, 211, V, 195.
- Ritchie, Thomas, I, 464.
- Roads, III, 35, 462; Austin to Bastrop, III, 126; Austin to Red River, III, 419; Corpus Christi to Chihuahua, IV, pt. 1, 202; Harrisburg, IV, pt. 2, 37, IV, 340; military, II, 386, 403, 414, 570, V, 236.
- Robbins, I, 512.
- Roberts, James F., letter, III, 470.
- Roberts, Joel, II, 152, 398, V, 91, 184, 232.
- Roberts, Olivia A., *see* Mather, Olivia A. Roberts.
- Roberts, Reuben H., I, 469, II, 41, 216, III, 222, V, 122; letters, II, 174, 377, V, 419.
- Roberts, Samuel Alexander, II, 21, 152, 157, 174, III, 35, 222, 349, 355, 377, 506, 543, 587, V, 184, 412, 419, 467,

- VI, 162; letters, I, 534, 575. II, 139, 177, 225, 499, 515, 573, III, 35, 86, 96, 120, 131, 135, 470, 486, 534, 544-7, 555, 558, 586, V, 130, 182, 197, 268, 311, 315, 450, 458; memorandum, III, 481.
- Roberts, Willis, II, 139, 157, 174, 183, 297, 415, III, 24, 96, 131, 392; letters, I, 469, II, 41, 139, 152, 157, 183, 216, 398, 404, 433, 498, III, 23, 27, 124, 154, 191, 222, 349, 355, 506, V, 122, 184, 232, 233, 242, 296, 412, 467.
- Roberts family, II, 225, III, 531, V, 197.
- Robertson, Arthur, receipt, I, 115.
- Robertson, E. S. C., letters, III, 145, 201.
- Robertson, M., letter, III, 423.
- Robertson County, IV, pt. 1, 31; citizens' petition, II, 436; Indian difficulties, II, 420; troops to operate in, II, 340.
- Robertson's colony, I, 204, 595, II, 426.
- Robinson County, V, 273.
- Robinson, J., letter, III, 120.
- Robinson, James, II, 565, III, 387, V, 424.
- Robinson, James W., I, 245, 251-3, 258, 259, 261-2, 263, 265-7, 272, 293, 295, 298, 301, 302, 309, 318-9, 322-3, 331-4, 338, 341, 344; acting governor, I, 297; letters, I, 301, 330-1, 349, II, 272, 468, III, 307; message, I, 297; proclamation, I, 300; proposals for armistice, 1843, IV, pt. 1, 123.
- Robinson, Tod, letters, III, 398, 428, V, 435.
- Robinson, Walter, I, 588.
- Rodriguez, Estevan, certificate, IV, pt. 1, 152, VI, 37.
- Rogers, John A., letters, II, 182, IV, pt. 1, 158, VI, 89.
- Rogers, Magnus T., II, 475, 542-3; indictment, II, 152.
- Roman, II, 412, VI, 136.
- Roman, III, 106.
- Ross, Colonel, V, 79, VI, 99.
- Ross, John, III, 106.
- Ross, John E., letter, III, 16.
- Ross, W. A., II, 136.
- Rossignol, Charles, IV, pt. 1, 16; agreement, IV, pt. 1, 17; letters, IV, pt. 1, 15, 18; statement, I, 88.
- Round Point, I, 125.
- Rountree, R. G., letter, I, 515.
- Rowe, II, 208.
- Rowe, Joseph, letter, II, 486.
- Rowland, John G., I, 99.
- Rowland, Samuel, II, 30.
- Rowlett, J.?, historical notes from, IV, pt. 1, 217.
- Royall, Richard R., I, 78, II, 557, V, 48, 279; document, I, 246; historical notes, III, 254; letters, I, 548, 551, 587, II, 207, 371, 489, V, 194, 259.
- Rudder, I, 463, 464.
- Rudder, S. W., III, 13.
- Rueg, Henry, I, 265-7, 317.
- Ruis, historical notes, IV, pt. 1, 221.
- Ruiz de Apodaca, Juan, I, 33, 44.
- Ruiz, Don Francisco, VI, 340.
- "Runaway Scrape," I, 350, II, 245.
- Runnels, W. G., letter, IV, pt. 1, 188.
- Rusk, Thomas J., I, 369, 380, 417, 591, II, 202, 223, III, 67, 406, IV, pt. 2, 26; address, I, 400; advice on Indian policy, II, 270; candidacy for presidency, discussed, 1838, I, 573, 577, 591-2, II, 155-7, 162, 168; 1843, IV, pt. 1, 19; for United States senator, IV, pt. 1, 104; commander-in-chief: appointment, II, 34; discussion, I, 412, 416, 489; circular, I, 443; creditable behavior, 1838, II, 208; death, IV, pt. 2, 57, VI, 347; estimate of, as a military leader, I, 445; historical notes, III, 243, 251, letters, I, 239, 353, 395, 506, 592, II, 207, 211, 255, 294-5, 405, 544, III, 154, 222, 391, IV, pt. 1, 126, IV, pt. 2, 38; military campaigns, 1838-9, II, 205, 208-10, 263-7, 268, 293-4, 296, 298, 341, 404-6, III, 72; orders, I, 396, 399, 410, II, 296; personal relations: with Houston, II, 203; with Lamar, I, 402, 416, 417, IV, pt. 2, 38, 43; McLeod, II, 196; political attitude, 1838, II, 171-5, 203, 217; situation, 1836, I, 403; successor as chief justice, III, 212, V, 339; treatment of Cadle, I, 403; unpopularity with volunteers, II, 203; warning against, I, 302.
- Rusk, Mrs. Thomas J., II, 196.
- Russell, William J., I, 127, II, 154; letter, I, 114.
- Russia, Pacific coast holdings, III, 517; recognition of Texas, II, 384.
- Rust, Richard, letter, II, 447.
- Ruter, H., letter, II, 218.
- Rutherford, Colonel, V, 185.
- Sabine (municipality), I, 318.
- Sabine (post and district), II, 515, 563, III, 123, 133, 412, 416-7, 418, V, 312, 314.
- Sabine Pass, notary public, III, 200, V, 332; postal service, II, 491.
- Sabine River, III, 475; railroad from, projected, II, 186.
- Saccharapp, camp at, III, 375.
- Sadler, William T., letter, II, 464.
- Saenz, Joaquin, III, 280.
- Safety fund, act, III, 126; system, IV, pt. 1, 47.
- St. Anna* (pilot boat), II, 580.

- Salcedo, Manuel, biography, IV, pt. 2, 71; election as civil governor, I, 4, III, 284, V, 383.
- Salcedo, Nemesio, I, 3.
- Salcedo village, V, 292.
- Saligny, Alphonse de, II, 526, III, 213, 521, 532, V, 252, 270, 476; attitude toward Texas, III, 82, 92, 115; introduced, II, 296, 454, V, 215, 252; mission to Texas, II, 411, 540, III, 192, 530, V, 327.
- Salinas, Sebastian, IV, pt. 1, 207; circular, IV, pt. 1, 207.
- Salinas, Victoriano, certificate, IV, pt. 1, 152, VI, 37.
- Salmon, R., letter, III, 199, V, 330.
- Saltillo, disturbances, 1834-5, I, 523, III, 238, IV, pt. 1, 242; fight near, 1480, IV, pt. 1, 238.
- Sample, David, III, 299; letter, III, 151.
- San Antonio de Béxar, II, 245, III, 153, IV, pt. 1, 209; aid for asked, 1836, I, 300, 338, 343; alleged movement of troops from, 1832, I, 127; ball, III, 521, V, 472; capture by Royalists, 1813, III, 531, V, 474; capture, 1835, I, 248, 262, 292, 368, IV, pt. 1, 42, 47, 96, V, 95, 513; Casas's insurrection, III, 278; citizens' and soldiers' meeting, 1836, proceedings and resolutions, I, 309, V, 93; commanding officer, I, 46; conditions, 1836, I, 297; 1838, II, 192; 1839, III, 106; effort to remove state government to, I, 204; election at, August, 1832, I, 512; fall of, 1836, I, 350; Fannin's advice to concentrate troops at, I, 309; garrison, V, 93; history, III, 281, IV, pt. 2, 1; Lamar's wish for real estate in, III, 532; mail route to, desired, IV, pt. 1, 189, VI, 161; Mexfa invited to cooperate in attack upon, I, 263; Mexican attack, I, 341; Mexican attack expected, IV, pt. 1, 135; Mexican designs against, I, 330; Mexican troops at, I, 395; military headquarters, IV, pt. 1, 203; movements of troops to, 1836, I, 337, 338; mysterious prisoner, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-181; nomenclature, III, 283, IV, pt. 2, 71, V, 383; Woll's raid, IV, pt. 1, 35.
- San Antonio de Béxar (presidio), I, 1.
- San Antonio Ledger, IV, pt. 2, 5.
- San Augustine, customs district, II, 273, 279, V, 209.
- San Augustine (municipality), ball, I, 576; committee of vigilance and safety, address, I, 267; representation in the convention, 1836, I, 318; newspapers, II, 208.
- San Augustine County, chief justice, II, 313, 454, V, 220; court, II, 440; election certificate, II, 443; notary public, II, 476, III, 333; representative, III, 24.
- Sanchez, Teodoro, IV, pt. 1, 198, VI, 166.
- Sanchez y Ynaga, José, letter, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 310.
- Sandoval, I, 45.
- Sands, Lewis H., letter, II, 396, V, 231.
- Sandusky, William H., III, 11, 92, V, 309; contract for map, comment, III, 330, V, 405; description of Austin, III, 91; letters, III, 521, 532, 590, V, 471, 476, 491; sketches of Austin, III, 92, V, 309.
- San Felipe de Austin, I, 70, V, 53; *ayuntamiento*, I, 86, 94, 137; addresses, I, 123, 128-30; advice to, I, 93, 160; files cited, I, 551; burning, 1836, II, 579; cannon from, I, 123; crossing opposite, III, 282; citizens' meetings: 1832, I, 120, 125, 128-30, 137; 1835, I, 206; 1836, I, 339; committee of safety, circular, I, 237; Mexican faction, I, 295; "toryish spirit," I, 139.
- San Felipe Telegraph*, V, 94.
- San Jacinto, battle, III, 464, III, 272, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-181; anecdotes of, III, 286; ball to commemorate, 1839, II, 511, V, 267; cannon, III, 110, V, 311; Lamar's record, I, 417, III, 102, 115, V, 104; Mexican prisoners captured at, I, 370; muster roll, I, 352; official report, I, 353, requested, I, 405.
- San Jacinto campaign, I, 350, III, 283, IV, pt. 2, 27, 30-2, V, 376.
- San Jacinto* (Texas Naval vessel), III, 448.
- San Jacinto River, IV, pt. 1, 124.
- San Juan Bautista de Lampazos, presidential company, I, 61.
- San Marcos spring, III, 462.
- San Miguel, Felipe, certificate, IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 33.
- San Patricio, I, 341, III, 412.
- San Patricio County, boundaries, II, 139; chief justice, III, 52, 568; representative, III, 94, IV, pt. 1, 188.
- San Saba (presidio), I, 1, IV, pt. 1, 239, VI, 298.
- San Saba company, II, 559.
- Santo Domingo, rancho de, IV, pt. 1, 201.
- Santa Anna, Antonio Lopez de, I, 70, 167-9, 315, 405, 411, 414, III, 285, IV, pt. 1, 186, 193, V, 101, 386; address to Texan army, June 1, 1836, I, 396; anecdotes of, IV, pt. 1, 210, IV, pt.

- 2, 14, VI, 185-95; attempts at centralization, III, 283, V, 376; attitude of Texas toward, 1832, I, 93, 141; attitude toward Texas after San Jacinto, I, 414, II, 583, 598; biography, I, 381, III, 285, IV, pt. 1, 193, 208, 210, IV, pt. 2, 15, 37, 67, V, 384, VI, 171-181, 196, 197, 327, 337, 355; custody and disposal after capture at San Jacinto, I, 369, 399, 401, 405, 409, 412, 417, 423, 489, 534-5, V, 104, 109; decree, I, 163; domestic relations, III, 285, V, 384; invasion of Texas, 1836, I, 307, 309, 313, 319, 332, 337; letters, I, 353, 409, 540; plans and movements, 1846, IV, pt. 1, 150, 159, VI, 32, 91; powers, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 176; pretended plot to liberate, 1836, I, 441, 513; release, I, 491, 511, 514; reputed secret agent of, II, 540; treaties: public, I, 382; secret, I, 38; unconstitutional assumption of power, I, 277.
- Santa Anna, Manuel, VI, 247.
- Santa Fé, III, 361; expedition, II, 437, 529-31, III, 370, 427, 499, 503, 506, 512, 514, 516, 531, 532, 533, 535, 538, 544, 562, IV, pt. 1, 31, V, 434, 471, 474; inhabitants, III, 370, 488, 531, 532, 556, V, 474; inhabitants, III, 370, 488, 531, 532, 556, V, 474; insurrection, 1808, III, 285, V, 385; press, III, 505, 532; trade, II, 437.
- Santangelo, O. de A., petition, II, 143; letter, VI, 269.
- Santa Rosa (Mexico), inhabitants, invitation, IV, pt. 1, 198, VI, 165.
- San Xavier (presidio), I, 1.
- Sappington, Dr., V, 172.
- Saucedo, José Antonio, letters, I, 63; proclamation, I, 69.
- Saunders, Christina Bentley, V, 319.
- Saunders, James, I, 542, V, 133.
- Saunders, John Hyde, V, 319.
- Saunders, Lovitt, letter, I, 542, V, 133.
- Saunders, R. C., II, 49, 269, V, 207.
- Savari, I, 33.
- Savery, H. P., letters, III, 473.
- Sawyer, Caroline M., letter, IV, pt. 2, 39, VI, 342; verse, IV, pt. 1, 101.
- Sawyer, F. A., letter, I, 449, V, 170; order to, I, 437.
- Sayre, Charles D., I, 145.
- Scharitt, Captain, V, 291.
- Schlesinger, D. F., VI, 369.
- Schmidt, Gustavus, I, 243.
- Schools, II, 13, 297, 417, 447, 469, 487, III, 48, 313; offer to organize, II, 506; plans for, II, 433, III, 313.
- Scott, III, 450, 457.
- Scott, Alfred V., letter, I, 440.
- Scott, John, III, 212, V, 267, 339.
- Scott, William R., III, 590, V, 409.
- Scott, Winfield, I, 419, IV, pt. 1, 176.
- Seall, J., IV, pt. 1, 195, VI, 164.
- Seals, II, 152, IV, pt. 1, 104, IV, pt. 2, 66, 76-7, VI, 8.
- Searcy, Anderson, II, 475; indictment, II, 152.
- Sebring, C. C., II, 547, 549, 554; letters, II, 339, 548, 559.
- Seeger, Augustus, letters, II, 570, III, 452, 586, V, 488.
- Seguin, Erasmo, I, 2.
- Seguin, Juan Nepomuceno, III, 439, 462; letters, II, 14, III, 375, 521, V, 169, 248, 418, 472, VI, 111; movements in Federalist war, IV, pt. 2, 70; notes on file in Béxar, II, 44; request for permission to return to Texas, IV, pt. 1, 193.
- Seibles, G. G., II, 485.
- Seminole Indians, war, 1836, I, 419.
- Senate of Texas, I, 491, II, 21, 46, 207, 407, III, 387, 427, V, 194, 425; addresses to, I, 470, 579, II, 134, 281; journal, 1836 (part), I, 475; 1839 (part), III, 199; 1837, cited, I, 579; 1838, cited, II, 316; message to, III, 188; national bank bill, *Jan. 5, 1838*, II, 15; resolutions cited, I, 489, III, 203; resolution, reply to, III, 296; secret resolution, I, 572.
- Serrano, Manuel, VI, 339.
- Settle, John A., III, 568, V, 487.
- Sevey, III, 355.
- Seward, William H., certificate, II, 547, V, 278.
- Sewell, Charles A., II, 296, 298.
- Seybold, William, III, 513, V, 470.
- Seymour, Isaac G., I, 561, V, 146.
- Shackleford, Jack, II, 312; company, II, 45, V, 178; company accounts, I, 264, 276; letter, III, 456.
- Shannon, James T., joint letter, III, 581.
- Sharp, John, death, III, 438, V, 171; letter, III, 53.
- Shaw, G., III, 126; letter, III, 185.
- Shaw, G. W., joint letter, II, 340.
- Shaw, James B., III, 138, V, 317.
- Shawnee Indians, II, 211; chiefs, talk to, III, 11; coercion urged, II, 295; fight with Comanches, III, 460; invited to conference, I, 239; relations with Texas, II, 295, 298; removal desired, II, 308; settlement in Texas, I, 55-6, 63.
- Shelby, A. B., III, 471, 535, 568, V, 478, 486; letters, III, 200, 308, 473, 514, 567, V, 486.
- Shelby County, district court, II, 274, V, 212; militia, II, 425, V, 242.
- Shelden, Ezekiel, letter, III, 356.
- Shepherd, Dr., V, 199.

- Shepherd, William M., letters, I, 582, II, 423 (extract), III, 356.
- Sherman, Sidney, III, 151, IV, pt. 2, 67, V, 301, 321, VI, 355.
- Sherwood, John T., I, 595, V, 165.
- Sherwood, Winfield Scott, letter, I, 595, V, 165.
- Shields, Benjamin, III, 198.
- Shinn, Wilson Kirk, joint petition, II, 304, 305.
- Shinn's Colorado navigation company, II, 305.
- Shoal Pelican, lots, II, 204.
- Sibley, John, statement, IV, pt. 1, 135, VI, 20.
- Simmons, James W., letter, II, 511.
- Simmons, S. B., III, 311, V, 399.
- Simmons, William, joint letter, III, 322, V, 402.
- Simpson, William K., V, 92.
- Sims, III, 18.
- Sims, Bartlett, I, 131.
- Sims, Charles, II, 200.
- Sims, Dr., V, 277.
- Sims, William, letter, III, 471.
- Single star of Texas, origin, III, 483.
- Sirvent de Calongo, Ignacio, III, 516, V, 471.
- Slaves and slavery, I, 44, 423, 544, 567, II, 41, 157, 184, 198, 257, 519, III, 125, 256, 361, 366, 391, 412, 473, 590, IV, pt. 2, 78, 138, V, 105, 112, 152, 176, 184, 191, 192, 426, 493, VI, 363; bearing upon annexation question, I, 464, II, 23, 138, 274, V, 179; upon loan question, II, 274.
- Slave trade, III, 19, 387.
- Smead, P. H., letter, I, 569, V, 156.
- Smith, I, 419.
- Smith, II, 243.
- Smith, III, 356.
- Smith, Ashbel, II, 159; claim, III, 81, V, 287; letters, II, 407, 408, III, 92, 220, 328, V, 235; nomination as surgeon-general, II, 401.
- Smith, Ashbel?, II, 215, 217.
- Smith, Benjamin F., joint petition, II, 333; letter, I, 401.
- Smith, Daniel W., IV, pt. 1, 215, VI, 296.
- Smith, E., letter, III, 60, V, 303.
- Smith, Erastus (Deaf Smith), I, 542.
- Smith, Francis G., III, 473, V, 452.
- Smith, G., I, 309.
- Smith, George, I, 584, V, 151.
- Smith, Hamp, II, 34.
- Smith, Henry, I, 204, 236, 272, 292, 294, 301, 309, 338, 344, V, 81, 171; address, I, 304; assassination planned, I, 307; biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; candidacy for presidency, II, 37, 38, 153, circular, I, 262; division, muster roll, 1832, I, 102; documents, I, 170, 178; election as captain, 1832, I, 116; estimates of, II, 37; historical material furnished to Lamar, I, 502; letters, I, 140, 274, 298, 308, 310, 502; messages, I, 253, 293; comment, I, 258; proclamation, I, 343; quarrel with counsel, I, 297, 298, 301, 302-7, 308-9, 310, 344; settlement of treasury accounts, II, 466.
- Smith, Henry?, I, 170.
- Smith, Jackson, letters, II, 435, III, 81, 113, V, 244.
- Smith, James, II, 411, V, 235.
- Smith, James H., III, 364; letter, II, 179.
- Smith, James W., letter, III, 440.
- Smith, John M., III, 594.
- Smith, John W., I, 218, 221, II, 44, III, 471; letters, I, 220.
- Smith, N. F., III, 563.
- Smith, Nathan, III, 60, V, 303.
- Smith, Richard, Beall and others, v., I, 564, V, 150.
- Smith, Stephen, letters, I, 436, II, 139, V, 111, 181.
- Smith, Thomas F., letter, III, 31, V, 298.
- Smith, W. W. T., letter, III, 329.
- Smith, William A., I, 436, II, 139, V, 111, 181.
- Smith, William R., III, 539, V, 480.
- Smith, Dr. William R., letters, II, 492, III, 61, 153, 386, V, 260, 322.
- Smith, William R., II, 157.
- Smith, Mrs. William R., II, 492, V, 260.
- Smoot, Benjamin S., I, 447, 452, V, 119.
- Smoot, Edward, I, 447, 452, V, 119.
- Smyth, George W., III, 436; letter, III, 9.
- Smyth, W., V, 241.
- Snell, II, 159, V, 186, VI, 104, 111.
- Snively, Jacob, joint certificate, III, 475.
- Snow, Charles B., II, 569, V, 284; joint petition, II, 571.
- Somervell, Alexander, I, 402, 404, II, 421, V, 238.
- Sonora and Sinaloa, presidial companies, estimates, I, 58.
- Soto, Agustin, statement, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 72.
- Soulé, Pierre, letters, II, 454, 519, V, 252, 270.
- Soult, Maréchal de, *see* Dalmatie, Duc de.
- South, annexation in relation to, II, 274; attitude of Federal administration toward, IV, pt. 2, 69; Clay's record regarding, II, 257; doctrine, III, 101; financial dependence, II, 408; misfortunes, III, 364, V, 414.
- South Carolina, attitude toward Federal administration and tariff, III,

- 72, V, 306; loan, II, 243; nullification episode, I, 542.
- South Carolinian*, III, 72, V, 306.
- Southern Commercial Convention, third and fourth, II, 257; New Orleans, 1855, IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327, 329.
- Southern convention question, IV, pt. 1, 261, VI, 308.
- Southern Literary Assistant*, I, 564, V, 149.
- Southern Literary Messenger*, III, 101.
- Southern Review*, IV, pt. 1, 47.
- Southmayd, J. A., V, 286.
- Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, see *Quarterly*, Texas Historical Association.
- Spain, colonial policy and government, IV, pt. 1, 47, IV, pt. 2, 241, VI, 479; Forsyth's reception, 1819, I, 30; recognition of Texas, III, 445.
- Spanish vice-consul, St. Louis, letter, I, 32.
- Sparks, William H., letter, III, 505, V, 465.
- Sparta Female Model School, II, 469, announcement, II, 314.
- Sparta Female Model School?, I, 77, V, 41.
- Speakman, Thomas, letter, I, 441.
- Speculating party, rout, *July*, 1835, I, 218.
- Spilman, I, 123, 125.
- Spradling, R. W., IV, pt. 1, 185, VI, 140.
- Squire, Ephraim George, letter, IV, pt. 1, 207.
- Stafford, William, II, 372, 373, V, 225.
- Stamped paper, I, 88.
- Stanfield, Julia A., letter, II, 486.
- Stanley, M. C., II, 330.
- Stansbury, II, 414, III, 256, V, 235, 243.
- Stapp, Elijah, II, 300, V, 266; letter, II, 301.
- "Star money," II, 41, 159, 512, V, 176.
- Stark, III, 306.
- Starr, James H., III, 158, 423, 589, V, 361, 430, 489, VI, 162, 170; appointment to cabinet, II, 576; document, II, 5; intended resignation, III, 412; letters, III, 31, 34, 60, 96, 138, 139, 140-1, 153, 183, 190, 210, 212, 330, 355, 367, 372-5, 406, 415, 437, 441-3, 458, 521, 589, IV, pt. 1, 131, IV, pt. 2, 234, V, 317, 319, 438, 490, VI, 437; order to, III, 139; report, 1839, comment, III, 302; suggestions, III, 223.
- State Department of Texas, II, 559, V, 281; *ad interim* appointment, III, 3-4; files cited, III, 149-51, 535, V, 479; remissness in diplomatic correspondence, III, 115.
- State rights, I, 161, 165, V, 66; party, I, 165, II, 257, V, 54, 67.
- Steamboats introduced into Texas, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81.
- Sterling, Mark, certificate, IV, pt. 1, 154, VI, 65; letter, IV, pt. 1, 154, VI, 66; statements, IV, pt. 1, 152, 153, 155, VI, 35, 39, 72.
- Stevens, Ann A., IV, pt. 1, 101, IV, pt. 2, 78, VI, 361.
- Stevens, William H., IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327.
- Stevenson, Robert, letter, II, 499.
- Stewart, Charles B., VI, 179, 184; letters, II, 374, V, 227.
- Stewart, Charles H., letter, III, 332, V, 407.
- Stewart, Daniel M., letter, II, 441, V, 249.
- Stewart, J. McN., letter, II, 159.
- Stewart, James, II, 159, V, 186.
- Stickney, E. Lawrence, I, 440; letter, II, 162.
- Stiff, Thomas R., III, 198, V, 328; journal, I, 248; letters, II, 41, III, 146, V, 177; v. Lamar, III, 99, 450, 457.
- Still, W. G., letter, II, 547.
- Stockfleth, G. de, letter, II, 513, V, 268.
- Stone, Dr., I, 488.
- Stone, Clark M., II, 533.
- Stone, G. M., III, 200, V, 171, 334.
- Storms, Mrs. J. M., IV, pt. 1, 204; letters, IV, pt. 1, 101, 108, 123, 130.
- Stout, George, II, 369, V, 224.
- Stout, Isaiah, II, 369, V, 224.
- Stout, Philander, II, 369, V, 224.
- Stout, Sarah R., II, 369, V, 224.
- Stout, William B., notes from, IV, pt. 1, 273.
- Stovall, George, letter, I, 567, V, 153.
- Stovall, Joseph, II, 136.
- Stovall, Joseph A., I, 567, V, 153.
- Strait, Hiram, III, 218, V, 341.
- Stratton, George S., letter, II, 331.
- Strong, C. B., V, 291.
- Strode, VI, 170.
- Stubblefield, III, 340, 344.
- Sturges, Benjamin B., I, 514, II, 423, V, 124.
- Sturges, Oliver, I, 514, V, 124.
- Sublett, III, 537, V, 97.
- Sublett & Riggs, VI, 162.
- Supreme court of Texas, II, 272; appeal to, II, 369; chief justice, III, 391, 406; letter to, III, 308; time and place of holding, III, 218, 308-11.
- Sutherland, George, I, 125; circular, I, 131; letter, III, 437.
- Sutherland, John, III, 437.
- Sutton, James, IV, pt. 1, 106.
- Swaim, John D., III, 412, V, 312; letters, III, 416, 418.

- Swartwout, Samuel, III, 418, 445.
 Sweet, III, 101.
 Swete?, T. W., letter, III, 154, V, 322.
 Swift, Timothy, letter, III, 535, 547, V, 275.
 Swisher, III, 557.
 Swisher, John M., VI, 168.
- Tamaulipas, congress, I, 55; flying companies, I, 61; inhabitants, charge against, I, 90; liberal movements, 1838, II, 209; revolution, 1838-40, IV, pt. 1, 170, VI, 97-138.
Tamaulipas (vessel), loss, I, 330.
 Tampico expedition, III, 274; Mexia's return to, 1832, I, 143.
 Tankersley, Benjamin A., letter, III, 463.
 Tariff of Texas, III, 120, 331, 365; United States, III, 72, V, 306.
 Tarleton, James, I, 330, V, 92; letter, I, 318.
 Tarpley, S. O., letter, III, 432, V, 437.
 Tarr, V, 295.
 Tarrant, E. H., II, 302, 341, III, 458.
 Tarshar (Caddo chief), II, 308.
 Tatem, C. C. (Mrs. Memory B.), letter, I, 539, V, 132.
 Tatem, Joseph, I, 539, V, 132.
 Tatem, Memory B., I, 539, V, 132, 181.
 Tawakoni Indians (Tahuacanos, Tawacanos), I, 236, II, 306, III, 354.
 Taxation, I, 595, III, 120, 365, 454.
 Taylor, I, 542, V, 134.
 Taylor, II, 436, V, 247.
 Taylor, Captain, II, 523.
 Taylor, Charles S., III, 589, V, 490; letter, III, 124.
 Taylor, John, V, 203.
 Taylor, John B., I, 591, 596, V, 163, 165; note, I, 557.
 Taylor, John W., letters, II, 314, III, 81, V, 308.
 Taylor, Sereno, letter, II, 469.
 Taylor, Thomas, letter, II, 342.
 Taylor, Zachary, IV, pt. 1, 134, 155, 156, 158, 159, 174, 175, VI, 19, 69, 72, 90, 138, 161; orders, IV, pt. 1, 182, 183; plans and movements, IV, pt. 1, 159, 172, 180, 186, VI, 91.
 Teal, Henry, I, 408, 562.
 Telegraph, use tendered to the Republic, II, 546.
Telegraph and Texas Register, I, 475, 542, 579, II, 41, 240, 341, III, 474, V, 177, 202; circulation, II, 499; editor, II, 192, III, 60, V, 304; Jones's campaign contributions to, II, 191-2; persecution, II, 218; political attitude, 1838-9, II, 168, 209, 499; public printing, II, 402.
Telegraph, Columbia, see *Columbia Telegraph*.
- Temple, Palmer Columbus, letters, III, 134, 547, V, 315.
 Ten-e-wish Indian tribe, IV, pt. 1, 198.
 Tenorio, ejection, 1835, I, 205, 241, 277, III, 246.
 Terán, I, 139.
 Terán, Manuel de, I, 86, 99, 119, 132; biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-81; trip to Texas, 1833, views on Texas affairs, I, 93.
 Terrell, Abel, III, 251, V, 365.
 Terrell, George W., III, 375, V, 418.
 Terry, Clement, letter, I, 77.
 Terry, D. S., IV, pt. 1, 188.
 Teulon, George Knight, III, 544; letters, III, 6, 52, IV, pt. 1, 21, V, 288, 301, 503.
 Teutonia (German colony), III, 110.
 Tewullie, see Bowl.
 Texana, III, 432.
 Texas, advantages, II, 39, 249; article upon, I, 444; Austin's confidence in, I, 78; chronology, IV, pt. 1, 29, V, 506; citizenship, I, 519; claims to, I, 70, V, 28; climate, farming resources, I, 236, 562, V, 81; commercially a part of Mexico, III, 415; conditions: 1832, I, 93, 95; 1835, I, 201, 204, 218, 219, 228; 1837, I, 547; 1838, II, 376, 385; 184—?, IV, pt. 1, 210, VI, 195; confusion of public affairs, 1837, I, 556; cotton speculations in, II, 169; danger to from internal enemies, I, 410; departments, I, 121, 276, IV, pt. 2, 241, VI, 498; description, II, 406; disunion, 1836, I, 322; fights to, II, 211, V, 194; French agent sent to, II, 238; free importation list, cited, 1832, I, 93; future, II, 139, V, 182; gain to from war between England and the United States, II, 21; general ignorance of Mexican law in, I, 75, V, 39; governmental system, II, 39, V, 174; inquiries regarding, I, 401, 423, 440, 548, 557, 561, 567, 568, 569, 595, II, 21, 39, 138, 142, 206, 211, 240, 249, 257, 269, 279, 297, 336, 421-2, 441, 447, 455, 485, 486, 557, 569, III, 30, 32, 50, 72, 124, 142, 212, 356, 417, 422, 444, 460, 510, 566, V, 105, 118, 135, 147, 151, 156, 164, 170, 174, 179, 183, 192, 194, 200, 205, 213, 224, 239, 249, 253, 257, 279, 283, 306, 313, 319, 339, 439, 447; inhabitants, apathy, 1836, I, 341; cessation of hostilities, 1832, I, 99; interest in, in the United States, I, 405-6, 513, II, 23, 284, 408, 513, 528, 535, III, 72; international complications involving, II, 21-3; military operations suggested, III, 13; mineral resources, II, 416; need of good society, 1838, II, 153; Pacific

- coast policy, II, 384; policy in case of war between England and the United States, II, 23; political situation, 1834, I, 170, 178; prospects: 1836, I, 509, 1838, II, 339, 385, 1839, II, 441; relations: with France, II, 290, 540, III, 70, Mexico, II, 198, United States, I, 542, II, 243, 274; separate sovereignty commended, II, 274; significance to, of Lamar's election, II, 21; "state question," I, 93, 160; topography, I, 236, V, 81; wars, 1812-13, IV, pt. 1, 198; Williamson, v., II, 369. (*See also* Coahuila and Texas, Coahuila, Nuevo León and Texas, etc.)
- Texas, army, etc., *see* Army, etc., of Texas.
- Texas* . . . by Milam, *see* Thompson, Henry.
- Texas, East, Cherokee settlement, II, 310; election, 1838, II, 223; Houston's political standing, I, 569, III, 544; Lamar's strength, 1838, II, 153, 172, 176, 196, 208-10, 576; land, III, 474; political movements, 1838, II, 168; population, 1840, III, 372. (*See also* Mexicans in Texas, revolt, 1839.)
- Texas, Southwestern, notes upon, I, 530.
- Texas, Western, citizens' meeting, III, 375; conditions, 1834, IV, pt. 1, 19; importance of frontier protection to, II, 289; Lamar's strength, II, 153, 174, 176, IV, pt. 1, 104; organization after Mexican War, IV, pt. 1, 201; prospects of a new state, IV, pt. 1, 130, 146. (*See also* Laredo, Nueces County, Webb County.)
- Texas Almanac*, comment: 1858, IV, pt. 2, 67, 95, VI, 355, 365; 1860, historical compact, IV, pt. 2, 234.
- Texas Centinel* (*Sentinel*), III, 537, 548.
- Texas Chronicle*, I, 577, 578, V, 161.
- The Texas Emigrant*, III, 79.
- Texas Farmer?*, II, 38.
- Texas Gazette*, I, 86, 127.
- Texas Mounted Volunteer Riflemen, IV, pt. 1, 138.
- Texas Mounted Volunteers, IV, pt. 1, 136; address, IV, pt. 1, 202, VI, 167; muster roll, IV, pt. 1, 141.
- Texas Philosophical Society, II, 302, V, 216.
- Texas Republican*, I, 193, 220, V, 94.
- Texian* (*Weekly*), IV, pt. 1, 1-5, 28.
- Texian Democrat*, IV, pt. 1, 47, V, 511.
- Tharp, Richard R., II, 485, V, 257.
- Thomas, Judge, I, 90.
- Thomas, Philip, V, 79.
- Thompson, III, 246.
- Thompson, Algernon P., I, 590, II, 29; letters, III, 79, 200, 305, 369, V, 307, 334. (*See also* Léger and Thompson.)
- Thompson, C., II, 136.
- Thompson, Henry, II, 424, 435, III, 354, V, 243; accounts, II, 330; letters, II, 329, 483, 533, III, 72, 112, 214, 304; *Texas* . . . by Milam, comment, III, 72, 112, 214.
- Thompson, John H., III, 268.
- Thompson, Napoleon B., letter, II, 237.
- Thompson, William A., letter, I, 480.
- Thomson, Alexander, document, I, 279.
- Thorn, III, 268.
- Thornton, Francis W., V, 91; letter, III, 274.
- Thrasher, J. S., IV, pt. 2, 15, VI, 327.
- Thruston, A. S., II, 209, V, 170; letter, II, 223.
- Ticknor, Isaac, I, 436, 515, V, 111, 124; company, I, 302, II, 139, V, 181.
- Ticknor, James H., letter, I, 515, V, 124.
- Tilden, B. T., Jr., IV, pt. 1, 153, 156, VI, 40, 72; letter, IV, pt. 1, 153, VI, 40.
- Times*, IV, pt. 1, 20.
- Timmins, Thomas, II, 425, V, 242; letter, I, 261.
- Tinsley, William B., document, I, 165, V, 66.
- Toby, Thomas, II, 333.
- Toby, Thomas & Brother, I, 383, 384; complaint against, I, 482.
- Tod, John G., II, 500, III, 144, V, 265; letter, III, 474.
- Todd, V, 265.
- Toledo, VI, 338.
- Toler, Daniel J., II, 495, 497, 498-9, V, 263; information from, IV, pt. 1, 96.
- Tomkins, A. M., II, 450.
- Tompkins, Caleb, letter, III, 27.
- Tompkins, Gus, III, 451.
- Tompkins, Jack, III, 451.
- Tonkawa Indians (Tonkaway), II, 303, 397, IV, pt. 1, 191, 229, V, 255; friendliness, II, 306.
- Tornel, José Maria, *bando*, I, 163; letter, I, 523.
- Torrance, II, 298.
- Torrance, Mansfield, letter, III, 364, V, 414.
- Torrey, John F., letter, III, 521.
- "Tory Party," I, 307. (*See also* Land speculators.)
- Toweash Indians, I, 592.
- Towers, J. T., IV, pt. 1, 287.
- Townsend, Nathaniel, V, 279; petition, II, 579.
- Trade, contraband, IV, pt. 1, 213; Cuban, III, 445, 523; foreign, III, 27; French, III, 104-5, 422, 536; frontier, IV, pt. 1, 158, VI, 89; Mexi-

- can, II, 457, III, 299, 350, 392, 563, IV, pt. 1, 186, 211-4; regulations, I, 512; South American, IV, pt. 2, 58, 74, VI, 348. (*See also* Direct trade, Free trade.)
- Transit, Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 137, 177, 205, 217, 226, 227, VI, 430; contracts, comment, IV, pt. 2, 191, 215; decrees, comment, IV, pt. 2, 207, 226, VI, 428; grant, IV, pt. 2, 103-4, 105; reclamations, IV, pt. 2, 206; route, IV, pt. 2, 94; status, 1859, IV, pt. 2, 204.
- Transportation, II, 274, III, 214.
- Travis, William Barrett, IV, pt. 1, 220, VI, 297; agreement, I, 205; arrest ordered, 1835, I, 218, 236, 241; breach with J. B. Miller, 1835, I, 218; document, I, 236; expedition against Anahuac, 1835, I, 205-6, 236; Fannin's movement to aid, I, 338; improvement, 1832, I, 90-3, 94, letters, I, 160, * 204, 236, 264, 338 (Alamo letter), V, 52, 81.
- Travis County, boundary, III, 333, 343, V, 409; public meeting, *June, 1843*, IV, pt. 1, 21, V, 503.
- Treasurer of Texas, II, 280, III, 369; report, II, 422; report cited, III, 88.
- Treasury department, III, 406, 434; deficit, II, 466; drafts ("star money"), II, 41, 159, 512, V, 176; emptiness, 1841, III, 485; investigation of, III, 372; notes, III, 348; plates for, II, 538, V, 276; report, III, 68; secretary, II, 480, III, 367, 428, 441-3, V, 436; report to, 1836, I, 451.
- Treat, James, III, 353, 448-9; health, II, 502; letters, III, 141, 197; mission to Mexico, III, 142, 374.
- Treaties, conventions, etc.: citation and comment: Great Britain-Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 204, 212, VI, 421; Mexico-Cherokee, I, 534; Mexico-France, II, 513, 540; Texas-Cherokee, I, 352, 559, II, 198, 590; Texas-France, II, 283, 290, 526, III, 82, 86, 118, 216; Texas-Great Britain, II, 283, III, 482, 520; Texas-United States, III, 520, 566, V, 484; United States-Great Britain (Clayton-Bulwer), IV, pt. 2, 201, VI, 416; United States-Mexico, II, 294, III, 35; United States-Nicaragua, IV, pt. 2, 96, 105, 107, 129, 132-5, 138, 141, 142, 144, 146, 147, 148, 190, 203, 206, 208, 211, 212, 226, 227-9, VI, 374, 419, 428, 430; text of Clayton-Bulwer (Spanish), IV, pt. 1, 261.
- Trimble, Major, V, 255.
- Troup, Governor G. M., I, 54, 69, V, 22.
- Turpin, Anderson J., letter, II, 455, V, 253.
- Turtle Bayou resolutions, I, 93.
- "Twin Sisters," cannon, III, 110, V, 311.
- Ugartechea, Domingo de, I, 127, 220, 242, V, 52, 80, 95; circular, I, 213; letters, I, 119, 132, 241; plans and movements, 1835, I, 236, 241.
- Underwood, Warner L., II, 452, 544, V, 251.
- United States, aid to Texas from, I, 550, II, 292; congresses, II, 333, V, 222; division, II, 249; financial and political conditions, 1839, II, 408; political prospects, 1839, II, 279, V, 213; prospects, 1838, II, 26; relations: with Canada and England, II, 21-3; with Mexico, II, 21, 138, V, 179; with Texas, II, 243, 512; Treasury department, circular, IV, pt. 2, 181.
- United States bank, *see* bank of the United States.
- United States Telegraph*, I, 430.
- University of Texas, lands, surveys, III, 571-2; legislation upon, 1858, IV, pt. 2, 95, VI, 365.
- Uribe, Rafael, letter, IV, pt. 1, 156, VI, 79.
- Uribe, T., IV, pt. 1, 193.
- Urquhart, John A., joint letter, I, 535.
- Urrea, I, 411-2, 414, IV, pt. 1, 181, VI, 171.
- Usher, Patrick, II, 300-2, V, 266.
- Van Buren, Martin, I, 423, 464, 467, 567, II, 24, 138, 408, V, 105, 122, 152, 179.
- Vandalia Free Press*, II, 435, V, 244.
- Van Ness, Cornelius, II, 274, 289, III, 153, 439, 531, 546, V, 210, 474; letters, II, 337, III, 313, 333, 355, 533, V, 409, 413, 476.
- Van Ness, G., letter, IV, pt. 1, 181.
- Van Ness, James, letter, II, 274, V, 210.
- Van Nortwick, letter, II, 312.
- Vansickle, II, 199.
- Van Zandt, Isaac, IV, pt. 1, 187.
- Vasquez, Rafael, invasion, 1842, IV, pt. 1, 213.
- Vaughan, George, II, 45, V, 178.
- Vaughan, James, II, 45, V, 178.
- Vaughan, William A., II, 45, V, 178.
- Veatch, John A., IV, pt. 1, 146, 149, 150, 153, 157, 172, 179, VI, 24, 29, 31, 40, 84; certificate, IV, pt. 1, 152, VI, 38; complaint, IV, pt. 1, 152, VI, 37; letters, IV, pt. 1, 149, 185, 187, 193, 198, 202, 203, VI, 29, 141.
- Velasco, I, 308, 380, III, 410, V, 430; disturbances, 1832, III, 238; collectorship, II, 343, III, 541, 543, 547, 566, V, 481, 482, 485; Fourth of July celebration, II, 163, 181, V, 189; nomi-

- nation meeting, II, 196; port, III, 438; public dinners, I, 205-13, III, 74; races, II, 153, 453, V, 252.
- Velasco, Fort, I, 97; capitulation, I, 127; muster roll of men in engagement near, I, 102; operations around, 1832, I, 98, 116, 127-8, 132, 138-40; returns, I, 141.
- Vera Cruz, blockade, II, 540.
- Veramendi family, politics, III, 439, VI, 254.
- Verse Memorials*, VI, 345.
- Vickery, C. W., III, 321, 342, V, 400, 410.
- Victoria, Guadalupe, II, 567, 583, 594-5, 598, III, 8; decree, I, 64.
- Victoria (town), I, 127; Indian troubles, III, 428, 432; merchants' petition, III, 350; protection, I, 242, 245, V, 87; public meeting, III, 381.
- Victoria County, chief justice, II, 403, 474, IV, 443, V, 255; sheriff, II, 519, V, 270; suit to be brought in, II, 474, V, 255.
- Victoria, jurisdiction, I, 141; statement, I, 144.
- Vidaurre, Fernando de, IV, pt. 1, 145, VI, 23.
- Viesca, José María, I, 86, V, 49; election as governor of Coahuila and Texas, I, 523, V, 127.
- Villa Aldama, IV, pt. 1, 193, VI, 161.
- "Village Miscellany," I, 46, V, 7.
- Villamil, J., VI, 350.
- Villars, John, IV, pt. 1, 261; information from, IV, pt. 1, 192, VI, 145.
- Volunteer Army of Texas, I, 244, 260, 263, 317, 319, 338, 341, 414-5, 419-23, 435, 436, 481, 542, 561, 573, 574, II, 14, 203, 208, 245, 340-2, 402, 404, 542, III, 375, 377, 380, V, 86, 111, 133, 147, 159, 169-70, 419; commander, I, 244, V, 85; discipline, I, 247, II, 530, III, 563; muster rolls, I, 102; praise of, II, 529; resolutions, I, 241; returns of elections, I, 323.
- Volunteers from the United States, I, 272, 295, 307, 317, 332, 337, 405, 412, 414, 419, 539, 574, II, 5, 49, V, 132, 159, 167, 178; Alabama, I, 260, 276, 436, 440, 515, II, 139, 163, V, 111, 124, 181, 187; Georgia, I, 409, 430, 435, 441, 531, 542, 561, 564, 567, II, 157, 206, 330, 383, V, 103, 118, 129, 133, 147, 150, 153, 185, 192, 220; Kentucky, II, 268, V, 204; Louisiana, I, 330, 439, III, 149, V, 117, 320; Maryland, II, 159, V, 186; Mississippi, II, 45, III, 378, V, 178. (*See also* Alabama Grays, Georgia Battalion, Red Rovers of Alabama, etc.)
- Volunteers, United States Army (Mexican War): Alabama, IV, pt. 1, 144, VI, 20; Arkansas and Texas, IV, pt. 1, 200. (*See also* Laredo Guards, Texas Mounted Volunteers, etc.)
- Waco Indians, I, 592, II, 306.
- Waddel, Moses, I, 71, V, 31.
- Wadsworth, William, I, 531, V, 129; claim, II, 383; company, I, 409, II, 383, V, 103; estate, II, 157, V, 185.
- Wait, James, VI, 108.
- Walcott, Horatio N., III, 438.
- Walker, Robert John, letters, II, 579, IV, pt. 2, 66.
- Wall, Dr., II, 455.
- Wallace, B. C., V, 92.
- Wallace, J. W. E., II, 282.
- Wallace, J. W. E.?, I, 318.
- Wallach, W. D., III, 120, V, 311.
- Waller, Edwin, I, 204, IV, pt. 2, 210, VI, 418; agreement, I, 96; expedition to Austin, I, 570; joint petition, II, 372, V, 225; letters, II, 436, 568, 587, III, 5, 11, 40, 43, 410, V, 244, 428; order for money for, III, 50.
- Walsh, William Victor, III, 110, V, 310.
- Walton, George, letters, II, 48, III, 198.
- Wamock, J., letter, III, 476, V, 455.
- War Department of Texas, II, 49; chief clerk, III, 79, V, 308; funds, II, 459; secretary, III, 138, V, 316.
- War party, rout, *July, 1835*, I, 218.
- War of Independence of Mexico, I, 4-29, 46-52, III, 278-81, 282, 283, 287, 525, IV, pt. 1, 192, V, 383, 391, VI, 145.
- Ward, R. D. W., III, 474.
- Ward, Russell, II, 501, V, 266; joint letter, II, 501, V, 266.
- Ward, Thomas, I, 292.
- Ward, Thomas William, letters, II, 37, 202, III, 572, V, 174; report, III, 571.
- Ward, William, I, 274, III, 278, 283, V, 375, 378; command, I, 274, 349, 436; II, 163, 206, 383, V, 111, 187, 192; document, I, 323; letter, I, 337; election as lieutenant-colonel, I, 319; treatment, I, 349.
- Washington, Lewis M. H., IV, pt. 2, 16; "The Forsaken . . ." II, 553; letters, III, 423, 448, 512, V, 432, 442, 468; "Prospectus . . ." III, 397, V, 427.
- Washington (Texas), convention, I, 233, 344.
- Washington Company (Louisville), II, 268, V, 204.
- Washington County, chief justice, II, 495, 497, 498-9, 534, V, 263, 477; congressional candidates, III, 557; Lamar's strength, II, 203.

- Washington Globe*, II, 272, III, 35.
Washington States, IV, pt. 2, 74.
Washington Union, IV, pt. 1, 108, 123, IV, pt. 2, 41, 73.
 Waterloo (Texas), II, 529-31.
 Watrous, John Charles, II, 331, 477, 573, III, 530, IV, pt. 1, 103, V, 267, VI, 4; letters, III, 218, 428, 512, 529, V, 435.
 Watson, II, 383.
 Watson, H. P., letter, II, 163, V, 188.
 Watts, H. O., II, 404, V, 234.
 Weaver, Philip, II, 573.
 Webb?, Charles, IV, pt. 1, 135.
 Webb, David K., II, 299, V, 216.
 Webb, James, II, 225, 547, III, 95, 120, 153, 155, 355, 502, 519, IV, pt. 1, 1, 193, V, 197, 311, 412, 463, VI, 163; candidacy for United States district judge, IV, pt. 1, 106, 126, 128, VI, 15; eligibility for chief justiceship, II, 225, V, 127; letters, II, 39, 178, 198, 526, III, 89, 95, 126, 461, 485, 506, 511, 517, IV, pt. 1, 3, 19, 104, 128, 157, V, 174, 191, VI, 83; mission to Mexico, III, 517, 539, 541, 560; opinion, I, 437; order to, III, 50; prospects, 1846, I, 230; report, II, 550.
 Webb, James?, II, 337.
 Webb, Mrs. James, II, 39, V, 174.
 Webb, James W., letters, IV, pt. 1, 158, 206, VI, 87, 169.
 Webb, W. C., letter, II, 299, V, 216.
 Webb County, chief justice, IV, pt. 1, 195; Mexican authority, attempt to establish, IV, pt. 1, 196; notary public, IV, pt. 1, 195.
 Webster, Daniel, I, 542.
 Welch, George W., V, 239.
 Welch, Jacob P., letter, II, 422, V, 239.
 Weld, George M., II, 159.
 Wells, F. W., V, 204.
 Wells, Joe, VI, 127.
 Wells, L., I, 562, II, 5; troops, II, 328.
 Wells, Lysander?, III, 101.
 Welschmeyer, John G., II, 466, 471.
 Westall, Thomas, I, 100.
 Western, T. G., III, 330, 453, V, 259.
Western Advocate, IV, pt. 1, 19.
The Western Texian, IV, pt. 2, 1.
 Westover, Ira, V, 88, 91.
 Williams, Joseph L., IV, pt. 1, 103, VI, 4.
 Weyant, M., letter, III, 452 (1903).
 Weymouth, II, 434.
 Wharton, John A., I, 236, 319, 330, 396, 506, II, 241, 443, V, 81; duel, I, 201; health, I, 445; letters, I, 505, II, 153, message to, I, 204.
 Wharton, William H., I, 98-9, 127, 193, 201, 220, 534, II, 568, V, 80, 171; addresses, I, 141, 354; agreement, I, 96; at Matamoros, I, 556; biography, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 171-181; joint calls for public meetings, I, 218, 222; "card," I, 175; letters, I, 139, 190, 261, II, 343, 448; resolution, *November 6, 1838*, cited II, 308.
 Wharton, William H.?, I, 2.
 Wharton (Texan brig of war), III, 414, 443.
 Wheelwright, George, I, 563, II, 314, III, 406; instructions to, III, 452; letter, II, 208; order to, III, 414; "shipping articles," III, 443.
 Whitcomb, Samuel, Jr., letter, II, 506.
 White, II, 161, V, 186.
 White & Bartels, V, 241.
 White, David, letter, II, 307.
 White, Hugh Lawson, I, 423, 467, V, 105, 122.
 White, John M., II, 501, V, 266; joint letter, II, 501, V, 266.
 White, Joseph M., II, 526, III, 86; letter, III, 10; *Recopilación* . . ., proposed new edition, II, 492, 499, V, 262, 264.
 White, T. T., letter, II, 424, V, 241.
 White, Walker, II, 162, V, 187.
 Whiting, Samuel, II, 166, 170, 217, 495, 499, IV, pt. 1, 3, V, 259, 291, 301; letters, I, 419, II, 165, 402, 425, 559, IV, pt. 1, 5, V, 281; public printing, III, 202.
 Whiting, Samuel, Jr., II, 571.
 Whitney, Eli, letter, III, 203, V, 336.
 Whitaker, William, I, 265, 295, 302.
 Whitesides, VI, 176.
 Wiehl, James, II, 14, V, 169-70.
 Wiess, S., letter, III, 416.
 Wightman, E. R., joint letter, III, 456, V, 445.
 Wilkins, Richard R., II, 35; letters, II, 449, III, 134; mortgage, II, 576, V, 285.
 Wilkinson, J. A., certificate, IV, pt. 1, 151, VI, 34; statement, IV, pt. 1, 153, VI, 38.
 Willey, Joseph, II, 435.
 Williams, I, 76.
 Williams, Earl, V, 247.
 Williams, John A., I, 203, 218, 220, 246.
 Williams, L., II, 54.
 Williams, M. B., letter, III, 124, V, 313.
 Williams, Samuel M., I, 76, 93, 120, 123, 128-9, II, 21, 425, III, 86, 228, 267, IV, pt. 1, 23, VI, 179; characteristics, II, 578; electioneering broadside, IV, pt. 1, 127, VI, 17; document, III, 200, V, 334; letters, I, 131, II, 30, III, 28, 41, 365, V, 296, 299; navy contracts cited, II, 274, 411; sale of land scrip, I, 464; statement, I, 216; superseded as loan com-

- missioner, II, 441. (*See also* McKinney & Williams.)
- Williams, Seth, IV, pt. 1, 146, VI, 24.
- Williams, William H., statement, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 30.
- Williams, William M., III, 196; letters, III, 192, 361.
- Williams, William W., III, 305.
- Williamson, Williamson, I, 404, V, 101.
- Williams, Wilson, I, 401.
- Williamson, H. J., I, 309, V, 93.
- Williamson, Robert M., I, 90-2, 93, 142, 236, V, 81, VI, 180; addresses, I, 92, 206; arrest advised and ordered, I, 218, 220; historical notes, III, 278, V, 372; letters, I, 145, II, 37, 176, III, 380, V, 421; v. the Republic, II, 369.
- Willson, William F., II, 542-3.
- Wilson, IV, pt. 1, 189, VI, 142.
- Wilson, Bob, III, 214.
- Wilson, John, letter, II, 485.
- Wilson, Joseph W., letter, I, 440.
- Wilson, Melvil, III, 201, V, 335; letter, III, 186.
- Wilson, Peter, II, 505.
- Wilson, Ruth, V, 3.
- Wilson, Thomas, letters, I, 542, 560, 579, V, 134, 144, 162.
- Wilson, Wiley, letter, I, 453.
- Wilts, S. C., III, 343.
- Winding, B. H., I, 567, II, 206, V, 151, 192.
- Winfield, E. H., letter, IV, pt. 1, 150, VI, 32.
- Winfields, III, 62.
- Wingate, II, 9.
- Winn, W. H. G., letter, II, 559.
- Winn, Walter, IV, pt. 1, 189, 195, VI, 142; commission, IV, pt. 1, 195.
- Winston, Climbor?, declaration, I, 48.
- Wise, Simeon, III, 117.
- Wolfe, James M., letters, I, 504, 532.
- Wolfenberger, Samuel, joint letter, III, 133.
- Woll, Adrian, I, 382; letter, I, 380; raid, 1842, IV, pt. 1, 35.
- Wood, David L., II, 435, V, 244; letters, II, 522, 558, III, 20, V, 271, 280, 291.
- Wood, George T., II, 391, III, 203, IV, pt. 1, 180, V, 228; document, IV, pt. 1, 195; letters, III, 199, IV, pt. 1, 136, V, 331; political prospects, 1847, IV, pt. 1, 187.
- Wood, Thomas, I, 569, V, 155.
- Woodbury grant, V, 195.
- Woodbury, Jesse, II, 21, V, 170.
- Woodbury, John L., grant, II, 211, V, 195.
- Woodhouse, M. T., joint letter, III, 591.
- Woodlief, I, 408, II, 513.
- Woodlief, D., joint letter, II, 473, V, 255.
- Woodruff, VI, 111.
- Woodward, John, I, 443, II, 243, 396, III, 72, 90, 299, 322, 330, V, 258, 404; *Arguments and observations* . . . , cited, II, 45; fraud alleged, III, 214, 220, 299, 406; letters, II, 36, 45, III, 77-8, 154, V, 323.
- Wool, John Ellis, IV, pt. 1, 197, VI, 164; orders, IV, pt. 1, 195, 200-1.
- Worcester, C. T., letter, III, 201, V, 334.
- Worcester, Mrs. C. T., III, 201, V, 334.
- Wright, of Rawdon, Wright, Hatch & Edson, joint letters, II, 538, 561, V, 276, 282.
- Wright, A. S., III, 471; letters, III, 499, 517.
- Wright, Francis B., letter, II, 576.
- Wright, Norris, II, 199.
- Wright, Silas, IV, pt. 1, 108.
- Wright, Travis G., III, 305.
- Wright, William, letter, II, 472.
- Wrightman, V, 52.
- Wyche, William P., V, 213.
- Wynn, William L., II, 434, V, 243.
- Yates, A. J., letter, II, 480.
- Yellow fever, II, 274, III, 66, 134, 138, 153, 187, 201, IV, pt. 1, 187, V, 316, 322, 325, 334.
- York, V, 96.
- Yorkinos, VI, 248.
- Younger, A., letters, IV, pt. 1, 126, 193, VI, 15, 162.
- Yucatan, III, 482, V, 456; envoy to Texas, III, 567.
- Zambrano, Juan Manuel, VI, 338.
- Zapata, Antonio, III, 598, IV, pt. 1, 249.
- Zavala, Lorenzo de, I, 350, 488, 520, 588, VI, 161, 168, 184, 189, 254; attitude on the state question, 1833, I, 160, V, 53; biography, IV, pt. 2, 236, VI, 460; connection with the Texas revolution, IV, pt. 1, 208, VI, 181-4; document, I, 279; family, III, 285, V, 384; governorship of Mexico, I, 71; letters, I, 166-9, 466, V, 121; "sedition," attempted arrest, I, 218, 220-2.
- Zavala, Mrs. Lorenzo de, I, 558; information from, I, 520.
- Zavala, Lorenzo de, Jr., letter, I, 538.
- Zavala (Texan armed steamer), II, 499, 500, 509, 513, 523, 535, 561-3, V, 265; disposal, II, 538, 582, III, 28; midshipmen, II, 571; proposed alteration, III, 28; suggestions regarding, II, 518. (*See also* Charleston.)



